Gc
974.402
N434ce
1552898

M. L

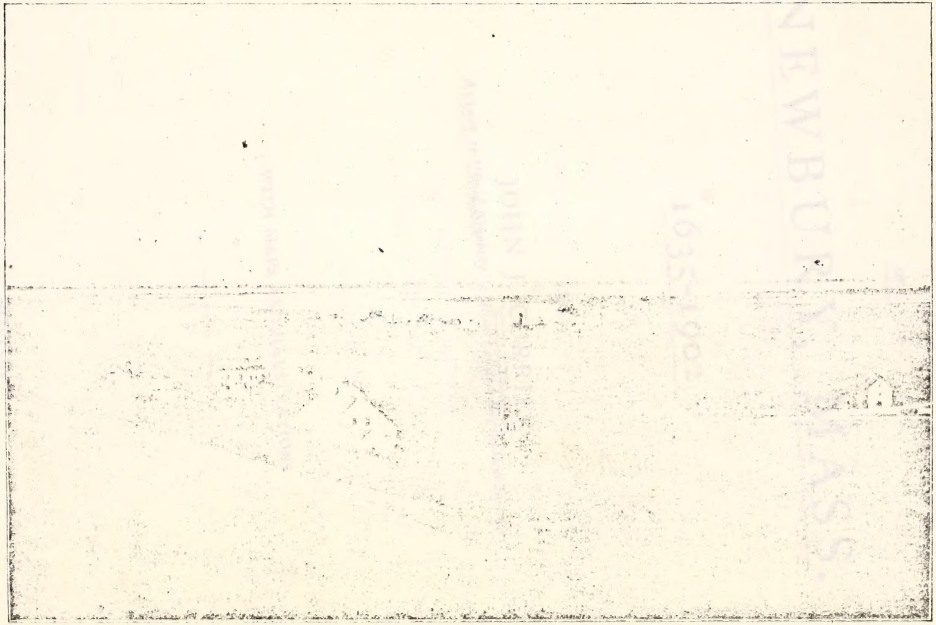
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

GC


ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 01094 6140


Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2010 with funding from
Allen County Public Library Genealogy Center

http://www.archive.org/details/historyofnewbury00incurr



PLUM ISLAND RIVER AND PARKER RIVER FROM OLD TOWN HILL.

HISTORY

OF

NEWBURY, MASS.

1635-1902

BY

JOHN J. CURRIER

AUTHOR OF "*Ould Newbury*": *Historical and Biographical Sketches*

WITH MAPS AND ILLUSTRATIONS

BOSTON
DAMRELL & UPHAM
1902

10340

1552898

TO MY WIFE

A NATIVE OF NEWBURY

AND A DESCENDANT OF HENRY LUNT

ONE OF THE FIRST SETTLERS OF THE TOWN

THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED

PREFACE.

ALTHOUGH Joshua Coffin prepared his history of Newbury, in 1845, with considerable care and minuteness, and George J. L. Colby, in the History of Essex County, in 1878, and Hon. William T. Davis, in a similar work, ten years later, published historical sketches of the town, the reader will find in the following pages some additional facts, with foot-notes and references for the convenience of those who wish to consult the authorities quoted.

My thanks are especially due to Sidney Perley, esq., of Salem, and to Mr. George F. Dow, secretary of the Essex Institute, for advice and assistance in preparing this volume for the press; to Mr. C. W. Ernst, of Boston, for valuable hints and suggestions in regard to the early postal service in Newbury; to Rev. Rufus Emery, Capt. James O. Knapp, and Mr. Oliver B. Merrill, of Newburyport, for interesting genealogical and historical facts; and to Messrs. William Little and Isaac W. Little, of Newbury, for information obtained from town and parish records.

Many of the maps and illustrations in this volume are reproductions of old prints; but most of the views of local scenery were taken expressly for this work by Messrs. Ed-

ward E. Bartlett, William C. Thompson, and Selwyn C. Reed, photographers, of Newburyport.

I have been compelled to leave some of the minor events and incidents in the history of Newbury unnoticed, and have found it absolutely impossible to include valuable papers and documents, relating to the social and commercial life of Newburyport, without increasing the number of pages in this book beyond a reasonable limit. I hope, however, in a few years, to publish in a separate volume the history of Newburyport from its incorporation in 1764 to the present time.

JOHN J. CURRIER.

NEWBURYPORT, December 1, 1902.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

APTER		PAGE
I.	THE EARLY EXPLORERS AND SETTLERS OF NEW ENGLAND,	13
II.	THE SETTLEMENT AT PARKER RIVER, 1635–1645	28
III.	THE SETTLEMENT AT MERRIMACK RIVER, 1645–1685	87
IV.	THE SETTLEMENT AT MERRIMACK RIVER, 1685–1765	194
V.	THE SETTLEMENT AT MERRIMACK RIVER, 1765–1902	269
VI.	CHURCHES AND PASTORS	311
VII.	SCHOOLS AND SCHOOLMASTERS	395
VIII.	HIGHWAYS	413
IX.	FERRIES	431
X.	POSTAL SERVICE	465
XI.	COMMERCIAL AFFAIRS AND SHIP-BUILDING	475
XII.	MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS AND INDIAN WARS	493
XIII.	FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS	514
XIV.	LOUISBOURG, CROWN POINT, AND QUEBEC	547
XV.	REVOLUTIONARY WAR	581
XVI.	SOLDIERS IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR	600
XVII.	THE EMBARGO AND THE WAR OF 1812	620
XVIII.	WAR OF THE REBELLION	631

APPENDIX.

I.	TOWN CLERKS	639
II.	OATH OF ALLEGIANCE TO THE KING	642
III.	KENT'S ISLAND	643
IV.	RICHARD DUMMER	647
V.	CART CREEK	653
VI.	FIRST PARISH MEETING-HOUSE	654
VII.	SECOND PARISH CHURCH	655
VIII.	SCHOOLS AND SCHOOLMASTERS	656

PA
IX. Woodwell's Ship-yard 6
X. Military Organizations during the French and Indian Wars 65
XI. Revolutionary War 661
XII. Physicians in Newbury from the First Settlement of the Town, in 1635, to the Incorporation of Newburyport, in 1764 662
XIII. "Pierce House at the Uper End of Chandler's Lane," 670
XIV. The Sewall House, near "Trayneing Green" . . . 672
XV. Deputies to the General Court 675
Index 689

MAPS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

PLUM ISLAND RIVER AND PARKER RIVER, *Frontispiece*

PAGE

CAPT. JOHN SMITH 16

MAP OF THE SOUTH PART OF NEW ENGLAND, 1634 24

THE LOWER GREEN 37

THE BURYING GROUND 59

FAC-SIMILE TOWN OF NEWBURY RECORDS, 1638 63

MAP OF NEWBURY, MASS., 1640 83

OAK TREE IN "THE GERRISH PASTURE" 130

SAMUEL SEWALL 190

FAC-SIMILE OF THE TITLE-PAGE OF "THE NEW HEAVEN UPON THE NEW EARTH" 192

MAP OF THE MERRIMACK RIVER, 1741 158

A FREEHOLD LOT IN "THE UPPER WOODS" 211

NEWBURY MARSHES 221

DEPUTY GOVERNOR WILLIAM DUMMER 232

MAP OF NEWBURY — PARISH LINES — 1795 239

LANDING PLACE AT PINE ISLAND 263

ROCKS BRIDGE, FROM WEST NEWBURY 278

FIRE ENGINE, 1850 288

MAP OF NEWBURY — BOUNDARY LINES — 1902 308

FAC-SIMILE TITLE-PAGE OF "THE TEMPLE MEASURED," BY REV. JAMES NOYES 312

FAC-SIMILE TITLE-PAGE OF "THE VISIONS AND PROPHECIES OF DANIEL," BY REV. THOMAS PARKER 323

FAC-SIMILE TITLE-PAGE OF A PAMPHLET ENTITLED "A LETTER TO MRS. ELIZABETH AVERY," BY REV. THOMAS PARKER 325

FAC-SIMILE TITLE-PAGE OF "MOSES AND AARON," BY REV. JAMES NOYES 326

PAGE

FAC-SIMILE OF INTRODUCTORY PAGE TO "MOSES AND AARON" . . 327
FAC-SIMILE OF DEDICATION TO "MOSES AND AARON" 329
FIRST PARISH MEETING-HOUSE 346
SECOND PARISH MEETING-HOUSE 363
BYFIELD CONGREGATIONAL MEETING-HOUSE 367
FOURTH PARISH MEETING-HOUSE 380
SCHOOL-HOUSE ON "TRAYNEING GREEN". 409
STONE WALL ON HIGHWAY FROM PARKER RIVER TO "TRAYNEING GREEN" 414
BRIDGE OVER ARTICHOKE RIVER ON THE BRADFORD ROAD . . . 423
FERRY ROUTES, CARR'S ISLAND, 1641, 1655 438
AMESBURY FERRY LANDING PLACE 440
MARCH'S FERRY LANDING PLACE 454
POST-RIDER, 1734 471
STAGE-COACHES, 1793 473
STAGE-COACH, 1820 474
SHAPE AND RIG OF VESSELS, 1800 487
BRIG "OLIVE" FROM A WATER COLOR SKETCH PAINTED IN 1819 . 490
KING PHILIP BY PAUL REVERE 509
CASCO FORT, 1713 525
MAP OF PORT ROYAL, 1744 532
MAP OF THE ISLAND OF CAPE BRETON, 1746 548
SIEGE OF LOUISBOURG, 1745 551
BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE, 1755 558
LAKE GEORGE, TICONDEROGA, AND CROWN POINT 561
GENERAL JAMES WOLFE 577
BRONZE TABLET 594
JOSHUA COFFIN 641
DR. JOHN CLARKE 663
SEWALL HOUSE 673

HISTORY OF NEWBURY.

HISTORY OF NEWBURY.

CHAPTER I.

THE EARLY EXPLORERS AND SETTLERS OF NEW ENGLAND.

For more than a century after the discovery of America by Christopher Columbus, that portion of the continent extending from Newfoundland to Virginia was seldom visited by European explorers, and its rivers and harbors were practically unknown.

In 1602, Capt. Bartholomew Gosnold, in a small ship called the "Concord," sailed from Falmouth, England, well supplied with men and provisions, intending to make a settlement in the New World between the fortieth and fiftieth degrees of north latitude.

Instead of following the usual route by the Canary Islands and the West Indies, he steered directly across the Atlantic, and in seven weeks reached the coast of Maine, in all probability, at or near the point of land now known as Cape Elizabeth. Following the coast in a southerly direction, he anchored at Cape Cod, within a league of the shore, where he found fish in abundance, and gave to that prominent headland the name that it still bears. Continuing his voyage around the cape, he landed at the mouth of Buzzard's Bay; and on an island of the Elizabeth group, now known as Cuttyhunk, he built a fortified house and attempted to plant a colony. A few weeks exposure to the hostility of the Indians, supplemented by serious quarrels and dissensions among the men who were to remain in the new settlement, induced him to abandon the enterprise; and, loading his ship with sassafras root, cedar timber, furs, and other commodities, he re-embarked his whole company, and returned to England. On his

arrival there July 23, 1602, great interest was awakened in the country he had visited; and the merchants of Bristol raised the sum of one thousand pounds sterling for the purpose of sending out another exploring expedition.

April 10, 1603, Martin Pring, in command of two vessels, one fifty and the other twenty-six tons burthen, and a crew of forty-four men and boys, sailed from Milford Haven, and arrived at the mouth of the Penobscot river June seventh. Cruising along the coast to the southward, he entered Massachusetts Bay, and came to anchor in Plymouth harbor, seventeen years before the landing of the Pilgrims.* For six weeks he explored the woods in that neighborhood, where he found sassafras in abundance; and, having loaded his vessels with that fragrant product of the forest, he returned to England, where he arrived October 2, 1603.

Sieur de Monts with Samuel de Champlain sailed from Havre de Grâce April 7, 1604, on a voyage of discovery, and landed on the shores of Nova Scotia May 8, 1604. Together they explored the bay of Fundy, entered and examined Annapolis harbor, and during the following winter found shelter on an island in St. Croix river, where they built a few rude houses and formed a temporary settlement. Continuing their explorations the following summer, they sailed along the coast, and at sunset, July 15, 1605, were near Little Boar's head, with the Isles of Shoals directly east of them. They saw in the distance the dim outline of Cape Ann, whither they directed their course, and before morning came to anchor near its eastern extremity in sixteen fathoms of water. At an early hour the next day Champlain, with a few men taken from his ship's crew, went on shore to confer with the natives and obtain information needed in order to continue his voyage farther south. He drew a map of the coast along which he had sailed. The Indians added to the sketch an accurate outline of Massachusetts Bay, and also inserted the Merrimack river, which he had not seen, its mouth or entrance having been concealed by the low sand-hills of Plum island.†

* Narrative and Critical History of America, vol. iii., p. 174.

† Publications of the Prince Society, 1880. Voyages of Samuel de Champlain, vol. i., p. 51.

Capt. George Weymouth sailed from Dartmouth, England, on Easter Sunday, May 15, 1605; and June 18 he anchored on the north side of the island of Monhegan, at the mouth of Penobscot bay, on the coast of Maine. He afterwards explored the Kennebec river, planting a cross at one of its upper reaches; and, capturing five Indians, he took them by force with him to England on his return.

King James I. ordered in 1606 that the American territory claimed by England should hereafter be known as South Virginia from Cape Fear to the Potomac and North Virginia from the mouth of the Hudson to Newfoundland.

Sir Ferdinando Gorges, having obtained from the king a patent, or grant, of the territory extending from the thirty-eighth to the forty-fifth degree north latitude, attempted to establish a permanent colony at the mouth of the Sagadahoc, now the Kennebec river. On the last day of May, 1607, two small vessels, under the command of Capt. George Popham and Capt. Rawleigh Gilbert, were sent out with men and supplies to begin the new settlement. Early in the month of August following they reached the island of Monhegan, called by them the island of St. George. And there

Sondaye beinge the 9th of August, in the morninge the most part of our holl Company of both our shipes landed on this Illand, the wch we call St. Gerge's Illand whear the crosse standeth; and there we heard a sermon delyvred unto us by our preacher, gyuinge God thanks for our happy metinge and saffe aryvall into the Contry; and so retorned abord aggain.*

The Rev. Richard Seymour, a minister of the Church of England, accompanied the expedition, and, undoubtedly, preached the sermon and read the prayers of this the first religious service conducted by a clergyman within the present limits of New England.

A favorable situation on the peninsula of Sabino, on the west bank of the Sagadahoc river, was selected as the site of the new colony. They built a church, a fort, a storehouse, and some dwellings. During the winter that followed Cap-

* Narrative and Critical History of America, vol. iii., p. 176.



These are the Lines that ſhew thy Face; but thoſe
That ſhew thy Grace and Glory brighter bee:
Thy Faire-Diſcoueries and Fowle-Overthrowes
Of Salvages, much Civillizd by thee
Beſt ſhew thy Spirit; and to it Glory (Wynn
So, thou art Braſſe without, but Golde within
If ſo: in Braſſe, too ſoft ſmiths Acts to beare)
I fix thy Fame, to make Braſſe ſteele out weare

Thine, as thou art Virtues.
John Dauies. Heref:

tain Popham died, and their storehouse was destroyed by fire. In the spring, when a ship came out with supplies, the colonists, discouraged and disheartened by misfortunes and illness, decided to abandon the enterprise and return to England. Subsequently Sir Francis Popham, and others who were interested with him in the fur trade that had been established with the Indians, sent one or more vessels annually to the coast of Maine, and for many years carried on a brisk trade.

In the month of April, 1614, Capt. John Smith, the famous navigator, arrived at Monhegan with two small ships, intending to engage in whale-fishing there; but, finding the conditions unfavorable, he decided to load his vessels for the homeward voyage with codfish and furs. Taking eight men in a small boat, he left the ships, with the rest of the party employed in catching and curing fish, while he cruised along the coast, collecting furs, from the mouth of the Penobscot to Cape Cod. He explored every island, headland, and harbor between the two points named, and made a map of the country, which he published, with his account of the voyage, in London in 1616. This map, although defective in many respects, gave the configuration of the coast with greater accuracy than any map issued from the press previous to that date. The country known to the earlier voyagers as "Norumbega," "North Virginia," or "Canada," he called "New England," a name that it still bears.* To that group of rocky islands now called the Isles of Shoals he gave the name of Smith's Isles, and in his description of New England says, "Smith's Isles are a heape together, none neere them against Accomintycas." The prominent headland known as Cape Ann appears upon the map; and on the northerly side of it, close to the shore, is an unnamed island that twenty years later the first settlers of Newbury named Plum Island.

In his description of this locality, Smith says: "There are many sands at the entrance of the Harbour [of "Angoan"

*"I took the description," he says, "of the coast as well by map as writing, and called it New England. At my humble suit, Charles, Prince of Wales, was pleased to confirm it by that title." Voyages of Capt. John Smith, republished in Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, vol. xxiii., p. 20.

or "Aggawom," now Ipswich] and the worst is, it is embayed too farre from the deepe sea; here are many rising hills, and on their tops and descents are many corne fields and delightfull groues; on the East an Ile of two or three leagues in length [Plum Island] the one halfe plaine marish ground, fit for pasture or salt Ponds, with many faire high groues of mulbery trees and Gardens; there is also Okes, Pines, Walnuts and other wood to make this place an excellent habitation being a good and safe Harbour," from thence "doth stretch into the sea the faire head land" now called Cape Ann, "fronted with three isles," named "the three Turks heads."

Soon after the return of Capt. John Smith to England, new schemes of colonization were zealously advocated. As early as September, 1617, the Pilgrim exiles settled at Leyden, Holland, commenced negotiations for liberty to plant a colony in America. November 11–21, 1620, the "Mayflower" anchored in Provincetown harbor, Cape Cod; and December 11–21 the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth.

Meanwhile the king had granted to Sir Ferdinando Gorges and others a patent covering the territory of North America between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of latitude; and the gentlemen interested in this grant were incorporated as "the Council established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of New England in America." The settlement at Plymouth was included in this grant, and the colonists were subsequently authorized and empowered by the council to take a certain quantity of land and set up a government there. Other portions of this vast territory, imperfectly described and incorrectly bounded, were conveyed to various individuals and corporations, which ultimately led to vexatious disputes and law-suits.

March 9, 1621–2, the president and council granted to Capt. John Mason, under the name of Mariana, "all the land lying along the Atlantic from Naumkeag River to the Merrimack River, and extending back to the heads of those rivers, . . . to geather with the Great Isle or Island henceforth to

be called Isle Mason lying neere or before the Bay, Harbor or y^e^ river Aggawom." *

This grant included nearly all the terrritory within the present limits of the county of Essex, but no settlements were made under it. The patent granted the colony of Massachusetts Bay, several years later, covered the same territory, and added to it the land lying between the Charles and the Naumkeag rivers.

On the tenth day of August, 1622, the Council for New England granted Capt. John Mason and Sir Ferdinando Gorges, jointly, all the land lying between the Merrimack and Sagadahoc (now Kennebec) rivers, extending sixty miles inland and including all islands within five leagues of the shore. With the aid of several wealthy merchants of London a company was organized, under the name of the Laconia Company; and plans were matured for the development of the country and the establishment of a fishing station at the mouth of the Piscataqua river. In the spring of 1623, David Thompson, a Scotchman, with a small company, commenced a settlement there, and erected the first house at a place called Little Harbor.

Capt. Myles Standish, having been sent by the governor of Plymouth Colony "to buy provisions for the refreshing of the colony, returned with the same [July, 1623] accompanied with one Mr. David Tomson, a Scotchman, who also that spring began a plantation twenty-five leagues northeast from us, near Smith's Isles, at a place called Pascatoquack, where he liketh well." †

In 1626, Governor Bradford and Edward Winslow, with some others of Plymouth Colony, were at Little Harbor, and in company with Mr. Thompson visited the settlement at Monhegan, where they purchased from the colonists there, and from a French vessel wrecked near that island, various articles of merchandise valued at five hundred pounds.‡

* Memoir Capt. John Mason, by Charles W. Tuttle, printed by the Prince Society, 1887, p. 173. Felt, in his History of Ipswich (p. 36) says that the great island mentioned in the grant to Captain Mason must have been the island now known as Plum Island.

† "Good Newes from New England," by Edward Winslow. Published in London in 1624. Reprinted in the "Chronicles of the Pilgrims," by Alexander Young, p. 350.

‡ Bradford's History of Plimoth Plantation, printed by order of the General Court of Massachusetts, pp. 251, 252.

At this time there were several small settlements scattered along the New England coast, and trade with the Indians was steadily increasing.

The catching and curing of fish furnished employment for a large number of men and ships. Capt. John Smith, in his account of "New Plimouth," published in 1624, says,

> In 1620 six or seven ships went from the west of England to fish on the Northeastern coast of New England: in 1621 ten or twelve; in 1622 thirty-five; in 1623 about forty; and in 1624 fifty or more.

The Council for New England, desiring to increase the value of its property, decided to distribute to each of its shareholders a certain portion of its territory not otherwise disposed of. The region about Cape Ann, extending probably to the Merrimack river, fell to the lot of Lord Sheffield, who conveyed it by charter January 1, 1623–4, to Robert Cushman and Edward Winslow and their associates of Plymouth Colony, who were authorized to eject any person building or settling there without permission. *

Late in the autumn of 1624 a ship, "caled y^e^ Charitie" arrived at Plymouth with a cargo of provisions and household supplies. She was hastily discharged and sent to Cape Ann, with some of the prominent planters of the colony, who were instructed to build a fishing stage there to be used in the catching and curing of fish.†

More than twelve months previous to that date, the Rev. John White, a Puritan minister of Dorchester, England, with some merchants and other gentlemen of that town, organized a company for the purpose of establishing a colony on the New England coast, where men engaged in fishing, when not otherwise employed, might cultivate the soil or carry on a lucrative trade with the Indians. Cape Ann was selected as a favorable location for the new enterprise; and in the autumn of 1623 fourteen men, from a vessel about to return to England with a full cargo of fish and furs, were landed at or near the present city of Gloucester, and left there to build during the

* Palfrey's History of New England, vol. i., p. 285.

† Bradford's History of Plimoth Plantation, published by order of the General Court of Massachusetts. pp. 190, 202.

winter dwelling-houses, salt-works, and other structures required in the catching and curing of fish. In the spring of 1624 the same vessel arrived at Cape Ann with men and supplies sent out by the Dorchester Company for the encouragement and support of the feeble colony. In the fall of that year, however, Robert Cushman and Edward Winslow having obtained a grant of all the land in that neighborhood, the planters of Plymouth decided to build a fishing stage there. In 1625 the officers and crew of a vessel sent out by the Dorchester Company, "getting y^e^ starte of y^e^ ships that came to the plantation, they tooke away their stage, & other necessary provisions that they [the Plymouth people] had made for fishing at Cap Anne y^e^ year before, and would not restore y^e^ same, excepte they would fight for it. But y^e^ Gov^r^ sent some of y^e^ planters to help y^e^ fishermen to build a new one, and so let them keepe it."*

The Rev. William Hubbard, of Ipswich, in his History of New England, says that the Plymouth people built a fishing stage at Cape Ann in 1624; and when they went there in 1625, to cure fish, they found the stage occupied. Capt. Myles Standish demanded possession of the property but was met with a peremptory refusal.

> The dispute grew to be very hot and high words were passed between them which might have ended in blows, if not in blood and slaughter, had not the prudence and moderation of Mr Roger Conant, at that time there present, and Mr Pierse's interposition, that lay just by with his ship, timely prevented. . . . A little chimney is soon fired; so was the Plymouth captain, a man of very little stature, yet of very hot and angry temper. The fire of his passion soon kindled and blown up into a flame by hot words, might easily have consumed all, had it not been seasonably quenched.†

Subsequently Roger Conant, who had been living at Plymouth, was employed as superintendent of the company at Cape Ann. He sent several cargoes of fish to England, but they were sold at prices barely sufficient to pay the wages of the seamen. He remained in charge of the enterprise for

* Bradford's History of Plimoth Plantation, published by order of the General Court of Massachusetts, p. 237.

† Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Second Series, vol. v., p. 110.

nearly twelve months. At the close of the year 1626 the Dorchester Company decided to sell its ships, abandon the new settlement, and pay for the transportation to England of all who desired to return. Roger Conant and a few of his friends remained, and the following year removed to Naumkeag, the site of the present city of Salem.

March 19, 1627–8, the Council for New England granted Sir Henry Roswell, John Endicott, and others a tract of land extending from a line three miles north of the Merrimack river to a line three miles south of the Charles river, and east and west from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean. September 6, 1628, John Endicott with a small company landed at Naumkeag, where he found Roger Conant, and a few others who had come with him from Cape Ann, comfortably settled, and inclined to resist any attempts to interfere with their rights or privileges. There was much ill feeling, but the questions in dispute were satisfactorily adjusted; and in commemoration of the peaceful measures and methods adopted to bring about the reconciliation the place was called "Salem."

The following year a charter from the king confirmed the grant made to Sir Henry Roswell and his associates, and provided that they and their successors should be and remain a corporation under the name of "the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England." A portion of the land conveyed by this charter had previously been granted to Capt. John Mason, and now forms a part of the State of New Hampshire. A long controversy in regard to the boundary-line, "three miles north of the Merrimac river," has only recently been settled by commissioners appointed by the chief executive officers of the two states mentioned.

The government of the colony in Massachusetts Bay was intrusted to the members of the corporation residing in England, but the question of transferring to the plantation in America the full and complete control of its affairs was carefully considered and discussed during the summer of 1629. Legal advice favorable thereto was obtained and August twenty-ninth of that year it was determined "by the general consent of the Company that the government and patent

should be settled in New England." June 12, 1630, John Winthrop arrived at Salem, bringing the charter with him. Before the close of the year, settlements were made at Charlestown, Dorchester, Boston, Watertown, Roxbury, Mystic (Medford), and Saugus (Lynn). The first court of assistants, afterwards called "the Great and General Court," was held at Charlestown August 23, 1630. At a meeting, held September seventh, it was ordered that no one should settle within the limits of the colony without having first obtained permission from the governor and assistants, and a warrant was issued to command those who had settled at Agawam, now Ipswich, to leave the place. In January, 1633, the court ordered "that a plantation should be begun at Agawam, being the best place in the land for tillage and cattle, lest an enemy, finding it void, should possess and take it from us."*

In the month of March following, John Winthrop, Jr., with Mr. George Carr, who was afterwards appointed to keep the ferry between Newbury and Salisbury, and ten or twelve others, commenced a settlement there. August 5, 1634, the General Court at New Town (Cambridge) "ordered that Aggawam shalbe called Ipswich."

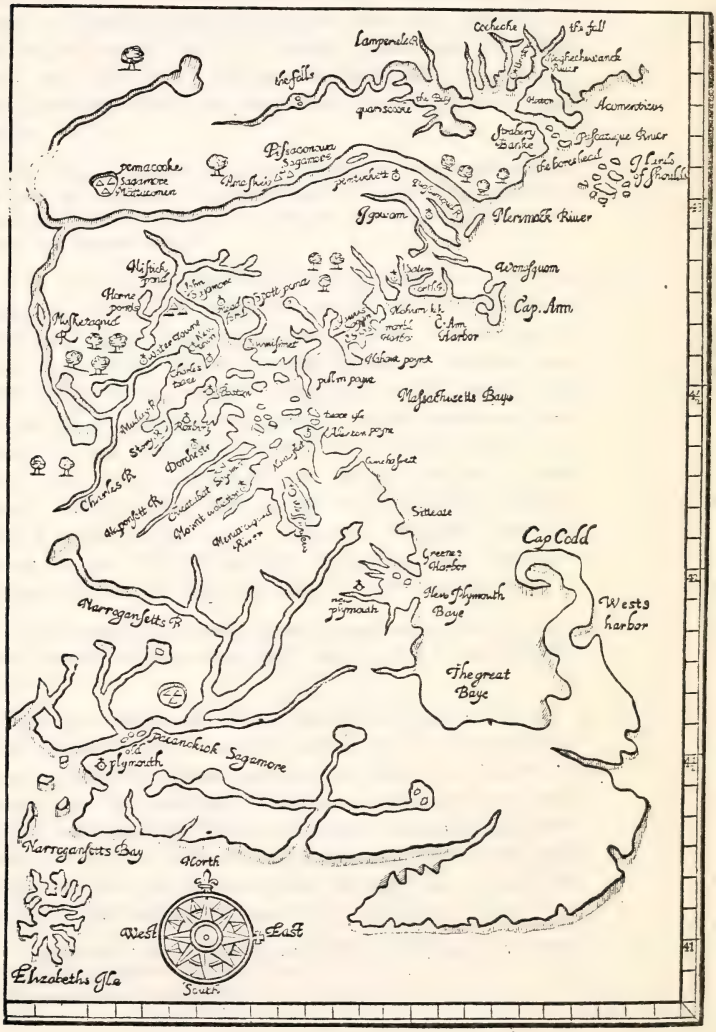
William Wood, author of "New England's Prospect," published in London in 1634, says: —

Agowamme is nine miles to the North from *Salem*, which is one of the most spatious places for a plantation being neare the sea, it aboundeth with fish, and flesh of fowles and beasts, great Meads and Marshes and plaine plowing grounds, many good rivers and harbours and no rattle snakes. In a word, it is the best place but one, which is *Merrimacke*, lying 8 miles beyond it, where is a river 20 leagues navigable: all along the river side is fresh Marshes, in some places 3 miles broad. In this river is Sturgeon, Sammon, and Basse, and divers other kinds of fish. To conclude, the Countrie hath not that which this place cannot yeeld. So that these two places may containe twice as many people as are yet in New *England;* there being as yet scarce any inhabitants in these two spacious places. Three miles beyond the river *Merrimacke* is the outside of our Patent for the *Massachusetts* Bay. These be all the Townes that were begun, when I came for *England*, which was the 15 of August 1633.†

* Winthrop's History, vol. i., pp. 98, 99; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 10.

† "New England's Prospect," reprinted by the Prince Society of Boston, 1865, chap. xi., p. 49.

The South part of New-England, Planted this yeare, 1634.



Although there was no settlement between Ipswich and the boundary line of the colony on the north, it is evident that the land afterwards laid out and incorporated as the town of Newbury was not, even at that early date, an unknown wilderness, while it is equally certain that the "Sammon and Basse" in Merrimack River were a source of revenue to the fishermen who came from many and distant places.

The sturgions be all over the Countrey, but the best catching of them be upon the shoales of *Cape Codde* and in the River of *Mirrimacke* where much is taken, pickled and brought for England, some of them be 12, 14, 18 foote long.*

The map of the coast from Narragansett Bay to "Acomenticus," published in the first edition of "New England's Prospect," and reproduced herewith, gives the location of Cape Ann, Boar's Head, and the "Iland of Shoulds," also the rivers "Quasacunqud," "Piscataque," "Merrimack," and an island, not named, at the mouth of the last-named river, now known as Plum Island. On the southerly bank of the Merrimack river, at or near the easterly end of a small island (evidently Deer Island), the Indian camping ground or fishing station "Pentucket" is located. Possibly, John Winthrop, Jr., may have established a trading house there after the adoption of the following order by the General Court: —

September (3) 1633 There is liberty granted to Mr. John Winthrop Junr, & to his assignes, to sett vpp a trucking howse vpp Merrimack Ryver.†

The map drawn by Capt. John Smith, and published in 1616, gives a fairly accurate outline of the New England coast from Mount Desert to Cape Cod, but does not give the location of the Merrimack, Piscataqua, Saco, and some other large rivers between those two points. Probably they were not seen by the bold and enterprising explorer as he sailed along the shore in a small boat, although he evidently ascended the Kennebec, and named it "The River Forth."‡

* "New England's Prospect," reprinted by the Prince Society of Boston, 1865, chap. ix., p. 37.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 108.

‡ See map in Narrative and Critical History of America, vol. iii., p. 198.

February 28, 1633–4, King Charles I., greatly disturbed by the report that a large number of his disaffected and discontented subjects were about to leave England for the purpose of securing civil and religious liberty beyond the sea, ordered the officers of the crown to detain ten ships, then in the river Thames, until the oath of allegiance to the king could be administered to all persons intending to embark for New England. The masters of the ships were placed under bonds to observe certain rules and regulations, and especially to see that the prayers of the Church of England were read daily on the voyage to the New World.

Matthew Cradock, the first governor of the Massachusetts Company, was summoned to appear before the king and the lords of the Privy Council, and ordered to bring the charter of the company with him. He replied that the charter was in New England. This was probably the first intimation the king had received that the powers and privileges granted the company in London had been transferred to the colony in Massachusetts Bay. Immediate steps were taken to secure a return of the charter, and the appointment of a governor-general to supervise and control the administration of public affairs in New England was strongly urged by the officers of the crown.

At a meeting held "at the Earl of Carlisle's Chamber at Whitehall," April 25, 1635, the Council for New England decided to relinquish all its rights and privileges under the charter granted November 3, 1620, upon condition that the territory, of which a large portion had already been conveyed to various individuals by its own corporate action, should be divided and distributed by lot among the members of the council.

June seventh, the "Great Charter" was surrendered to the king, and the distribution of the land was made in accordance with the terms and condition of the act providing for its repeal.

The council declared that it was compelled "because of many discouragements" to abandon the attempt to rule and govern New England, and attributed its ill success chiefly to

the interference of the charter of the Massachusetts Company, which, it alleged, had been "surreptitiously gotten" in derogation of the rights of Capt. Robert Gorges and others. A writ of *quo warranto* was issued in September, 1635, and served on the members of the company in England. All but Cradock pleaded "not guilty" to the charges brought against them; but, in the opinion of the court they had made use of powers and privileges not granted them in the charter, and were therefore prohibited from intermeddling with its affairs. Cradock was defaulted, convicted of usurpation, and the rights and liberties of the franchise were revoked and restored to the king.

While these proceedings were pending in the Privy Council and law courts of England, the town of Newbury was incorporated by "the Great and General Court of Massachusetts," and the settlement at Parker river began.

CHAPTER II.

THE SETTLEMENT AT PARKER RIVER, 1635–1645.

AMONG the vessels detained in the river Thames by order of the king's Privy Council, February 14, 1633–4, was the ship "Mary and John," Robert Sayres, master.

On the twenty-fourth and twenty-sixth of March following,

William Moudey	Henry Travers
Thomas Sweete	John Woodbridge
Thomas Savery	Christopher Osgood
Phillip Fowler	John Bartlett
Robert Coker	William Savery
John Godfrey	George Browne
Nicholas Noyce	Richard Browne
Richard Littlehall	William White
John Whelyer	William Clarke
Robert Newman	Stephen Jurden
Nicholas Easton	Richard Kent
Abraham Mussey	William Ballard
Matthew Gillett	William Franklin
John Mussey	Thomas Cole
Thomas Parker	James Noyce
John Spencer	William Spencer
Henry Shorte	Richard Kent, Jun
John Newman	Henry Lunt
Thomas Newman	John Anthony

whose names are found among the early settlers of Newbury, and others, took the oath of supremacy and allegiance to the king, and were allowed to sail in the ship for New England.*

They arrived at Boston in the month of May, 1634, and the Rev. Thomas Parker, with most of the persons named in the above list, with their families, to the number of about one

* New England Genealogical and Historical Register, July, 1855, p. 265.

hundred removed to Agawam (Ipswich), where they remained during the following winter.

At the General Court held at Boston, May 14, 1634, deputies or representatives from eight towns in the colony participated in its proceedings. Previous to that date the laws were made and executed by the governor and his assistants without consultation or conference with the freemen; but some controversy having arisen in regard to the abrogation of an order for the "killing of swine, etc.," Governor Winthrop consented to the election of a certain number of deputies annually from each town to aid and assist in the enactment of laws and the administration of justice.

Ipswich was not represented at the General Court held May 14, 1634; but at the session held at Newe Town (Cambridge), March 4, 1634–5, three persons claimed election as deputies from that town. Only one, however, was admitted to membership.

Vpon a certificatt of 5 comissioners, chosen by the Court to consider of the elecon of the deputyes of Ipswich it did appeare to the Court that two of them viz: Mr Easton & Henry Shorte were vnduely chosen, whoe were forthwith dismissed: soe Mr John Spencer onely stands legally elected in the opinion of the Court.*

The territory lying between Ipswich and the Merrimack river was well situated, and covered an area of more than thirty thousand acres of upland and marshland. In the summer of 1634 it had been carefully examined by an agent sent over by "divers gentlemen of Scotland," who "wrote to know whether they might be freely suffered to exercise their presbyterial government amongst us; and it was answered affirmatively that they might."†

In May of that year the Rev. Thomas Parker and his company arrived in Boston; and, in the month of June following, fourteen ships arrived there, bringing passengers and letters.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 135. The persons named in the above certificate were among the first settlers of Newbury.

† Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers, p. 403.

We received letters from a godly preacher, Mr Levinston, a Scotchman in the north of Ireland, whereby he signified that there were many good Christians in those parts resolved to come hither, if they might receive satisfaction concerning some questions and propositions which they sent over.*

September 25, 1634, the General Court ordered "that the Scottishe & Irishe gentlemen w^ch^ intends to come hither shall haue liberty to sitt doune in any place vpp Merrimacke Ryver, not ppossessed by any." †

The company embarked for New England, "but, meeting with manifold crosses," abandoned the enterprise and returned home. Before the failure of the expedition was known, however, the town of Ipswich, in the exercise of its authority over the unoccupied territory still under its control, made the following conditional grant: —

December 29th 1634 Itt is consented unto that John Pirkins, junior, shall build a ware [fish trap] upon the river of Quasycung [now river Parker] and enjoy the profitts of itt, but in case a plantation shall there settle then he is to submitt himself unto such conditions, as shall by them be imposed.‡

The Rev. Thomas Parker and his friends from Wiltshire, England, remained in Ipswich until the following spring, when they applied to the General Court for liberty to settle on the Quascacunquen river.

Some of the chief of Ipswich desired leave to remove to Quascacunquen, to begin a plantation there which was granted them, and it was named Newberry.§

May 6, 1635, the following orders were passed by the General Court: —

Wessacucon is allowed by the Court to be a plantac̃on & it is referd to M^r^ Humfry, M^r^ Endicott, Capt Turner and Capt Traske or any three of them, to sett out the bounds of Ipswich & Wessacuc̃on, or soe much thereof as they can & the name of the said plantac̃on is changed & hereafter to be called Neweberry.

* Winthrop's History (edition 1853), vol. i., p. 160.

† Massachusetts Colony Record, vol. i., p. 129.

‡ See records of the town meeting held in Ipswich, December 29, 1634.

§ Winthrop's History (edition, 1853), vol. i., p. 191.

Farther, it is ordered, that it shal be in the power of the Court to take order that the said plantacon shall receave a sufficient company of people to make a competent towne.*

It is referd to Mr Humfry, Mr Endicott, Capt Turner & Capt Traske to sett out a fferme for Mr Dumer, aboute the falls of Neweberry, not exceeding the quantity of 500 acres, pvided also it be not piuditiall to Neweberry. †

The territory laid out and incorporated as the town of Newbury was included in the grant made to Capt. John Mason, March 9, 1621–2, by the Council for New England; and this territory was again assigned to him February 3, 1634–5, just previous to the dissolution of the company and the surrender of its charter to the king. April 22, 1635, the grant was confirmed by the company; and two deeds, of nearly the same tenor, were executed, conveying to Capt. John Mason and his heirs all that portion of the main land of New England "beginning from the Middle part Nahumkege River & from thence to proceed Eastward along the sea Coast to Cape Ann & round about the same to Pischataqua harbour," etc. These conveyances were subsequently recorded in the Registry of Deeds, York County, Maine, book II., pp. 14–17.‡

Governor Winthrop, and the men associated with him in the administration of public affairs, were evidently anxious to extend the settlement of the colony to its extreme northern limit, in order that they might hold the disputed territory against all claimants under the Mason grant. Vigorous measures were taken to accomplish this result. Most of the passengers who came to New England in the ship "Mary and John" were induced to remove to Newbury early in the year 1635. Tradition asserts that they came by water from Ipswich, and landed on the north shore of the Quascacunquen

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 146. The Indian name "Wessacucon" was sometimes spelled "Wessacumcon." In Winthrop's History of New England, quoted on page 30, it was written "Quascacunquen." In the town records of Ipswich it was "Quasycung," as stated on the preceding page. On the map published in "New England's Prospect," by William Wood, in 1634, "Quascunqud River" is the name given to what is now known as Parker river.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 146.

‡ Certified copies of these conveyances may be found in the Prince Society Publications, "Captain John Mason," pp. 209–215.

(now Parker) river, about two or three hundred rods below the bridge that connects the "Lower Green" with the "Great Neck" and the town of Rowley. They were soon joined by Henry Sewall, Richard and Stephen Dummer, and others, who were interested in stock-raising and actively engaged in the importation of sheep and cattle.

June 3, 1635, two Dutch ships, loaded with horses, heifers, and sheep, arrived at Boston; and the same day the ship "James," three hundred tons burthen, arrived at the same place with cattle and passengers.* The last-named vessel sailed from Southampton, England, about the fifth of April, 1635, and is said to have delivered her cargo in good order and condition. Among her passengers were

Thomas Browne	of Malford,	weaver.
Hercules Woodman	" "	mercer.
Thomas Colman	" Marlborough	husbandman.
Anthony Morse	" "	shoemaker.
William Morse	" "	"
Nicholas Batt	" Devyes	linen weaver.
John Knight	" Romsey	taylor.
Richard Knight	" "	"
Nicholas Holt	" "	tanner.
John Emery	" "	carpenter.
Anthony Emery	" "	"
John Pike	" Langford	laborer.
John Musselwhite	" "	"
† Anthony Thetcher	" Sarm̄ (Salisbury)	taylor.

Most of the persons named in the above list came to Newbury soon after their arrival at Boston; and, July 8, 1635,

* Winthrop's History (edition, 1853), vol. i., pp. 191, 192.

† New England Genealogical and Historical Register, October, 1860, p. 333. In a foot-note on page 196, vol. i. of Winthrop's History, Anthony Thacher and Mr. Avery are said to have come to New England in the ship "James"; but in the list printed in the Genealogical Register and quoted above, Mr. Avery's name does not appear. It is also stated that his baptismal name was John; and in Book III., Part Second, Chap. ii., of Mather's "Magnalia," there is an account of "the death of Mr. John Avery." This is evidently an error. In the records of the General Court, vol. i., p. 154, under date of September 1, 1635, he is called Mr. Joseph Avery, and Mr. Anthony Thacher is appointed administrator of his estate. In the inventory of personal property signed by Mr. Thacher, a few weeks later, "Joseph" is given as the baptismal name; and "Richard Knight, Nicholas Holt & John Knight, all three of Newburry," are mentioned as witnesses to a debt said to be due the estate from John Emery.

Young's Chronicles of Massachusetts, chap. xxiii., p. 485, and Increase Mather's "Remarkable Providences," chap. i., give the details of the terrible shipwreck at Cape Ann, August 14, 1635,

the General Court ordered "that there shall be a convenient quantity of land sett out by Mr Dumer and Mr Bartholemewe, within the bounds of Newbury, for the keeping of the sheepe and cattell that came over in the Dutch shipps this yeare, and to belong to the owners of said cattell." *

This joint stock-raising enterprise met with many discouragements, and after a few months' trial was reluctantly abandoned. November 3, 1635, the General Court passed the following order: —

Whereas Thomas Coleman hath contracted with Sr Richard Saltonstall & dyvers other gentlem in England & here for the keepinge of certaine horses, bulls & sheepe in a gen'all stocke, for the space of three yeares, & nowe, since his comeing hither, hath bene exceeding necligent in discharging the trust committed to him, absenting himselfe for a longe tyme, from the said cattell, as also neclecting to provide howseing for them, by reason whereof many of said cattell are dead already, & more damage like dayly to accrue to the said gentlem, it is therefore ordered, that it shal be lawfull for the said gentlem to devide the oates & hay provided for the said cattell amongst themselves & soe euery one to take care of their owne cattell for the winter.†

At this time the colony of Massachusetts Bay was greatly disturbed by the mutilation or defacement of the national ensign by the order of Capt. John Endicott. The Court of Assistants met at the house of Thomas Dudley, governor, No-

which resulted in the loss of Mr. Avery, his wife, six children, and all who were on board the vessel, except Mr. Thacher and his wife.

Mr. Avery was a minister, and cousin to Anthony Thacher, who was a tailor from Salisbury, England. They came to Newbury soon after the incorporation of the town; but, being strongly urged to go to Marblehead, they embarked with their families at Ipswich in a small pinnace, and during a terrific storm were dashed upon the rocks, and the crew, with all the passengers except two, were drowned. The place where this catastrophe occurred was called "Thacher's Woe" (now Thacher's Island) and "Avery his Fall" (now Avery's Rock). The "Swan Song of Parson Avery," by John G. Whittier, describing the shipwreck and the storm, closes with these lines: —

> "There was wailing on the mainland, from the rocks of Marblehead;
> In the stricken church of Newbury the notes of prayer were read;
> And long, by board and hearthstone, the living mourned the dead.
>
> "And still the fishers outbound, or scudding from the squall,
> With grave and reverent faces, the ancient tale recall,
> When they see the white waves breaking on the Rock of Avery's Fall."

"March 9, 1636–7 Mr Anthony Thacher had granted him the small iland at the head of Cape Ann (vpon wch hee was p'served from shipwrack) as his pp inheritance." Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 191.

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 149. †Ibid., p. 155.

vember 27, 1634, "to advise about the defacing of the cross in the ensign at Salem."

The magistrates agreed to write to Mr. Downing in England, expressing their disapprobation of the act and their purpose to punish the offenders, "with as much wariness as we might, being doubtful of the lawful use of the cross in an ensign." *

January 19, 1634–5, all the ministers except Mr Ward of Ipswich, met at Boston, being requested by the governour and assistants, to consider of these two cases: 1. What we ought to do if a general governour should be sent out of England? 2. Whether it be lawful for us to carry the cross in our banners? In the first case, they all agreed, that, if a general governour were sent, we ought not to accept him, but defend our lawful possessions, (if we were able); otherwise to avoid or protract. For the matter of the cross, they were divided, and so deferred it to another meeting.†

At a meeting of the General Court held at New Towne (Cambridge), March 4, 1634–5,

Mr Endicott was called to answer for defacing the cross in the ensign; but because the court could not agree about the thing, whether the ensigns should be laid by, in regard that many refuse to follow them, the whole cause was deferred till the next general court; and the commissioners for military affairs gave order, in the meantime, that all the ensigns should be laid aside.‡

At the General Court held May 6, 1635, the town of Newbury was incorporated; and the same day a committee was appointed "to consider the act of Mr Endicott, in defacing the col'rs & to reporte to the Court howe farre they judge it sensurable."§

Mr. John Spencer, a deputy from Ipswich, who was one of the first settlers of Newbury, served on this committee, which was composed of one member from each town, nine in all, and four additional elected by the Court of Assistants. This committee reported, after a few hours' deliberation, that a great offence had been committed, that it was done with-

* Winthrop's History (edition 1853), vol. i., p. 179.

† Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 183. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 186.

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 145.

1552898

out the advice or consent of the General Court, and that John Endicott should be admonished and disabled from holding public office for one year, "declining any heavier sentence because they were persuaded he did it out of tenderness of conscience, and not of any evil intent." *

The following year Thomas Milward, mate of the ship "Hector," then in Boston harbor, denounced the colonists as rebels and traitors because they did not display the king's colors at the fort on Castle Island. For this offence he was seized and brought before the General Court and committed for trial. But the next day, having signed the following certificate, he was released, and subsequently came to Newbury, where he lived for many years: —

Whereas I, Thom: Millard, have given out most false & repchfull speaches against his māties loyall & faithfull subjects dwelling in the Massachusetts Bay, in America, saying that they were all traytors & rebells & that I would affirme so much before the Govenor himselfe, wch expressions I do confes (& so desire may bee conceived) did pceed from the rashnes & distemper of my owne braine, wthout any just ground or cause so to thinke or speake, for wch, my vnworthy & sinfull carriage being called in question, I do justly stand committed; my humble & [] request yrfore is yt vpon ys my free & ingenious recantation of ys my grosse failing it would please ye Govenor & ye rest of ye assistants to accept of this my humble submission, to passe by my fault & to dismisse me frō further trouble; & ys, my free & volentary confession I subscribe wth my hand ys 9th June 1636.

THOMAS MILLERD.†

Notwithstanding this acknowledgment of submission on the part of Thomas Milward, it is evident that the governor and his Court of Assistants were somewhat uneasy for fear their conduct might give offence to the king. Some captains in the harbor of Boston being consulted upon the subject,

They answered, that, in regard that they should be examined upon their return, what colors they saw here, they did desire that the king's colors might be spread at our fort. It was answered that we had not the king's colors. Thereupon two of them did offer them freely to us. We replied that for our part we were fully persuaded, that the cross in the ensign was idolatrous, and therefore might not set in our ensign;

* Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 189. † Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 178.

but because the fort was the king's and maintained in his name, we thought that his own colors might be spread there. So the governour accepted the colors of Capt. Palmer, and promised they should be set up at Castle Island.*

During the summer of 1635, while the excitement caused by the defacing of the colors and the failure to re-elect Endicott, a member of the Court of Assistants, was at its height, the work of clearing and preparing the soil for cultivation was prosecuted with undisturbed vigor in the settlement at Parker river, Newbury. House lots, planting lots, and meadow lots were granted and laid out according to the rule established in London by the company organized for the encouragement of emigration and the development of the resources of the colony in Massachusetts Bay. A house lot of four acres, with the right of pasturage, was assigned to the poorest settlers; fifty acres were allotted to every person who paid for his own transportation to New England; two hundred acres to every one contributing fifty pounds to the common stock; and a larger or smaller number to other cash contributors in proportion to the amount invested by them. Dwelling-houses were erected, and a church organized (the tenth in the colony) "in the open air, under a tree" that stood on the north bank of the Parker river, at or near the Lower Green. The Rev. Thomas Parker was chosen pastor, and the Rev. James Noyes, teacher. Prudential men — afterward called "the seven men" and "the selectmen" — were elected to attend to the ordinary business affairs of the town. The population steadily increased in numbers and improved, slowly, in worldly condition. Only two months after the incorporation of the town it was called upon to assess and collect its proportion of a tax of two hundred pounds levied by the General Court, one-half of this tax to be paid at once, and the other half before the next meeting of the General Court.†

Richard Dummer was a member of the Court of Assistants from Roxbury, and John Spencer was a deputy from Ipswich, at the time this tax was levied, July 8, 1635. The same day

* Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 224. † Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 149.



THE LOWER GREEN.

the General Court granted liberty "to Mr Dumer & Mr Spencer to builde a myll & a weire att the falls of Neweberry, to enioy the said myll & weire, with such preuilidges of ground & tymber as is expressed in an agreemt betwixte them & the towne to enioy to them & their heires foreuer." *

This mill was probably erected in 1636, although evidently not completed until two or three years later.† In 1637, Richard Dummer and John Spencer, with more than sixty other followers of Mrs. Anne Hutchinson and the Rev. John Wheelwright, were condemned and disarmed for holding erroneous religious opinions. Vexed and humiliated by this arbitrary act of the General Court, they decided to abandon their business enterprises in Newbury, and seek a more congenial dwelling-place elsewhere. They evidently sailed for England at the first convenient opportunity. Mr. Spencer died in London previous to 1648. Mr. Dummer apparently returned to Newbury in 1638, bringing his wife and family.‡ He probably found it advisable to pursue this course in order to avoid great pecuniary loss, and thereafter seems to have suppressed his own personal views and opinions on religious matters so far as possible, and submitted quietly to the laws and orders passed and approved by the General Court.

He made an agreement with Edward Woodman, Edward Rawson, John, Knight, and Richard Brown that was entered upon the records of the town of Newbury, August 6, 1638, which reads as follows: —

It is agreed wth Mr Richard Dummer of Newbury by the psons whose names are hereunto subscribed that in case Mr Dummer doe make his

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 149. † Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 234.

‡ Among the passengers in the ship "Bevis," 150 tons, from Southampton for New England, May, 1638, were

"Richard Dumer of New England	aged	40
Alce Dumer	"	35
Thomas Dumer	"	19
Joane Dumer	"	19
Jane Dumer	"	10
Stephen Dumer Husbandman (probably)		29
Dorothee Dumer		6
Richard Dumer		4
Thomas Dumer		27"

— Massachusetts Historical Collections, Third Series, vol. x., p. 145.

mill fitt to grynd corne & doe so maintayne the same, as also doe keepe a man to attend the grynding of corne, then they for their pts will send thither all the corne that they shall have ground; & doe likewise pmise that all the rest of the Toune (if it lye in their power to p'cure the same) shall also bring their corne from tyme to tyme to be ground at the said mill; and it is further agreed that (the 'fore menc'oned condic'on being observed by Mr Dummer) there shall not any other mill be erected wthin the said Toune.

The exact location of the meeting-house, built probably during the summer of 1635, is somewhat uncertain. It was probably erected on the triangular lot of land now known as the Lower Green, or, possibly, a hundred rods farther north, at or near the burying-place mentioned in the grant to John Emery May 18, 1647.* At all events, the houses of the first settlers of Newbury were in that immediate vicinity; and the General Court ordered, September 6, 1635, that "noe dwelling howse shalbee builte above halfe a myle from the meeting howse in any newe plantacon, granted att this Court, or hereafter to be granted, without leaue from the court, (except myll howses & fferme howses of such as have their dwelling howses in some towne), Ipswch, Hingham, Newberry & Waymothe to be included in this order." †

This law, though oppressive and annoying, was strictly enforced until May 13, 1640, when it was repealed.

The boundary line between Ipswich and Newbury was settled and agreed upon by special committees appointed for that purpose: —

Sept. 3, 1635. John Winthrop Senr & John Humfry, Esq. are intreated by the court to vewe the bounds of Ipswch & Neweberry, & to informe the nexte court howe they may conveniently be bounded.‡

March 3, 1635–6. It is referd to John Humfry, Esq & Capt Turner to sett out the bounds betwixte Salem & Ipswch & betwixte Ipswch & Newberry, before midsumer, nexte, as also to vewe & informe the nexte Gen'all Court if there may not be another towne conveniently setled betwixte them; & it is agreed, that the bounds of the said townes shall run sixe myles apeece into the country.§

* See "Ould Newbury," p. 24.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 157.

‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 159. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 167.

The General Court also licensed Francis Plumer to keep an ordinary, and authorized "Mr Dumer to sweare a constable at Neweberry." * At the same session, September 3, 1635, the General Court "ordered, that the high wayes betwixte Ipswch & Saugus & betwixte Ipswch & Neweberry, shalbe mended by the inhabitants of the townes, where they are, before the next p'ticular court." †

A tax was also levied, to be paid the treasurer of the colony before the next session of the court. The amount assessed upon

	£	s	d		£	s	d
Newbury was	7.	10.	00	Waymothe	4.	00.	00
Ipswch	14.	00.	00	Hingham	6.	00.	00
Salem	16.	06.	00	Meadford	9.	15.	00
Saugus	11.	00.	00	Boston ‡	25.	10.	00

March 3, 1635–6, the General Court "ordered, that there shalbe three hundred pounds levyed out of the seu'all plantacons for public uses." §

Of this amount, Newbury was called upon to pay the sum of £11 5s.; Ipswich, £25; Boston, £37 10s.; etc. §

For the admistration of justice and the enforcement of the laws, civil and criminal courts were established in the colony; and March 3, 1635–6, the General Court "ordered that there shall be ffoure courts kept eury quarter: 1. att Ipswch to which Neweberry shall belonge; 2. att Salem, to wch Saugus shall belonge; 3. att Newe Towne to wch Charlton, Concord, Meadford & Waterton shall belonge; 4th. att Boston to wch Rocksbury, Dorchestr, Weymothe & Hingham shall belonge." ‖

The governor, deputy governor, and members of the Court of Assistants were elected by the "freemen" of the colony, who were required by law to meet, annually, in the month of May at the General Court for that purpose. Those living in towns remote from Boston finding this law burdensome and oppressive, the court ordered March 3, 1635–6,

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 159. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 160.
‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 158. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 164. ‖ Ibid., vol. i, p. 169.

That the Geñall Court, to be holden in May nexte, for the elecc̃on of Magistrates &c shalbe holden att Boston, & that the townes of Ipswch, Neweberry, Salem, Saugus, Waymothe, & Hingham shall have libertie to stay soe many of their ffreemen att home, for the safty of their towne, as they judge needeful & that the saide ffreemen that are appoyneted by the towne to stay att home shall have liberty for this court to send their voices by pxy.*

At the General Court held in Boston May 25, 1636, Sir Henry Vane was elected governor, and John Winthrop, deputy governor.

The ffreemen of Neweberry are ffined vid a peece for chusing & sending to this court a deputy wch was noe ffreeman. †

"Mr Dudley, Mr Dum̃er, Mr Bradstreete, Mr Saltonstall & Mr Spencer" were appointed magistrates for the county courts for Ipswich and Newbury, and "Mr Dum̃er" was chosen treasurer of the colony "for this year nexte ensueing & till a newe be chosen." ‡

May 17, 1637, John Winthrop was elected governor, and Thomas Dudley, deputy governor. Among those who were made freemen at Newe Towne (Cambridge) that day, and took the oath established by order of the General Court, were:

Edmond Marshall	John Bartlet
Henry Seawall Junior	Robert Pike
Nicholas Holt	Thomas Coleman
Nicholas Noise	John Cheney
Archelaus Woodman	Thomas Parker
James Browne	

In the year 1635, the Election was held at Cambridge: so twas again May 17, 1637, upon the Plain in the open Aer. Govr Vane was there, and had the Mortification to see the excellent John Winthrop preferd before him, and chosen Governour (who had been Governour 1630–1–2–3). Indeed Mr Vane seemed to stand so hard for being chosen again, as to endeavor to confound and frustrat the whole business of the Election, rather than that he himself should fail of being chosen. There was a great struggle, he being the principal Magistrate, for managing the Election. My father has told me many a time that he and others went on foot from Newbury to Cambridge, fourty miles, on purpose to be made

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 166.

† Ibid., vol. i., p. 174. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 175.

free, and help to strengthen Govr Winthrop's Party. And I find his name in the Record accordingly.*

WINNACUNNET.

In order to hasten the settlement of the territory supposed to be within the jurisdiction of the colony of Massachusetts bay, the General Court ordered, March 3, 1635–6, "that there shalbe a plantacõn settled att Wenicunnett & that Mr Dumer & Mr John Spencer shall have power to presse men to builde a howse forthwth in some convenient place; & what money they lay out aboute it shalbe repaide them againe out of the treasury, or by those that come to inhabite there." †

"Winnacunnett" was afterwards called Hampton; ‡ and the house ordered by the General Court was probably erected not far from the boundary line that now divides the towns of Seabrook and Hampton Falls, N. H. It was evidently on the path or way leading from Newbury to Piscataqua (now Portsmouth), and for many years was known as the "Bound House," although it was undoubtedly intended as a mark of possession, rather than of limit, by the colony of Massachusetts bay.

At a later date, however, when the colony was urging its claim to a large portion of the territory now included in the state of Maine, Robert Carr, Samuel Mavericke, and George Cartwright, commissioners from King Charles II., replied, July 16, 1665, in answer to this claim:—

> The fixing, nameing, and owning a Bound house 3 large miles north from Merrimack River about 12 yeares together, by the corporation of Massachusetts (after the fixing of which Bound house many other patents were granted by the Council of Plymouth & by the King,) must necessarily determine the limits of the said Corporation, and answer all the false and fraudulent expositions of their Charter. §

The disputed claim was finally settled by an act of Parliament creating the Province of New Hampshire, and restraining the colony of Massachusetts from exercising its authority over the towns of Portsmouth, Dover, Exeter, and Hampton.

* Samuel Sewall's Letter Book, vol. i., p. 295.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 167. ‡ September 4, 1639.

§ Provincial Papers of New Hampshire, vol. i., p. 249.

March 9, 1636–7, the Rev. John Wheelwright was adjudged "guilty of contempt and sedition" by the General Court; and, November 2, 1637, he was disfranchised and ordered to depart beyond the jurisdiction of the colony within fourteen days. The same day the inhabitants of Newbury received a conditional grant of Winnacunnet, and those who removed there within one year were to have "three years imunity," beginning March 1, 1637–8.* Mr. Wheelwright, after his banishment, "settled just beyond the Bound House," and subsequently bought of the Indians a tract of land thirty miles square, extending from three miles north of the Merrimack to the Piscataqua river, and including Winnacunnet.

Richard Dummer, John Spencer, and Nicholas Easton were supposed to sympathize with the Rev. John Wheelwright in his religious opinions; and, November 20, 1637, they were ordered to deliver up to the constable of Newbury their "guns, swords, pistols, powder, shot, and match." Soon after the promulgation of this order, Mr. Dummer and Mr. Spencer went to England; but Mr. Easton evidently remained in Newbury, although he had asked and obtained liberty to remove beyond the jurisdiction of the colony. March 12, 1637–8, the General Court, having information that he and others who had been disarmed intended only to withdraw themselves for a season, in order to avoid the censure of the court, ordered them to depart according to the license given them.

Mr. Easton had probably been employed as architect or superintendent of the workmen "pressed" by Mr. Dummer and Mr. Spencer to build the house at Winnacunnett, and was doubtless well acquainted with the agricultural resources and advantages of that locality.† When he found, by order of the General Court, that he must remove from Newbury, he decided to go to Winnacunnet and settle there. His plans, however, were frustrated by the adoption of a peremptory order, May 16, 1638, "that the magistrates of Ipswich shall have power to discharge M^r Eason & M^r Geoffry fro^m build-

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 205.

† Belknap's History of New Hampshire, vol. i., p. 38.

ing at Winnacunnet & if they will not take warning, to cleare the place of y^m." *

Whether the magistrates of Ipswich were obliged to use force in order to "cleare the place of ym" is unknown; but it is certain that Nicholas Easton was soon after in Rhode Island, where he resided until his death. He was governor of that state in the years 1672 and 1673.

Although the inhabitants of Newbury were granted in November, 1637, the privilege of removing to Winnacunnet, no effort was made on their part to obtain possession of that territory until the autumn of 1638, when a petition signed by a number of Newbury men was presented to the General Court for confirmation of the grant and for liberty to begin a settlement there. At the session held in Boston, September 6, 1638,

The Court grants that the petitionesr M^r Steven Bachiler, Christo: Hussey, Mary Hussey, *vidua*, Thom: Crumwell, Samuel Skullard, John Osgood, John Crosse, Samu: Greenfield, John Molton, Tho: Molton, Willi: Eston, Willi: Palmer, Willi: Sergant, Rich^rd Swayne, Willi: Sanders, Rob^rt Tucke, w^th diverse others shall have liberty to begin a plantation at Winnacunnet: & M^r Bradstreete, M^r Winthrope Junior & M^r Rawson, or some two of them, are to assist in setting out the place of the towne, & apportioning the severall quantity of land to each man, so as nothing shalbee done therein w^thout alowance from them, or 2 of them.†

Some of the petitioners, with others whose names are unknown, availed themselves of the privileges granted by this order, and during the winter and spring removed thither in such numbers that the General Court acknowledged and declared, June 6, 1639,

Winnacunnet is alowed to bee a towne, & hath power to choose a cunstable & other officers, & make orders for the well ordering of their towne, & to send a deputy to the Court, & Christo: Hussey, Willi: Palmer & Rich'd Swaine to end all businesses vnder 20^shs for this yeare; the laying out of land to bee by those expressed in the former order.‡

Edward Rawson, one of the committee appointed to lay out the land at Winnacunnet, was a deputy to the General

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 231.
† Ibid., vol. i., p. 236. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 259

Court from Newbury. The Rev. Stephen Bachiler had been a minister at Saugus (Lynn) for several years; but, in consequence of some contention among the people there, he removed to Ipswich, then to Cape Cod, and then to Newbury, where he was living in 1638. His son-in-law, Christopher Hussey, probably came to Newbury twelve months earlier. After the incorporation of Winnacunnet Mr. Bachiler and Mr. Hussey disposed of their real estate in Newbury, and acknowledgment of the same was entered upon the records as follows: —

It was acknowledged by Mr Richard Dumer and William Wakefield* being authorized by Mr Stephen Bachelour and Christopher Hussey to have sold both theyr house Lotts and arable lands, meadows, marsh, orchard, fences, priviledges & comons and Whatsoever Rights they had to any Lands in the Towne of Newbury for and in consideration of six score pounds already paid. I say they did acknowledge to have full power to sell it unto Mr John Oliver of Newbury to remaine abide and continue to him and his heyrs forever June 5th 1639 as by a bill of sale doth appeer bearing the same date and subscribed by Mr Stephen Bachelour & William Wakefield.†

Witness EDWARD WOODMAN & RICHARD LOWLE.

The path from Newbury through the woods of Winnacunnet to the settlement on the Piscataqua river was the scene of a terrible crime. Soon after the "Bound House" was built in 1636, the General Court ordered the constable of Newbury, June 6, 1637, to arrest William Schooler and bring him to Ipswich court. William Schooler was a vintner from London.

He lived with another fellow at Merrimack, and there being a poor maid at Newbury, one Mary Sholy, who had desired a guide to go with her to her master, who dwelt at Pascataquack, he inquired her out, and agreed for fifteen shillings, to conduct her thither. But, two days after, he returned and, being asked why he returned so soon, he answered that he had carried her within two or three miles of the place and then she would go no farther. Being examined for this by the magistrates, at Ipswich, and no proof found against him he was let go.‡

* The first town clerk of Winnacunnet.

† Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 48.

‡ Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 289.

Nearly six months after his release the body of Mary Sholy was found by an Indian in a thick swamp ten miles from the place where he said he had left her. He was again arrested, and arraigned on the charge of murder. He told many contradictory stories. "He said he went by Winicowett House, which he said stood on the contrary side of the way." He denounced his accusers, and solemnly declared his innocence; but the "Quarter Courte," held at Boston on the nineteenth day of September, 1637, adjudged him guilty.* He was hung at Boston September 28, 1637. "Yet there were some ministers, and others, who thought the evidence not sufficient to take away his life." †

TOWN RECORDS AND TOWN OFFICERS.

The records of the town of Newbury previous to the year 1637 are exceedingly meagre and incomplete. Many leaves are missing from the first volume; and on the pages that remain votes and grants are recorded without order, and often without dates. The day of the week or month is sometimes given when figures used to designate the calendar year are wanting. A careful inspection of these entries is necessary in order to determine, even approximately, when the recorded events took place. After the election of Edward Rawson as town clerk in 1638, the records are fuller and more comprehensive, and dates are given with more regularity and exactness. For many years the books containing these valuable and important records were neglected and shamefully defaced, but recently they have been repaired and rebound under the direction of the selectmen of Newbury.

March 3, 1635–6, the management of local affairs in the various towns of the colony was intrusted to the freemen of the several towns by the General Court. They were authorized to dispose of land and wood belonging to the town; to make orders not repugnant to the laws and orders established by the General Court; to impose fines and penalties, not ex-

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 202.

† Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 290.

ceeding twenty shillings, for disobedience of those orders; and to choose constables, surveyors of highways, and other officers necessary for the supervision of town affairs.

John Woodbridge was undoubtedly the first town clerk of Newbury; but there is no record of his election, and his signature is not affixed to the votes and grants that are supposed to be in his handwriting. He was, however, legally elected to the office previous to November 30, 1636, and was superseded by Edward Rawson in 1638, as appears by the following votes: —

It is likewise agreed that the order made the 30th of the 9th mo 1636 that John Woodbridge should bee freed from all rates and payments while he is the towne Register, is now by his owne free consent repealed, the annuall stipend of 5£ remaining still according to former order.*

Nov. 19, 1638. It was ordered that Edward Rawson shall supply the place of Mr Woodbridge & be the publicke Notary and Register for the towne of Newbury & whilst he so remains to be allowed by the towne after the rate of £5 per annum for his paynes.*

In order to avoid calling the freemen together on unimportant occasions, "seven men" were chosen or selected to attend to the ordinary business affairs of the town. These "seven men," or selectmen, as they are now called, were elected quarterly, and were required to render an account of their service to the freemen of the town once in three months. "On the 8th day of the 8th month" [1637?] the seven men previously elected to manage the affairs of the town made a report which was accepted and approved.

It was likewise desired by the generall consent that the same persons, to witt, Edward Woodman, Jo. Woodbridge, Henry Short, Christopher Hussey, Richard Kent, Richard Browne, & Richard Knight, who were chosen by papers to perform the same service for one quarter longer & to labor in the case according to what ye Lord shall direct, to do according to what is prescribed.*

"The 5th of the 11th mo" [1637?] the whole body of freemen met, and examined the accounts of the seven men "from the 8th of the 8th mo," and approved the same.

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Edward Woodman, Jo: Woodbridge, Hen: Short, Rich. Kent, Rich. Browne, William Moody & Jo: Pike, Jun. were chosen by papers & desired to manage the towne affairs for one whole quarter & till new be chosen, & to do their endeavors according to what is prescribed.*

April 6, 1638. The towne being mett together did freely consent to the acts made & registered the last quarter & the seven men were discharged.*

On the same day, Mr Rawson, Mr Woodman, Jo: Woodbridge, Henry Short, Jo: Knight, Rich. Knight & Rich. Browne were chosen & deputed by the towne, for one whole quarter, & till new be chosen.*

July 6, 1638. It is ordered for the present that there shall bee but five men deputed to the publick manageing of the towne busynesses for this quarter next ensuing.

Mr Woodman, Mr Rawson, Abrah: Toppin, Rich: Browne, & John Knight were chosen for one whole quarter & till new bee chosen.*

Subsequently, however, six and sometimes eight men were elected to manage the business affairs of the town; but at a still later date the number was reduced to three, and the term of service lengthened from three months "to one whole yeere."

The earliest records relating to constables, surveyors of highways, and lot layers are as follows: —

April 19, 1638. John Knight & James Browne were chosen constables for one whole yeere & till new bee chosen & Rich. Browne the last constable is discharged.*

It was likewise ordered that the constables for the time being shall have halfe their rates abated, in consideration of their paines.*

John Baker & Nicholas Holt were chosen surveyors of the highwayes for one whole yeere & till new bee chosen & Henry Shorte is discharged.*

April 21, 1638. It is ordered that all land all ready granted shall be laid out about the midst of the next mo, May, begining the 16th day of the say'd mo & so continuing till it be done. And that all the seven men shall goe along with the lotters for advice.*

July 23, 1638. Henry Short & Rich. Kent were released from being lott layers.*

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

The towne hath appoynted Rich. Knight & Thomas Coleman to be lott layers in their roomes to lay out lands & to attend upon the same for any man that hath a lawful grant of land, upon 3 days warning.*

Dec. 22, 1645. Thomas Coleman having taken a farme so that he cannot attend to lay out lotts, John Pemberton was appointed lott layer in his roome and to joyne with Richard Knight and to have four pence per acre and what they are not paid for the towne is to see them satisfyed for, the legall means being first used to obtayne it.*

ADMISSION OF INHABITANTS.

In October [1637?], Richard Singleterry, William Palmer, John Moulton, William Easton, Thomas Moulton, Nicholas Busbee, and Abraham Toppan were received as inhabitants of the town of Newbury.

Abraham Toppan being licensed by John Endicott, esqr. to live in this jurisdiction was received into the towne of Newberry as an inhabitant thereof and hath heere promised under his hand to be subject to any lawful order, that shall be made by the towne.*

ABRAHAM TOPPAN.

It was ordered in a lawfull meeting November the 5th [1637] that who soeuer is admitted into the towne of Newberry as an inhabitant thereof shall have the consent & approbation of the body of the ffreemen of the sayd towne.*

A written obligation, similar to the one printed above was signed by each person receiving the approbation of the freemen, and entered upon the records of the town.

TOWN MEETINGS.

For several years after the incorporation of the town the freeholders and inhabitants were accustomed to assemble as often as once in three months for the transaction of public business, and every person entitled to vote was expected to be present at the time and place appointed.

February 24, 1637–8. It was voted that Thomas Cromwell, Samuel Scullard, John Pike, Robert Pike and Nicholas Holt, are fined two shillings and sixpence apiece for being absent from towne meeting at eight o'clock in the morning, having due and fitt warning.*

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

April 21, 1638. Henry Short, John Cheney, Francis Plumer, Nicholas Noyes and Nicholas Holt are fined two shillings and sixpence apiece for being absent from the towne meeting, having lawful warning. *

ffrancis Plumer & Jo: Cheney having sufficient excuse for their absence had their fines remitted.*

Rules were adopted, providing for the prompt and orderly transaction of business; and those who neglected or violated these rules were liable to a fine. Every freeholder speaking in town meeting was required to stand up, take off his hat, address the moderator in respectful language, and resume his seat again at the close of his speech. No one, unless excused by special vote, could leave the meeting until the business for which it was called together was completed and the meeting adjourned.

May 5, 1638. It is ordered that John Pike shall pay two shillings and sixpence for departing from the meeting without leave and contemptuously. *

Notwithstanding the fines and penalties imposed, there seems to have been considerable confusion at several subsequent meetings, which led to the adoption of the following order, July 6, 1638: —

Whereas there hath bin notice taken of much disorder in publick towne meeting by reason of divers speaking at one and the same time, some walking up and downe, some absent, and divers other miscarriages, it is henceforth ordered that if any person shall offend against any order prescribed in this case there shall be exact notice of such offence in this respect, and hee shall be censured accordingly.*

April 27, 1648. At a general meeting of the freemen of the towne it was ordered that from henceforth from yeare to yeare the meeting for the choyse of towne officers shall be upon the first Monday in March upon publick warneing. *

MEETINGS OF THE SELECTMEN.

For the consideration and settlement of questions arising from the levying of taxes, the granting of house lots, the

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

building of fences, and the appointment of keepers of sheep and cattle, frequent meetings were held by the "seven men," and the votes passed or decisions agreed upon were entered upon the records and approved in the margin by a majority of those who were present, the minority, in matters of importance, recording their dissent. Uncertainty in regard to the time when and place where these meetings were to be held occasioned considerable inconvenience, and led to the adoption of the following order, December 21 [1637?], approved by "Edward Woodman, Jo: Woodbridge, Hen: Short, Richard Kent, Richard Browne, and Richard Knight":—

For the better ordering of all towne affaires it is thought that certain times & places of meeting should be appoynted which may be publickly knowne to the end that not only those to whom the charge of towne affairs is committed may make their constant & careful attendance but likewise that any other that hath any occasion of business with the towne may know where & when to make their desires knowne. And for the present it is agreed that there shall be a constant meeting kept (till further order be taken) every second Thursday at Henry Short's house, beginning at 8 of the clock in the morning & so to be continued as the times & seasons shall require. And for the more orderly & considerate proceeding it was likewise ordered that what things are proposed any one meeting day shall not ordinarily be answered till the next meeting unless in cases of some moment or in cases that require speedy answer.*

TAXES.

The appropriation of money, and the assessment of taxes, frequently led to prolonged controversies relating to questions of law and equity. In order to secure an impartial and just distribution of the burdens of taxation, the inhabitants of Newbury voted in the month of October, 1637, "That from henceforth when there is any towne rate or country rate to be made that all the men that are deputed by the towne to manage all other publick affairs of the towne shall have a hand in it." *

On the twentieth day of November following, the General Court passed the following order: —

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Whereas it appeareth vnto this Court that the inhabitants of the towne of Neweberry are indebted to diverse p̄sons neare the sume of 60£, wch hath bene expended vpon publike & needfull occations for the benefit of all such as do or shall inhabite there, as building of houses for their ministrs, and whereas such as are of the church there, are not able to beare the whole charge, & the rest of the inhabitants there do or may enjoy equall benefit thereof wth them, yet they do refuse, against all right & justice, to contribute wth them, it is therefore ordered, that the freemen of the said towne, or such of them as vpon publicke notice shall assemble for that end, or the greater number of them, shall raise the said sum̄e of 60£, by an equall & p̄portionable rate of every inhabitant there, haveing respect both to lands & other personall estate, as well of such as are absent as of those that are dwelling there psent & for default of payment shall have powr to levy the same by distres & sale thereof by such person as they shall appoint; & the same, being so collected, shall satisfy their said debts & if any remainder bee, the same to bee implied vpon other occations of the towne.*

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Newbury, held April 21, 1638, it was ordered

That every man within the towne shall, vpon warning given or left at their houses, bring in the value of their estates to Jo: Knight, constable, on Tuesday next by eight o'clock in the morning on the penalty of 2s 6d apeice for default herein, to the intent that those who make the rate may have cleare [] & ground in making the same.†

It is likewise ordered that all accounts betweene, & fines which are formerly not brought in by the constable and others shall be brought in to John Woodbridge & Richard Knight at Hen: Shorts house halfe an houre by sunn the second day of the next weeke on the several penaltyes formerly mentioned & imposed the 10th of the fifth month. †

May 13, 1640, the General Court levied a tax of £1,200 on all the towns in the colony: of this amount Newbury was called upon to pay £65. "And it was ordered; that in payment silver plate should passe at 5s the ounce; good ould Indian corne, growing heare, being clean & marchantable, at 5s the bushell; sum̄er wheate at 7s the bushell; rye at 6 shs the bushell." ‡ "Mr Rawson, Mr Woodman & Goodm̄ Haule" were appointed a committee to appraise the cattle, horses,

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 216. † Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 294.

hogs, and goats in Newbury, and were ordered "to valewe them under their worth rather than above their worth." *

FENCES AND PASTURES.

In order to protect the growing crops of hay and grain from the intrusion of horses and cattle

It was agreed [February 24, 1636/7] that all generall ffences about the house lotts shall be made by the last day of March on the penalty of 5^{s} for each default provided that every ones portion shall be layd out & bounded by stakes by men appoynted for this purpose in convenient time.†

It was likewise agreed that Wm̄ Moody, James Browne, Nic. Holt, ffrancis Plummer, Na Noyse shall lay out all the generall fences in the towne that are to be made, as likewise tenn rod betweene man & man, for garden plotts, this to be done by the 5th of March on the penalty of 5^{s} apeice.†

Octob 16, 1637 Wee whose names are heere vnderwritten have taken account of the fines for defect of ffences of Richard Browne Jo: Knight & Jo: Pike and wee find it thus. That the men heere vnderwritten have promised vnder their hands to pay according as is sett downe for defect of fences when they shall be called on for it viz: †

Nic. Batt	0.10.0	Anth. Morse	0.10.0
ffran. Plumer	0.10.0	Wm̄ Morse	0. 5.0
Ja: Rawlins	0.10.0	Mr Hussey	0.10.0
Jo: Pike. Jun.	0. 5.0	Anth. Short	0. 5.0
Ja: Browne	0. 5.0	Hen Lunt	0. 5.0
Arch. Woodman	0. 5.0	Geor. Browne	0. 5.0
Rich Knight	0. 5.0	Rich. Browne	0. 5.0

February 23, 1641/2 By the Generall consent of all the ffreemen the stinting of the Comons was Referred to Henry Short, Mr [Edward] Woodman, Edward Rawson, Thomas Hale & Mr [John] Woodbridge according to their best judgments & discretions. ‡

On the twelfth day of March they made the following report: —

We whose names are heer under written being appoynted by the ffree men to proportion to every man his severall and particular right in all the

* Massachusetts Colony Records. vol. i., p. 294. † Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

‡ Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 2.

Towns comons according to the full power and authority committed to us in the behalf do order & determine as followeth :

1 That the severall numbers of pastures heerafter expressed shall lye and be perpetualy to the sd persons to whom they are allowed as theyre own propper & due right and that it shall not be in the liberty or power of the ffreemen to alter or take away any mans right in the comons according to the stint heer under because it is his propriety & Inheritance.

2 That no person or persons whatsoever not expressed in there stint hath or shall have any propriety in the Comons in prsent or hereafter but what he shall gett by purchase or some other way legally obtaine.

3 That all the comons wthin the limets of the Towne shall be equally divided vnto three severall parts and that the same number of cattell that are allowed in the stint of the cows & oxen shall be allowed in the heifer comon & a third like quantity of young cattell in the comon above Mr Rawson farme.*

THE STINT OF THE OX & COW COMON.

Mr Richard Dumer	62¼	Joseph Carter	4
Mr Sewall Senr	34¼	Nicholas Holt	7¾
Mr Clark	25¼	Mr Edward Rawson	23
Mr Cutting	16	Mr John Woodbridge	26¾
Nicholas Noyes	4	Mr John Spencer	42½
Richard Badger	2½	Richard Browne	6
Richard Kent Jun	12	Stephen Dumer	21½
Stephen Kent	10¾	John Pike Jun	4¼
John Merrill	4	Thomas Smith	2¾
John Kelly	1	Richard Bartlet	1
John Poore	1¼	John Bartlet	1
John Fry	1	William Titcomb	1¾
Abel Huse	2½	Nicholas Batt	1½
Daniel Thirston	1½	Robert Coker	2¼
the ffery lot	1	William White	1
John Goff	2	Henry Palmer	1¼
Thomas Browne	2¼	William Palmer	1½
Gyles Abott	1	ffrancis Plumer	5
William Ilsey	1½	Abraham Toppan	4¼
Anthony Somerby	1¼	Thomas Davis	1
Richard Fitts	1	Thomas Coleman	1½
Richard Littlehale	1	George Browne	1
Archelaus Woodman	2¼	Jno Pike Sen	8
Edward Woodman	8½	Widdow Stevens	2¼

*Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 2.

Henry Lunt	1¼	William ffrankling	1
James Browne	11	Lewis & Mattox	1¼
Percivall Lowle	6	Mr Miller——	
Nathaniel Wier	1½	John Swett	
John Knight	7	The Towne House	1
Joseph Peasley	2¼	Giles Badger	2
Anthony Morse	2	Edmund Greenleaf	4¼
William Morse	1½	Thomas Blumfield	1¾
Henry Rolfe	8¾	Mrs Oliver	11
Samuel Guile	1	John Lowle	6¾
Walter Allen	1	Anthony Short	6¾
Thomas Silver	1	John Hutchins	1.
Thomas Cromwell	6¼	John Cheney	2½
Samuel Scullard	7½	John Stephens	3¼
Richard Kent Sen	3½	Richard Knight	5½
John Emery	2¾	Henry Short	14½
Henry Travers	1	Thomas Hale	11¼
Thomas Dow	1	Mr James Noyes	14¼
William Barr	1	Mr Thomas Parker	13½
John Osgood	4	John Pemberton	1½
William Moody	6¼	to lye at the Towns appoynt-	
Nathanile Badger	1½	mnt for them that be	
John Bond	1	schoolmasters successively	3

JOHN WOODBRIDGE
THOMAS HALE
HENRY SHORT

Memorandum that March 12, 1641 the orders above written and the proportion of pasturing allowed to every one as is above expressed were publiquely & distinctly read to the General Body of the ffreemen who generally by their vote did confirm the same and further wth the consent of sd persons deputed did order as followeth:

1 That whosoever shall at any time transgress this order by putting any of his cattell in any or either of those comons more than is here mentioned as due to him or that he shall make sufficiently evident to have lawfully purchased or otherwise legally obtained from any which hath due right according as is expressed shall forfeit twenty shillings for every Beast that by the Hay ward of the Towne shall be found going in any of those comons and by him —— to be levied on the goods of every such offender by the Constable for the use of the Towne.

2 The execution of this stint is stayed till the major part of the freemen shall see cause to put it in use.

3 That no man shall under any pretense or colour whatsoever receive any cattell into the Towne or keep any mans in the Towne that

hath no right in the comon, to stock the comon so much as that the Towne should be forced to make use of the stint provided this relate not to cattell which any one shall Buy or Hyre out of the Towne for his owne necessary use & imployment.

A large tract of land was also set apart for the pasturage of sheep. Keepers were appointed to look after the cattle and sheep, and enforce the rule made and adopted for the "stinting of the commons."

Nicholas Batt, who came to New England in the ship "James" from Southampton in April, 1635, was keeper of the herd of cows from March 16 to November 16, 1638, at a salary of £18, "to be paid partly in money and partly in corn at 4^{s} 6^{d} per bushel provided he is to keepe them but one Lord's day & the towne two," * and William Morse, who was also a passenger in the same ship, was keeper of the herd of sheep and goats.

LAWS AND ORDINANCES.

March 12, 1637–8, the General Court ordered the freemen of every town to make a list of laws necessary for the protection of life and property in the colony of Massachusetts Bay, and send a copy of the same to the governor and council, to be presented to the General Court for approval or rejection, "as the Court shall adjudge." †

April 6, 1638 Mr Rawson & Jo: Woodbridge were deputed by the towne to labour to compile a body of laws & present them to the towne that they may be presented to the Governmt according to order of Court.‡

The General Court also provided, March 3, 1635–6, that any person building a house, without permission, in any town in the colony, "the inhabitants of the said towne shall have power to demolishe the said howses & remove the p'sons." * The following order, adopted and approved August 6, 1638, by Edward Woodman, Edward Rawson, John Knight, and Richard Brown, in their official capacity as executive officers

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 168. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 222.

of the town, seems to indicate that the provisions of this law were partially, if not rigorously, enforced within the limits of Newbury: —

It was agreed that Edward Rawson Rich. Browne & John Knight shall goe and, according to former agreement which the towne had with Thomas Cromwell, take possession of the half acker whereon he hath builded a cowe house without their leave.*

March 9, 1636–7, the General Court ordered, as a precautionary measure against danger from the attacks of Indians, "that the military officers in every towne shall p̄vide that watches bee dewly kept in places most fit for com̄on safetie," and at the same court Mr. John Spencer was appointed captain for the town of Newbury.† At a meeting held by the freemen of Newbury subsequently to the adoption of this order, the following vote was passed: —

Itt is agreed and appoynted that there shall be a walk of sixteen foott broad on the topp of the great hill from one end to the other and a way to great point of fower foott broad through Stephen Kent his lott.*

It is uncertain when this walk "on the topp of the great hill" was decided upon, as neither the day of the month nor of the year is given in the record above quoted. But the location was well chosen, and gave to the sentinels on duty there a broad and extended view of the surrounding country. Tradition asserts that the walk ran in an easterly and westerly direction on the crest of the hill, while the "fower foott" way extended from the summit in a southerly direction to the open field or common land, now known as the "Lower Green." At or about the time that these precautionary measures were taken and sentinels were stationed on the top of Great hill, the freeholders of Newbury, in town meeting assembled, "ordered that M^r^ Woodman shall have a house lott between M^r^ Rawson's & the River Provided that if there be a fort built by the water side heere after that, then his lott shall give way."*

There was evidently an effort made at that time to build a

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

†Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., pp. 190, 191.

fortification of some kind on the banks of the river Parker to protect the approach to the settlement by water; but the fort was probably never built.

BIRTHS, DEATHS, AND MARRIAGES.

December 10, 1641, the General Court "ordered that in every towne one shal bee appointed to grant sum̃ons & attachments in all civil cases" and "to bee clarks of the writtes." *

"M^r^ Lowle" was appointed for the town of Newbury. June 14, 1642, the clerks of writs were ordered "to find out in their several towns who hath bene borne & who hath died since the first founding of their townes & to record the same." †

March 7, 1643/4, certificates of births, deaths, and marriages in every family in the colony were ordered to be brought "to the clarks of the writtes" from month to month and year to year, to be by them recorded. ‡

October 27, 1647, the General Court appointed "Anthony Somersby to be clarke of the writs at Newberry & to record births, deaths & marriages in place of John Lowle deceased." §

Apparently, no effort was made to collect and record the names of those who were born or who had died in Newbury until after the adoption of the order passed June 14, 1642, directing the "Clarke of the writs" to attend to that duty. It is therefore impossible to state with certainty whether Mary Brown, Joshua Woodman, or Shubael Dummer, was the first white child born in the town. ‖

A written statement, evidently prepared for Samuel Sewall, chief justice of the province of Massachusetts, now in the possession of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, claims that Shubael Dummer is entitled to that honor. The statement is as follows: —

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 344.

† Ibid., vol. ii., p. 15. ‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 59.

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 198. John Lowell died June 29, 1647.

‖ See Coffin's History, pp. 19, 21; also "Ould Newbury," pp. 23, 297.

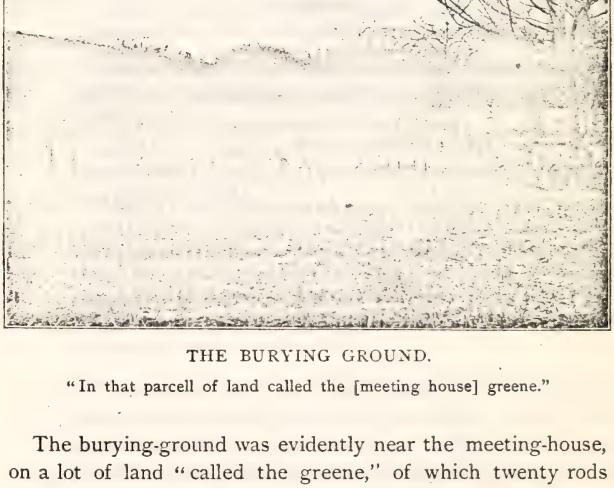
NEWBURY Aprill ye 2d 1717

Thre persons claim ye right of ye first born in this Towne, viz: — Joshua Woodman, Caleb Moody & ye wife of Peter Godfre, these being not to be found in ye Record: it must be given to Mr Shubael Dummer, as appears by ye following account.

A Record of ye Births of Children born in Newbury — in ye County of Essex; in ye Province of ye Massachusetts Bay in New England Ano. Dom: 1635 —

1635 Shubael ye son of Mr Richard Dum̃er born february 17th

1636 Elizabeth Holt ye daughter of Nicholas Holt was born Mar. 30th*



THE BURYING GROUND.

"In that parcell of land called the [meeting house] greene."

The burying-ground was evidently near the meeting-house, on a lot of land "called the greene," of which twenty rods were reserved when the remainder was sold to Mr. John Emery in 1647.† A few weather-worn and dilapidated

* New England Genealogical Register, October, 1880, p. 390.

† Town of Newbury Records, vol. i. John Emery sold to his son Jonathan Emery, April 9, 1679, one-half the land conveyed to him by the town of Newbury. (Essex Deeds, Ipswich Series, vol. iv., p. 246.) February 4, 1728–9, Jonathan Emery sold to William and Richard Dole about seventeen and one-half acres of land, "excepting and Reserving the Twenty Rods of land reserved for a Burying place formerly laying within the Bounds of said Tenement or Tract of land for the End for which it was proposed by the Town of Newbury." (Essex Deeds, vol. liv., p. 66.) March 21, 1728–9, William Dole conveyed one-half this estate to Joseph Ilsley. (Essex Deeds,

gravestones mark the place where some of the first settlers of Newbury were buried.

The record of deaths and marriages previous to 1645 is very imperfect. It was kept by John Lowle, clerk of the writs. The first death where the name and date are given in full is that of John Kent, son of John Kent, who "dyed ye 7th of February 1641." The earliest marriage recorded is that of "Christopher Bartlet to Mary —— April 17, 1645."

Commissioners or magistrates, appointed by the General Court, were authorized to join persons in marriage in Newbury, but nowhere in the colony were ministers granted or allowed that privilege.

June 14, 1642 Mr William Bellingham was appointed to see Marriages solemnized at Rowley & Neweberry & to keepe record thereof *

Nov 4, 1646 The Corte hath granted comission to Mr Edwd Rawson to see people joine in Marriage in Newberry dury the pleasure of the Corte †

Oct. 14, 1651 In answer to the petition of the towne of Newberry Capt William Gerrish is hereby authorized to marry such there as shall be legally published.‡

May 14, 1656 It is ordered, by this court, that from henceforth any one of the three comissionrs for the endinge small causes in the severall townes where no magistrate dwells shall be & hereby are authorized & empowered to solemnize Marriage betweene p'tyes legally published, p'vided two of the sd commissionrs be p'sent & all other comissions in this case are hereby made voyd §

Two years later the above order was modified, and the county courts were authorized to appoint one of the three commissioners for small causes in any town, and allow him to officiate at marriage ceremonies, even though the other commissioners were not present. ‖

September 28, 1658 Mr Edward Woodman of Newbury allowed to marry and to take oaths in civill cases ¶

vol. liii., p. 58.) April 9, 1729, the land was divided, and in 1793 the heirs of Joseph Ilsley deceased, conveyed to Paul Ilsley their right, title, and interest in the property. (Essex Deeds, vol. clvii., p. 204.) The land "surrounding the burying place" is now owned by Mrs. Joseph Ilsley.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 14.
† Ibid., vol. ii., p. 166.
‡ Ibid., vol. iv., part i., p. 65.
§ Ibid., vol. iv., part i., p. 255.
‖ Ibid., vol. iv., part i., p. 322.
¶ Ipswich Court Records, Book I., p. 60.

For more than twenty-five years this order continued in force, and appointments were annually made by the county courts at Ipswich and Salem. June 4, 1685, however, the General Court, in answer to a motion made by Richard Bartlett, who was then a deputy from Newbury, appointed Mr. John Woodbridge "to administer oaths & joyne persons in marriage there who desire it being published according to lawe." *

December 24, 1690, the General Court appointed

> Mr. John Woodbridge and Capt Daniel Pierce of Newbury to join Persons together in marriage in that Town according to the Direction of ye Laws in that behalf made.†

Under the laws of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, established after the charter of the colony had been annulled, justices of the peace in the counties where they resided, and ministers in the towns where they were settled, were authorized to unite in marriage "any two persons legally published." ‡

The privilege granted to ministers was enlarged December 1, 1716; and they were allowed to officiate at weddings beyond the limits of the towns in which they were settled, provided certain rules and regulations were complied with.§

MEETING-HOUSE.

The first building erected within the limits of Newbury dedicated to the worship of God was probably begun soon after the organization of the church in the summer of 1635, but it was not wholly completed until September or October, 1638. Services, however, were held in the unfinished structure, and a special tax was levied upon the freeholders of the town, on or before October, 1637, for the support of public worship. The earliest votes and orders relating to the assessment and collection of this tax are as follows: —

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 483.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxvi., p. 260.

‡ Province Laws, vol. i., p. 61.

§ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 60.

It is agreed that all the moneys, goods or chattells that shall bee gathered or distrained for the rate of the meeting house shall bee delivered into the hands of Jo: Woodbridge who shall receive all & pay all & give up account to the towne when they call for it.*

Dec. 11, [1637?] It is ordered that the meeting house rate shall bee gathered at two several & distinct payments the one presently, the other when the towne sees necessary use of it and requires it. *

January 18, 1637–8 It is ordered that Richard Knight, James Browne, & Nicholas Holt shall gather up the first payment of the meeting house rate & the towne rate within one fourteenight on the penalty of 6s 8d a piece." *

March 9, 1636–7, the General Court enacted a law requiring every able-bodied man above eighteen years of age to attend meeting on the Lord's Day "with their musketts, or other peeces fit for servise, furnished wth match, powder, & bullets, vpon paine of 12d for every default." † This law was repealed May 2, 1638, except the clause "about carrying armes to the meeting house," which was referred to the inhabitants of the several towns in the colony to take such action as they might deem advisable. In the month of June, 1638, all the able-bodied men of Newbury were enrolled and formed into four companies, under the command of John Pike, Nicholas Holt, John Baker, and Edmund Greenleafe. They were required "to bring their armes compleat one Sabbath day in a month and the lecture day following," and "stand sentinell at the doores all the time of the publick meeting." ‡

At a legal meeting held September 4, 1638, the freeholders of the town ordered

. . . that a rate of twenty-eight pounds shall be made speedily and gathered within one fourteenight for the *finishing* of the meeting house. *

The towne appoynted Mr Woodman & Ed: Rawson to make this rate.

The towne appoynted the Constables to gather this rate.

The towne hath appoynted Henry Short & Rich: Kent to receive this rate & survey the worke.*

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 190.

‡ Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 26, 27.

June the 15th 1638

The Court Leuing left it to the liberty of particular townes to take order & prouide according to their discretion for the bringing of armes to the meeting House, it is for the present to guard fitt & ordered That the towns being diuided into 4 seuerall & equall quarts. each part shall bring compleat armes according to the discretion of those regm the towne late appointed to ouersee the busynesse in order & manner as followeth.

Edward Woodman

Jo Woodbridge

Edward Rawson

William Moody

James Browne

John Knight

Abraham Toppan

Imp Mr Pike Mr Holt / John Baker; & Edmund Greenhle being appointed as ouerseers of the busynesse are ordered to follow this course viz They shall giue notice to the party of euery vnder their seuerall diuisions to bring their armes compleat one sabbath day in a moneth & the lecture day following successively one after another & the persons aforesaid shall cause euery person vnder their seuerall diuisions to stand sentinell at the doores all the time of the publick meeting in order successively euery one after another either himselfe in person or by a sufficient substitute to be allowed by the ouerseer of the ward.

LAND GRANTS.

For more than fifty years after the incorporation of the town of Newbury, all votes and orders relating to the granting of land or the management of town affairs by the freemen and freeholders were recorded in a book also used by the "seven men" for a similar purpose. After the election of Henry Short as town clerk, March 20, 1685-6, the grants made before and after that date were copied into a separate volume, called the "Proprietors' Book," which is still in a good state of preservation. Most of the early grants consisted of house lots and planting lots of about four acres, each located in the immediate vicinity of Quascacunquen, now Parker river. A few large farms, however, several miles away from the meeting-house, were granted to men of wealth and influence who resided in the town. In 1635 a large tract of land "at the Falls," now Byfield Parish, was laid out to Richard Dummer by order of the General Court; and the next year the freeholders of Newbury made an allotment of five hundred acres in the same neighborhood to Henry Sewall, sr. Other grants, of considerable magnitude, recorded previous to 1645, are as follows: —

To Mr John Cutting "a ffarme of two hundred acres be it more or less of upland & meadow as it is laid out in length sixteen score rods & in breadth fifty rods, bounded by the falls River South, the comon on the north, Mr Greenleaf west & Thomas Coleman on the east." *

To James Browne "a ffarme of one hundred and fifty acres of upland and meadow, be it more or less, bounded by several marked trees, by the comon round." *

The location of the last grant is somewhat uncertain. It was evidently surrounded on all sides by common, or undivided, land. In 1655, it was sold to Hugh March, and was then bounded, in part, by the "birchen meadow."

There was Granted to Mr Stephen Dumer three hundred acres of upland & meadow at Turkey Hill, that is sixty acres of meadow joyning to the Hill and two hundred & forty acres of upland to enjoy to him & his heyrs forever.†

* Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records, pp. 20, 29, 36. † Ibid., p. 18.

Laid out to Thomas Browne & George Little in the behalfe of Mr Stephen Dumer two hundred and forty acres of upland at Turkey Hill, joyning to Mr Stephen Dumers meadow called by the name of Birchen Meadow.*

To Richard Kent, jr., "A ffarme lott of one hundred acres of upland and meadow on an Island over the Little River and about it, be it more or less," and several other lots of upland and marsh, making in all about two hundred and forty-eight acres, granted February 7, 1646–7, "at a meeting of ye 8 men deputed to order the Towne Affairs," and described as follows: —

. . . bounded wth ye great River on ye South & South West, wth a creeke [issuing] out of ye greate River northward & ye little River on ye East & a creeke issuing out of ye said little River Running Westward meeting ye other Creeke yt Issued out of ye greate River wthin thirty Rods & so making an Iland.†

There is a farm of 200 acres granted to Mr Edward Rawson [both] of up land and meadow [at] the birchen mead [ow] the whole parcell of meadow there to be divided into three equall portions, Mr Rawson to take his choice.‡

On the twenty-second day of December, 1637 (?), the following vote was adopted by the freeholders of the town: —

It is likewise agreed that Jo: Woodbridge shall have an hundred and fifty acres lying to the northward of Mr Spencers farme, on the right hand of the ridge going to Merrimack & fifty acres of fresh & salt marish to be added more vnto it, in some convenient place, neere adjoyning, to be layd out according to the townes disposing & this instead of his 200 acres formerly granted at the great hill on the south side of the river, to enjoy to him & his heires for ever.§

This grant was subsequently laid out to Mr. Woodbridge, as appears from the following record: —

One hundred and fifty acres of upland as it is laid out, be it more or

* Proprietors' Records, p. 18. May 10, 1648, Mr. Stephen Dummer, then in England, wrote "to his very loving friend, Henry Short, living at Newbury," instructing him to sell the farm at Birchen Meadow. (See Ipswich Deeds, vol. iii., p. 256 (193).)

† Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.; also, Proprietors' Records, p. 16.

‡ This grant was made February 24, 1637. For additional grants to Edward Rawson see "Ould Newbury," pp. 50, 51.

§ Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

.less, Bounded by Mr Spencers on the South, John Pike senior and John Moulton on the north, the comon on the west and the Great Street Joyning to Merrimack River on the East.*

In 1636, probably, the freeholders granted to Mr. John Spencer

. . . a ffarme of four hundred acres of upland & meadow, be it more or less, bounded by Mr Woodbridge on the north, Mr Parker on the south, the street of eight rods in breadth next Merrimack River on the east, and the comon on the west, and two hundred & fifty acres, be it more less, lying on the left hand of Merrimack Ridge in breadth of the breadth of that on the right hand of the ridge, in length six Score Rods.

October 20, 1637, Mr. Spencer was granted a mill-lot of fifty acres "at Newbury falls," and November 20, 1637, he was condemned and disarmed, by order of the General Court, for holding erroneous religious opinions. On the eleventh day of December following, Edward Woodman, John Woodbridge, Henry Short, Richard Kent, Richard Browne, and Richard Knight, having the care and management of town affairs, gave their assent and approval to the following order: —

. . . fforasmuch as it appeared vnto us on sufficient grounds & evident testimony that Mr John Spenser notwithstanding his intention and resolution to liue away from us & so to deprive us of his usuall helpe & counsell in managing & ordering or greatest & weightiest affaires yet did so secretly carry things that he gott a promise of the towne of farther enlargement wee thought fit therefore to make this publick declaration of or minds & intention in the case that wee judge according to our best light & understanding that he hath no right nor just claime to any more land but what hath been formerly layd out confirmed & the bounds thereof entered into the towne book, seeing that hee desired it in relation to the service which he had & was likely still to doe for the towne & the townes promise was on such [] condition which they are defeated off. The present order [] therefore doth declare that the ground lying to the northward of Mr Spensers farme (the bounds whereof are already entered into the book) is at the townes disposing to be given to whom they see fitt & convenient.†

Subsequently this order was rescinded; and, September 4, 1638, Edward Woodman, Abraham Toppan, Richard

* Proprietors' Records, p. 11. † Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Browne, and John Knight, in behalf of the town, signed the following agreement : —

It is agreed that the lotters shall lay out 150 acres of upland & meadow to Mr Spenser on the north side of his farme lying in manner & order as his farme doth that is allready layd out & 150 acres of land lying next Mr Spensers on the right hand of the ridge to John Woodbridge, according to former order, to enjoy to them & theirs for euer.*

A farme granted to Mr Clarke of 400 acres next to Mr Sewalls:

The bounds of Mr Clarke his fairme begin at the mouth of Carte creeke thence running easterly ten score rodd abutting on the Mayne river toward the South & thence it runs up sixteene score rodds into the country upon a line north & by west to two birchen trees marked, standing on a banke of rocks, thence it runs in a straight line westerly tenn score rodd to a marked tree on a mount & thence in a straight line east & by South to the mouth of Cart creeke againe, taking in all the meadow on the east side of the Pine Swamp.

the 23rd of the 11th mo. 1637.

Edward Woodman	Henry Short
Richard Browne	Richard Kent
John Woodbridge	Richard Knight

Memoranda: This writing was recorded for Mr John Clarke now of Ipswich, late of Newbury, 8th day of March, 1647.†

The towne being desired to express themselves whether they were willing that Mr Bacheler & Mr Hussy should take the land at ye new meadow lately given to Mr Woodman & Mr Rawson upon their willing resignation of the same & the towne would promise them satisfaction, the towne did generally express themselves willing to both & Hen: Short & Wm: Moody were joyned to the three of the former five to manage the towne busynesse to judge & determine what shall satisfy the sayd Mr Woodman & Mr Rawson for [what loss] & the land henceforth to remaine as the proper right & inheritance of the sayd Mr [Stephen] Bacheler & Mr [Christopher] Hussey.*

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

† Ipswich Deeds, vol. i., p. 37 (126). Dr. John Clark was an eminent physician. He came to Newbury in 1637, removed to Ipswich in 1647, and two or three years later purchased a dwelling-house in Boston, where he resided until his death in the month of January, 1664-5. At a general town meeting held in Newbury, September 28, 1638,

"It was granted that Mr Clarke in respect of his calling should be freed and exempted from all publick rates either for the country or the towne so long as he shall remayne with us and exercise his calling among us."

December 1, 1651. "John Clarke of Boston, Chirurgeon, & Martha his wife, in consideration of the house they now accupy in Boston and a certain lot of land adjoining," convey to Matthew Chaffey of Boston, shipwright, the farm of four hundred acres at Cart Creeke in Newbury (Ipswich Deeds, vol. i., p. 99 (294), and the same day Matthew Chaffey of Boston and Sarah, his wife, sold the farm "with the housings and buildings thereon" to Richard Thorlay of Newbury. (Ipswich Deeds, vol. i., p. 100 (297).)

SALISBURY.

September 6, 1638, the General Court granted Simon Bradstreet and Capt. Daniel Dennison, of Ipswich, John Clarke and Christopher Batt, of Newbury, and others, liberty "to begin a plantation at Merrimack." A location on the north side of the Merrimack river was selected early in the spring of 1639, and house lots were laid out and assigned to the new settlers. Christopher Batt, John Sanders, Robert Pike, Thomas Macy, Richard Singletary, and Anthony Sadler, of Newbury, received grants of land "in the first division."

September 4, 1639, the General Court ordered that the "plantation beyond Merrimack shalbee called Colechester",* and October 7, 1640, the governor, with the consent of the Court of Assistants and House of Deputies, declared that "Colechester is henceforward to bee called Salsbury." †

The new name was probably suggested by Christopher Batt, who came from Salisbury, England, with his wife Anne, and five children under ten years of age, in the ship "Bevis," in the month of May, 1638.‡

ROWLEY.

In the spring of 1639, Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, with a company of about twenty families from Yorkshire, England, was allowed to begin a new settlement between Ipswich and Newbury. From the records of the General Court under date of March 13, 1638–9, it appears that "Mr Ezechi: Rogers, Mr John Philips & their Company had granted them 8 miles every way into the Countrey, where it may not trench vpon other plantations already setled." §

Several farms that had been granted by the General Court to various individuals in Ipswich and Newbury were purchased, for the better accommodation of the new settlement,

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 271.

† Ibid., vol. i., p. 305.

‡ Drake's "Founders of New England," p. 60.

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 253.

by the payment of nearly eight hundred pounds; * and the freemen of Newbury voted that the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers and his company should have undisturbed possession of all the common and undivided lands within certain specified limits, as follows: —

The towne being assembled together and being desirous to manifest theyr earnest desires and willingness to give due incouredgment unto the worthy gentlemen who desire to set down between us and Ipswich as to part with such a portion of land as cannot any way be expected from them, or may without endangering their present necessityes afford. Hoping on good grounds it may fully answer their desires and expectations they have determined as followeth:

By the common and general suffrages of the body of freemen, none excepted, there was granted to the said gentilmen all the upland and meadow and marish between us and Ipswich incompassed by the line heer underwritten, namely:

That their line shall begin from the head of the great Creek between the neck over the great river and Mr. Dummers, running due west as we come to the great Creek, being the bounds of John Osgoods farm, which issues into Mr Eastons river and above that creek all the lands southward of Mr. Eastons river, and from that river from the path leading to the falls to run a due west line into the country a mile, and afterwards to run on a north west line so as it come not within half a mile of the side line of Mr. Dummers farm. Likewise it comes two miles distant of Merrimack. Provided that if after they have entered by buildings or otherwise on this part of land granted to them and leave off from going on with a plantation or a towne between us, that then the grants abovesaid shall be void to all intents and purposes and to remaine the proprietyes and inheritances of the towne of Newbury in as ample a manner as before the grant hereof in all respects.†

September 4, 1639, the General Court ordered that "Mr Ezechi: Rogers plantation shalbee called Rowley." ‡

May 13, 1640, the company was released from the payment of taxes for two years "because of their great losse & charge by purchasing of land & hindrance of planting the last yeare." §

November 13, 1655, the General Court, "with the consent of the deputy of Rowley and Capt Gerrish and Mr Wood-

* Winthrop's History, vol. i., p. 354.

† Proprietors' Records, pp. 7, 8; Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 29.

‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 271. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 289.

man of Newbury," appointed a committee to consider and determine where the division line between the two towns should run. May 14, 1656, the committee agreed upon a line, beginning at a white oak-tree standing upon the northwest side of Easton's river, and thence running westerly one mile to a heap of stones "laid there according to the courts order," and thence in a northwesterly direction to the Merrimack river. *

Subsequently the General Court confirmed and established this division line, although an attempt was made to modify it, as stated in the next chapter.

HAVERHILL

March 13, 1640, a petition was presented to the General Court for liberty to begin another plantation on the Merrimack river. In answer to this petition, the General Court voted that

> The desires of Mr Ward & Newbury men is comitted to the Govenor, Deputy Governor, & Mr Winthrope, Senior, to consider of Patucket & Coijchawick (now Andover) & grant it them, p'vided they returne answer wth in three weeks frō the 21th psent, & that they build there before the next Courte.†

Pentucket was selected as the most convenient place for the new settlement; and, June 2, 1641, the General Court passed the following order: —

> Mr John Woodbridge, Matthewe Boyse, John Crosse & George Gittings they 4, or any 3 of them, are appointed to set out the bounds between Salsbery & Pantucket, ali: Haverell. They are to determine the bounds wch Mr Ward & his company are to inioy as a towne or village if they have 6 houses up by the next Genrall Court in the 8th mo.‡

Although the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, author of "The Simple Cobbler of Agawam," was active and earnest in his efforts to organize a company for the settlement at Pentucket, he did not remove there; but his son, the Rev. John

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., pp. 249, 263. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 290.

‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 319.

Ward, who was born in Haverhill, Essex county, England, was evidently one of the most zealous supporters of the enterprise, and ultimately became prominent as pastor of the first church in the town, named "Haverhill," in honor of his birthplace. Among the men who were associated with the Rev. Mr. Ward in organizing the new settlement were William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Hussey, John Williams, and Richard Littlehale, of Newbury.* Tristram Coffin also resided there for several years, and his name appears as witness to a deed, dated November 15, 1642, conveying to the inhabitants of the town all the land within its limits belonging to the Indian chieftains Passaquo and Saggattew. Mr. Coffin was licensed, May 26, 1647, to keep an ordinary, and also to keep a ferry over Merrimack river in connection with Mr. George Carr. He probably removed to Newbury about the time his license was granted by the General Court.

PUBLIC HOUSES.

March 4, 1634–5 the General Court ordered

... that noe pson whatsoeuer shall keepe a cõmon victualing howse, without licence from the Court, vnder the penalty of XX^{s} a weeke.†

September 3, 1635, Francis Plumer, who came to Newbury soon after the incorporation of the town, was licensed "to keep an ordinary"; June 6, 1637, John Knight, of "Newebery," was granted liberty "to keepe an ordinary and give intertainment to such as neede"; and, May 22, 1639, "Edmond Greenlyf of Newberry" was permitted "to keepe a house of intertainment."

In order to provide for the accommodation of strangers on special occasions, the law relating to the keeping of ordinaries was modified November 5, 1639, as follows: —

In regard of the greate inconvenience that is found for want of fit places of intertainment of people vpon occasion of great assemblies, & arrivall of ships wth passengers, it is declared, that vpon such occasions,

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 33. †Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 140.

it is lawfull for any person, in any towne where such great resort of people shall happen to bee, to give intertainement to such people & to affoard them lodging & dyot at reasonable rates, though they bee not allowed to kepe cõmon ordinaries &c.*

May 14, 1645, the General Court ordered

. . . y^t no man shal be alowed to keepe publicke houses of intertain m for strang^rs or travellers, nor shall any one be a cõmon victualler, inkeeper, or keeper of a cookes shop, vintner, taverner, or public seller of wine, ale, beare, strong water, w^thout alowance in some Q^rt^r Cor^t in y^e sheire where such do dwell, upon paine of forfeiture of 20^s p week while they continue w^thout y^e said licence; nor shall any such p^son as have publicke houses of int^rtainm^t & have licence, sell beare for above 2^d an ale q^rt; &c.†

While this law was in force, Tristi Coffin, sr., petitioned the General Court for liberty to k an ordinary, and also a ferry on the Newbury side of Mer nack river. His petition was granted May 26, 1647; and .ne same day the General Court ordered, that "henceforth all such as are to keepe houses of cõmon intertainm^t & to retaile wine, beere &c" shall apply for license to the courts of the shire in which they live in order that the time of the deputies may be devoted to matters of more importance. ‡

SALE OF WINE, BEER, AND OTHER LIQUORS.

In 1637, the keepers of ordinaries were not allowed "to sell either sack or strong water," § and could make or keep in their houses only a mild kind of wine or beer: —

Provided that it may bee lawfull for any such inkeeper or victualler to have in their houses some small quantity of strong water for their owne private & necessary use.‖

March 12, 1637–8, the law imposing a duty on wine and strong water imported into the colony from beyond the sea was repealed; "& it is ordered, that every town shall p'sent

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 279. † Ibid., vol. ii., p. 100.

‡ Ibid., vol. ii., pp. 188, 194. For additional particulars relating to inns and taverns, see "Ould Newbury," pp. 108, 109, 175–188, 493–507.

§ Ibid., vol. i., p. 205. ‖ Ibid., vol. i., p. 214.

a man to bee alowed to sell wine & strong water made in the country & no other strong water is to be sould." *

Edward Woodman was appointed by the General Court agent for the sale of spirituous liquors in Newbury, and continued to hold that office for several years. November 13, 1644, the law was again changed, and licenses were granted to various individuals in the colony "to draw wine" upon the payment of a tax to be assessed and collected in proportion to the number of gallons sold.† In order to secure the enforcement of this law, these taxes or license fees were sold to Edward Rawson for a stated sum; and the government was relieved of all further trouble and expense in regard to them.

The following agreement was recorded November 13, 1644:—

Mr Edward Rawson hath hired to farme ye rent due wine drawn in ye countrey for 107£ 10s for a yeare.‡

May 6, 1646, the General Court ordered

. . . that Mr Rawson ye officer appointed to receive ye custome of wine ye last yeare, shalbe alowed one fourth part of what is due to ye country on that ordr, in satisfaction of his charge & expense of time expended on ye p'secuting of that order, he giving ye auditor genrall an account there of yt so he may p'cure it in to defray ye country charges.§

In 1652, the law regulating the sale of wine and beer was again amended, and after that date the excise duties were sold for a term of five years to the highest bidder.‖

COCHICHAWICK (ANDOVER).

March 4, 1634–5, the General Court ordered

. . . that the land aboute Cochichowicke shalbe reserved for an inland plantacõn & that whosoever will goe to inhabite there shall have three yeares imunity from all taxes, levyes, publique charges & services whatsoever (military dissipline onely excepted) John Winthrop, Rich: Bellingham & Milton Coddington, Esq. are chosen a Comittee to licence

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 221. † Ibid., vol. ii., p. 82.

‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 87. § Ibid., vol. ii., p. 150. ‖ Ibid., vol. iv., part i., p. 111.

any that they thinke meete to inhabite there, & that it shalbe lawfull for noe peson to goe thither without their consent, or the Major pte of them.*

May 13, 1640, the magistrates and deputies of the General Court voted that

The desires of Mr Ward & Newberry Men is comitted to the Governor, Deputy Governor & Mr Winthrope, Senior, to consider of Pā tucket & Coijchawick & to grant it them, p'vided they returne answer within three weeks frō the 21th p'sent & that they build there before the nexte courte.†

The Rev. John Woodbridge, in a letter to "Hon. John Winthrop, Sen. Esq.," dated "Newberry this 22th of 1 mo 1640" (March 22, 1640–1), says,

"Some of us have desired to plant at Quichichwick & accordingly notwithstanding all the oppositions and discouragements that wee have had, having viewed the place since ye court, were intending this spring to have built there"; but have been prevented by the claim of the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers that a portion of that territory should be granted the town of Rowley. A number of families were ready to remove to the new settlement. "And the reason why I desire your speedy advice is because some of o' company have sold themselves out of house and home & so desire to bee settled as soone as may be."‡

Satisfactory arrangements were made during 1641 or 1642 with the Rev. Mr. Woodbridge and his friends; and May 10, 1643, when the county of Essex was formed, "Cochichwicke" was one of the towns named in the act of incorporation. §

In October, 1645, the Rev. John Woodbridge was ordained minister of the new town.

At a General Court held in Boston, May 6, 1646,

Cutshamache Sagamor of ye Massachusetts came into ye Corte & acknowledged yt for the sum of £6, & a Coat which he had already re-

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 141. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 290.

‡ Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Fifth Series, vol. i., p. 317.

§ The General Court ordered, May 10, 1643, that the colony of Massachusetts Bay should be divided into four shires, or counties; namely, Middlesex, Suffolk, Essex, and Norfolk. The following-named towns composed the county of Essex: —

Salem	Ipswich	Glocester
Linn	Rowley	Cochichawick (Andover)
Enon (Wenham)	Newberry	

— Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 38.

ceived he had sold to Mr. John Woodbridge in behalfe of ye inhabitants of Cochichawicke now called Andover all his right, interest & privilege in ye land 6 miles southward from ye towne, two miles eastward to Rowley bounds be ye same more or lesse, and northward to Merrimack river &c.*

Among the Newbury men who accompanied the Rev. Mr. Woodbridge to Cochichawicke, and settled there, were John Osgood, Joseph Parker, John Stevens, Nicholas Holt, Benjamin Woodbridge, John Frye, Nathan Parker, John Aslett, William Ballard, and John Russ, sr.

GUNPOWDER.

June 6, 1639, the General Court authorized the importation of a quantity of saltpetre for the purpose of aiding and encouraging the manufacture of gunpowder in the colony. It is evident, from a careful perusal of the following votes and orders, that arrangements had been made with Edward Rawson to begin the manufacture as soon as the materials could be supplied.

Mr Peters is desired to write to Holland for £500 worth of peter & 40£ worth of match, & to give order vpon the receit of the salt peter & match heare in good condition, to charge bylls vpon the Governor & the country doth p'mise to save the Govrnor harmelesse †

It was ordered, that if the salt peter come not, Mr Rawson shal bee considered according to such damage as hee shall sustaine.‡

Mr Edward Rawson is granted 500 acres, at Pecoit, so as hee go on wth the business of powder, if the salt peter come.§

Mr. Rawson brought with him to Newbury, in 1636 or 1637, a servant named Richard Crane, who was evidently familiar with the process of making gunpowder. A letter dated Steaston, England, March 15, 1638–9, from Dorothy Crane "To Hir very loveinge husband Richard Crane, servant to Mr Edward Rawson, at his house at Newberry," will be found among the "Winthrop Papers"; ‖ and also a letter from

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 73.
† Ibid., vol. i., p. 259. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 260. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 263.
‖ Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Fifth Series, vol. i., p. 87.

Richard Crane to Governor Winthrop, dated May 9, 1640, containing the following statement: —

My master intended to imploy mee to make powder. I am sorry I could not have materials whereby to improve my skill for the good of the land.*

Subsequently, efforts were made to procure a supply of saltpetre from domestic sources. June 14, 1642, an order was adopted by the General Court requiring every town in the colony to provide a suitable house for the making of saltpetre,† and September 27, 1642, this order was amended; and the selectmen of every town were required to see that every householder, or every two or three householders joined together, should provide "for the breeding of salt peeter in some out house for poultry, or the like," ‡ the annual product to be delivered to the agents of the colony and paid for at a reasonable price. Mr. Edmund Greenleaf was appointed superintendent of the business for the town of Newbury.

October 27, 1648 "The Corte haveing taken into their serious consid'ration the great forwardness & readiness of Mr Edwd Rawson to advance so hopefull a designe as the makeing of salt peter wthin this jurisdiction, who for that end & purpose hath disbursed certain monyes to his great losse & damage p'sented to us at large in his petition delivred into this p'sent corte, have therefore, in consideration of the p̄'mises, & answere to his said petition, given & granted to him & his heires 500 ac̄ of land at Pequot, to be layd out by the appointm't of the Corte as also five pounds to be paid him out of the treasury." §

May 2, 1649 Mr Edwd Rawson haveing resigned up his 500 acres of land form'rly granted him in p't of recompence of his damage sustained about ye salt peeter, the corte have thought meete to alow him thirty pounds, in full satisfaction, whereof the five pound form'rly granted is accounted a part. ‖

October 10, 1666, the General Court ordered the selectmen of every town to take such steps as may be necessary to provide the makers of gunpowder with an increased supply of saltpetre. ¶

* Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Fifth Series, vol. i., p. 291.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 14. ‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 29.

§ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 261. ‖ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 283. ¶ Ibid., vol. iv., part ii., p. 320.

Walter Everenden, of Boston, stated, in a petition addressed "To the Honoured Goveno^r, Deputy Goveno^r, with the Magestrates & Deputies now assembled and sitting in Boston," May 28, 1672, that he desired to commence the manufacture of gunpowder, but had been prevented by the enactment of laws in England and Holland prohibiting the shipment of saltpetre to America. He therefore humbly requested "the honoured court" to order the inhabitants of every town in the colony to furnish their proportionate share of saltpetre without further delay.*

In the year 1675 a powder-mill was erected in the town of Dorchester. Previous to that date the materials used in the manufacture of powder were coarsely ground or pulverized in mortars made for that purpose, and afterward roughly cleared of impurities, and mixed without the aid of machinery. The importance of the new enterprise was thoroughly appreciated by the General Court; and two watchmen were appointed, October 13, 1675, one from Dorchester and one from Milton, to guard the property and protect it from the danger of fire to which it was exposed.

Walter Everden, or Everenden, was employed as manager or superintendent of the manufacturing department. He subsequently became the owner of the mill, and for nearly fifty years was a successful manufacturer of gunpowder.†

ARMS AND AMMUNITION.

September 3, 1634, the General Court elected Richard Dum̃er, then living in Roxbury, and Nicholas Easton, of Ipswich, with other freemen of the colony, "ouerseers of the powder & shott & all other am̃unic̃on, in the su̇all plantac̃ons where they lyve." ‡

Subsequently every person capable of bearing arms was obliged to furnish himself with a musket, and also with powder and shot.

March 13, 1638–9, the General Court ordered that

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. lix., p. 124. † History of Dorchester (1859), pp. 607–611.

‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 125.

Neweberry, Linn, Hingham Waymoth each of them shall have one barrell of gunpowder, wch shalbee sould out to those that find muskets, at 2s the pound, wch money shall bee returned to the Treasurer, & for want thereof, the Treasurer shall levy it of the towne, &c.*

In consequence of the warlike attitude of the Indians the General Court distributed, September 8, 1642, a certain quantity of gunpowder to every town in the colony. Hampton, Salisbury, Newbury, and Rowley received one barrel each; and the record further says "that Hampton & Neweberry had each of them a barrell before, wch they are to alow for, besides the barrell wch is now alowed to each of them by this order." †

It is evident that arms and ammunition were not abundant in the colony at that time, and the following orders indicate that the colonial authorities were careful and prudent in distributing them.

September 7, 1643 It is ordered that Ipswich, Salem & Newberry shall answere for the powder or armes they have had.‡

It is ordered that the souldiers of Ipswich, Rowley & Newberry, wch were sent to the Indians, should each man bee alowed one pound of powder.‡

May 29, 1644 It was ordered that the surveyor of armes shall deliver to the deputies of Newberry two snaphance muskets instead of those wee had of them, & not of lesse valewe.§

May 14, 1645, the several towns in the colony were ordered to send to the general surveyor of arms "at Richard Fairbanks howse in Boston" a true report of the number of fire arms in their possession "wthin a fortnight after ye sitting of ye Courte."‖

A barrel of powder having been delivered to Mr. Edward Rawson for the town of Newbury, and a portion of it having been used in the public service, the General Court ordered, May 2, 1649, "that Edwd Rawson should onely satisfy ye surveyr genrall 5£ for ye barrell; & the towne of Newbury & himselfe is hereby discharged therefrom." ¶

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 255. † Ibid., vol. ii., p. 26. ‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 46.
§ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 72. ‖ Ibid., vol. iii., p. 14. ¶ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 270.

COMMISSIONERS OF SMALL CAUSES.

Magistrates elected to the General Court were authorized, September 6, 1638, to hear and determine all questions "where the debt trespas or damage &c doth not exceed 20^{s}" in the towns where they resided, "and in towns where no magistrate dwells, the Generall Court shall from time to time nominate 3 men, two whereof shall have like power to heare & determine all such actions vnder 20^{s}." *

The same day "M^{r} Edward Rawson, M^{r} John Woodbridge & M^{r} Edw^{d} Woodman were chosen" commissioners for the town of Newbury.

June 2, 1641 for to order small causes at Newberry, M^{r} Woodman, M^{r} John Oliver & M^{r} John Woodbridge are appointed.†

October 7, 1641, Mr. Edward Rawson was chosen commissioner in place of Mr. John Oliver;‡ June 14, 1642, "M^{r} Greenleiffe is appointed instead of M^{r} Woodman to end small businesses in Neweberry,§ and, September 27, 1642, "Mr Clarke is appointed in ^{r} Rawsons place to end small causes at Newberry." ‖

May 29, 1644, the Geral Court ordered "that M^{r} Rich^{d} Dummer, M^{r} James Browne, & Henry Short shall end small controversies at Newberry." ¶

May 14, 1645 M^{r} Edward Woodman, M^{r} John Lowle, & Rich^{d} Knight are chosen to end small causes under 20^{s} in Neweberry.**

FINES AND PUNISHMENTS.

At a quarterly court held in Boston December 4, 1638,

The towne of Neweberry was fined 5 sh^{s} for want of a paire of stocks & time was given them till the nexte courte to make them. ††

June 2, 1640 Neweberry, for want of towne weights & measures, fined 6^{s} 8^{d}.‡‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 239. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 328. ‡ Ibid., p. 339.
§ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 14. ‖ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 28. ¶ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 72.
** Ibid., vol. ii., p. 98. †† Ibid., vol. i., p. 248. ‡‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 297.

March 3, 1639, 40 Mr Henry Seawall for his contemptuous speach & carriage to Mr Saltonstall was enjoyned to acknowledg his fault publikely at Ipswich court & to bee of good behavior & was enjoyned to appear at the next Quarter Court &c. . . . hee bound him selfe in 66£ 13s 4d for his appearance & good behavior.*

June 2, 1640 Mr Richrd Dumer for want of weights & scales, wch were supplied, 5s.†

March 2, 1640/41 Mr Richrd Dumer had his fine of 5s remitted, the p'sentmt being upon a mistake, as was testified. ‡

William Franklin, one of the early settlers of Newbury, was accused of excessive cruelty, which resulted in the death of a boy whom he had taken as an apprentice. He was tried at the Court of Assistants in April, 1644 (?), and "was found guilty of murder; but some of the magistrates, doubting of the justice of the case, he was reprieved till the next court of assistants." § May 29, 1644, the General Court, after further consideration of the case, declared: —

> Willi: Francklin is referred to the magistrats; if they see cause hee may have a second triall for his life the next Quarter Cor't.‖

The governor and magistrates having met at Salem, May 30, 1644, were not disposed to grant the condemned man a second trial, and promptly sentenced him to be hanged for murder.

> A warrant was signed by the governor a week after, which was not approved by some in regard of his reprieval to the next court of assistants.¶

JOHN EALES, BEEHIVE MAKER.

The making of beehives was evidently not a lucrative business in Newbury in 1644. Flowers were growing in abundance in the woods and fields, but skill and ability in the management of bees was necessary in order to turn them into a possible source of revenue.

Hive or honey bees were brought to America by the early

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 286.
† Ibid., vol. i., p. 297.
‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 315.
§ Winthrop's History, vol. ii., p. 225.
‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 71.
¶ Winthrop's History, vol. ii., p. 226.

settlers of New England. They followed the pioneers of civilization to Ohio and Kentucky, but as late as 1797 they were practically unknown in the vast uninhabited territory lying west of the Mississippi river.

The inhabitants of Newbury were evidently disposed to favor bee-keeping, as a new and profitable industry; and John Eales was engaged to assist them in their efforts to make the business a financial success, as appears from the following petition to the General Court: —

To the Honnored Courte now assembled. The humble petition of John Lowle & Edward Woodman in the name & on the behalfe of the Towne of Newberry.

Humbly Showeth

That whereas one John Eales aged upwards of 70 years on or about August last came to Newberry to one John Davis a Renter of a farm there wth ye expectation of his doing service which the Towne was not acquainted with, being found unable to gett his living & going from us was stayed by ye constable of Ipswich. Ye Honnor'd Courte thereuppon sent him back to ye constable of Newbury to be found at the Countreyes charge untill this Courte sh'ld determine the waye to dispose of him. Now our humble desire is yt ye worships would be pleased to dispose of him where it may be least chargeable to ye countreye & most beneficial to himself, wth what & where ye constable shall pay out ye worships shall Judge meete for his so long abiding with him, & your peticoners shall pray &c

JOHN LOWLE
EDWARD WOODMAN *

In answer to this petition the General Court ordered, May 14, 1645: —

It is conceived John Eales should be placed in some convenient place where he may be implied in his trade of beehive makeing, etc.; & ye towne of Neweberry to make up what his work wanteth of defraying ye charge of his livelyhood.†

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. i., pp. 4, 5.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 101. May 14, 1634, "John Eales" was made freeman at the General Court (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 369). As early as 10, perhaps earlier, he was living at Fox Point, Dorchester. He had a son Samuel, baptized [illegible] 3, 1640. In the note-book of Thomas Lechford, pages 418 to 424, there is a covenant or [illegible]eement between "Thomas Allen of Barnstable and John Eells of Dorchester," made July 8, [illegible], in regard to house and land in the county of Devon, England. "John Eeles" is said to [illegible] removed from Dorchester to Hingham, and may afterwards have settled as bee-hive maker [illegible]ewbury.

Pages 83-84 missing in orig Vol

REMOVAL FROM PARKER RIVER TO MERRIMACK RIVER.

The map on the opposite page gives the bounds and limits of Newbury after the incorporation of Rowley in 1639, and the location of some of the prominent hills. The line extending from the landing-place on Parker river to Mr. John Spencer's farm gives the general direction of the path or way that was subsequently extended, as shown by the dotted line, to the ferry landing on Merrimack river. The way from Frog pond to Watts's cellar is now State street, Newburyport.

The limited supply of arable land in the vicinity of Parker river induced many of the inhabitants to favor a removal to a new location three or four miles distant. No definite action was taken, however, until 1642, when a board of commissioners was appointed to lay out and assign to the freeholders of the town all the undivided land between the narrow winding path, or way, now known as Parker Street, or Low Street, and the Merrimack river, extending from John Spencer's farm on the southeast to the mouth of the Artichoke on the northwest. Many serious difficulties and complications delayed the work of the commissioners. A strong and vigorous minority opposed the removal of the meeting-house, and otherwise obstructed the organization of the new settlement. After a long and severe struggle the opposition was weakened, and conciliated by special grants and concessions; and the important question that had disturbed the town for four years was definitely settled.

The first order relating to the proposed removal of the inhabitants of Newbury is found in the Proprietors' Records, and reads as follows: —

> Generall and perticular orders made by the men Deputed for the Managing of those things that concerne the ordering of the New Towne from Decem'b 7th 1642.*

* Proprietors' Records, vol. i., fol. 44.

land," were evidently copied, when the Proprietors' Book was compiled, from records that are not now in existence. There is no doubt, however, that the order, as printed, was adopted by the commissioners soon after their appointment; and it is certain that a year or two later they placed on record the following statement relating to the proposed removal of the inhabitants from Parker river: —

Whereas the towne of Newbury, well weighing the streights they were in for want of plough ground, remoteness of the common, scarcity of fencing stuffe, and the like, did in the year 1642 grant a commission to Mr. Thomas Parker, Mr James Noyes, Mr John Woodbridge, Mr Edward Rawson, Mr. John Cutting, Mr. John Lowle, Mr. Edward Woodman, and Mr. John Clark, for removing, settleing, and disposeing of the inhabitants to such place as might in their judgements best tend to theyr enlargements, exchanging theyr lands, and making such orders as might bee in theyr judgements for the well ordering of the town's occasions and, as in their commission more largely appeareth, the said deputed men did order in their first meeting and appoint John Merrill, Richard Knight, Anthony Short and John Emery to go to all the inhabitants of the towne, taking a true list of all the stock of each inhabitant, and make a true valuation of all their houses, improved land, and fences, that thereby a just rule might be made to proportion each inhabitant his portion of land about the new towne, and removing of the inhabitants there.

It was ordered at a meeting of the eight deputed men above mentioned that each freeholder should have a house lott of foure akers. It was further ordered, in respect of the time for the inhabitants removeing from the place they now inhabit to that which is layd out and appointed for their new habitations, each inhabitant shall enjoy their house lotts foure years from the day of the date of this commission.*

There is nothing to indicate when this statement, with the accompanying orders, was entered upon the record; but the freeholders of the town, at a meeting held January 10, 1643–4, voted "y^{t} eu^{r}y house lott shall be ffoure acres," and on the same day ordered "y^{t} he y^{t} hath least land in the New Towne shall have 8 acres y^{t} [except] John Swett, Tho: Silver, Jo: Russe." *

The adoption of these votes and orders induced those who were dissatisfied to appeal to the governor and the House of

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Deputies for protection and assistance. June 11, 1644, the General Court ordered "(in ans^r to ye peticon of pte of y^e inhabitants of Newberry) that noe village or towne shalbee erected w^thin the bounds of y^e said towne vntill such time as y^e petic̄on^s bee ans^red by way of comission or otherwise." *

What further action was taken in regard to this petition is unknown; but it is certain that the place first selected for the new meeting-house, "upon the hill by the little pine swamp," was subsequently changed "at a Towne meeting of y^e 8 men the 2^d of January 1645–6," as appears by the following record: —

Wee, whose names are in y^e margent expressed (James Noyes, Edward Woodman, John Cutting, John Lowle, Richard Knight and Henry Short,) for y^e settleing y^e distrac̄eons y^t yett remayne about y^e setling and placeing y^e meeting house y^t all men may cheerfully goe on to improve their lands at y^e new towne doe determine y^t y^e meeting house shall be placed & sett up at or before y^e twentieth of October next in, or upon, a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppans barne w^thin a sixe or sixteen Rodd of this side of y^e gate posts y^t are sett up in y^e highway by said Abraham Toppans barne.

Edward Rawson contradicents this order.†

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 8.

† Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

CHAPTER III.

THE SETTLEMENT AT MERRIMACK RIVER, 1645–1685.

ALTHOUGH the location of the new meeting-house was definitely fixed and settled by the vote recorded January 2, 1645–6, a long remonstrance, signed by Edmund Greenleaf, Daniel Thurston, Stephen Kent, John Poore, and others, was presented to the General Court, denouncing the vote as illegal and unjust, and proposing that the church, under the pastoral care of Rev. Thomas Parker, should be divided, one of the elders to remain with the old church, the other to go with the new one.*

To this petition, or remonstrance, the General Court returned the following answer, May 26, 1647: —

1. It is conceived meete, yt it be declared by ye authority of this Corte, yt ye comission granted to ye major pt of ye towne of Newberry & ye p'ceedings thereupon, to be legall & warrantable.

2. That if any errors were in ye said comission &c or any dissent from ye same by any of ye minor pt &c yet they are all concluded from taking any exception thereto, in regard of their acceptance of ye recompence ordred for satisfaction.

3. That ye petitionrs of ye minor pt have failed in not submiting to their owne covenant.

4. That a lettr be written from this Corte to the two eldrs & those brethren of ye major pt, yt for peace sake they would please by turnes to supply ye other pt &c.†

The petitioners, however, were dissatisfied with the decision of the General Court, and did not attempt to conceal their vexation and disappointment. Several of them removed from Newbury; and those who remained reluctantly acquiesced in the removal of the meeting-house "to a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppans barne."

* Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 44–46.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 196.

House lots and farm lots were laid out in the new settlement, and assigned to the freeholders of the town of Newbury as early as 1645. An order was adopted which, though somewhat vague and confusing, gives some of the details of the assignment, as follows: —

It is ordered & determined by the orderers of the Towne affairs that the plan of the new Towne is & shall be layd out by the lott layrs as ye house lotts were determined by their choice beginning from the farthermost on the south street thence running threw the Pine swampe then up the high street numbering the lotts in the south street from the first to John Bartlett's lott the 27th then through the west side of the high street to Mr Lowles ye 28th & so to the end of the streete then running thro' field streete to Mr Woodmans ye 41st thence to the end of that street to John Cheneys ye 50th then turning to the first Cross street the west side of John Emery 51st thence coming up from the River side on the East side of the same street to the other street the west side to Daniel Pearses ye 57th & so to the River side on yt side the streete to Mr Clarke, whence from ye water side up the street on the East side to ffrancis Plumer 66th as hereunder by names & figures appended.*

Mr. Thomas Parker	33	Daniel Pearson	57
Mr James Noyes	32	Thos: Blumfield	
Mr Woodman	41	Nath. Badger	58
John Knight	09	John Bond	
Richard Knight	10	John Swett	26
John Pike Junior	55	Wm Hilton	
Arch: Woodman	42	Robt Lewis	
Jo: Pemberton	46	Gyles Badger	63
Rich. Little Ale	49	Mr Greenlefe	07
Rich. ffitts	50	Mrs Oliver	17
Widdow Stevens	13 & 14	Lt John Lowle	28
John Stevens	14	Anth: Short	08
Anth: Somerby	44	Jo: Hutchins	34
Richard Bartlett	25	Mr Clarke	60
John Bartlett	27	Mr Rawson	31
Wm Titcomb	24	Jos: Cheney	30
Nich: Batt	47	Wydd: Goffe	
Robt Coker	53	Tho: Browne	56
Tho. Dowe	23	Wm Elnsley	
Rich: Badger	04	Nich. Noyse	06
Hen: Travers	01	Hen: Lunt	49
John Emery	51	Mr Browne	18

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. i., p. 26.

Hen. Palmer		Mr John Cutting	30
Rich: Kent Senr		Mr Lowle Senr	29
Wm Palmer		Sam: Plumer	65
Thomas Cromwell		Anth: Morse	54
Sam: Scullard	45	Wm Morse	11
Tho: Silver		Hen Rolfe	11
Walter Allen		Dan: Thurston	39
ffrancis Plumer	66	Able Huse	39
Abraham Toppan	20	Jo: Poore	35
John Musslewte		Jo: Merrill	40
Thos. Haile		Abr. Merrill	36
Tho: Coleman	72	Jo: ffits	
Wyddow Browne	19	fferry lott	
Jo: Pike Senr	02	Jo: Indian	61

The house lots were assigned to the persons above named in exchange for land previously granted them at Parker river, and many of the transfers and conveyances were promptly recorded by the town clerk. Some of them, however, were forgotten or overlooked, while others were not presented for approval and registration until several years later:* "William Mors in consideration of his resigning up an house lot in the old town is granted one at the new town joyning to the new street";† Anthony Mors for the same consideration "is granted an house lot at the new town joyning Cross street"; Joseph Peasle "is granted an house lot in the new town joyning ffish street"; John Knight, "an house lot at the new town joyning South Street"; Samuel Plumer, "an house lot at the new town joyning New Street"; Percivell Lowle, "an house lot at the new town joyning Hill Street"; John Cutting, "an house lot at the new town joyning Hill Street"; Edmund Mooers, "an house lot at the new town joyning South Street"; James Browne, "an house lot at the new town joyning Hill Street"; Henry Lunt, "an house lot at the new town joyning Merrimack Street"; William Stevens, "an house lot at the new town joyning uth Street"; Nicholas Noyes, "an house lot at the new vn joyning South Street"; Thomas Brown, "an house lot

*"Ould Newbury," p. 94.

†Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records, pp. 56–58, inclusive.

at the new town joyning Cross Street"; Widdow Goff, "an house lot at the new town joyning Hill Street"; Thomas Smith, "an house lot at the new town joyning Merrimack Street"; John Pemberton, "an house lot at the new town joyning Merrimack Street"; John Emery, "an house lot at the new town joyning Cross Street"; Henry Travers, "an house lot at the new town joyning South Street and Merrimack Street"; Richard Badger, "an house lot at the new town joyning South Street"; Thomas Dow, "an house lot at the new town joyning to the way by ffrogg pond"; Gyles Cromlon, "an house lot at the new town joyning New Street"; Samuel Scullard, "an house lot at the new town in the nine lots"; Anthony Somerby, "an house lot at the new town joyning to Merrimack Street in the nine lots"; Richard ffitts, "an house lot at the new town joyning to Merrimack Street in the nine lots"; Richard Littlehale, "an house lot at the new town joyning to Merrimack Street in the nine lots"; Thomas Blumfield, "an house lot at the new town joyning to ffish street"; Percivall Lowle, "four acres of land in the Little field"; John Lowle, "four acres of land in the Little field"; Archelaus Woodman, "an house lot joyning to Merrimack Street"; Edward Woodman, "forty acres of land joyning to Merrimack Streete and the way going to the Aspen Swamp"; Abraham Toppan, "four acres of land joyning to Hill Street"; Gyles Badger, "four acres of land joyning to ffish Street"; John Fry, "four acres of land joyning to ffish Street." *

The commercial advantages of the new settlement were developed and strengthened in many ways. Mr. John Cutting, "shipmaster," removed from the old town to the new town; Mr. Thomas Millward,† who owned a "shallop," came

* Fish street, also called "New Street" and "the way to Watts Sellar" in the early records, is now State street, Newburyport. Cross street, afterward called "Ordway's Lane," is now Market street, Newburyport. Hill street extends from Parker to Pond streets, Newburyport, and still retains its old name. South street is now Parker street, Newbury. And Merrimack street, also called "the country road," is now known as High street (in Newbury and Newburyport), beginning at Parker river and extending to the Three Roads, so called.

† "Thomas Millward, seaman," bought of Stephen Kent of Newbury, March 16, 1645–6, "ten acres of upland as it is situate on Merrimack River."

"Richard ffitts of Newbury" sold March 26, 1645–6, "to Thomas Millward, mariner, five acres of upland scituate on Merrimack River."

to Newbury from Cape Ann; and Aquilla Chase, who was evidently a good boatman, came from Hampton.

In 1646, the freeholders of Newbury granted Aquilla Chase four acres of land for a house lot at the new town, and six acres for a planting lot, "on condition that he do goe to sea and do service in the towne with a boate for four years." *

Laid out to Aquilla Chace four acres of land for a house lott, be it more or less, in the new Towne joyning to Henry ffays land on the South West and the street on the South East and the way by Merrimack River on the North East and David Wheelers land on the West.†

The building of houses in the new town and the clearing of land for cultivation progressed rapidly during the summer of 1646, and was continued with unabated vigor the following year.

December 10, 1646. The towne being informed that Mr Thomas Parker was unwilling to act any longer in any matters concerning the new Towne & that Mr Cutting was going to sea, they were apprehensive of the weighty occasions of the towne that are likely to bee retarded, did make choyse of Nicholas Noyes & William Titcomb in their roome to be added to the rest of the new towne men for sixe weeks that so things may with more speed be dispatched. ‡

At the meeting of the eight men December 16, 1646, they made these orders and grants as follows: —

It is ordered that whatsoever land is falne already or hereafter may fall into the townes hands vpon the necke ouer the great River shall perpetually remaine for the townes use to be let out for defraying public charges.

It is ordered that all men that hold land on the necke over the great River shall not sell nor lett out the same for any time whereby it may

Mr. Richard Doyle of Newbury sold March 16, 1645–6, "to Mr. Thomas Millward, mariner, five acres of upland that he bought of William Morss as it is scituate on Merrimack River." Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 43.

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 22, 123, 149.

† Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 67. Aquilla Chase was living in Hampton, N.H., March 7, 1643. He was one of the petitioners to the General Court who asked for a modification of the law regulating military drill in that town. (See New Hampshire Provincial Papers, vol. i., p. 166.)

The house owned and occupied by Aquilla Chase in Newbury was located on the northeasterly corner of Chandler's lane (now Federal street, Newburyport) and the way by Merrimack river, now Water str[illegible].

‡ Town of Newbury Records (1637 to 1692), p. 60.

bee alienated from the towne: (this last order was made on this consideration, viz: — because the necke men have consented to yeld to the remoueing of the towne, and accordingly have received satisfaction at the new towne in land, for their land on the necke, and therefore have yelded up their land in the necke to the Towne).

It is ordered that all those that do accept of any lands between the great River and Stephen Dumers farme shall have and hold it on this condition that they goe not about to divide the church, or oppose the first order or agreement about the moveing of the towne.*

On the margin of the page where the above orders are recorded is the following memorandum: —

P'snt at this meeting James Noyes, Edward Woodman, John Lowle, Hen: Short, Rich: Knight, Nich. Noyes, Will Titcomb. These orders were published Decemb: 18th, 1646.

February 7, 1646–7, more than two hundred and fifty acres of upland and marsh "on y^e Iland over the little River" were granted to Richard Kent, jr., by the selectmen, he having, after a long contest, consented to the removal of the town.

FREEHOLDERS.

A person entitled, by grant, purchase, or inheritance, to a share in the common and undivided lands of Newbury was called a freeholder or proprietor. Frequent mention is made of the sale and purchase of freehold rights in the first volume of the Proprietors' Records: —

John Bond acknowledges to have sold to Christopher Bartlet the priviledg of a ffreehold in the year 1643.†

It was acknowledged by M^r Edward Rawson, M^r Edward Woodman, and Richard Knight, before the three Townsmen, Febr 20, 1649, being John Sanders, William Titcomb & Archelaus Woodman, that the hous lot that Richard Bartlet bought of M^r William Thomas, was acknowledged to have the priviledge of a freehold altho' it was not sett downe in the list of the ffreeholders they all acknowledged that it was forgott and accordingly gave me order to record it.

Witness, ANTHONY SOMERBY, *Recorder*.‡

* Town of Newbury Records, 1637 to 1692, p. 60.

† Town of Newbury, Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 53. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 33.

March 1, 1651, a committee was chosen, consisting of the selectmen, "three commissioners for small causes," and Richard Knight, to settle all claims arising from the sale or purchase of freehold rights. The committee reported: —

These persons heer under mentioned are acknowledged to be ffree-holders and to have an interest in all cõmons belonging to the Towne as having lawfully purchased they^r priviledges from such as had the priviledges estated on them by the Towne.

Capt Gerrish hath a freehold from Mr. Rawson.*

William Hilton from Mattox (sold to John Wright).

James Jackman from Giles Abbots.

John Tilletson from Nath Wyers.

Samuel Plumer from one of John Lowls.

William Ilsley from William Whites.

Hugh March from George Browns.

Christopher Bartlet from John Bond one wch Stephen Greenleaf hath.

Richard Thurlo from M^r Clarks.

John Chater from Henry Palmers.

George Little hath John Osgoods.

Henry Jaques from Walter Allens.

M^r Woodman from John Pembertons.

Richard Petengall from M^r Thomas.

Stephen Swet from John ffry.

Joseph Plumer from John Kelly.

Edmund Moers from John Stevens.

Richard Browne from Giles Badger.

Edmund Moers hath Richard Brownes.

John Wheeler was acknowledged to have a priviledg, and also Danie Wheeler and Aquilla Chase & Nathaniel Merrill.

Stephen Greenleaf from William ffracnkling sold now to John Webster.

John Bayley from Joseph Peasly.

John Bayley another from W^m Ilsley.

William Titcomb besides his owne hath M^r James Brownes.

Richard Bartlet besides his owne hath M^r Henry Sewall Jun^r.

George Little hath the other of M^r John Lowls freeholds.

John Bartlet besides his owne hath Samuel Guiles.

William Moody hath John Gofts.

*"At a legall meeting of the Towne March 3, 1661–2 Capt. William Gerrish produced a deede of the purchas of M^r Rawsons farm & ffreehold in Newbury and the Towne Granted the said Capt. Gerrish to be recorded a ffreeholder uppon the said Purchas in all the Towns Comons belonging to Newbury. per ANTHONY SOMERBY, *Clerc.*"

— Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 49.

Mr Sewals little farme hath for pembertons house from Mr Woodmans Priviledge Amos Stickny.

Widdow Keyes on Richard Badger.

John Bishop besides the Mill Lott hath Samuel Scullards Priviledg.

John Emery Jnr hath Daniel Peirces.

Mr. Coffin hath Mr Snellings.

Wm Chandler hath William Berries.

Benjamin Rolfe from Nathaniel Badger.

Richard Dole from Mr Greenleaf.

Edward Richardson purchased Nathaniel Wyers ffreehold of John Tilletson.

Feb. 23, 1653 James Browne from his Grandfather Mr Cuttings ffreehold.

Robert Long for four acres of dividend land and four acres which he purchased of Capt. Gerrish, bought of the towns men the right & privilege of a freehold.*

The towns men with the rest of the Committee above' said, meeting January the 10th 1652 about their comission found that all inhabitants was freeholders according to towne order exceptt those whose names are here under written and these also the committee according to their power do order that they may purchase the priveledge of Commonage, each man Conditionally; every man do either lay eight akers of divident land to the Comon which they may do by purchase or else pay fifty shillings to the townsmen to purchase such land for the towns use, and no other person upon any Condition whatsoever.

John Knight Jun.
William Sawyer
Robert Longe
William Morse
Edward Richardson
Robert Rogers hath purchased Nath. Wyres of John Tilletson
Robert Morse
Henry ffay
Robert Adams
Francis Ordway hath not of his owne but at pr'sent he hath one he buyes of John Bartlet
John Hall
Joseph Downer hath his father John Knights freehold
William Randall
William Mitchil
William Trotter
} hath not liberty to purchase
Edward Woodman hath Thomas Davis freehold
John Knight Junr hath purchased Richard Littlehale freehold as by a bill of sale appears Novemb: 23.†

Edward Rawson and Anthony Somerby in an affidavit dated August 18, 1654, state that Richard Bartlet, senior, of

* Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 45. † Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Newbury, "in consideration of a certain number of bushels of corne in hand paid and received & for ten bushels a year during his natural life," sold and conveyed to his son Richard Bartlet "his freehold & four acre lot at new towne, six acres of marsh land & five acres meadow land near the ox comon, & seven acres dividend land in the year 1646." The deed being lost, this affidavit was signed and acknowledged on the day above named, and afterwards recorded in the Registry of Deeds.*

March 3, 1661 laid out for Mr Henry Sewall for the two freeholds he doth enjoy, one was for his fathers and the other was Mr Edward Woodmans, ten acres of Marshland being the ninth and tenth lots &c.*

Mr. Henry Sewall acknowledged unto me, January 3, 1683, to have given his son John Sewall his freehold Priviledg of Comon wch he purchased of Mr. Woodman. ANTHONY SOMERBY

*Cler for Newbury.**

The same day Mr Henry Sewall acknowledged to have given his son Stephen Sewall the freehold of Comon which was granted to his father, Henry Sewall deceased.†

David Wheeler, of Rowley, planter, for twenty-eight pounds sold to Caleb Moody of Newbury, maltster, all his common right or freehold belonging to the house lot "lying near to Watts his seller in Newbury," conditionally, upon the payment of fourteen pounds to the said Caleb Moody before April 1, 1675. The bill of sale, dated February 13, 1672, to be void and of no effect, if the said fourteen pounds is paid.‡

FREEMEN.

The charter granted "The Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England" in 1629 provided for the organization of the company and the orderly management of its affairs, "for the imposition of lawful fines, mulcts, imprisonment, or other lawful correction, according to the course of other Corporations § in this our realm of England," and

* Essex Deeds (Ipswich Series), vol. i., p. 184 (500).

† Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records, p. 66. ‡ Ibid, vol. i.

§ The charter evidently conveyed the rights, privileges, and powers granted to other corporations, organized and governed in England, but did not expressly confer upon the company the right to transfer its government to New England, to levy taxes, organize towns, or establish courts of justice there.

conferred upon the governor, deputy governor, and their assistants power and authority to choose or appoint such persons "as they shall think fit" to be freemen of the company, to aid and assist in making "laws and ordinances for the good and welfare of said company, . . . not contrary or repugnant to the laws and statutes of this our realm of England."

At a meeting of the officers and freemen of the company held in London October 29, 1629, it was voted to transfer the government and control of the company to New England.

The first Court of Assistants was held August 23, 1630, at Charlestown. The first session of the General Court was held October 19, 1630, at Boston. The law-making power was intrusted by the charter to the freemen, who were to meet four times each year to decide, by a majority vote, all questions relating to public affairs. The governor, deputy governor, and assistants, constituted a majority, if not all, of the members who were present at the first session of the General Court. They passed an order "for the establishing of the government" limiting the power and authority of the freemen, and giving to the assistants the exclusive right or elect a governor and deputy governor, "who, with the assistants, should have the power of making laws and choosing officers to execute the same." No one was made a freeman at this session of the court, although one hundred and nine persons applied for admission.*

May 18, 1631, the General Court ordered that "no man shalbee admitted to the freedome of this body polliticke but such as are members of some of the churches within the lymitts of the same." †

At this session one hundred and sixteen persons, including most of those who applied in October, 1630, took the oath, and were admitted as freemen.

May 9, 1632, the order adopted October 19, 1630, in regard to the election of officers was modified and made acceptable to the people by an agreement that the governor and

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., pp. 79, 80. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 87.

deputy governor should, after that date, be chosen by the freemen, and not by the assistants.*

May 14, 1634, it was voted that "none but the General Court hath power to chuse and admitt ffreemen"; † and September 3, 1635, all questions relating to the admission of inhabitants, or to the granting and laying out of house lots in towns, were, by order of the General Court, referred to the freemen of the several towns for settlement.‡

March 3, 1635–6, the General Court ordered "that noe p'son, being a member of any churche which shall hereafter be gathered without the approbation of the Magistrates & the greater p'te of the said churches, shalbe admitted to the ffreedom of this comonwealthe." §

After March 9, 1636–7, every military officer or civilian holding a position of honor or trust was compelled to take the oath of a freeman; "for it is the intent and order of the court that no person shall henceforth be chosen to any office in the Commonwealth but such as is a freeman." ‖

In answer to a petition presented by the inhabitants of the county of Middlesex, the General Court ordered, May 31, 1660, "that no man whosoeuer shall be admitted to the freedom of this body politic but such as are members of some church of Christ, and in full com'nion, w^ch^ they declare to be y^e^ true intent of y^t^ anncient lawe enacted May 18, 1631." ¶

King Charles II., in a letter to the General Court dated June 28, 1662, objected to the arbitrary provisions of this law. It was repealed August 3, 1664, and a new one enacted, admitting to the freedom of the Commonwealth, by a majority vote of the members of the General Court, all Englishmen presenting a certificate from the minister of the place where they dwell "that they are orthodox in religion & not vitious in theire liues," and also a certificate from the selectmen that they are freeholders and pay a tax of ten shillings, or more, annually.* *

Col. Richard Nicolls, Sir Robert Carr, George Cartwright, Esq., and Samuel Maverick, Esq., commissioners sent by the

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 95. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 117. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 161. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 168. ‖ Ibid., vol. i., p. 188. ¶ Ibid., vol. iv., part I., p. 420.
** Ibid., vol. iv., part II., p. 117.

king to confer with the colonial authorities in regard to alleged abuses in the administration of government in New England, endeavored to secure a modification of this law, and especially the tax qualification which they severely criticised and denounced. In a communication addressed to the General Court they state their objections to the law, and say: —

When the King shall be enformed, as the trueth is, that not one church member in an hundred payes so much & y^t^ in a towne of an hundred inhabitants scarse three such men are to be found, wee feare the King will rather finde himself deluded than satisfied by your late act. Though you commend, to the ministry & people, the record of the Lord for their rule, yet you did it with a provisoe that they have the approbation of the Court as appears in the same page; and wee have great reason both to thinke & say that the King & his council & the church of England, vnderstands & follows the rules in Gods word as much as their corporation.*

A few months before the above protest was presented by the commissioners the county courts were authorized, October 19, 1664, to administer the freeman's oath to any person approved by the General Court.† After a long delay and a somewhat acrimonious discussion the commissioners returned to England. The king was occupied with political troubles and dissensions at home, and for many years paid but little attention to colonial affairs.

The law remained in force, notwithstanding the serious objections raised against it, until the charter of the colony was annulled, October 23, 1684.

A LIST OF THE FREEMEN OF NEWBURY.

As the residence of the freemen is not always given in the records, it is possible that some names that should appear in the following list have been overlooked.

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Mass. Colony Records.*
Frauncis Plumer.	May 14, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 368, 369.
Thomas Hale.	May 14, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 368, 369.
John Eales.	May 14, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 368, 369.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 205.

† Ibid., vol. iv., part I., p. 134.

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Mass. Colony Records.*
Christopher Hussey.	May 14, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 368, 369.
Mr John Spencer.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 370.
Henry Shorte.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 370.
Phillip Fowler.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 370.
Mr Tho: Parker.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 570.
Mr Nicholas Easton.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 370.
Mr James Noise.	Sept. 3, 1634.	Vol. i., pp. 369, 370.
John Webster.	March 4, 1634–5.	Vol. i., p. 370.
Rich: Kent.	March 4, 1634–5.	Vol. i., p. 370.
John Clerke.	May 6, 1635.	Vol. i., pp. 370, 371.
Rich Browne.	May 6, 1635.	Vol. i., pp. 370, 371.
Willm Moody.	May 6, 1635.	Vol. i., pp. 370, 371.
Mr Steven Batchelr	May 6, 1635.	Vol. i., pp. 370, 371.
Willm Mosse.	March 3, 1635–6.	Vol. i., p. 371.
Richrd Knight.	May 25, 1636.	Vol. i., p. 371.
Anthony Mosse.	May 25, 1636.	Vol. i., p. 371.
John Saunders.	May 25, 1636.	Vol. i., p. 371.
James Browne.	May 25, 1636.	Vol. i., p. 371.
Edmond Marshall.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Henry Seawall, Junior.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Thomas Smythe.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Nicolas Holt.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Nicolas Noise.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Archelaus Woodman.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
James Browne.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
John Bartlet.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Robert Pike.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Thomas Coleman.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
John Cheney.	May 17, 1637.	Vol. i., p. 373.
Edward Rawson.	March, 1637–8.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Daniell Peirce.	May 2, 1638.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Abraham Tappin.	May 2, 1638.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Henry Lunt.	May 2, 1638.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Thomas Hale.	Sept. 7, 1638.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Richrd Singletery.	Sept. 7, 1638.	Vol. i., p. 374.
Christopher Batte.	March 13, 1638–9.	Vol. i., p. 375.
Edmond Greenliffe.	March 13, 1638–9.	Vol. i., p. 375.
Thomas Moulton.	March 13, 1638–9.	Vol. i., p. 375.
Steven Dumer	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Osgood.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Goffe.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Mussellwhit.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
Steven Kent.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Rimington.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Mass. Colony Records.*
Thomas Browne.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Moulton.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Clarke.	May 22, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 375.
John Roffe.	Sept. 6, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 376.
Anthony Sadler.	Sept. 6, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 376.
Thomas Masie.	Sept. 6, 1639.	Vol. i., p. 376.
John Oliver.	May 13, 1640.	Vol. i., p. 376.
John Saunders.	May 13, 1640.	Vol. i., p. 376.
John Lowell.	June 2, 1641.	Vol. i., p. 378.
Thom: Davies.	June 2, 1641.	Vol. i., p. 378.
John Emery.	June 2, 1641.	Vol. i., p. 378.
Samu: Plumer.	June 2, 1641.	Vol. i., p. 378.
John March.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Richrd Knight.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
John Cooper.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
John Stevens.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Willi: Stevens.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Antho: Sommersbey.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Henry Sommersbey.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
William Berry.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Samu: Guil.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
Abell Hews.	May 18, 1642.	Vol. ii., p. 291.
		Salem Court Records.
William Gerrish.	July 9, 1645.	Book II., leaf 174.
		Ipswich Court Records.
Christopher Bartlet.	Sept. 29, 1646.	Book I., leaf 4.
John Pore.	March 28, 1648.	Book I., leaf 11.
		Mass. Colony Records.
John Saunders.	May 22, 1650.	Vol. iv., part I., p. 459.
		Ipswich Court Records.
Tho: Milward.	Sept. 7, 1650.	Book I., leaf 21.
John Knight.	Sept. 7, 1650.	Book I., leaf 21.
Ben: Swet.	Sept. 7, 1650.	Book I., leaf 21.
John Chattor (Cheater?).	March 25, 1651.	Book I., leaf 23.
		Mass. Colony Records.
William Hilton.	May 18, 1653.	Vol. iv., part I., p. 460.
John Kent.	May 3, 1654.	Vol. iv., part I., p. 460.
		Ipswich Court Records.
Nath: Weare, Senior.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Rich: Dole.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
John Emery, Jr.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Rich: Bartlett.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Will: Bartlett.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Will: Cottell.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Ipswich Court Records.*
Tho: Bloomfield.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Tho Seers.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
Will: Chandlour.	March 28, 1654.	Book I., leaf 44.
John Davis.	March 28, 1657.	Book I., leaf 44.
Joseph Noyes.	March 31, 1657.	Book I., leaf 59.
Joseph Muzzey.	March 31, 1657.	Book I., leaf 59.
John Webster.	Sept. 29, 1657.	Book I., leaf 63.
Tho: Hale.	Sept. 28, 1658.	Book I., leaf 69.
John Allen.	March 29, 1659.	Book I., leaf 72.
Solomon Keyes.	March 29, 1659.	Book I., leaf 72.
Robert Addams.	March 27, 1660.	Book I., leaf 84.
Abraham Merrill.	Sept. 30, 1662.	Book I., leaf 109.
		Mass. Colony Records.
Dani: Pearse.	May 27, 1663.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 581.
Shubal Dumer.	May 3, 1665.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 582.
Samuel Moody.	May 23, 1666.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 582.
Caleb Moody.	May 23, 1666.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 582.
Wm Peelsbury.*	April 29, 1668.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
James Ordaway.*	April 29, 1668.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Nath: Clarke.*	April 29, 1668.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Tristram Coffin.†	April 29, 1668.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
James Kent. ‡	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Jno Kent.	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Jno Bartlet, Jun.	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Jno Wells.	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583
Abiel Somersby. ‡	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Henry Jacquish. ‡	May 19. 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.

* William Pilsbury, James Ordway, and Nathaniel Clarke, "church members of Newbury, desire ye priveledge to be made freemen." "Attest, Henry Sewall." Admitted May 14, 1668. (Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., p. 485.)

"Wm Pilsbury took the oath of a freeman Sept. 29, 1668." (Ipswich Court Records, book II., leaf 79.)

James Ordway was sworn before Robert Pike, commissioner, February 26, 1668-9. (Norfolk Deeds, book II., p. 143.)

† "To the Honored Gov. Deputy Gov. Magistrates & Deputyes in Generall Court assembled the 29 of April 1668.

"We hereby certify that Tristram Coffin is an Orthodox member of the church of Newbury and a householder in all respects qualified for admission to the freedom of this jurisdiction as the Law directeth.

"I judge the foresaid Tristram Coffin to be orthodox, and he also is a member of our church. THOMAS PARKER.

"Admitted to freedom
"22. 3mo 68
"E. R[awson] S[ecretary]

"RICHARD KENT.
"RICHARD DOLE.
"JOHN KNIGHT.
"DANIEL PIERCE."

—Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., p. 487.

‡ "James Kent, Abiell Somerby, and Henry Jaquis admitted to be freemen by the general Court took the freeman's oath April 18, 1671 at the Ipswich Court." (Book II., leaf 142.)

"To the Honoured Court: Wee the selectmen of Newbury according to law do present

NEWBERRY LIBRARY

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Mass. Colony Records.*
Benja: Lowell.	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
John Bayley.*	May 19, 1669.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 583.
Joseph Plumer.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
Benj: Rolfe.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
John Poore Jun.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
Franc: Thurlo.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
Nicho: Batt.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
Job Pilsbury.†	May 11, 1670.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 584.
Paul White.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
Tho: Noyes.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
Jonathan Morse.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
James Smith.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
John Smith.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
John Knight, Jun.	May 31, 1671.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 585.
Mr. Joseph Gerrish.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Elisha Elsie (Ilsley?)	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
James Bayley.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Dani: Cheny.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Joseph Browne.‡	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Sam: Poore.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Moses Pilsbury.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Benja: Morse.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
Sam: Bartlet.	May 7, 1673.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 586.
John Noyes.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.
Cutting Noyes.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.
John Lunt.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.
Abra: Adams.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.
John Badger.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.
Joseph Gerrish.‡	Jan. 9, 1673–4.	Vol. iv., part II., p. 587.

Henry Jacquish, John Kelly, Benjamin Rolfe [. . .] being in ffull communion with the church in Newbury And Orthodox in Religion, Desire to be made free "Richard Dole.
"6th May '69. "John Knight.
"Allowed June 2, 1669. "Tristram Coffin."

—Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., leaf 490.

* John Bayley, Benjamin Lowell, John Wells and John Bartlet, jr., took the oath before Robert Pike, commissioner, October 2, 1669. (Norfolk Deeds, book II., leaf 143.)

"To the honored Court: John Bayley an Ancient inhabitant and member in full communion with the church of Newbury desires admission to the freedom of this jurisdiction.

"That John Bayley is as above exprest is attested by me
"May 22, 1669." "Joseph Hills.

—Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., leaf 489.

† "Benjamin Roffe, John Poore, Jun, ffrances Thurlay, Nicholas Batt, Job Pilsbury & Samuel (?) Plumer of Newbury being returned by the Secretary took the oath of freeman, Sept. 27, 1670." (Ipswich Court Records, book II., leaf 125.)

‡ "Jno Badger, Jno Lunt, John Noyes, Cuting Noyes, Jos Gerrish, Jos Browne of Newbury being admitted to the freedom this colony took the freemans oath March 31, 1674." (Ipswich Court Records, book II., leaf 240.)

Name.	*Admitted.*	*Mass. Colony Records.*
John Sewall.	May 12, 1675.	Vol. v., p. 536.
John Richardson.	May 12, 1675.	Vol. v., p. 536.
Sam: Sayer.	May 12, 1675.	Vol. v., p. 536.
Benja Morse.	May 12, 1675.	Vol. v., p. 536.
		Ipswich Court Records.
Tho: Wells.	Sept. 28, 1675.	Book II., leaf 271.
Joseph Morse.	Sept. 28, 1675.	Book II., leaf 271.
		Mass. Colony Records.
Rich. Dumer Jun.*	May 23, 1677.	Vol. v., p. 537.
Hen: Short.*	May 23, 1677.	Vol. v., p. 537.
Steph: Greenleaf.	May 23, 1677.	Vol. v., p. 537.
Jacob Topan.*	May 23, 1677.	Vol. v., p. 537.
Rich: Bartlet, Jun.*	May 23, 1677.	Vol. v., p. 537.
Jno: Dole.	Oct. 15, 1679.	Vol. v., p. 539.
		Ipswich Court Records.
John Sewall.	April 15, 1679.	Book II., leaf 340.
Charles Annis.	April 15, 1679.	Book II., leaf 340.
John Pengitta (Pettingell?)	April 15, 1679.	Book II., leaf 340.
Caleb Boynton.	March 29, 1681.	Book II., leaf 362.
		Mass. Colony Records.
Daniel Lunt.	Feb. 7, 1682–3.	Vol. v., p. 541.
Daniel Merrill.	Feb. 7, 1682–3.	Vol. v., p. 541.
Wm. Moody.	Feb. 7, 1682–3.	Vol. v., p. 541.
George March.	May 16, 1683.	Vol. v., p. 542.
Joseph Knight.†	Feb. 13, 1683–4.	Vol. v., p. 542.
Tymothy Noys.	Feb. 13, 1683–4.	Vol. v., p. 542.
James Jackman.	Feb. 13, 1683–4.	Vol. v., p. 542.
Wm Elsly.†	Feb. 13, 1683–4.	Vol. v., p. 542.
Danel Merrill.	May 7, 1684.	Vol. v., p. 542.
Jno Bartlet.	May 7, 1684.	Vol. v., p. 542.

COMMISSIONERS TO END SMALL CAUSES.

May 6, 1646, the General Court adopted the following order: "Mr. Edwd Rawson, Mr Woodman, & Hen: Shorte, whom Newbury have chosen to be ordrers of their affaires, are authorized to end small causes;"‡ and the next year, under the date of May 26, 1647, "Mr. James Browne, Mr. John

*"Jacob Topan, Rich: Bartlet Rich: Dumer Jun and Henry Short took the freemens oath March 26, 1678." (Ipswich Court Records, book II., leaf 300).

†"Joseph Knight, William Ellsly & John Gilbert (?) of Newbury being by the certificate from ye secretary allowed to be freemen, took ye oath March 25, 1684" (Ipswich Court Records book III., leaf 22)

‡Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 148.

Lowle, & Henry Shorte" were appointed to end small causes at Newbury.*

Subsequently the county courts and Court of Assistants were authorized to license the commissioners for small causes "w^th^ clarks of y^e^ writs." †

April 27, 1648, "M^r^ James Browne, M^r^ William Gerrish & William Titcombe" were chosen by the inhabitants of Newbury "for the ending of small causes in this town for this year." ‡

At a general town meeting held April 19, 1649, "M^r^ William Gerrish, M^r^ Woodman, & John Pike were chosen to end small causes in this towne for the year ensuing." ‡

May 23, 1650, "vppon the request of the towne of Newberry, Edward Woodman, William Gerrish & Richard Kent are appoynted to end small causes there according to law." §

At the county court held in Ipswich March 25, 1651, William Gerrish and John Pike, jr., appeared, and were sworn "commissioners to end small causes at Newberry." Mr. Edward Woodman was also named commissioner, but was not sworn at that date. ‖

March 29, 1653, "Capt. Gerrish sworn commissioner to end small causes in Newbury." ¶

"March 28, 1654, Cap^t^ Gerrish, Nicholas Noyes, and John Pike were sworn commissioners to end small causes in Newberry." **

"March 27, 1655, William Tittcum and Harchales Woodman sworn commissioners for Newbury." ††

March 25, 1656, Edward Woodman, Nicolas Noyce, and John Pike sworn commissioners to end small causes in Newbury. ‡‡

November 26, 1656, Capt. William Gerrish sworn commissioner, etc., for Newbury." §§

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 191.

John Lowell died June 29, 1647. "Sept. 28, 1647 John Saunders appointed to be in the room of M^r^ Lole to end small causes at Newberry." (Ipswich Court Files, vol. i., p. 10.)

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 188.

‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 194

‖ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 23. ¶ Ibid., vol. i., p. 32. ** Ibid., vol. i., p. 44.
†† Ibid., vol. i., p. 49. ‡‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 55.

§§ Salem Court Records, vol. iv., p. 20.

March 31, 1657, Nicholas Noyse and John Pike sworn commissioners for Newbury.*

March 27, 1659, Mr. Nicolas Noyse sworn commissioner, etc., for Newbury.†

September 25, 1660, Mr. Edward Woodman, Capt. William Gerrish, and Lieut. John Pike sworn commissioners, etc., for the year ensuing.‡

March 26, 1661, Capt. William Gerrish sworn commissioner to end small causes at Newbury.§

March 25, 1662, Capt. William Gerrish and Mr. Edward Woodman and Nicolas Noyse, chosen to end small causes at Newbury.

Capt. Gerrish and Nicholas Noyse sworn.‖

March 7, 1663, "Mr Woodman, Capt Gerrish & Nicholas Noyes chosen commissioners for small causes for the year ensuing."¶

March 6, 1664–5, Mr. [Edward] Woodman, Capt. [William] Gerrish, and Nicholas Noyes were chosen.**

March 5, 1665–6, Capt. [William] Gerrish, Mr. [Joseph] Hills, and Nicholas Noyes chosen.**

March 4, 1666–7, Capt. [William] Gerrish, Mr. [Joseph] Hills, and Nicholas Noyes chosen.**

March 2, 1667–8, Capt. [William] Gerrish, Mr. [Joseph] Hills, and Nicholas Noyes chosen.**

March 1, 1668–9, Capt. Gerrish, Mr. Hills, and Nicholas Noyes chosen.**

March 7, 1669–70, Mr. Woodman, Mr. Dumer, and William Titcomb chosen.**

September 19, 1670, "Mr Rich: Dumer, Mr Edw: Woodman, & Will. Titcomb nominated as commissioners to be appointed by the county court."**

March 6, 1670–71, Archelaus Woodman, William Titcomb, and Samuel Plumer chosen commissioners for small causes, to be approved by the county court.**

March 4, 1671–2, Mr. Richard Dumer, sr., Lieut. Archelaus Woodman, and William Titcomb, nominated as commissioners of small causes to the county court.**

* Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 59. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 76. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 88.
§ Ibid., vol. i., p. 93. ‖ Ibid., vol. i., p. 108.
¶ Town of Newbury Records. ** Ibid., vol. i.

March 3, 1672–3, Capt. Gerrish, Nicholas Noyes, and Lieut. Woodman were nominated commissioners.*

March 2, 1673–4, Capt. Gerrish, Lieut. Woodman, and Nicholas Noyes were nominated commissioners.*

March 1, 1674–5, Capt. Gerrish, Lieut. Woodman, and Nicholas Noyes were nominated commissioners.*

March 6, 1675–6, Capt. Gerrish, Nicholas Noyes, and Lieut. Archelaus Woodman were nominated commissioners.*

March 5, 1676–7, Mr. John Woodbridg, Nicholas Noyes, and Daniel Peirce, jr., were nominated commissioners.*

March 27, 1677, Mr. John Woodbridge, Nicholas Noyes, and Daniel Pearce, jr., are allowed to be commissioners to end small causes at Newbury.†

Salem, 29: 9: 1681 This court receiving a motion of the Constable of Newbury for persons to be allowed for commissioners of small causes in that towne, the Court doth appoint Capt Daniell Pearce, Mr Nicholas Noyes & Sergt Tristram Coffin to be commissioners in said causes according to law for this year, they taking the oath appointed by the general court before any magistrate.‡

March 16, 1685–6, Capt. Daniell Peirce, Lieut. Stephen Greenleaf, sr., and Capt. Thomas Noyes were nominated as commissioners for small causes.§

SPECIAL MAGISTRATES.

May 19, 1669, the General Court appointed special magistrates for the towns of Dover and Portsmouth, to try criminal cases, take testimony on oath, swear constables, take acknowledgments of deeds, and officiate at marriages. The same day Capt. Nathaniel Saltonstall of Haverhill, Capt. Robert Pike of Salisbury, and Mr. Samuel Dalton of Hampton were authorized to do "wthin their respective townes where they liue & not elsewhere, whateuer any magistrate may legally doe"‖

*Town of Newbury Records.
† Ipswich Court Records, vol. ii., p. 287.
‡ Salem Court Records, vol. v., p. 24.
§ Town of Newbury Records.
‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 424.

Twelve months later the selectmen of Newbury presented the following petition to the General Court, dated May 11, 1670:—

To ye Honobe Generall Court assembled at Boston.

The Humble request of the Selectmen at Newbury is that inasmuch as their Towne is remote from any Towne where a magistrate dwells; that Mr Woodman may be Impowrd with Magisterriall powr in this Towne as other Townes have to the Eastward.

JOHN BARTLET.
WILLIAM CHANDLER.
EDM. MORSE.
SAM. PLUMER.
CALEB MOODY.*

The indorsement on this petition indicates that it failed to receive the approval of the General Court: "The deputies consent"; "the magistrates consent not."

June 1, 1677, Mr. John Woodbridge, sr., was authorized by the General Court to take acknowledgments of deeds and serve as magistrate in the town of Newbury for the year ensuing; and this appointment was renewed May 9, 1678, for one year.†

May 28, 1679, Mr. John Woodbridge's commission as magistrate for Newbury was again renewed; and he was also appointed, at the same time, one of the associate magistrates for the county of Essex for the year ensuing.‡

May 26, 1680, the appointment of Mr. Woodbridge was again brought to the attention of the General Court. The magistrates adopted the following order:—

This court considering the remoteness of Newbury from any authority to act as a magistrate & the benefit that they, by their information, have found in the help they have had by Mr Jno. Woodbridge being invested with magistraticall authority do hereby renew his said commission. §

The deputies declined to concur with the magistrates in the adoption of this order, and the office remained vacant during the year 1680.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxix., p. 376.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., pp. 145 and 187 ‡ Ibid., vol. v., p. 226.
§ Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxix., leaf 659.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury, held October 19, 1681, it was voted that the name of Mr. John Woodbridge should again be presented to the General Court, and "that the selectmen, in behalf of the town, should petition the Court for granting him magistratical powers." *

October 11, 1681, John Richardson, Daniel Poore, Richard Dummer, Tristram Coffin, Caleb Moody, Thomas Noyes, Anthony Somerby, Francis Brown, and other inhabitants of the town of Newbury petitioned the General Court for the appointment of John Woodbridge as magistrate, to take depositions and acknowledgments, and also to have authority to reform abuses and solemnize marriages. "In consequence of the largeness of the town and the frequent concours of vessels," they consider the appointment of a special magistrate necessary, and recommend "Mr. John Woodbridge as ye fittest and most able person for such a work in this place." The magistrates voted to grant this petition, but the deputies "consented not." †

In a petition dated February 15, 1681–2, "to the court now sitting in Boston," Samuel Plumer, Joseph Pike, George March, and Moses Gerrish, selectmen, state that the town of Newbury is greatly inconvenienced for want of a magistrate, and therefore ask that one of the three commissioners appointed to end small causes in Newbury may be authorized to punish criminals, and do what any other magistrate may do.‡ This petition was not agreed to by the magistrates and deputies.

May 16, 1683, John Woodbridge was chosen an "assistant" to the General Court, and by virtue of that office was invested with magisterial power.§ May 7, 1684, he was again chosen; and, June 4, 1685, upon motion of Richard Bartlet, deputy from Newbury, "Mr. John Woodbridge was authorized to administer oaths and join persons in matrimony." ‖

"December 24, 1690 Mr. John Woodbridge and Capt. Daniel Pierce of Newbury, and each of them are impowered

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxii., leaf 328. ‡ Ibid., vol. xxxix., leaf 726.
§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 407.
‖ Ibid., vol. v., p. 483.

to join Persons together in marriage in that Town according to the Direction of ye Laws in that behalf made." *

TOWN OFFICERS.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held in April, 1647, Abraham Toppan, Anthony Somerby, Henry Short, Nicholas Noyes, Richard Kent, jr., John Pike, jr., and Stephen Kent were chosen "to act in y^e^ Prudential affaires of y^e^ Towne for one whole yeare from ye date hereof." †

John Pemberton was chosen constable; and Nicholas Noyes, William Titcomb, and Stephen Kent were chosen way-wardens, or surveyors of the highway.

April 27, 1648, John Pike, jr., Nicholas Noyes, and William Titcomb were chosen to attend to the prudential affairs of the town. Archelaus Woodman was chosen constable, William Moody and John Bartlett, way wardens,† and William Ilsly and Robert Coker, haywards.

The same day, "It was ordered that the meeting for the election of town officers should be held hereafter on the first Monday in March of each year." †

April 19, 1649, John Saunders, William Titcomb, and Archelaus Woodman were chosen "to act in y^e^ prudential affaires of the town according to the former commission given them from the Towne, for this yeare ensuing." †

The same day John Bartlett was chosen constable, John Pemberton, Henry Short, and William Ilsley, way wardens, and John Swett, leather searcher.

It was also ordered that such men as are chosen to bee way wardens should have such power as the Towne can conferre upon them to impose any fine, under ten shillings, upon any person or persons that are delinquent about the services of the highway, the one halfe to bee to the use of the way wardens & the other halfe to such as doe the work provided that they give sufficient warning.†

There is no record of the election of officers nor of any meeting of the freemen of the town, with one or two excep-

* Mass. Archives, vol. xxxvi., p. 260.
† Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

tions, from the year 1649 to 1663. The pages on which the votes and orders were recorded for nearly fifteen years have probably been destroyed, by accident or design, and therefore a complete list of the town officers cannot be given.

"March 7, 1663–4, there was chosen to act the prudentialls of the Towne for this yeare Archelaus Woodman, William Titcomb, Henry Jaques, Leift John Pike & John Cheny Senr." William Chandler chosen constable.

March 6, 1664–5, John Merrill, Daniel Peirce, Senr, John Knight, Junr, Samuel Plumer, & Thomas Hale, Junr, chosen to attend to the prudential affaires of the town. Samuel Moody constable. Capt. Gerrish & Daniel Peirce, way wardens.

March 5, 1665–6, John Poore, William Ilsley, Leift Pike, Robert Coker, and Richard Kent, Selectmen. Caleb Moody, Constable. John Baily, Samuel Moody, & Edward Richardson, Surveyors of Highways.

March 4, 1666–7, Leift Pike, William Ilsley, Abraham Tappan, William Titcomb, & Archelaus Woodman, Selectmen. Thomas Hale Senr, William Pillsbury, & Robert Coker, Surveyors of Highways. William Chandler, Culler of Staves.

March 2, 1667–8, Richard Dole, Tristram Coffin, Richard Kent, John Knight, Junr, & Daniel Peirce, Selectmen. Nathaniel Clarke, Constable. John Webster, Robert Adams, John Merrill, & John Emery, Senr, Surveyors of Highways.

March 1, 1668–9, John Poore, Senr, Richard Dole, John Knight, Tristram Coffin, & John Bartlet, Senr, Selectmen. Daniel Peirce, junior, Constable.

March 7, 1669–70, John Bartlett, Senr, William Chandler, Edward Moores, Samuel Plumer, & Caleb Moody, Selectmen.

May 21, 1670, Daniel Peirce, Senr, Thomas Hale, Senr, & Hugh March, Surveyors of Highways. "Ordered to mend only the country hy-ways."

Sept. 19, 1670, Capt. Gerrish, and Daniel Peirce Senior, Surveyors of Highways.

March 6, 1670–71, Mr. Richard Dumer, Steven Greenleaf, Caleb Moody, John Emery, Junior, & Samuel Moody chosen to attend to the prudential affairs of the town.

Sept. 20, 1671, Samuell Plumer chosen constable.

March 4, 1671–2, Mr. Richard Dumer, Senr, Thomas Hale, Junr, Ensign Greenleafe, Richard Bartlet, & John Bayly chosen to attend to the prudential affairs of the town. Capt. Gerrish, Mr. Peirce, & Peter Cheny, way wardens.

Sept. 17, 1672, Benjamin Rolfe, Constable.

March 3, 1672–3, Samuell Plumer, Daniel Peirce, Junr, Anthony

Somerby, Richard Bartlet, Rich: Dole, chosen to attend to the prudential affairs.

Aug. 29, 1673, John Baily, Constable.

March 2, 1673–4, Daniel Peirce, Junr, John Emery, Junr, Samuel Moody, Ensign Greenleafe, & Anthony Somerby chosen to attend to the prudential affairs.

March 18, 1673–4, John Baily, John Webster, Robert Coker, & Thomas Hale, Senior, way wardens, "and such persons as have bin behind these two years shall attend when Capt Gerrish calls them to it to mend the way from the meeting-house to the mill."

March 1, 1674–5, Anthony Somerby, Ensign Greenleafe, Daniel Pierce, Junr, Robert Long, & Nicholas Noyes chosen to attend to prudential affairs.

March 6, 1675–6, William Titcomb, Henry Jaques, ffrancis Browne, Benjamin Rolfe, & Peter Cheney, Selectmen. Joseph Pike, Constable. Henry Jaques, Thomas Hale, Senr, & James Ordway, Surveyors of Highways.

March 5, 1676–7, Mr Thomas Noyes, Henry Jaques, Peter Cheny, Joseph Baily, & Anthony Somerby, Selectmen. Joseph Pike, Constable. Thomas Hale, Senr, George Little, William Sawyer, & Robert Coker, Surveyors of Highway. John Poore, Senr, Surveyor Highways on ye necke. Anthony Morse & Steven Swett, Sealers of Leather.

March 4, 1677–8, Nicholas Noyes, Anthony Somerby, Thomas Hale, Junr, Daniel Peirce, & Henry Short, Selectmen. Joseph Pike, Constable.

March 3, 1678–9, Henry Jaques, Capt. Daniel Peirce, Peter Cheney, ffrancis Browne, & Anthony Somerby, Selectmen. Joseph Pike, Constable.

March 26, 1679, Moses Pillsbury and Steven Swett, Sealers of Leather.

June 18, 1679, Abraham Adams, Thomas Hale, Junr, William Pilsbury, & Robert Coker, Surveyors of Highways.

March 1, 1679–80, Mr Richard Dumer, Capt. Daniel Peirce, Tristram Coffin, Peter Cheny, & Anthony Somerby, Selectmen. Joseph Pike,* Constable.

March 24, 1679–80, John Emery, John Webster, Abraham Adams, Thomas Hale, Junr, and John Knight, Surveyors of Highways.

Aug. 30, 1680, Hugh March, Senr, chosen clark of the market to seal weights and measures, "and see that they be according to the standard."

March 7, 1680–81, Joseph Pike, Samuel Plumer, George March, Nicholas Noyes, & Moses Gerrish chosen Selectmen. Mr. Richard Dumer, Tristram Coffin, & James Ordway, Way Wardens.

* Mr. Thomas Noyes was chosen constable, but evidently did not wish to serve. "The Towne voted that Joseph Pike should serve the Towne this yeare in the office of constable, Mr. Noyes giving him forty shillings & the towne twenty shillings." (Town of Newbury Records.)

March 1, 1681–2, Nathaniel Clarke, John Bartlet, Sen., Francis Browne, Joseph Bailey, & James Ordway chosen Selectmen.

March 13, 1682–3, Mr Henry Short, Mr Thomas Noyes, Mr Richard Dumer, Joseph Baily, & Capt. Daniel Peirce, Selectmen.

"Mr. Dumer, Tristram Coffin & Ensign Steven [Coffin?] appointed standing wa[illegible]ens to see that every inhabitant do their part on the hye wayes."

March 11, 1683–4, Mr Nicholas Noyes, Abraham Adams, Abraham Merrill, Joseph Pike, & Robert Long, Selectmen.

March 10, 1684–5, Capt. Thomas Noyes, Abraham Merrill, Caleb Moody, Ensign Greenleaf, John Kent, Senr, chosen Selectmen. John Badger, Constable.

March 9, 1685–6, Henry Short, Sergt John Badger, Benjamin Morse, Sergt Joseph Little, & Sergt Cutting Noyes were chosen Selectmen.

March 16, 1685–6, Joseph Ilsley and Moses Pilsbery, Constables.

October 26, 1686, Henry Jaques, Sergt John Emery and Corp. Abraham Adams, way wardens.

April 22, 1690, the following persons were chosen Surveyors of the highways: "Joseph Knight for the old Towne, Joshua Mors for the midle sd Towne, John Emery, Junr for ye new Towne, & Joseph Goodridge for the farms."*

SELECTMEN.

The duties and responsibilities of the selectmen were evidently undefined and unlimited until May 21, 1669, when the town adopted the following rules and regulations: —

1. The Selectmen shall have power to call the town together.

2. To order the business for the herds and to make Mr Parkers Rate of £80 pr ann.

3. They shall prohibit of all felling of the Towns timber for transport.

4. They shall make Rates for the necessary expenses of the Towne & also to make the County & Country Rates.

5. To repair the meeting house, pound & stocks.

6. To looke that all strangers that come into the Towne, that they may have warning to depart in due season and to serve it according to law in & about the Towne.

7. They shall do nothing else without calling the Towne together to have their approval.

8. They are to give up their accounts at the [end of the year] to the Towne. And also to []." †

* Town of Newbury Records. † Ibid., vol. i.

In 1677, the sixth rule was amended, and the selectmen were instructed "To prohibit all strangers from setling in the Towne w^thout y^e Towns consent"; and the following additional rules were adopted: —

They shall not build any seats in the meeting house nor alter them without the Towns consent.

They shall prohibit any Inhabitant from takeing in any sheep, cattle, or horses of the Inhabitants of other Towns to keep on the Towns Comons & to make orders for that end.

These rules, with a few unimportant changes, were annually adopted by the inhabitants of the town for nearly twenty years.

March 9, 1685–6, It was voated as an Adition to y^e Selectmens Instructions that the Selectmen from time to time shall make up y^e accounts w^th him who was constable y^e year before by the first of May, annually. The constables are hereby ordered to give up they^r accounts to y^e Selectmen by y^e s^d time accordingly.*

Constables were made collectors of taxes April 16, 1673.

It was voted that hence forth there shal bee but one Rate made for one yeare every yeare in the month of October and the payment to bee made one halfe in English graine, as wheat, barley Rye and pease good and merchantable at or before the last weeke in October & the other halfe in good merchantable Indian corne at or before the last week in March next after every yeare under penalty of paying five shillings more than their Rates come to, to be levyed by the Constable if it be not paid, discounted, or agreed for to be paid suddenly upon that time.*

The rules and regulations defining the duties and powers of the selectmen, revised and adopted by the inhabitants of Newbury March 14, 1726–7, read as follows: —

1 That they keep the Towns pound in repair.

2 That they observe the directions in y^e Law relating to y^e admission of inhabitants into Towns and that they warn out all strangers according to the directions in y^e Law & prosecute all such as do not depart when so warned.

3 That they supply the wants of y^e poor.

4 That they bind out y^e children of y^e poor as y^e Law directs.

*Town of Newbury Records.

5 That they observe the directions in the Law relating to reputed drunkards, comon tipplers & such as mispend their time and estates in publick houses & prosecute such as transgress the Laws in that case.

6 That they set to work such as live idle and disorderly lives as ye Law directs.

7 That they take care of and improve the estates of such as are neither able to take care of or improve them themselves that they may be preserved for the maintainance of such persons as need may require as ye Law directs.

8 That they be aiding and assisting to Tything men & other officers in suppressing of vice, prophaness & imorality & vigorously exert themselves herein as ye Law directs.

9 That they give not their approbation for any to renew or have a licence for ye keeping of publick houses but to such as are qualified as ye Law directs.*

LOT-LAYERS.

When the inhabitants of Newbury decided in 1645 to begin a new settlement on the westerly bank of the Merrimack river, they appointed lot-layers to survey and lay out all the undivided land between the farm previously granted to John Spencer and the mouth of the Artichoke river. These lot-layers and their successors were continued in office until June 22, 1661.

The selectmen takeing into consideration that there is no more land to be granted by the Towne, & that there is no need of standing Lott-layers they doe hereby order that they do discharge & release Richard Knight & William Titcomb from that service of Laying out any more Land from this day & henceforth until the towne see caus.

JOHN EMERY, Sen.
JOHN CHENEY, Sen.
ABRAHAM TOPPAN.
ARCHELAUS WOODMAN.†

Subsequently, however, it became necessary to reappoint the lot-layers, and Sept. 21, 1677, "Tristram Coffin was chosen to joyne with Richard Knight to be a Lott layer in the Roome of William Titcomb deceased." *

FENCE VIEWERS.

March 7, 1663 There was chosen fence viewers. At old Towne Rich: Dole, Francis Plumer, & Tho: Blomfield: In the middle of the Towne

* Town of Newbury Records. † Ibid. (Coffin's copy).

Anthony Mors, Senr, Tristram Coffin, John Webster; at the farther end William Pilsbury, Will: Sawyer, Lionell Worth.*

April 2, 1666 There is chosen by the Selectmen for fence viewers for the year ensuing William Sawyer, William Pilsbury for the further end of the new town to frog pond, Anthony Morse Senr & John Webster from thence to Goodman Moodys lane, & John Emery Senr and ffrancis Plumer & Tho: Hale Senr from thence all at old Towne & Thomas Hale & Samuell Plumer for the necke.*

March 23, 1669–70. Thomas Hale and William Ilsly were chosen fence viewers for the old town, Robert Coker and John Webster for the middle of the town, William Pilsbury and James Ordway for the farther end.

April 3, 1671. Thomas Hale, Senr, and William Ilsly fence viewers "over the water in the necke & at the old Towne to goodman Moodys land." "Abraham Toppan & Edward Richardson from Goodman Moodys land to John Bartlets Barne." William Sawyer and Edward Woodman, Junior, "from John Bartletts barne to the farther end of the new Towne."

March 20, 1671–72. Thomas Hale, Senr, and William Ilsly were chosen for the old town to Moody's lane. Anthony Morse, Senr, and Richard Pettingell from Moody's lane to J. Bartlet's barne. Edward Richardson and James Ordway to the end of the town and also at the Falls.

March 19, 1672–3. William Sawyer and James Ordway, for the new towne. Richard Pettingell and John Webster, for the middle. Thos. Hale, Senr, and Joseph Pike, for the neck and old town.

March 25, 1674. "Joseph Plumer in ye necke." William Ilsly and Benjamin Rolfe at old town to Moody's lane. John Webster and Robert Coker to J. Bartlet's barn. Benjamin Morse and Peter Godfry to the end of the town.

March 6, 1674–5. "Thomas Hale, Senr, in ye necke." William Ilsley and John Knight, Junr, in old town to Moody's lane. Anthony Morse, Senr, and Richard Browne to J. Bartlet's barn. James Ordway and Israel Webster from thence to the Artichoke river.

March 22, 1676–7. "Thomas Hale, Junr, at the necke."

*Town of Newbury Records.

William Ilsly and John Badger at old town. John Webster and James Smith in the middle. Moses Pilsbury and Daniel Merrill at the farther end.

March 31, 1679. Thomas Hale, Sen^r, and Joseph Knight at old town. Joseph Coker and Joshua Brown in the centre of the town. William Pilsbury and John Swett at the farther end.

March 24, 1679–80. Samuel Plumer and John Knight at old town. Peter Toppan and James Smith in the centre. Samuel Poore, Sen^r, and John Sawyer, at the upper end.

March 23, 1680–81. John Kelly and Cutting Noyes at old town. Robert Long and Richard Brown in the centre. James Ordway and Jacob Toppan at the upper end of the town.

March 27, 1683. John Knight and Richard Dole, Jun., at the old town. John Webster and John Smith in the centre of the town. Daniel Morrill and John Swett at the upper end. Joseph Goodridge, Benjamin (?) Pearson, and Duncan Stewart, at the farms.

March 18, 1683–4. John Kely and John Badger at the old town. Richard Browne and Matthew Pettingell at the centre. Moses Pilsbery and Aquila Chase at the upper end. Joseph Goodridge and Benjamin Pearson at the farms.

April 6, 1685. Joseph Ilsley and Joseph Knight at old town. John Webster, Jun., and Matthew Pettingell at the centre. Serg^t Richardson and James Ordway, Sen^r, at new town. John Emery, Sen^r, and Benjamin Moore at the upper end of the new town. Joseph Goodridge and Benjamin Pearson at the farms.

March 22, 1685–6. Jonathan Emery and James Jackman for old town neck. Richard Brown and Joshua Morse for the middle of the town. Serg^t Jno. Hale and Beniah Titcomb for the new town. Joshua Brown and Abraham Merrill for the upper end. Duncan Stuart and Benjamin Goodridge for the farms.

TITHING MEN.

May 24, 1677, the General Court ordered that one tithing man to every ten families in the town should be appointed

by the selectmen to apprehend all Sabbath-breakers, "those who absent themselves from the public worship of God on the Lord's day," disorderly children and servants, night walkers, and tipplers, and, in the absence of a constable, take them before a magistrate or commit them to prison.*

In compliance with this law the selectmen of Newbury, at a meeting held March 31, 1679, appointed the following persons to serve as tithing men: —

Richard Dumer Jun	Richard Knight	James ordway
Abraham Adams	Nicholas Noyes	Lieut Woodman
William Ilsey Jun	Tristram Coffin	John Emery, Jun.
Robert Long	Nathaniel Clark	William Sawyer
Thomas Hale Jun	Ensign Greenleafe	Abraham Merrill.

A notice sent by the selectmen to the person named last in the above list reads as follows: † —

TO DEACON ABRAHAM MERRILL

At a meeting of the Selectmen March thirty-first 1679.

You are hereby required to take notice that you are chosen according to court order by the selectmen to bee a tithing man to have inspection into and look over these families that they attend the publick worship of God, and do not break the Sabbath, and further you are to attend as the court order declares.

The names of the families are Edward Woodman, Junior, Samuel Bartlet, Richard Bartlet, Abel Pilsbury, John Stevens, Christopher Bartlet, Thomas Chase, goodman Bailey, John Chase.

By order of the Selectmen

ANTHONY SOMERBY *Recorder.*

"March 24, 1679, there were chosen for Tithing men for this year 1680"

John Emery Junr	Henry Jaques	James Jackman
John Bailey	Nicholas Noyes	Thomas Hale Junr
Lieut Woodman	Samuell Plumer	Edward Moores
Ensign Greenleafe	William Sawyer	James Ordway
Sergt Coffin	Robert Long	Joseph Goodridge
Sergt Clarke		

April 25, 1681, the selectmen appointed for "tything men"

Mr Richard Dumer	John Noyes	Thomas Hale Jur
Mr. Henry Short	James Jackman	Daniel Cheny
Tristram Coffin	Robert Long	Richard Pettengall

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 133.

† Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 121, 122.

Ensign Greenleafe	Nathanel Clarke	Caleb Moody
Mr John Sewall	Samuel Poore Sen	John Baily
John Emery Junr		

"Tithing men for 1682" as follows:—

Mr Richard Dumer	Benjamin Rolfe	Abraham Adams
Samuel Plumer	John Webster	William Morse
Joseph Pike	John Badger	Sergt Richardson
Serj: Coffin	John Baily	francis Browne
Serj: Clarke	Abraham Merril	Joseph Plumer
Serj: Tappin	Benjamin Lowle	Rich: Pettengall

Tithing men for 1683:—

Mr Richard Dole	Nicholas Noyes	Anthony Somerby
Serjeant Coffin	Beniah Titcomb	William Pilsbury
Robert Long	Mr Moses Gerrish	James Jackman Senr
John Hale	Abraham Adams	John Easton
Abraham Merrill	Joshua Brown	Richard Bartlet Jr
John Poore Jur		

Tithing men for 1684:—

Capt Daniel Peirce	Mr Richard Dumer	Capt Thomas Noyes
Lieut Tristram Coffin	Elisha Ilsly	Edmund Moores Sen
Lieut Woodman	James Jackman	Samuel Plumer
John Emery Sen	Joseph Knight	Thomas Hale Senr
Samuel Bartlet	John Bartlet Jur	Anthony Somerby
Edward Richardson	James Ordway Jur	James Myrrick

Tithing men March 22, 1685–6:—

John Poor	Dunkan Stuart	Lieut Coffin
Samll Bartlet	Samull Plumer	Corpll Edward Mores
Ser: Hale	Wm Sawyer	Joseph Pike
Abram Adams	Ser: Moodey	John Swett
Benj. Rolfe	Georg March	Ben: Morse
Penll Titcomb	Deacon Noyes	Richd Browne
Abram Merrill	James Ordway Jr.	

Tithing men appointed May 7, 168[7?]:—

Joseph Little	John Kent Jun	John Webster Senr
John Sawyer	Beniah Titcomb	Mr Moses Gerrish
John Baily	John Bartlet Jur	Henry Jaques
Daniel Morrill	Sergt Nathl Clarke	John Knight
Ens Jacob Toppan	Henry Lunt	William Moody
Joseph Ilsley	Silvanus Plumer	Joseph Plumer Senr
Jonathan Moore	Joseph Goodridge	Mr Will Longfellow

Under the new charter of the Province of Massachusetts Bay tithing men were required to carry a black staff, two feet long, tipped at one end with brass about three inches wide, as a badge of authority. They were sworn to a faithful discharge of their duties before a justice of the peace.*

Subsequently the law providing for their appointment by the selectmen was amended, and they were afterwards elected annually by the inhabitants of the town until 1838. After that date they were evidently considered superfluous officers, and for several years none were chosen.

March 14, 1848, the town voted to elect three tithing men in place of eighteen or twenty as heretofore; and Benjamin G. Evans, John Atkinson, and Michael Floyd were chosen.

At a meeting of the town held March 13, 1849, strong efforts were made to secure the appointment of competent and discreet persons who could be depended upon to serve as tithing men; but a motion to omit action on that article in the warrant prevailed, and when the subject was again brought to the attention of the voters, April 1, 1850, and March 29, 1852, it was disposed of in substantially the same way. At the annual meeting in March, 1854, John N. Kent, Joseph Longfellow, Alfred Poor, John Kent, and Richard S. Bray were elected. The following year no tithing men were chosen; and since that date good order has been maintained in the town of Newbury, and in the church during divine service, without their aid or influence.

OTHER OFFICERS.

Cullers of fish, cullers of staves, hog reeves, informers of deer, clerks of the market, and many other officers whose services are not now required, were elected annually by the inhabitants of the town.

Cullers of staves selected and classified the staves that were cut in large quantities for wine casks and hogsheads and shipped from Newbury to the West Indies. It was the duty of hog reeves to see that the law "concerning the yoking

* Province Laws, vol. i, p. 155.

and ringing of hogs" was properly executed when they were allowed to run at large. Clerks of the market regulated weights and measures as well as prices when provisions or produce were offered for sale; and informers of deer were expected to prosecute all persons violating the law in regard to the killing of deer, or give to the magistrates the information needed in order to secure the arrest and punishment of the offenders.

FINES AND PUNISHMENTS.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held April —, 164(5)?

It was ordered yt all such as absented themselves from this meeting should be fined twelve pence a peece, and the constable to levy the same & Retourne wt he gathers of such as ye prudential men shall judge their excuse is not sufficient, ye one half thereof to the ord'ers of ye Towne affaires ye other to keepe himself for a Recompense for his paynes.

Itt is ordered yt ye constable for p'sent & all constables for future shall stand ingaged from time to time for one half of ye fines yt any delinquent shall be fined for absenting himself from any publicke meeting wch is to be 1s a peece.*

April 8, 1646, Mr. Woodman, Hen: Lunt, Arch: Woodman and Mr Sewall for their absence from ye generall Towne meeting are fyned twelve pence a peece:

Steven Kent for his absence from ye same meeting was fyned two shillings.

At this meeting the constable was ordered to collect the above-mentioned fines within ten days, and bring them to the town officers. "In case he bring it not in by that time Anthony Mors is appointed to Distreine on ye constable for all the fines." *

Aquilla Chase, his wife, and David Wheeler, of Hampton, were presented September 29, 1646, to the court at Ipswich, "for breach of the Sabbath in gathering pease." "Witnesses William Sanburne and William Fifield." †

Under the date of March 30, 1647, the record states that

* Town of Newbury Records, vol i.
† Court Files (Salem), vol. i., leaf 55.

they [illegible] ot, to answer their presentment, being not at Hampton when the constable received his warrant."

In a volume containing notes and memoranda made by the clerk of the court, for his own convenience, and afterwards written out and entered in full upon the records, the facts relating to this presentment and to the return made by the constable are stated as follows: —

Ipswich Court March 30, 1647, Aquilla Chase & his wife & David Wheeler being presented at the last court for gathering pease on the Lord's day. Summons sent to Hampton. The constables return states they were not at Hampton but were gone to Newberry.*

Another summons was served upon them at Newbury. They appeared at the next session of the court, held March 28, 1648, and were "admonished and discharged after the payment of fees and costs of court." †

March 28, 1648, the town of Newbury was presented "for want of a convenient safe way from the new town to the ferry side." "Witnesses Tristram Coffin of Newbury and John Stevens of Salisbury." And at the same court the town was also presented "for want of a bridge over the falls river in the way betwixt Newbury and Andover." ‡

At the court held in Ipswich, November 13, 1649, John Bartlet, constable of Newbury, was presented for not providing weights and measures for the use of the inhabitants of the town. §

May 23, 1650, the General Court ordered that "John Bartlet, the constable of Newbery, beinge vnder a fine of forty shillings for not p'vidinge weights & measures according to law, vppon a petition p'fred to this Court, hath his fine remitted: the Court havinge received satisfactory information that he did his vttmost endeauour to p'cure the same." ‖

November 13, 1649, the town of Newbury was presented at the Ipswich court for want of a pound. ¶

* County Court Records, 1645 to 1663, "Ipswich," vol. i., leaf 8.
† Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 12.
‡ Court Files (Salem), vol. i., leaf 97.
§ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 18.
‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 194.
¶ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 18.

March 26, 1650, John Perrye, of Newbury, for abu ve carriage to his wife and child, was ordered to give bonds 10r his good behavior and "to sit one hour in the stocks at Newbury." *

On the same day (March 26, 1650) Anthony Morse, of Newbury, was fined £5 "for digging a pit & not filling it up whereby a child was drowned." †

Dr. William Snelling was presented for denouncing his enemies with intemperate zeal. His friends William Thomas and Thomas Milward signed and filed with the clerk of the court the following statement: —

This is to certify whom it may concern that we, the subscribers, being called upon to testify against Mr William Snelling for words by him uttered, affirm that being in way of merry discourse, a health being drunk to all friends, he answered

I'll pledge my friends
And for my foes
A plague for their heels
And a poxe for their toes.

Since when he hath affirmed that he only intended the proverb used in the west country, nor do we believe he intended otherwise.‡

Affixed to this statement was the following acknowledgment: —

March 12, 1651–2, all which I acknowledge and I am sorry I did not express my intent, or that I was so weak as to use so foolish a proverb.

GUILIELMUS SNELLING.

Notwithstanding this humble apology it appears from the court records that on the thirtieth day of March, 1652, "Mr William Snelling upon his presentment for cursing is fined 10s and fees of court." §

"September 27, 1653, the wife of Nicholas Noyes being presented for wearing a silk hood and scarf, upon proof that her husband is worth above two hundred pounds is cleared of her presentment."

The wife of Hugh March and the wife of Richard Knight

* Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 20. † Ibid., vol. i., leaf 20.
‡ Court Files (Salem), vol. ii., leaf 28.
§ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 28.

were charged with the same offence, but were discharged on proof that their husbands were worth two hundred pounds each.*

The wife of John Hutchins was discharged "upon testimony of her being brought up above the ordinary ranke." *

At the same court the wife of Joseph Swett and the wife of William Chandler were convicted and fined ten shillings "for wearing a silk hood and scarfe." *

The law under which these presentments were made was enacted October 14, 1651. It provided that "men of meane condition" should not take upon themselves "the garbe of gentlemen by wearing gold or silver lace or buttons"; and women of the same rank were forbidden "to weare silke or tiffany hoodes or scarfes" unless they or their husbands possessed an estate of at least two hundred pounds, under a penalty of ten shillings for each offence. †

In September, 1653, "Tristram Coffin and ux [Dionis] presented for selling beer at 3^{d} a quart." "Upon the testimony of Samuel Moores that she put six bushels of malt into the hogshead she was discharged."‡ The law regulating the sale of beer provided that "all such as put beere to sale shall be able to prove that they put into every hogshead of beere that they sell for three pence the quart into the brewing thereof six bushells of good barley mault, & into every hogshead of beere sould at two pence the quart fower bushells of mault; & into every hogshead of beere sould at a penny a quart, two bushells of like good mault & so proportionably in greater or smaller quantities." Whosoever failed to comply with the provisions of this law should "forfeite for the first offence forty shillings & for the second offence shall forfeite theire licence." §

March 28, 1654, the town of Newbury was presented "for defects in a country highway near goodman Adams his farm." ‖

"September 1654 John Emery senior was chosen to

* Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 34.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 61.
‡ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 36.
§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 241.
‖ Court Files (Salem), vol. ii., leaf 130.

answer at the next court at Ipswich concerninge the p'sentment about the waye to Andover." * At a session of the court held at Ipswich September 26, 1654, the town of Newbury was "ordered to repair the highway by next court or pay forty shillings." †

"May 6, 1658 Newbury upon their presentment for want of a latin scoole is to pay five pounds to Ipswich lattin Scool, unles they by the nexte Court provyde a lattin scoole master according to law." ‡

March 31, 1663, the grand jury, sitting at Ipswich, indicted "Lydia Wardwell the wife of Eliakim Wardwell for coming naked into y^e^ meeting house of Newbury."§ May 5, 1663, she was sentenced "to be severely whipt and to pay costs & fees to the Marshall of Hampton for bringing her."‖

At the same court, May 5, 1663, "Elizabeth Webster for taking a false oath was sentenced to stand at the meeting house dore at Newbury, the next lecture day from the ringing of the first bell until the minister be ready to begin prayer, with a paper on her head written in capital letters FOR TAKING A FALSE OATH IN COURT, the constable to see it done: or else to pay a fine of five pounds and to be disabled from taking an oath, and pay costs and fees. She made choise to stand at the doore," etc.‖

WOLVES, BLACKBIRDS, AND CROWS.

May 15, 1645, the General Court ordered

Y^t^ any p'son, eith^r^ English or Indian, that shall kill any wolfe or wolues w^th^in ten miles of any plantation in y^s^ jurisdiction, shall have for every wolfe by him or y^m^ so kiled 10 sh^s^ to be paid out of y^e^ treasury of y^e^ country.¶

At a general meeting of the Towne [of Newbury] April 27^th^ 1648 Ther was granted to Thomas Marvyn two acres of land lying neer to the new pond on the back side of Mr. Noyes house lott at the new Towne for encouragement to him to kill woolves. **

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

† Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 47. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., leaf 68.

§ Court Files (Salem), vol. ix., leaf 13.

‖ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 117.

¶ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., page 103.

** Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., page 46. The land granted Thomas Marvyn was on the southwesterly side of South (now Parker) street, near the "training green."

March 6, 1664–5 It was ordered that those wolves that hath bin killed since the six wolves order hath bin out, those that hath killed them shall have forty shillings for euery wolfe for those that is past, and also such as shall kill wolves for the time to come shall have forty shillings for euery wolfe to be paid out of the next Towne Rate after they shalbe killed provided that due proof be made that they be killed within the limitts of the Towne.*

January 24, 1682–3, the freeholders and other inhabitants of the town voted

That whereas there was an order made and voted at a Generall meeting of the Towne March 13, 1680–1 that gave to such persons as should kill wolves in the bounds of Newbury to have twenty shillings for every old wolfe and ten shillings for every young wolfe to be paid out of the Town rate, and it was not found in the town books, the Town did confirm that order and gave order it should be recorded for it was endorsed by John Ordway and many others.*

March 9, 1702–3 voted to pay four pounds to those who killed two wolves at the Ipswich end of Plum Island.*

September 1, 1714 voted to pay forty shillings for every wolfe killed within the limits of the town.*

May 3, 1715 voted to give five pounds per head for every grown wolfe which shall be killed within the town of Newbury.*

March 13, 1721–22 It was voted that ye selectmen shall pay to Mark Moers & his brother Jonathan Moers twenty shillings equally between them for a gratification for killing a wolfe in Bradford this last winter.*

At the annual meeting, held March 16, 1724–5, the town voted to pay Thomas Bartlet and Seth Bartlet the sum of fifteen shillings for killing a wolf in Merrimack river; and as late as February 23, 1741–2, the selectmen paid George Thurlow five pounds for killing "a woolf & wild cat." *

In 1779, Moses Adams killed a wolf in Newbury. Since that date none have been seen within the limits of the town.†

As a protection against loss and damage to the growing crops of wheat and corn, the inhabitants of Newbury, at a meeting held Dec. 19, 1650, ordered "that what soeuer Inhabitants of this towne shall kill blacke birds, jays, woodpeckers or crowes shalbe paid by the constable out of the

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 256.

towne rate for euery dozen of blacke birds one shilling, and for euery dozen of woodpeckers and jays heads so brought to the constable or townsmen two shillings, and for euery dozen of crowes three shillings and so proportionable for any less number." *

WOOD AND TIMBER.

The cutting and removing of wood and timber, from land owned by the freeholders in common, was carefully guarded and regulated by the early settlers of the town. They adopted strong and vigorous measures for the protection and preservation of forest trees. As early as 1638, when the settlement at Parker river was less than three years old, they publicly declared: "The Trees before Richard Knights house are reserved for the Towns use and so in all the streets of the Towne & none is to cutt them downe on the penalty of ten shillings forfeiture to the Towne." †

When arrangements were being made for the removal of the inhabitants from Parker river to the "new town" on Merrimack river, the freeholders ordered that a fine of two shillings and sixpence should be imposed upon any person cutting or removing a tree without permission, and providing further that all trees cut down, within the limits of the proposed new town, previous to Jan. 11, 1643–4, "shall lye & remayne on the ground till the person be known to whom the land belongs that so paying for the labour he may have them to serve his occasions."

March 3, 1668–9, the selectmen ordered that all pipe staves, or barrel staves, found upon the commons, or at the river side, "shall be seized and sold, and no one, not an inhabitant of the town, shall be allowed to employ any person to cut or draw timber upon the commons under penalty of forfeiting all the timber so cut."

Evasions of this order were so frequent and annoying that the freeholders declared October 18, 1670, "that sundry orders have been made for the preservation of the Towns Timber as

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.
† Newbury (Proprietors') Records, p. 35.

by order of Sept. 18, 1649 and other wise may appeare," and many trees have recently been cut into boards, plank, pipe staves, and fence rails without permission. The selectmen are therefore directed to impose a fine of twenty shillings on any person aiding or assisting in loading or transporting these materials beyond the limits of the town "on a raft, boat, or canoe."

All dwelling-houses or cottages erected in Newbury after October 12, 1670, contrary to the law passed by the General Court, May 30, 1660, were liable to be condemned and confiscated, "unless the same have been or shall hereafter be accepted by the freeholders."* The owners or builders of such houses were not allowed to use the common or undivided land for the pasturage of cows, horses, or sheep; nor were they allowed to cut or remove any timber or wood, under penalty of twenty shillings for every load so cut or conveyed away.

"May 22, 1671, the town granted Mr. John Lowle liberty to cut out of the dead timber on the commons, so much as will serve to build him a house; the timber to be taken from the point of land above Holt's rocks." †

At a general meeting of the inhabitants of the town held March 3, 1672-3, the following order was adopted:—

> . . . no person Shall fell, girdle, Lopp or in any way deface any tree standing upon the training place or the grounds appointed for that use on penalty of five pounds for every tree so felled, girdled, Lopped or defaced.‡

The selectmen were authorized and instructed to see that the rules and regulations adopted for the preservation of useful and ornamental trees were strictly and impartially enforced. July 5, 1673, they ordered the following vote to be recorded: "That whereas John Webster & Peter Toppan is complained of for cutting Downe trees in the Land that

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 417. "Itt is ordered that hereafter no cottage or dwelling place shalbee admitted to the privelege of commonage for wood, timber & herbage or any other of the priviledges that lye in comon in any towne or peculyar, but such as already are in being or hereafter shalbee erected by the consent of the towne."

† Town of Newbury Records (Coffin's copy).

‡ Town of Newbury Records.

is called the burying place, we the selectmen do order that Richard Dole & Samuel Plumer shall levy ten shillings upon John Webster & five shillings upon Peter Tappan for cutting downe the trees without order & John Webster for cutting downe a tree upon the hyway." *

March 5, 1676–7, the freeholders voted: "That such persons that shall fell downe & make use of Timber of the Towns Comons for the building of ships or vessels shall from henceforth, from time to time, have liberty from the Selectmen and shall pay for the Townes use two shillings a tun according to the burden of the vessel and if any shall take timber out of the Townes Comons without leave as above said shall pay foure shillings a Tun to the Townes use to be levyed by y^e^ constable." *

"October 12, 1681, L^t^ Steven Greenleaf proposed for a parcell of timber to make plank for a vessell & engaged to pay to the Townes use by the tun according to the Towne order." *

The selectmen granted the petition of Mr. Greenleaf, and March 3, 1681–2, appointed Thomas Hale, jr., and Joseph Plumer "to search out any p'son or p'sons that have cut downe any of the townes timber in the upper comons & bring in their names to the Selectmen between this & the next Generall town meeting." *

"March 9, 1685–6 Job Pilsbery petitioned the towne that a white oak tree standing on the highway against his fathers barne might not be cut downe but y^t^ he might have liberty to preserve y^e^ same." "The town granted his petition." *

At a meeting of the freeholders held March 9, 1685–6, it was voted: "The Towne being sensable of a great deale of Damage y^t^ may happen to y^e^ Towne by persons cutting trees in the Towns comons and high wayes contrary to Towne order. The Towne do therefore Appoynt and Authorize Joseph Pike of Newbury to prosecute all such person or persons that have transgressed any such order." * The appointment to remain in force until revoked.

In the month of April following "Constable Moses Pils-

* Town of Newbury Records.

bury seized and delivered to Joseph Pike twenty one red oak trees and sixteen white oak trees at the south east end [of the town's commons] near Savages rock and the westerly end of Long hill near Merrimack river." *

December 19, 1695, the sheriff was ordered to seize all timber that had been cut on the common land without permission. The same day James Brown, deputy sheriff, seized between two and three thousand staves and a large quantity of cut and hewn timber which he marked "with the Broad Arrow," and delivered to the selectmen of Newbury.*

March 12, 1716–7, Lieut. John March and Mr. Henry Rolfe were authorized to prosecute "all persons who have, or shall hereafter, cut down or deface any tree or trees standing on any of the Highways or training places within the limits of the town: and shall do all things needful for preserving all trees on the said ways." *

An oak-tree that was perhaps a century old when Newbury was settled, in 1635, is still standing on land now owned by William Little and others. On the next page will be found a photographic view of this venerable representative of the primeval forest.

"What tales, if there be 'tongues in trees,'
This giant oak could tell
Of beings born and buried here,—
Tales of the peasant and the peer,
Tales of the bridal and the bier,
The welcome and farewell."

"The Gerrish pasture" where this ancient oak tree stands was the property of the First Parish of Newbury for more than two centuries. At an auction sale, April 6, 1875, it was purchased by Robert A. Smith, Joseph W. Bartlett and others.†

The underbrush, small limbs and boughs cut from tree-tops, valueless wood and decaying timber that interfered with the growth of the herbage and the pasturage of cattle, was annually gathered in convenient nooks and consumed by fire. The

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Essex Deeds, vol. cmxxx., p. 274, and vol. cmxxxiv., p. 217.



OAK TREE IN "THE GERRISH PASTURE."

selectmen were authorized to employ suitable men for that purpose. The earliest appointment recorded is as follows: "March 10, 1674–5 John Emery Jun^r undertakes the burning of the woods & making the dry herd hedg sufficient." *

March 22, 1681–2, the selectmen agreed with William Bolton to keep the dry herd; "and he is to burne the woods and make up the flatts fence and for that he shall be paid fourteen shillings." *

April 6, 1685, the selectmen "agreed with William Bolton for ten shillings to burn the woods this yeare." *

March 22, 1685–6, the selectmen appointed Benjamin Morss "to burn the woods this year above Artichoak River and to have for his pains ten shillings out of y^e nexte towne Rate." *

HORSES, CATTLE, AND SWINE.

Stock-raising was an important industry in the town of Newbury for more than fifty years after its incorporation. At first horses, cattle, and swine were allowed to run at large; and, in order to keep them from trespassing upon cultivated fields and gardens, it became necessary to employ herdsmen, and also to provide a suitable enclosure where they could be confined, if vicious or unruly, and released by the owners on the payment of a certain fixed and definite sum.

February 1 [1637–8], the freeholders ordered "that Jn^o: Emery shall make a sufficient Pound for the towne two rod & halfe square by the last of this present month if he cann, the towne affording him what helpe they can, when he calls for it; & when it is finished, that the towne & hee shall agree about the price & if they cannot that then it shall bee judged by two indifferent men to be chosen one by the towne, the other by himselfe." †

Evidently, Mr. Emery was unable or unwilling to undertake the task of building a pound, and therefore the town ordered April 14 [1638] "that Richard Brown, the constable, shall cause a sufficient pound to be made by the twenty-first of this moneth to impound swyne and other cattell, in the place that

* Town of Newbury Records. † Ibid., vol. i.

shall be shewed him and of that largeness which shall be thought fitt, this to be done on the penalty of 20^{s}. The men to appoint the place and manner of the pound are M^{r} Rawson, Henry Short, John Knight and Rich: Knight." *

On the fourteenth day of April, 1638, the selectmen agreed "that Nich: Batt shall keepe the heard of kine begining the 16th of March, 8 months thence till the 16th of November, & that he shall have 18 pounds for his labor, w^{ch} is to be payd 40 bushells of corne at 4^{s} 6^{d} the bushell, three months after harvest; & nine pounds in money whereof [] is to be payd presently & 4^{lb} the first of July, & the rest at the end of the terme of eight months provided he is to keepe them [out] one Lords day & the towne two." *

On the margin of the above record the names of Jno: Woodbridge, Edward Rawson, Edward Woodman, Henry Short, and Richard Knight are inscribed in token of their assent to the agreement.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town held August 25, 1638, it was ordered "that Tho: Halle and John Baker shall be hay wards till the town shall appoint new, & that they shall have a speciall care of the impounding of swine according to order. And farther it is ordered that whatsoever swine is impounded, if it be not known whose it is, that then it shall be kept by the hay wards, the person satisfying when he is knowne: if it bee knowne & the owner thereof shall not satisfy for it within twenty foure hours that then it shall be lawfull for the hay wards to sell them according to order." *

March 12, 1641–2, the freeholders voted "that all the commons within the limits of the towne shall be equally divided into three several parts and that the same number of cattle that are allowed in the stint of the cows and oxen shall be allowed in the heifer common and a third like quantity of young cattle above Mr. Rawson's farme." †

In compliance with this vote the cow common, the ox common, and the heifer common were laid out, and five hundred and sixty-three "rights" in each pasture were divided among

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.
* Proprietors' Records, vol. i.

the freeholders in proportion to the number of acres of land owned by them.

Two years later, when arrangements were being made for the removal of the inhabitants of Newbury to the new settlement (now Newburyport), suitable fences in the new town were considered necessary for the convenience of householders and the protection of gardens and fields from the intrusion of cattle. January 10, 1643–4, the freeholders ordered "that all fences generall and particular at the first setting up shall be made and always kept so sufficient as to keepe out all manner of swyne and other cattle great or small, and at whose fence or part of fence any swyne or other cattle shall break through, the person owning the fence shall not only beare and suffer all the damages, but shall further pay for each rod so insufficient the somme of two shillings, w^ch^, by the constable for the time being shall be gathered by order from the orderers of the Towns affairs & at their dispose." *

On the same day the town also ordered "that the owners of all such cattle as the towne shall declare to be unruly and excessively different from all other cattle shall pay all the damages their unruly cattle shall doe in breaking through fences." *

At a meeting of the freeholders, held December 19, 1650, it was ordered "that all swine shalbe Yoaked and Ringed and if any be not and do trespass in corn fields, gardens, meadows, pasture grounds, and comons, the owners of the land, or the hay wards, shall have libertie to drive them to the pound, and shall have sixepence a head for pasturage of the owners of such swine, and [] head in case they drive them above a mile." *

Swine properly yoked could not gain access to cornfields and gardens protected by fences, and with a ring in the snout could do no damage to the growing crops by rooting.

During the fall and winter horses and cattle were allowed to run at large on Plum Island and in the upper and lower commons.

March 7, 1663–4 the selectmen ordered "that all horses

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

and dry cattle are to be cleared out of Plum Island & also out of the comons upon penalty of two shillings sixe pence p^r^ head to any p'son or p'sons that shall impound them & also the same penalty of 2^s^ 6^d^ p^r^ head if they be impounded out of any enclosure or propriety being sufficiently fenced." *

The upper common, extending from the Artichoke river to the Bradford line, included nearly all the territory within the present limits of the town of West Newbury, while the lower commons on the southwesterly side of the country highway, now High street and Storey avenue, Newburyport, extended from the Artichoke to the Parker river, and included the pastures set apart for the use of cows, oxen, heifers, and sheep.

For the protection of the cattle in the upper common it became necessary to provide additional safeguards, and a committee was appointed to consider the subject and report the result of their investigations to the freeholders of the town. They recommended

That there be forthwith a larg penn made and a small house built for the shelter for herdsmen, in a convenient place where land afterwards may be improved for tillage, if the Towne see meet. Also that two herdsmen be provided to attend and follow the cattle the whole somer carefully to keep the cattle from coming neare the lower comons and penned every night.

This was voted at a Generall meeting of the Towne, April 25, 1665 and that the Selectmen shall have full power to do what is above specified and to build the house and get the pen made.

ANTHONY SOMERBY.*

At a meeting of the Selectmen held April 28, 1666

It was ordered that all swyne that are taken upon any of the cow comons shalbee sufficiently Ringed upon penalty of twelve pence a head to any freeholder that shall Impound them, and if any swyne shall take into any man's ground doing damage in corne pasture or meadow or otherwise not being sufficiently yoaked and Ringed the owners of such swyne shall pay all damages and twelve pence a head to any one that shall Impound them.*

March 16, 1667–8, the above order was again adopted, with

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

this additional clause: "provided the fence viewers do judge the fence is as ordered against Great Cattle."

Horses, and cattle belonging to the dry herd, were not allowed to feed on the lower commons during the summer season. They were to be fettered, confined in private enclosures, or placed in charge of the herdsman and driven to the upper common.

June 12, 1666, the Selectmen "Ordered that all horses, mares & geldings (except yearlings) that are in the home Comons (as at Old Towne, the necke & on this side the Mill River & so within a mile of the house lots at new towne) shall within three days forthwith of the date hereof, be cleared away from the said comons and not to be suffered to continue to feed thereon under the penalty of two shillings p^r^ head unto any freeholder that doth impound them, excepting also such as the freeholders do constantly make use of for their necessary Imployment, the which are also to be sufficiently fettered or else not to go upon the said comons under the penalty of three shillings per head unto any freeholder that doth Impound any such horsebeast from off the said comons: also all dry cattell (except such as are permitted to go in the home comons) shall bee cleared out of the said comons within two days of the date hereof under penalty of twelve pence p^r^ head to any freeholder that doth impound them provided they be not such as have bin delivered to the keeper." *

At a meeting of the selectmen held May 27, 1668, it was "ordered that all dry Cattell, that is to say all cattell except milk cowes & working oxen & yearlings shalbe cleared out of the cow comons to morrow under penalty of paying two shillings for every beast that shall be found upon the cow comons after to-morrow [] drive them up into the dry herd comons & every Inhabitant are hereby injoyned to pay to the dry herdsman for all such cattell, as well the farmers as others, whether their cattell go up to the herdsman or not, if they go in any part of the Townes comons and every Thursday in every weeke the herdsman is to attend to drive up all such cattell if any come down after they be put up." *

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

April 27, 1670, the selectmen ordered

All dry cattle to be cleared out of the comons between this and the sixteenth of May next under penalty of two shillings a head to be levyed upon the owners of such cattell that shalbe found vpon the comons after that day, except such as shall come doune againe from the dry herd & if any come doune the herdsman is to attend every thursday to drive up such as shall come doune, and the farmers are to pay for their cattell as well as others whether they be drove up or not.

Also all horses & horse kind are to be cleared out of the comons by the twentieth of May . . . except such horses as are in comon vse for mens necessityes and they are to be fettered and clogged. *

Similar orders were annually issued until the upper commons were divided among the freeholders of the town in 1686. The order for 1676 reads as follows: —

All Dry Cattle shalbe cleared out of the Cow Comons. And the Day appointed for the heardsman to Drive them up is thursday . . . the tenth day of this prsent month and all from the pound to the old Towne shall then be brought to the pound and all the rest to meet the heard in the way as they shall go along. And such dry Cattle as shalbe found on the Cow Comons after the tenth Day of May above said, their owners shall pay two shillings a head to the keeper, except it be such as had bin drove up & doe come down againe and they to be presently drove up againe by the 16th of May.*

April 19, 1677, the selectmen issued the following notice: —

Whereas there was an order published March 27, 1677 that all horses & horsekind should have bin cleared out of the Cow Comons by the tenth day of April last past & there is nothing done about it, This is to give notice to the Towne that next Munday there is appointed men to Drive to the said Comons & to Impound all such horses or horskind that are not fettered or clogged (according to that order) that are found upon the Cow Comons then, & their owners shall pay two shillings a head to the Impounders for every head that are so Impounded.*

At a meeting of the selectmen held May 31, 1680, "It was ordered that all dry cattle that goes in the Towne Comons shall pay to the Dry herdsman as much as they doe that are driven up to Artechoke And all Inhabitants are

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

hereby required to drive all their dry cattell up to Artechoke Comons And John Webster & Moses Little & Henry Somerby are appointed to cleare the Cow Comons & to impound all horses & horsekind that are found unfettered upon the Cow Comons & to have two shillings a head according to Towne order to be paid by the owners, or else in case of refusall to be Leavyed on their estate by the Constable." *

In the spring of 1672, William Bolton was employed "to keep the dry heard, as formerly, and drive up the cattle when they come down, receiving from the owners twelve pence a head for his services." He evidently continued to serve in that capacity for ten years or more. March 22, 1681–2, the selectmen agreed with him to begin the first day of May next to drive the cattle to the upper commons "for sixpence a head to be paid in Malt or Indian Corne"; and May 20, 1685, he was chosen "to keep the dry cattell in the upper Commons above the hedge, and to take care for y^e^ repayring of such breaches as should be in the hedg from time to time."

In order to prevent, if possible, the taking of wood and timber from the comons, and the pasturing of cattle there, by persons not entitled to that privilege, "Capt. Gerrish, Left Woodman Sen^r^ & John Knight were chosen" at a meeting of the freemen and freeholders held May 8, 1674, "to Joyne with the selectmen to agree upon & prosecute an order against non-freeholders for this year ensuing for their fire wood, timber, feed for their cattle, horses, sheep & swyne going on the Comon, and the non-freeholders are hereby warned to appeare next Wednesday come seavenight at seaven of the clocke in the morning at the Ordinary." *

June 18, 1675, this committee, having in the mean while been authorized to make all needful rules and regulations for the protection of the wood, timber, and pasturage of the commons, ordered "that every non-freeholder shall pay for every horse, or horsekind, going upon the comon, five shillings to the Towne & two shillings & sixpence a head for every neat beast, and five shillings for every score of sheep & twelve pence a head for every swyne to be paid to the constable for the

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Townes use every year, and two & sixpence for every load of wood, to be paid In when the Towne Rate is & in case they do not pay then they shalbe distrained by the Constable & pay double what is above expressed." *

SHEEP AND SHEEP PASTURES.

Previous to the year 1665 the freeholders of Newbury paid little attention to the raising of sheep, but subsequently several large flocks were kept near the centre of the town.

May 27, 1668, they ordered "that every Inhabitant of this Towne whose sheep goeth upon the Comons shall mark his sheep with a peculiar pitch marke when they are shorne under penalty of twelve pence the head for every such sheep that shall be found unmarked," etc.*

April 27, 1670, the selectmen ordered that in consequence "of the great Damag that sheep doth in Meadowes, pastures & corne fields" . . . "all sheep that goes upon the Comon shall go under a keeper & after they are shorne they shall have the peculiar pitch mark of their owners set upon them." *

April 19, 1677, they ordered "that the two flocks of sheep that goes in the middle part of the Towne (viz:) the flock which was called Henry Shorts flock shalbe kept within the bounds of Henry Jaques corner of his pasture over to the end of Amos Stickneys land next Trotters Bridge as far as the Pine Swamp & stony brooke. And that flock that was called Mr Peirces flocks shall go from the said Jaquesses pasture & Sticknyes corner as far as James Smiths & so over Trotters Bridge so far as stony brooke. And the sheepards are to looke to their flocks that they Do no Damage in any man's propriety on penalty of paying the Damage, and they are hereby forbidden to medle with any other sheep that do not belong to their flock unless by accident they shall mixe, and in such a case they shall part them againe with speed & returne them or else they shall pay all Damages the owners may or shall sustaine by it." *

May 14, 1677, the freeholders of the town ordered that

* Town of Newbury Records.

sheep belonging to the inhabitants of neighboring towns "shall not be allowed to feed on the commons but shall be removed forthwith."

March 14, 1681–2, the bounds and limits of the sheep pastures were defined as follows:—

All sheep shall be kept in that part of the cõmons where their owners live. The inhabitants of the old town to keep their sheep there. The next flock to be kept from Lob's pound and over the mill bridge to Henry Jaques his pasture. And the next flock from thence to James Smith's and over Trotter's bridge. And the inhabitants from James Carrs to Mr John Sewalls and Jacob Toppanes are the frog pond flock and their range shall be the Aps swamp from James Smith to George Marches bridge and dismall ditch and Robin's pound, and Moses Pilsbury and the further end of the towne are to have the plaines for their flock." *

"Lob's pound" was near the residence of the late Hall J. Leigh; "Mill bridge," now Four Rock Bridge, was over Little river; Henry Jaques's pasture was at a bend in the road leading to the mill, now known as Morse's corner; James Smith's farm was near the brick-yards; and "Trotter's bridge" was over a branch of Little river in Floyd's lane.

In 1683, seven hundred and four sheep, owned by sixteen persons, were pastured in the "third range," extending from Henry Jaques' pasture to James Smith's farm and Trotter's bridge.†

At a meeting of the selectmen held May 31, 1688, the bounds and limits of the sheep pastures were readjusted.

It was then ordered that for the old Towne flock ye bounds are wthin the Compas of the old Towne as far as ye Widdow Knights.

And for that flock yt is known by ye name of Henry Shorts flock the bounds on the Towne side at the River is from Henry Shorts land on the southeast, all the comons as far as a run of water that runs out of Mr Gerrishs pasture running by Stephen Jaquess pasture & so into Capt Noyess meadow wch sd run of water is the northwest bounds of sd fflock & on the other side of the Mill River the Stony Brooke at the mouth of it is the Bounds & so upwards into the woods by that branch of it that runs by Abram Adams his field & so by the great Black ash swamp & so up into the woods.

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 139.

For the flock known by the name of Capt Peircess flock ye southerly bounds is bounded by the flock aforesd & ye northwest bounds as far as James Smiths on this side of the River & over the Mill River at Trotters Bridg the northwest bounds is the slough that runs into John Atkinsons meadow & so up into the woods westerly

For the ffrogg pond flock ye southerly bounds is the slough wch is the northerly Bounds of the flock aforesd & from thence to James Smiths & ye northerly bound is to run uppon a straight line from Moses pilsburyes to Joseph Littles.

For the Artichoak flock the southerly bounds is from Moses pilsburyes to Joseph Litlles on a Straight Line." *

DOCTOR HENRY GREENLAND.

March 31, 1663, John Emery was presented to the court at Ipswich "on suspicion of breaking ye law in entertaining Mr. greenland foure months."† At the session held May 5, 1663, "he was fined four pounds and costs & fees for entertaining strangers." ‡ May 21, 1663, he sent the following petition to the General Court, signed by himself, the selectmen of Newbury, and other inhabitants of the town: —

To the Honrd Generall Court now assembled at Boston, the Humble petition of John Emery humbly sheweth:

That your petitioner dwelling in Newbury, It so fell out by the providence of God that a certaine gentleman (namely Mr Henry Greenland) coming from England upon his occasion was by reason of his Aquaintance with Capt Barefoote &c inclinable to settle in ye country if hee liked & to make use of his practice of phisick & chirugery amongst us: But beeing as yet unsettled & uncertaine where to fix until his wife (whom he hath sent for) did come, By reason of some employment by ye providence of God presented itself to him, He was necissarily put upon it to reside neer such patients as had put themselves into his hands for cure: Among which one being more than ordinarily dependent Hee desired entertainment And your petitioner did for ye reason above mentioned Receive & entertain him this winter past for which I am fined foure pounds by ye honrd court at Ipswich for Breach of a Law, not having (at first) License under the hand of a magistrate. Hee himself being a stranger & not knowing the Law nor your petitioner . . . The Humble request of your petitioner is That this honrd Court would be pleased to

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Court Files (Salem), vol. ix., leaf 13.
‡ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 118.

remitt ye saide fine (It Being not done in Contempt, but only as necessarily occasioned as above sd) wherein ye gentleman hath (by God's blessing) been Instrumentall of much good by his calling both in Physick and Chyrurgery and your poor petitioner shall ever pray:

We the Selectmen & such others as are subscribed, Considering the usefulness of Mr Greenland in respect of his practice in our towne do humbly desire the same if this honrd court please.

John Pike	Richard Loell
Richard Thurlo	Antony Somerby
Abraham Toppan	John Mearell
John Bayley	Archelaus Woodman
Thomas Blumfield	Sam: Poore
Peter Godfrie	Edw: Richardson
James Ordway	Robert Coker
Lionel Worth	Richard Fits
Stephen Swett	John Cheney, Jun
Anthony Morse, Sen	John Wilcutt
Willi: Sayor	Robt Adams
Abell Huse	Lanslet Granger
John Cheney, Sen	Anthony Short
James Jackman	John Knight
Joseph Plumer	Peter Toppan
John Parker, Sen	Jeremy Gutridge
Thomas Brown	Thomas Hale Jun
William Titcomb	John Poore, Sen
Richard Bartlet	William Morse

(And others whose names are illegible).

(28) 3. 63 The Magts have considered the grounds of this Petn & consent not to any revision of the Coun: Courts sentence.

THO. DANFORTH, pr., *E. R. S.*

Consented to by ye deputys provided they may have ye ten shillings agayne.

WILLIAM TORREY, *Clerk.*

The Magists Consentyes

EDW: RAWSON, *Secry.**

The indorsements on this petition indicate that the fine of four pounds was remitted, while the costs, amounting to "ten shillings," were retained by the court, although there is no mention of the petition, or of any action upon it, in the Massachusetts Colony Records for the session beginning May 27 and ending June 12, 1663.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. A 15, p. 10.

Dr. Greenland was evidently a skilful physician, but passionate, unprincipled, and quarrelsome. March 31, 1663, he was charged with making indecent proposals to Mary, wife of John Rolfe. He was convicted and sentenced "to go from hence to the prision, there to remain until the next session of the court and then to be brought forth and whipt unless he pay a fine of thirty pounds." *

He appealed to the Court of Assistants, and gave a bond of two hundred pounds, with Capt. Walter Barefoot and George Goldwire as sureties, to prosecute his appeal. Whether his sentence was revoked or modified in any way is uncertain, as the records of the Court of Assistants for that year cannot now be found.

September 27, 1664, he and Capt. Walter Barefoot were both convicted of an assault on William Thomas and Richard Dole in the ordinary kept by Stephen Swett in Newbury, for which they were fined five pounds each.†

January 12, 1665–6, Dr. Greenland sold to Israel Webster his house with an acre and a quarter of land on the southwest corner of Ordway's lane, now known as Market street, and the way by the river, now Merrimac street, Newburyport; and February 28 his wife, Mary, released her right of dower.‡

He probably removed to Portsmouth soon after the sale of this property, and resided there or in that vicinity for several years. George Fountain, captain of the ship "Marmadin," at the Isle of Shoals, wrote, under date of May 28, 1670, to Mr. Richard Cutts, of Portsmouth, that Mr. Henry Greenland came on board his vessel, and pretended to have some acquaintance with one of the seamen named Robert Gardner, to whom

* Ipswich Court Records (at Salem), vol. i., leaf 115.

† Salem Court Files, vol. x., p. 38. Capt. Walter Barefoot was appointed deputy governor of the Province of New Hampshire in 1680, to attend to the clearing and entering of vessels at Portsmouth. Stephen Swett's ordinary was afterwards known as "the Blue Anchor Tavern." See "Ould Newbury," p. 176.

Among the Provincial Papers relating to the Province of New Hampshire are two depositions, dated July 17 and July 24, 1665, made by Robert Carr, Samuel Mavericke, and George Cartwright, commissioners from King Charles the II., in relation to some expressions of disloyalty on the part of Mr. Richard Cutt of Piscataqua river. In these depositions, or certificates, the commissioners promise to protect Mr. Cutt against prosecution "if the said Richard Cutt never molest Thomas Wigin of Dover or Doctor Greenland of Newbury for giving in evidence against him." New Hampshire Provincial Papers, vol. i., pp. 278, 279.

‡ Ipswich Deeds, book IV., leaf 7.

he disclosed a scheme that he said could be made profitable. Enclosed in the letter was the deposition of Robert Gardner, who made oath May 27, 1670, that Mr. Henry Greenland endeavored to induce him and other members of the crew to seize the person of Mr. Richard Cutts, and carry him to England, "say^d that a small number of men might take him and compel his servants to carry down on their backs such money and goods as was sure to be found there; and farther that he would maintain the doing thereof in point of law for the said Cutts had spoken treason against the King." *

What action was taken in regard to the proposed seizure and abduction of Mr. Richard Cutts is uncertain. Subsequently Capt. Walter Barefoot and Dr. Henry Greenland were involved in a law-suit with Abraham Drake, Benjamin Swett, and Henry Green; and the court, held at Hampton "y^e 10^th day 8^mo 1671," ordered the marshall to levy on the "goods, chattels and land" owned by Capt. Walter Barefoot, "at Kittery Point over against y^e great ysland," and also upon two thousand feet of pine boards owned by Dr. Greenland.†

December 10, 1671, Jochen Jansen, formerly of Amsterdam, Holland, sold to Job Clement, of Dover, and Dr. Henry Greenland, of Kittery, "a good Pinke or Ship called ye Sancta Maria now riding att ancho^r neare y^e great Island in y^e River of Piscataqua." ‡

The following year Dr. Greenland was accused of disloyalty to the government of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, and was denounced as an impracticable, over-zealous supporter of the king. He was arrested and imprisoned.

May 7, 1673, the County Court at York was ordered to pay the expenses and charges, amounting to four pounds, incurred by Mr. Edward Rushworth in seizing Henry Greenland.§

In answer to a petition from the inhabitants of Dover and Portsmouth for the release of Henry Greenland the General Court declared that "it sees no cause to grant their request." ‖

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. lx., p. 283. The letter and deposition are certified copies of original papers on file in the County Court at Dover, where Dr. Greenland evidently made answer to the charge brought against him by Mr. Richard Cutts, who was one of the magistrates appointed by the Colony of Massachusetts Bay for the towns of Dover and Portsmouth.

† Norfolk County Deeds, vol. ii., p. 342 (228, 229). ‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 363 (243).

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 555. ‖ Ibid., p. 557.

At the same session, in answer to the petition of Mary Greenland, the General Court ordered "that Henry Greenland haue liberty to returne into this jurisdiction & abide here vntill the first of September next, for the disposing his estate & remooving his family, prouided he doe in other respects observe the order of the court of assistants and depart after the tyme expired." *

LAWS RELATING TO THE PUNISHMENT AND ENTERTAINMENT OF QUAKERS.

The first Quakers that came to New England were two female preachers, Mary Fisher and Ann Austin, who arrived at Boston in July, 1656, bringing with them a considerable number of books advocating and defending their peculiar religious views and opinions. The books were taken from them and publicly burned in the market-place. The women were thrown into prison, and not long after sent back to England.

The General Court in vigorous language declared, October 14, 1656, "Whereas there is a cursed sect of hereticks lately risen vp in the world w^ch^ are comonly called Quakers who take vppon them to be immediately sent of God, and infallibly asisted by the spirit to speake & write blasphemouth opinions, despising government & the order of God in church & comonwealth, speaking evill of dignities, reproaching and reviling magistrates and ministers, seeking to turne the people from the faith & gaine proselites o theire pernicious wayes," etc., the master of any vessel bringing "any knoune Quaker or Quakers, or any other blasphemous hereticks," into any town or harbor within the limits of the colony, shall pay a fine of one hundred pounds for each offence, and the Quakers themselves shall be severely whipped and sentenced to hard labor in the house of correction. The importation of Quaker books was also prohibited, and any person concealing one of these books in his house was liable to a fine of five pounds. †

October 14, 1657, this law was amended, and a fine of forty shillings imposed upon any person or persons entertaining or concealing Quakers, knowing them to be such. Constables

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 557. † Ibid., vol. iv., part I., p. 277.

and magistrates were vigilant and active in arresting and punishing offenders. Quakers banished from the colony, returning without the consent of the General Court, were liable to be severely whipped, to have their ears cut off, or their tongues bored through with hot irons.*

In 1659, Thomas Macy, one of the early settlers of Newbury, who removed to Salisbury in 1639, was summoned to appear at the General Court and answer to the charge of entertaining Quakers.†

He was unable, on account of illness, to appear at the General Court on the day and hour appointed, but in a letter dated October 27, 1659, wrote as follows: —

This is to entreat the honored court not to be offended because of my non-appearance. It is not from any slighting the authority of this honored court, nor from feare to answer the case, but I have bin for some weeks past very ill, and am so at present, and notwithstanding my illness, yet I, desirous to appear, have done my utmost endeavour to hire a horse, but cannot procure one at present. I being at present destitute have endeavoured to purchase but at present cannot attaine it, but I shall relate the truth of the case as my answer should be to y^e^ honored court and more cannot be proved nor so much. On a rainy morning there came to my house Edward Wharton and three men more; the said Wharton spoke to me saying they were traveling eastward and desired me to direct them in the way to Hampton, and asked me how far it was to Casco bay. I never saw any of y^e^ men a^fore^ except Wharton, neither did I require their names, or who they were, but by their carriage I thought they might be quakers and told them so, and therefore desired them to passe on their way, saying to them I might possibly give offence in entertaining them, and as soon as the violence of the rain ceased (for it rained very hard) they went away and I never saw them since. The time that they stayed in the house was about three quarters of an hour, but I can safely affirm it was not an houre. They spake not many words in the time, neither was I at leisure to talke with them for I came home wet to y^e^ skin immediately afore they came to the house and I found my wife sick in bed. If this satisfie not the honored court I shall subject to their sentence: I have not willingly offended. I am ready to serve and obey you in the Lord.

THO MACY.‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 308.

† Previous to 1648 "Thomas Macy was granted an house lot of five acres on the neck over the great River." (Proprietors of Newbury Records, vol. ii., p. 39.)

‡ This letter, by order of the governor and council of the State of Massachusetts, was delivered to the Hon. Barker Buswell, of Nantucket, June 13, 1831. It was destroyed by fire, with other valuable documents, when the Nantucket Athenæum was burned in July, 1846. A copy of the original letter is in the Massachusetts Archives, vol. x., p. 255.

Notwithstanding this humble apology the General Court ordered November 12, 1659, "That Thomas Macy pay as a fine the some of thirty shillings and be admonished by the Gouernor"; and Edward Wharton, who accompanied the Quakers and piloted them from place to place, was ordered "to be whipt with twenty stripes & committed to prison." *

The severity and injustice of this sentence induced Thomas Macy, a few months later, to abandon his home in Salisbury, and remove, with his wife and children, beyond the jurisdiction of the colony to the island of Nantucket, then a part of the Province of New York, where he lived for the remainder of his life.†

May 22, 1661, the law providing for the punishment of "heretics and blasphemers" was again amended and made still more stringent. Quakers not having a legal settlement in the colony were liable to be seized by constables, "stripped naked from the midle upwards, & tyed to a carts tayle & whipped thro the towne." ‡ In this manner they were taken from town to town, and condemned to imprisonment or death, if they ventured to return.

Some of the prominent Quakers residing in London, aroused by these acts of cruelty, sought and obtained an audience with King Charles II., and induced him to issue the following mandamus, addressed to "John Endicot, Esq., and to all and every other Governour or Governours of our Plantation of New England": —

Trusty and Well beloved, we greet you well. Having been informed that several of our Subjects among you, called Quakers, have been and are imprisoned by you, whereof some have been executed and others (as hath been represented unto us) are in Danger to undergo the Like: We have thought fit to signify our Pleasure in that Behalf for the future, and do hereby require that if there be any of those people called Quakers amongst you, now already condemned to suffer Death, or other

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 407.

† He, with Tristram Coffin, Christopher Hussey, R. Swain, Peter Coffin, Stephen Greenleaf, Thomas Barnard, John Swain, William Pile, and others, formed a company for the purchase and settlement of the island of Nantucket, then inhabited by a tribe of Indians. (New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. ii., p. 340.) "The Exiles," a poem by John G. Whittier, is founded on this incident in the life of Thomas Macy. (See Whittier's Complete Poetical Works, Cambridge edition, p. 14.)

‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 2.

Corporal Punishment, or that are imprisoned or obnoxious to the like Condemnation, you are to forbear to proceed any farther therein: but that you forthwith send the said Persons (whether condemned or imprisoned) over to this our Kingdom of England, together with the respective Crimes or Offences laid to their charge, to the End that such Course may be taken with them here, as shall be agreeable to our Laws and their Demerits. And for so doing these our Letters shall be your sufficient Warrant and Discharge. Given at our Court at Whitehall the 9th day of September, 1661, in the thirteenth Year of our Reign.*

This mandatory letter, or order from the king, was intrusted to Samuel Shattuck, a Quaker of Salem, who was then in England, having been banished from the colony on account of his obnoxious religious views. When Shattuck arrived in Boston, he was admitted to the council chamber in the governor's house. He evidently neglected or declined to remove his hat when brought face to face with the governor.

"Off with the knave's hat!" An angry hand
Smote down the offence; but the wearer said
With a quiet smile, "By the King's command
I bear his message and stand in his stead."

In the Governor's hand a missive he laid,
With the Royal arms on its seal displayed;
And the proud man spake as he gazed thereat,
Uncovering, "Give Mr. Shattuck his hat."

He turned to the Quaker, bowing low:
"The King commandeth your friends' release.
Doubt not he shall be obeyed, although
To his subjects' sorrow and sin's increase.

"What he here enjoineth John Endicott,
His loyal servant, questioneth not.
You are free! — God grant the spirit you own
May take you from us to parts unknown." †

The letter from the king was read to the deputies and magistrates of the General Court, November 27, 1661; and the following order was then adopted: —

Although wee hope & doubt not but that if his Majty were rightly informed he would be farre from giving them [the Quakers] such favor,

* Ecclesiastical History of New England, by Joseph B. Felt, vol. ii., p. 282.
† "The King's Missive," by John G. Whittier.

or weakening his authority here so long & orderly settled, yet that we may not in the least offend his Majty, the Court doth hereby order & declare that the execution of the laws in force against Quakers as such so far as they respect corporall punishmt or death be suspended until this Court take further order.*

June 28, 1662, the king, in reply, notified his "loyal subjects in New England" that certain laws and ordinances "contrary and derogatory to his authority and government" must be annulled or repealed. He also declared "that such as desire to use the Booke of Comon Prayer & performe their devotions in the manner established in England" should be allowed that privilege, "& that all persons of good & honest liues & conuersations be admitted to the sacrement of the Lords Supper, according to the Booke of Comon Prayer & their children to baptisme. Wee cannot be understood hereby to direct or wish that any indulgence should be granted to those persons comonly called Quakers, whose being [] inconsistent with any kind of government. Wee have found it necessary, by the advice of our Parliament here, to make sharpe lawes against them, and are well contented that you doe the like there." †

With this assurance from the king that severe measures, adopted for the government and control of Quakers, would not be annulled by Parliament, the General Court, October 8, 1662, revived the law passed in May, 1661, with some modifications, providing that Quakers should be whipped through not more than three towns, and that the number of stripes to which they should be subjected should be limited by the magistrates. ‡

Under the provisions of this law the following order was issued by Capt. Richard Waldron, magistrate at Dover: —

To the constables of Dover, Hampton, Salisbury, Newbury, Rowley, Ipswich, Windham, Linn, Boston, Roxbury, Dedham, and until these vagabond Quakers are out of this jurisdiction.

You and every of you are required in the Kings Majestys name to take these vagabond Quakers, Anna Colman, Mary Tompkins and Alice Ambrose, and make them fast to the carts tail, and drawing the

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 34.
† Ibid., vol. iv., part II., p. 165. ‡ Ibid., vol. iv., part II., p. 59.

cart through your several towns, to whip them upon their naked backs not exceeding ten stripes apiece on each of them in each town, and so convey them from Constable to Constable till they are out of this jurisdiction, as you will answer it at your peril, and this shall be your warrant.

Per me RICHARD WALDRON.

At Dover, dated Dec. 22, 1662.*

In Dover, Hampton, and Salisbury the above order was executed; but in Newbury, Walter Barefoot, afterwards deputy governor of the Province of New Hampshire, put a stop to the further punishment of "these vagabond Quakers," and sent them out of the colony, claiming that under the law they could not be whipped in more than three towns.

Two of the Quakers named in the above order, Mary Tompkins and Alice Ambrose, visited Newbury on their way to Dover, and were then entertained by John Emery, as appears from the following statement: —

Edward and George Preston, and Mary Tompkins and Alice Ambrose, alias Gary, passed eastward to visit the seed of God in those parts, and in their way through Newbury, they went into the house of one John Emery, (a friendly man,) who with his wife seemed glad to receive them, at whose house they found freedom to stay all night, and when the next morning came, the priest, Thomas Parker, and many of his followers came to the man's house, and much reasoning and dispute there was about truth; but the priest's and many of the people's ears were shut against the truth. And in the time of their discourse, the wind striving in Mary Tompkin's stomach, making some noise, she having received no sustenance for the space of near forty eight hours, one Joseph Pike, after they were departed the town, said "she had a devil in her."

After a while the priest perceiving that the battle might be too hard for him, rose up and took the man of the house and his wife out of doors with him and began to deal with them for entertaining such dangerous people. They replied they were required to entertain strangers. The priest said it was dangerous entertaining such as had plague sores upon them. Which the woman hearing began to take the priest to do for saying such false, wicked and malicious words but he hasted away. Mary Tompkins called him to come back again and not to show himself to be one of those hirelings that flee and leave their flocks behind them, but he would not turn: and a while after most of the People departed: and when Ipswich Court came thither he was had and fined for Entertaining the Quakers.†

* New Hampshire Provincial Papers, vol. i., p. 243.

† "New England Judged," by George Bishop (edition, 1702), p. 400.

It appears from an examination of the papers on file at the court-house in Salem that the grand jury on the thirty-first day of March, 1663, presented John Emery for entertaining Quakers, and also for inviting neighbors to come to hear them. May 5, 1663, the case was referred to the next court for settlement.*

The following depositions indicate that John Emery had on several occasions entertained Quakers, and asserted his right to supply them with food and lodging regardless of the restrictions and penalties imposed by the General Court: —

The testimony of Henry Jaques aged about 44 years saith that I heard Joseph Noyes say that after that time that the Quakers had their meeting at John Emerys that he saw two Quakers at John Emerys house, and John Emery bade ym welcome, and further saith that I heard Joseph Noyes say that John Emery had entertained Quakers, both to bed and table, after the time they had their meeting at John Emerys house, and this he testified before the church at Newbury, and farther I do testify that I heard John Emery and his wife say that he had entertained Quakers and that he would not put them from his house, and used argument for the lawfulness of it. HENRY JAQUES.

Sworn in Court, May 7, 1663 Before ROBERT LORD, *Clerk.*†

The Deposition of John rolfe, being about the age of 28 years, this Deponent saith that where as John Emery senior did afirme before the honoured Court that he had not entertained any quakers in his house since that time that the meeting was there when Mr parker was sent for & came to them. I Doe testifie that I being at John Emerys, Sr house about 3 weeks after that time did see two Quakers there & I herd him say to them & som others that were there yt Joseph noyce came to his house & told him that there were two quakers coming towards his house & wisht him not to entertain them; he sayd if they came to his house they should be welcom & he would not forbid them; there they were when I cam in & there I left them. I was there upon occasion neare an houer & there were prsent in goodman Emerys house, wil Ilsley, sen, & John Muselwhite.

Sworne in Court at Ipswich 7 May, 1663

p me ROBERT LORD, *Cleric.*†

The Deposition of Joseph Noyes aged 26 years: This Deponent saith yt as he was agoing to Goodman Emeries, senior, he overtook two women Quakers, and supposing they would call at ye house of ye forementioned John Emmery, he desired him not to entertain ym. But

*Salem Court Files, vol. ix., leaf 13. † Ibid., vol. ix., folio 10.

whilst he was in discourse, they came into ye house and there staid until he went away. Goodman Emmery was in ye chamber (as he knows because he yn upon an occasion called out to his wife) his wife being in ye same room with ye Quakers. Ys was after ye meeting of ye quakers at his house wn Mr Parker was yr. Farther he had understood by those yt wr eye witnesses yt two men quakers wr yr entertained very kindly to bed and table & John Emmerie shook ym by ye hand and bid ym welcome: Ye substance of ys, he, or his wife in his presence told him, and owned it (according to his best remembrance) more yn once. This also ws severl days after ye meeting above said.

Taken upon oath 24, 4, 1663 before me SIMON BRADSTREET.*

What disposition was made of this case is uncertain. There is no evidence in the records of the courts held at Ipswich, Salem, and Boston that a verdict was rendered for or against the defendant. March 31, 1663, John Emery was fined four pounds for entertaining Dr. Henry Greenland, "a stranger" not having a legal residence in the town of Newbury; and that sentence probably led the author of "New England Judged," and other writers since that date, to assert that he was fined for entertaining Quakers.

SUBSCRIPTIONS IN AID OF HARVARD COLLEGE.

September 8, 1636, the General Court appropriated four hundred pounds for the establishment of a school or college at Newtowne (now Cambridge); and in 1638 the Rev. John Harvard bequeathed one-half his property and his entire library for its encouragement and support.

In 1642, overseers were appointed; and November 13, 1645, the General Court ordered the deputies of the several towns to recommend that "one peck of corne, or 12d in money or othr comodity be sent to ye Treasurer for the Colledge at Cambridge" from every family in the colony.†

In 1650, "the President and Fellows of Harvard College" were incorporated, and a charter granted under the seal of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.

October 19, 1652, the General Court ordered the inhabi-

* Salem Court Files, vol. ix., folio 10.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 86.

tants of the several towns in the colony to choose one or more persons to solicit subscriptions for the support of the college, and to render an account of the same to the governor and deputies at the next session of the court.*

Many towns responded promptly to this appeal, and promised to contribute in proportion to their means. A few asked for further time.

Newberry hath p'mised ye sum of £15.0.0
Salisbury will return in two months
Salem will give answer to ye committee in 2 months
Wenham subscribes the sum of £6.10.0
Reading subscribes the sum of £16.13.0
Haverhill will give answer in two months
Lin will give (to be pd next year) 6.0.0
Hampton subscribes ye sum of 17.19.0
Rowley subscribes the sum of 38.0.0

Boston, Roxbury, Ipswich, and other towns, with more wealth and resources, pledged larger and more substantial sums.†

The collection of the money, however, seems to have proceeded with considerable difficulty, the total receipts falling far short of the promised contributions. The Rev. Henry Dunster, president of the college at that date, gives the various amounts received from the towns in Essex County, as follows: —‡

Lynn	£1. 0.0	Newbury	£1.10.0
Salem	0. 0.0	Salisbury	0. 0.0
Ipswich	5. 0.0	Hampton	0. 0.0
Gloucester	0.12.0	Andover	0. 0.0
Rowley	7. 8.7	Haverhill	0. 0.0

May 15, 1654, the General Court again ordered the towns that had not contributed to the support of the college to appoint some suitable person to receive subscriptions, and forward them to Increase Nowell, a member of the Court of Assistants, "in order that the work of the college may not be retarded."

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 101.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. lviii., p. 23.
‡ History of Harvard University, by Josiah Quincy, vol. i., p. 456.

In answer to this appeal some of the towns responded with small gifts and contributions. Among these gifts were a number of sheep, a pewter flagon, a fruit-dish, a sugar-spoon, and sums of money from five shillings to five pounds.

In 1669, the financial condition of the college was extremely discouraging. The buildings were old and out of repair. Better and more commodious accommodations were needed, and its invested funds amounted to less than one thousand pounds.

In this emergency, John Cutt, Richard Cutt, and Joshua Moody notified the General Court that the inhabitants of Portsmouth would contribute sixty pounds annually for seven years, "to be improved by the overseers of the college for the advancement of good literature there." *

Donations and contributions to be used in the construction of a new library building were urgently solicited by friends of the institution in every town in the colony.

Lynn	subscribed	£20. 0.0	Gloucester	subscribed	£5. 0.0
Ipswich	"	60. 3.2	Andover	"	12.10.0
Rowley	"	40. 8.5	Wenham	"	4.11.5
Newbury	"	21. 4.0	Haverhill	"	18.10.6
Marblehead	"	8.19.6	Bradford	"	9. 3.0
Salisbury	"	17. 0.0	Beverly	"	13. 0.0
Topsfield	"	6. 0.0 †			

The collection of these subscriptions was delayed, however, from year to year; and the selectmen of delinquent towns were at length ordered, May 19, 1680, by the General Court to provide for their payment before September 3, 1680, under penalty of twenty pounds.

At a meeting of the selectmen of Newbury, held February 6, 1679–80, "Joseph Pike constable and Daniel Lunt were chosen to gather the rest of the contribution for the Colledg." ‡

Work was begun on the library building, otherwise known as Harvard Hall, in 1672; but, owing to the delay in the col-

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 433.
† History of Harvard University (Quincy), vol. i., p. 508.
‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

lection of subscriptions, it was not completed until ten years later. It was destroyed by fire in 1764, and with it the most valuable library and philosophical apparatus in America.

Subsequently Nathaniel Carter, Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Jackson, Rev. John Lowell, and Patrick Tracy, of Newbury, with other friends of the college in Boston, Salem, Gloucester, and elsewhere, contributed books and money to repair the loss the college had sustained; and the General Court appropriated the sum of two thousand pounds toward the cost of rebuilding Harvard Hall.

LEATHER DRESSERS.

Nicholas Easton, who came with the first settlers to Newbury in 1635, was probably the first person who carried on the business of tanning in the town. He owned a dwelling-house, with the land under and adjoining the same, on the north bank of the river Parker, and lived there until 1637, when he was disfranchised by the General Court, and soon after removed to Rhode Island. Richard Dole, a dealer in hides and leather, purchased the property, and continued in business there until 1705.*

After the settlement of the new town in 1646, repeated efforts were made to induce some competent leather dresser to establish himself in trade in the vicinity of the "trayneing green."

At a meeting of the ffreemen April 19, 1649 There was granted that Job Clements should have that freehold that the Towne bought, formerly being William Berry his ffreehold, to remaine, abide and continue to him & his heyrs forever, conditionaly y^t^ he live w^th^ us heere in Newbury exercising his trade four years, or as long as he shall live w^thin^ that Tearme, and also let the shoemakers of this Towne have the first proffer or the forsaking of his leather making him as good pay as others.†

This offer did not prove acceptable to Mr. Clements, and he decided to remain in Haverhill, where he was then residing.

November 10, 1663 Leift Pike proposed for his brother Thomas Turvill for an acre of land near some spring (so that it do not prejudice

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 17 and 18.
† Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 49.

the Towne) for to set up tanning of Leather & Richard Kent & Henry Short were appointed to look out a convenient place neere some spring.*

March 14, 1663–4, at a general meeting of the townsmen "It was voted that there should be an acre of land given to Thomas Turvill between George Littles & Henry Jaquesses provided he follow his trade of Tanning, and in case he leave it in seaven years he shall resigne it up to the Towne, the Towne paying to him all necessary charge he bestows upon it, but hereby they grant him no freehold." *

In 1664, Richard Knight and William Titcomb "laid out to Thomas Thurvill according to the grant of the town an acre of land on the way to the mill." *

On account of physical inability to support himself at his trade the selectmen were ordered September 19, 1670, to send Thomas Turvill to his "kinsman," Henry Short, to be maintained at the expense of the town until his death.

January 24, 1671–2, he conveyed to Ensign Greenleaf and Caleb Moody, selectmen of the town of Newbury, the land that he had received from the town, upon condition that he carry on the trade of leather dresser. Being unable by weakness to perform the condition agreed upon, and feeling obliged to call upon the town for aid and support, he relinquished his right and title to the land in part payment of the charges that had been, and were to be, incurred for his benefit.*

November 27, 1675 the Selectmen Reckoned with Henry Short for keeping Tho: Turvill & there was due to him fourteen pounds & seaven shillings the last day of November.*

Ten years later John Bartlet was a tanner of hides at Bartlet's Cove. In an agreement made March 19, 1686–7, Samuel Bartlet and John Bartlet mention a way "from the north west side of the Cove to the Bark house then standing." † The business was continued in that locality for nearly two centuries.

Anthony Somerby, grandson of the first schoolmaster of

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.
† Recorded in May, 1694, by Henry Short, town clerk.

Newbury, was a leather dresser in the vicinity of the "New Pond and Trayneing Green."

Anthony Somerby having proposed to the town for three rods square of Ground at a place commonly known by the name of Gladdings spring, so as may be Convenient for Dressing of leather. The towne by vote granted said proposition viz: The land proposed for, to the said Anthony Somerby.*

Tristram Coffin and Henry Short, lot-layers, "according to a grant of the town of March 8th, 1696–7," laid out on the eleventh day of March following, "to Anthony Somerby a piece of ground of three rods square lying at a place commonly known by the name of Gladdings spring † bounded by the common or undivided land of Newbury on every side. Bounded with a small rock at every corner." ‡

March 27, 1699, Ebenezer Knowlton was granted a lot of land on the Bradford road "for the purpose of setting up a tanners trade" near the land formerly owned by Benjamin Lowell, "bounded westerly by a brook and northerly by the land of Stephen Emery." §

MILLS FOR GRINDING CORN.

In 1645, the only grist-mill in Newbury was at the falls of the Quascacunquen, now Parker river. In that year, or the year immediately preceding, Thomas Nelson built a mill in Rowley, near the dividing line between that town and Newbury, on the Mill river, a branch of the Quascacunquen. He died in 1648; and on the first day of July, 1654, Richard Dummer, of Newbury, executor of the will of Thomas Nelson, "sometime of Rowley deceased," sold to John Pearson "one half part of the corn-mill at Rowley" with land adjoining the same "surrounded with a salt creeke which cometh out of Newbury river." ‖

Some doubt having arisen in regard to the right of the

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Gladdings spring is a few rods southwesterly from the house formerly owned and occupied by the Rev. James Noyes.

‡ Town of Newbury Proprietors' Records.

§ Town of Newbury Records.

‖ Ipswich Deeds, book II., p. 300.

executor to sell the above-described property, a board of arbitrators was chosen to adjust the questions in dispute and determine the amount due from Richard Dummer to Philip and Thomas Nelson, "sons of Thomas Nelson, deceased." They reported October 30, 1657, and again on the twenty-sixth day of November, 1658.* Subsequently, the questions in dispute were referred to the magistrates and deputies of the General Court. October 16, 1660, they declared,

> In the case now depending betweene John Peirson of Rowley & Mr Richard Dummer, referring to the sale of a mill & certaine lands, sometjmes possessed by Mr Nelson of Rowley, deceased, & now sold by the sajd Mr Dummer to ye sd Peirson for the vse of the sajd Mr. Nelsons children, the Court judgeth it meet to confirme the sale of the sajd mill & land.†

From the testimony of witnesses given in a suit brought by Philip Nelson to recover possession of the property, at the Court held in Ipswich March 29, 1692, it appears that there was a saw-mill "neer ye south end of ye above said grist mill, upon ye land yt ye fulling mill [now] stands on the southerly end of said Grist Mill." ‡

After the death of Philip Nelson his widow and executrix sold all her right and interest in these mills to John Pearson, jr., son of John Pearson, sr., who retained possession of them for many years. They were owned and occupied by Mr. Pearson's descendants until 1840. Since that date they have been practically rebuilt; and, supplied with new and improved machinery, they are now known as the "Glen Mills" of Rowley.

MILL ON LITTLE RIVER.

For the convenience of the inhabitants of Newbury, who were to remove from the old town on Parker river to the new town on the Merrimack river, in 1645, the erection of a grist-mill near the place now known as "Four Rock Bridge," was authorized by the following vote passed at a town meeting held December 18, 1645: —

* Ipswich Deeds, book I., pp. 221, 222 (591–595).
† Massachusetts Colony Records, book IV., part I., p. 440.
‡ Ipswich Deeds, book V., p. 502.

Whereas the Inhabitants of ye Towne of Newbury at a publique meeting have chosen William Gerrish, John Lowle, Richard Knight, Henry Short, Richard Kent, Jnr, John Pike, Jnr, and William Titcomb for to procure a water mill for to be built and set up in sd Towne to grind theyr corne the sd men have accordingly covenanted & agreed with John Emery & Samuel Scullard to effect & perfect the same on these terms following:

1. That the sd John Emery & Samuel Scullard Do Covenant & promise that the sd Mill shall be sufficiently built & made ready for the Townes use to grind the Townes grists at or before the twenty ninth of September following.

2. They likewise promise that the sd mill shall be sett up between Nicholas Holts poynt & Edward Woodmans Bridge, or near thereabouts, this they promise to perform & make good & do hereby firmly bind ymselves & theyr heyrs under the penalty of forty pounds forfeiture if not done.*

The committee in behalf of the inhabitants of Newbury agreed to pay John Emery and Samuel Scullard the sum of twenty pounds in merchantable goods; to grant them ten acres of upland and six acres of meadow land; to exempt the mill from taxation for seven years, and acknowledge it to be a freehold to them and their heirs forever.†

Samuel Scullard died previous to October, 1647, and his widow married John Bishop, who purchased John Emery's interest in the mill property. As the lawful successor of Samuel Scullard, deceased, the committee "confirmed upon John Bishop his heirs and assigns" all the rights and privileges originally conveyed by the above-described agreement.

June 18, 1663, he sold the mill to Peter Cheney.‡ Thirty years later there was some controversy in regard to the deed of conveyance; and John Bishop denied, May 30, 1682, selling the freehold when he sold the mill.§

* Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., folio 5. See also Suffolk Court Files, Pemberton Square, Boston, vol. i., No. 86 and No. 12513, for certified copies of above agreement signed by Nathaniel Coffin, "clerc for ye commoners in ye Towne of Newbury."

† "In consideration of John Emery his full satisfaction for his part of the mill land, the Towne Granted unto John Emery ten acres of land lying in the neck, below the House lotts, which John Bishop resigned to the Towne for his mill land, to be to ye said John Emery his heyrs & assigns forever provided yt there be a way in the most convenient place according to the agreement the Towne made wth Samuel Scullard." Newbury Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 26.

‡ "Ould Newbury," p. 104.

§ Newbury Proprietors' Records, folio 5.

MILL AT ARTICHOKE RIVER.

The freeholders granted, November 22, 1678, to John Emery, jr., "twelve acres of land on the west side of Artichoke River adjoyneing to his owne land, Provided that he build and maintaine a corne mill to grind the Townes corne from time to time, and to build it within one yeare and one halfe after the Date hereof. And the Inhabitants of the Towne to have their corne ground according to their Turnes before any of another towne." *

This mill was probably built during the year 1679 or 1680. December 13, 1686, the town appointed a committee "to lay out a convenient highway of such breadth as they shall see meet thro' the plaines to Sergeant Emerys mill." For more than two centuries the dam with the mill privileges at the mouth of the Artichoke river have been maintained in good order and condition for the grinding of corn.†

MILL AT PINE ISLAND.

Upon the petition of John Badger, the town of Newbury, March 8, 1680–1, granted him liberty to use "two rods of land over against his house to set up a mill to make oatmeale."‡ The mill was soon after erected, two or three hundred rods in a northerly direction from Little Hill, on the north side of the highway leading from Parker river to the Merrimack, and was operated by horse power.

May 12, 1715, Nathaniel Badger sold to his brother-in-law Joseph Lunt the house where he then lived, with buildings and utensils belonging to his "oat mill or mault mill," and the land appertaining to the homestead of his honored father, John Badger. §

Cutting Lunt, Nathaniel Lunt, and Lois Lunt, children of Joseph Lunt, owned and operated the mill from 1750 to 1785.

Afterwards Nathan Lunt, son of Cutting Lunt, became owner of one-half the property; and March 2, 1791, he sold

* Town of Newbury Records.

† For further details relating to this mill see "Ould Newbury," pp. 269 to 274.

‡ Town of Newbury Records.

§ Essex Deeds, book XXVII., leaf 182.

his interest in the land and buildings to Nicholas Lunt, who continued the manufacture of oatmeal and malt there until the year 1810.*

THE MERRIMACK RIVER.

The northern boundary of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, by a strict construction of its charter, extended from a point three miles north of the most northerly part of the Merrimack river and in an easterly and westerly direction from sea to sea. As early as September 6, 1638, the General Court passed the following order: —

Goodman Woodward, Mr John Stretton wth an Indian & 2 others, appointed by the magistrates of Ipswich, are to lay out the line 3 mile northward of the most northermost part of Merrimacke for wch they are to have 5s a day a peece.†

June 6, 1639, Goodm̃ Nathaniell Woodward was ordered to have three pounds for his journey to discover the ruñing vp of Merrimacke: 10s more was aded by order of the Governor & Deputies.

And they wch went with him, Tho: Howlet, Sargent Jacob, Tho: Clarke & John Manning to have 50s a peece for their 10 days a peece spent according to the former order; and John Clarke to have [] for going wth them & staying for them till their returne. ‡

In October, 1641, the government of the colony of Massachusetts Bay was extended to the Piscataqua river by the adoption of the following order: —

Whereas it appeareth that by the extent of the line, (according to or patent,) that the ryver Pascataquack is wthin the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts, & conference being had (at severall times) wth the said people, & some deputed by the Generall Court, for the setteling & establishing of order in the administration of justice there, it is now ordered, by the Genrall Court, houlden at Boston, the 9th day of the 8th mo, 1641 & wth the consent of the inhabitants of the said ryver as followeth:

Impr: That from henceforth the said people inhabiting there are & shalbee accepted & reputed under the government of the Massachusetts, as the rest of the inhabitants wthin the said jurisdiction are &c. §

The heirs of Capt. John Mason protested against this assumption of authority, and claimed control of the territory

*See Essex Deeds, book XCIX., leaf 163; book CII., leaf 33; book CIX., leaf 12: book CXXIV., leaf 204; book CXLV., leaf 148; book CLII., leaf 242; book CCIX., leaf 154; Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 134.

†Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 237. ‡Ibid., p. 261. §Ibid., p. 342.

from the Merrimack river to the Kennebec river, under a charter granted by King James I. in 1622. The General Court, however, reasserted its claim to the disputed territory, and appointed, June 1, 1652, Capt. Symon Willard and Capt. Edward Johnson commissioners "to p'cure such artists & other assistants as they shall judge meete to goe w^th^ them, to finde out the most northerly p'te of the Merrimacke Riuer, and that they be supplyed withall mañer of necessaries by the Treasurer fitt for their journey, and that they use their vttmost skill and abillitie to take a true observation of the latitude of the place and that they doe it withall convenient speed and make returne thereof at the next session of this Court." *

The commissioners employed Serjeant John Sherman, of Watertowne, and Jonathan Ince, a student at Harvard College, to accompany and assist them in their investigations. October 19, 1652, they reported to the General Court that by careful astronomical observations they found the head of the Merrimack river "where it issues out of the lake called Winnapuscakit" was in the latitude of forty-three degrees, forty minutes, and twelve seconds (43° 40′ 12″), and that the boundary line of the colony, begining three miles north of that point, extended in an easterly direction to the sea.†

In 1654, Mr. Jonas Clark and Samuel Andrews, "both well skilled in Mathematics," were appointed to mark with a heap of stones, or in some other suitable way, the northern boundary, or limit, of the colony on the seacoast. They reported that a line from lake Winnipiseogee to the Atlantic ocean, three miles north of the latitude given above, would fall upon an island called the "Upper Clapboard Iland, about a quarter of a mile from the mayne in Casco Bay." ‡

Over this vast territory the colony of Massachusetts Bay claimed jurisdiction until the year 1679, when the province of New Hampshire was created by an act of Parliament, and the towns of Dover, Exeter, Hampton, and Portsmouth became a part of that province. Subsequently, the boundary line between New Hampshire and Massachusetts was the occasion of a long controversy that was not finally adjusted and settled until 1899.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 98. † Ibid., p. 109. ‡ Ibid., p. 207.

PETITION FOR THE RELEASE OF ROBERT PIKE.

The General Court passed an order, May 18, 1653, declaring it to be unlawful for any person to preach in any town in the colony without the consent of the elders of four neighboring churches or by the approval of the county court. Robert Pike, of Salisbury, boldly denounced this act as an unjustifiable interference with the personal rights and privileges of freemen, and farther said "several churches had called theire members to accompt which did act in that lawe making, and that some places were about to show theire minds to the Generall Court about it." *

August 30, 1653, Lieut. Pike was ordered to appear at the General Court and answer for his intemperate zeal and seditious speech. He was disfranchised September 7, 1653, and prohibited from holding public office in the town or in the colony. A fine of twenty marks, equal to thirteen pounds, six shillings, and eightpence, was imposed as an additional penalty; and he was required to give bonds for his good behavior during the court's pleasure.*

The prompt and vigorous measures adopted by the General Court to assert its rights and protect its members from criticism and censure aroused a strong feeling of indignation among the inhabitants of Newbury, Haverhill, Andover, Hampton, and Salisbury. Petitions were prepared and circulated in these towns asking that the fine and punishment imposed upon "Lieutenant Robert Pike" be remitted. Several of these petitions are on file at the State House in Boston, but many of the signatures can hardly be deciphered and some are illegible. The petition from Newbury reads as follows: †—

The humble petition of the inhabitants of Newbury, to the honored General Court now assembled at Boston, showeth:

That whereas our loving friend, Lieutenant Robert Pike, of Salisbury, hath by occasion, as it is witnessed against him, let fall some words for which the honored Court hath been pleased [to censure him] we having had experience that he hath been a peaceable man and a useful instrument . . . do therefore humbly desire this honored Court that the said

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 156.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. x., leaf 299. See also "The New Puritan," pp. 44 and 45.

sentence may be [revoked] and that the said Lieutenant Pike be . . . restored to his former liberty. So . . . pray &c.

Richd. Kent, Jun.	Wm Titcombe	Benj Swett
Wm Moody	John Bartlett	Joseph Swett
Daniel Peirce	Tho. Browne	Steph. Greenleaf
Geo. Little	Richd. Bartlett	Anthony Morse
Saml Moody	Gyles Cromlome	Henry Lunt
Richd. Dole	Aquilla Chase	Solomon Kyes
John Poore	Edw. Richardson	Tristram Coffin
Dan Thurston	Wm Richardson	Francis Plummer
Joseph Plummer	John Bishop	Sam. Plummer
Richd Thurly	Sam Poore	Dan Thurston
John Wolcot	John Hutchins	Wm Cottle
John Hull	Wm Sawyer	John Rolfe
Rob. Adams	Richd. Fitts	John Muslewhite
Wm Chandler	John Bond	John Emery, Sen.
John Tillotson	Chris Bartlett	John Emery, Jun.
John Baily	James Ordway	Sam Moore
John Wheeler	Edwd. Woodman	Nich. Batt
Rob. Cooper	Stephen Swett	John Cheney
Richd. Kent, Sen.	Wm Ilsly	Daniel Cheney
	Tho Smith.	

This petition, with several other petitions from neighboring towns, was presented to the General Court at a session held May 14, 1654. The deputies as well as the magistrates were evidently disturbed and irritated by this unexpected display of friendship for Lieut. Robert Pike, and promptly appointed a committee of investigation.

In answer to the petiĉon of Hampton, Salisbury, Newbery, Haverill & Andover, subscribed by severall in each toune, this Court cannot but deeply resent that so many psons of seuerall tounes, condiĉons & relations, should combine together to psent such an vnjust & vnreasonable request as the revoaking the sentance past the last Court, agt Left Robt Pike & the restoring of him to his former libertie, wthout any petiĉon of his oune, or least acknowledgment of his great offence, fully proved against him, which was no lesse then defaming this Court, and charging them wth breach of oath &c wch the petiĉoners call some words lett fall by occasion. The court doth therefore order in this extraordinary case, that Mr Bradstreet for Hauerill & Andover, Capt Wiggins for Hampton, Capt Gerrish & Nichō Noies for Newbery, & Mr Winsly & Mr Bradbury for Salisbury, shall & heereby are appointed Comisioners to call the said petiĉoners in the seuerall tounes together, or so many of them

at a time as they shall think meete & require a reason of theire vnjust request & how they came to be induced to subscribe the s̄d petic̄on & so make theire retourne to the next sessions, that the Court may consider how to pceed farther therein.*

In October, 1654, Capt. William Gerrish and Nicholas Noyes reported to the General Court the reasons given for signing the petition by the men of Newbury: —

Francis Plummer and Robert Morse say the reason is because he is a useful man, and thought they might petition without offence. It was in the liberty of the Court to accept it or reject it and . . . they could not see they had done amiss in petitioning.

John Bishop being desired to go into the meeting house to explain . . . about the petition he said he could not stay, but the constable said he must. He came into the house before us; said, would the General Court have the reasons, they are in the petition, and that was all he would say, and so turned his back and away he went.

Benjamin Swett saith every free subject hath liberty to petition for any that had been in esteem, without offence to any.

John Emery demanded our Commission and the sight of the petition, and then would answer. Being produced, he answered we had no power to demand who brought him the petition; and hearing John Bond make answer, told him he was a wise man in a bold, flouting manner. His carriage we conceive was [insulting].†

Others said they were friends of Robert Pike and out of respect for him they petioned for his release, while others confessed that they were ignorant of the words spoken by him & sentence imposed upon him by the Gen. Court and intended no offence to that honorable body in asking for his release.

After a careful examination of the answers returned by the men from Newbury and other towns in the vicinity, the General Court ordered November 1, 1654, the petitioners whose answers were not satisfactory to appear at the county court and give bonds in the sum of ten pounds to answer for their several offences. The names of the Newbury men "to be summoned by warrant from the clark of the court" were: "Jno Emery, Sen, Jno Hull, Jn° Bishop, Benjamin Swett, Daniell Thirston, Jun. Joseph Plomer, Daniell Cheny, Jn° Wilcott." ‡

* Massachustts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 194.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. x., p. 299. "The New Puritan," pp. 44 and 45.
‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 215.

The objectionable order relating to public preaching in the colony was repealed August 30, 1653; but at the same time it was enacted "that every person that shall publish and maintaine any hetrodoxe and erronjous doctorine shalbe lyable to be questioned and censured by the County Court where he liveth according to the meritt of his offence." *

The sentence imposed upon Lieut. Pike was not revoked until several years later, as appears from the following order adopted by the General Court October 23, 1657: —

In ans^r to the petic̄on of Robert Pike, humbly desiring y^e courts favo^r his fine being paid, to remitt to him & release him from the other pte of the Courts former sentence against him, M^r Worcester y^e pastor of y^e church at Salisbury appearing on y^e behalfe of the petic̄oner and acknowledging himself much bound to the court if they would be pleased to graunt y^e said Pikes request, the court grants his request.†

NEWBURY IN 1654.

In the thirty-first chapter of the history of New England, otherwise known as "Wonder Working Providence of Sions Saviour," by Edward Johnson, printed in London in 1654, is the following description of Newbury: —

In the latter end of this yeare (1634) two sincere servants of Christ inabled by him with gifts to declare his minde unto his people, came over this broad Ocean, and began to build the Tenth Church of Christ at a Towne called Newberry, their names being Mr. James Noise and Mr. Thomas Parker, somewhat differing from all the former, and after mentioned Churches in the preheminence of their Presbytery, and it were to be wished that all persons who have had any hand in those hot contentions, which have fallen out since, about Presbyterian and Independent Government in Churches, would have looked on this example, comparing it with the Word of God, and assuredly it would have stayed (all the godly at least) of either part from such unworthy expressions as have passed to the grief of many of Gods people; And I doubt not but this History will take of that unjust accusation and slanderous imputation of the rise of that floud of errors and false Doctrines sprung up of late, as flowing from the Independent or rather Congregationall Churches. But to follow on, this Town is situate about twelve miles from Ipswitch, neere upon the wide venting streames of Merrimac River,

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 151. †Ibid., p. 313.

whose strong current is such that it hath forced its passage through the mighty Rocks, which causeth some sudden falls, and hinders Shipping from having any accesse far into Land, her bankes are in many places stored with Oken Timber of all sorts, of which that which they commonly call'd white Oke is not inferiour to our English Timber; in this River lie some few Islands of fertill Land, this Towne is stored with Meddow and upland which hath caused some Gentlemen (who brought over good Estates, and finding then no better way to improve them,) to set upon husbandry, amongst whom that Religious and sincere hearted servant of Christ Mr. Richard Dummer, sometime a Magistrate in this little Common-wealth, hath holpen on this Town; their houses are built very scattering, which hath caused some contending about removall of their place for Sabbath-Assemblies; their Cattell are about foure hundred head, with store of Corne-land in tillage, it consists of about seventy families; the soules in Church fellowship are about an hundred. the teaching Elders of this Congregation have carried it very lovingly toward their people, permitting of them to assist in admitting of persons into Church-society, and in Church-censures, so long as they Act regularly, but in case of their male-administration, they assume the power wholly to themselves, their godly life and conversation hath hitherto been very amiable, and their paines and Care over their flock not inferiour to many others, and being bound together in a more stricter band of love than ordinary with promise to spend their dayes together (if the Lord please) * . . .

In the fourteenth chapter, Book Second, the Merrimack river is described as follows: —

Salsbury being seated upon the broad swift torrent of Merrimack, a very goodly River to behold were it not blockt up with some suddaine falls through the rocks: over against the Towne lyeth the Towne of Newberry, on the Southern side of the River, a constant Ferry being kept between; for although the River be about half a mile broad, yet, by reason of an Island that lies in the midst thereof, it is the better passed in troublesom weather; the people of this Towne have of late placed their dwellings so much distanced the one from the other, that they are likely to divide into two churches; the scituation of this Towne is very pleasant, were the River Navigable farre up, the branches thereof abound in fair and good medowes with good store of stately Timber upon the uplands. †

NEWBURY IN 1660.

When Governor Winthrop arrived in New England in 1630, Samuel Maverick was settled at Noddle's Island, now

* Massachusetts Historical Collections, Second Series, vol. iii., p. 144.
† Ibid., vol. vii., p. 18.

East Boston, and had been there for several years. In 1660, Maverick is supposed to have written the following account of Newbury and other towns on the Merrimack river: —

Seven Miles to the Southward of Hampton is Meromack River on the Mouth of which on the North side is seatted a Large Towne called Sallisbury, and 3 miles above it a village called old Salisbury where ther is a Saw Mill or two. The commodities this Towne affords are Corne, Cattle, Boards and Pipe Staues.

Four leagues up this River is Haverell, a pretty Towne & a few miles higher is the Towne of Andouer, both these Townes subsist by Husbandry.

At the mouth, on the southside of Meromeck and upwards, is seated the Towne of Newbury. The Houses stand at a good distance from each other, a feild and Garden between each house, and so on both sides the street for 4 miles or therabouts; betweene Salisbury and this Towne the river is broader than the Thames at Deptford, and in the sum̃er abounds with sturgeon, salmon, and other ffresh water fish. Had we the art of takeing and saveing the sturgeon it would prove a very great advantage, the Country affording vinegar and other materialls to do it withall. In this Towne and old Newbury adjoining are 2 meeting-houses.*

DIVIDING LINE BETWEEN NEWBURY AND ROWLEY.

A farm of three hundred acres was granted Edward Woodman, in 1660, by the General Court; but it was subsequently claimed that the land had previously been granted to the inhabitants of Newbury, that it was wholly within the limits of the town, and that the order of the court should be reconsidered and repealed.

The order, adopted October 16, 1660, reads as follows: —

In answr to ye petition of Mr Edward Woodman, humbly desiring the favour of this Court in graunting him a parcell of land lying betweene Rowley & Newbury lynes, the Court judgeth it meete to graunt him three hundred acres there.†

May 21, 1661, the subject was again brought to the attention of the General Court, and the following order was then passed: —

* New England Genealogical Register, January, 1885, p. 33.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 440.

In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of ye toune of Newbury, the Court, having heard the petitioners in behalfe of the toune of Newbury & Mr Woodman, relating to Newbury ljne & this Courts grant of a farme of three hundred acres of land in October last, finding that the ljne of Newbury bounds being, for at least twenty years, lajd out adjoyning to Rouley ljne & perambulated according to order of this Court, shall be & remajne to Newbury wthout any farther challenge or clajme from any toune or person, and that Mr Woodman's grant as to yt place is heerby declared null & vojd, Mr Woodman hauing consented thereto, yet are willing to allow Mr Woodman his three hundred acres formerly granted in any free place not formerly graunted & not hindering a plantation.*

At a meeting of the selectmen of Newbury, held May 3, 1669, it was voted "that ffrancis browne & John Emery, Junr, shall go next Munday to meet Rowley men at Rowley Mill to go with John Knight or John Poore to run the lyne between our bounds & Rowley." †

John Peirson, sr., and Philip Nelson, who were appointed April 9, 1672, by the inhabitants of Rowley, to run the line between that town and Newbury, "did so do on Monday, April 15, 1672." †

PENNACOOK, N.H., AND WOODBRIDGE, N.J.

Although land in Newbury was abundant, the soil fertile, and the "upper woods" undivided until the close of the year 1686, many of the early settlers were induced, by various considerations, to remove with their families to places more or less remote, where they could unite with others in the organization and development of new towns. They were prominently identified with the settlement at Salisbury, at Hampton, at Rowley, at Haverhill, and at Andover, previous to the close of the year 1645. In 1659, they obtained the right to establish a town "at a place called Pennecooke," now Concord, N.H.; and the same year they were granted, conditionally, a tract of land large enough for a township on the banks of the Saco river.

The petition for liberty to settle at Pennacook reads as follows: —

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 7.
† Town of Newbury Records.

TO THE HONERED COURTE NOW ASSEMBLED AT BOSTON:

The humble petecyon of us whose names are underwritten, beinge inhabytant of this jurisdiction, and beinge senseable of the need of multiplyinge of towneshippes for the inlargemeant of the contrey and accommodateinge of such as want opportunity to improve themselves, have taken into consideration a place which is called Pennecooke, which by reporte is a place fit for such an one. Now the humble request of your petitioners to this honred Courte is, that we may have the grant of a tracke of land there to the quantity of twelve miles square, which, being granted, we shall give up ourselves to be at the cost and charge of vewinge it, and consider fully about it, wheather to proceed on for the settlinge of a towne or noe, and for that end shall crave the liberty of three yeares to give in our resolution; and in case that wee doe proceed, then our humble request is, that we may have the grant of our freedome from publique charge for the space of seaven yeares after the time of our resolution given into the Honerd Courte for our encouragement to settle a plantation soe furr remote as knowinge that many will be our inconvenyences (for a long time) which we must expeckt to meet with, all which desires of ours beinge ansered, your petetioners shall ever pray for the happyness of this Honred Courte, and rest your humble petitioners.

RICHARD WALDERNE	JOHN BAYLEY
VALL: HILL	JOHN CHEINEY
PETER COFFIN	NATHANIEL WEARE
his JOHN × HIRD mark	ROBARD COKER
WILLIAM FFURBUR	JOHN POORE
ROGER PLAISTEED	ROBERT ROGERS
EDWARD WOODMAN	EDWARD RICHARDSON
JOHN PIKE	WILLIAM COTTON
ABRAHAM TOPPAN	JOHN WOLCOTT
BENJA: SWETT	JOHN BOND
GEORGE LITTELL	WILLIAM TITCOMB *

May 18, 1659, a committee consisting of Thomas Danforth, Edward Johnson, and Eleazer Lusher reported in favor of granting the petitioners a plantation eight miles square, provided they report to the General Court in October, 1660, their resolution to carry on the work, "and that within two years then next ensuing there be 20 families there settled." The deputies and magistrates accepted this report, "and consented

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxii., pp. 117, 118. Richard Walderne, Vall: Hill, Peter Coffin, John Hird, William Furber, and Roger Plaisted, who signed the above petition, were from Dover, N.H.: the other petitioners were from Newbury.

thereto"; but the conditions imposed upon the petitioners were not complied with, and the grant was subsequently declared forfeited. Concord was not settled until nearly seventy years later. January 17, 1725–6, the General Court of Massachusetts, "William Dummer, Lieut Governor, consenting thereto," appointed a committee of nine to lay out a township at Pennacook "where Contocook river falls into Merrimack river." Rev. Enoch Coffin, son of Nathaniel Coffin, of Newbury, accompanied the committee as chaplain, and encamped with them at a place called "Sugar Ball plain" Friday, May 14, 1726, and on the Sunday following "performed divine service both parts of the day." House lots were laid out and surveyed, and in 1727 they were assigned to proprietors who had previously been appointed or elected by the committee. February 27, 1733–4, the plantation was incorporated "a separate and distinct township by the name of Rumford."

In 1740, the northern boundary of Massachusetts was definitely fixed and established, by the king and his council, "beginning at a point three miles north of the Merrimack river at its mouth and thence following the course of that river to a point due north of Pawtucket Falls." By this decision the town of Rumford, now Concord, fell within the limits of the province of New Hampshire.

Among those who received six acres or more in the first division of land made at Pennacook, in 1727, were the following men from Newbury: Rev. Enoch Coffin, Rev. Bezaleel Toppan (son of Rev. Christopher Toppan), Thomas Coleman, Joseph Hale, Andrew Mitchell, Henry Rolfe, and Samuel, son of Samuel, and grandson of Dr. Peter Toppan.*

A petition in regard to a new plantation on the Saco river was granted by the General Court November 12, 1659, as follows: —

In ansr to the peticon of Mr Edward Woodman & other inhabitants of Newbury, humbly craving the favor of this Court to graunt them a new plantation on Saco River westward of the bounds of Saco &c. the Court judgeth it meete to graunt the petitioners eight miles square in the place desired, provided they giue in theire resolutions, as is exprest in theire peticon, in one year ensuing this date.†

* History of Concord (Bouton), pp. 57–140.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 402.

May 31, 1660, Mr. Edward Rishworth and Robert Booth were authorized to lay out and determine the bounds of the new plantation; and the petitioners were freed from the payment of taxes for six years, "provided that they have twenty families & an able minister, such as shall be approved of by this Court, setled there in fower yeeres." *

March 12, 1664, King Charles II. issued a royal decree granting to James, Duke of York, a large tract of land now known as New Jersey. February 10, 1664–5, Philip Carteret was appointed governor of the territory; and every freeman who settled there was given one hundred and fifty acres of land, provided he brought with him six months' provision, a good musket, ten pounds of powder, "and not less than twenty pounds of bullets, twelve bullets to the pound."

Daniel Pierce, Joshua Pierce, John Pike, John Pike, jr., Thomas Blomfield, Thomas Blomfield, jr., John Blomfield, John Cromwill, Samuel Hale, Jonathan Haynes, Elisha Ilsley, Henry Jaques, Henry Jaques, jr., Stephen Kent, Stephen Kent, jr., George Little, Hugh March, Samuel Moore, Matthew Moore, John Smith, Abraham Toppan, Nathan Webster, Obadiah Ayres, Richard Worth, and others went from Newbury to New Jersey, where they laid out and settled the town of "Woodbridge," so called in honor of the Rev. John Woodbridge, assistant minister of the first church of Newbury.† Some of the persons named in the above list took an active part in the organization of the town government, and were afterwards prominent in the management of its affairs; but a few, dissatisfied with the apportionment of land and the assessment of taxes, remained there for two or three years, and then returned to Newbury.

The town of Woodbridge still retains the name it received in 1668. It is on the Perth Amboy & Woodbridge Railroad, in Middlesex County, in the State of New Jersey, about five miles south of Rahway and twenty-four miles southwest of New York City.‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part I., p. 421.

† New Jersey Colonial Documents, vol. i., p. 50; also, Early History of Perth Amboy (Whitehead), pp. 355–367.

‡ Nearly a century later a township in the Coös country on the Connecticut river was granted Capt. Jacob Bayley for services in the French war. Capt. Bayley was born in Newbury, Mass.,

OATH OF ALLEGIANCE TO KING CHARLES II.

Oliver Cromwell died September 3, 1658. His son Richard succeeded him as lord protector. In the confusion that followed the downfall of the government, the resignation of Richard Cromwell and his retirement to private life, Charles II. was proclaimed King of England May 8, 1660. He arrived in London May 29, 1660, having left the Hague six days before.

This event occasioned considerable anxiety in the colony of Massachusetts Bay; and, December 19, 1660, the General Court addressed a letter "To the high & mighty Prince Charles the Second by the grace of God, King of Great Britajne, Fraunce & Ireland, Defender of the Faith &c.," beseeching him to favor and protect the colony in its chartered rights and privileges, and also a letter "to the Lords & Commons in Parliament assembled," urging them to provide for an amicable adjustment of the differences relating to the government of the territory between the Merrimack river and Casco bay.

These letters were intended to convey to his Majesty and to Parliament assurances of loyalty and fidelity, and also to explain and apologize for some measures that it had been thought necessary to adopt for the protection and government of the colony of Massachusetts Bay. In April, 1661, when it became known that an order had been received from the king for the apprehension of Col. Edward Whalley and Col. William Goffe, two of the judges who signed the warrant for the execution of King Charles I., then supposed to be living in the neighborhood of Boston, the inhabitants of the colony were greatly alarmed.

July 19, 1726. He married Prudence Noyes October 16, 1745, and removed to Hampstead, N.H., two years later, where he organized, in 1756, a company for service in the expedition to Lake George. May 18, 1763, he obtained, by the advice and assistance of his brother-in-law, Col. Moses Little, a grant of land, now in the State of Vermont, on the westerly side of the Connecticut river, where he began the settlement of a town to which he gave the name Newbury. He was afterwards prominent in the Revolutionary war, and served as quartermaster-general in the Continental army.

Col. Moses Little, born in Newbury, May 8, 1724, was also an officer in the army during the Revolutionary war. He owned, with others, a large tract of land in New Hampshire, extending fifteen miles along the Connecticut river. In 1784, this land was surveyed, and divided between the towns of Littleton, named for him, and Dalton, named for Hon. Tristram Dalton, of Newburyport, who was also one of the original grantees.

Petitions from Newbury, Ipswich, Sudbury, Boston, and other towns were presented to the General Court, asking for a prompt compliance with the demands of the king. June 10, 1661, the General Court declared, in answer to the petitioners, that it had not been altogether negligent in providing for the enforcement of the laws against criminals, and therefore desiring the petitioners to rest satisfied with what had been done.*

The same day a special committee, that had been appointed several days before, reported, in regard to the condition of affairs in the colony and the rights and duties of freemen, that certain laws and privileges should be asserted and maintained, and also that "Wee further judge that the warrant & letter from the kings maj^ty^ for the app'hending of Col Whalley & Col Goffe, ought to be diligently & faithfully executed by the authority of this country. And also, that the Generall Court may doe safely to declare that in case (for the future) any legally obnoxious, & flying from the civil justice of the state of England, shall come ouer to these partes, they may not heere expect shelter." *

Intimations having been received from England that the public acknowledgment of the king, in the colony of Massachusetts Bay, should be no longer delayed, the General Court at a special session held August 7, 1661, ordered the proclamation to be made the next day.† August eighth, Edward Rawson, then secretary of the colony, in the presence of the governor, deputy governor, magistrates, deputies, and elders, with "ffower ffoote Companjes, one troope of horse, & masters of shipps in harbo^r^ attending," assembled in Boston, proclaimed and acknowledged submission to Charles II., "laufull King of Great Brittajne, France & Ireland & all other the territorjes & dominions thereunto belonging."

April 25, 1664, Col. Richard Niccolls, Sir Robert Carr, George Cartwright, Esq., and Samuel Maverick, Esq., were appointed by the king to visit the colonies in New England, to examine and determine all complaints, and hear appeals from all military, criminal, and civil courts. Two of

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 26. † Ibid., p. 50.

the commissioners arrived in Boston July 23, 1664, and were graciously received by the governor and his council.

The members of the General Court, however, were much disturbed by the appointment of these royal commissioners, and, October 19, 1664, voted to make an address or statement of their grievances, beginning as follows: —

To the Kings Most Excellent Majty
The humble supplication of the Gen'll Court of the Massachusetts colony in New England.

Dread Soueraigne: —

If your poore subjects, who haue remooved themselves into a remote corner of the earth to enjoy peace wth God & man, doe in this day of theire trouble prostrate themselves at your royal feete & begg your favor, wee hope it will be graciously accepted by your majestie, and that as the high place you sustejne on earth doeth number you here among the gods, so you will imitate the God of heaven in being ready to mainteyne the cause of the afflicted & the right of the poore, & to receive their crjes and addresses to that end.*

After quoting the favorable opinions expressed by his Majesty in several letters addressed to the colony of Massachusetts Bay, they beseech him to listen to their grievances and to restrain and limit the power and authority conferred upon the commissioners. They assert that the proposed changes in the administration of justice and the management of public affairs will force his subjects in New England to seek new homes elsewhere, "or sink & faint under burdens that will be to them intollerable." In conclusion they say, "at our request let our government liue, our patent liue, our magistrates liue, our lawes and libertjes liue, our religious enjoyments liue; so shall wee all haue yet further cause to say from our heart, 'Let the king liue forever:' and the blessing of them that were ready to perish shall come vpon your majesty, hauing deliuered the poore that cryed & such as had none to help them."

May 3, 1665, the commissioners presented to the General Court the letters and instructions received from the king in regard to the condition of affairs in the colony of Massachusetts Bay, and a committee was appointed to examine them

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 129.

and consider what answer should be made. Newbury was not represented at this session of the General Court, and was fined ten pounds for not sending a deputy. Although the freemen of Newbury were evidently reluctant to antagonize the views and wishes of the king as expressed in his instructions to the commissioners, and were anxious to avoid a contest that was likely to prove embarrassing, there is no evidence that they attempted to evade their political duties or responsibilities. At all events, the fine was remitted by the General Court October 16, 1666.

Meanwhile the negotiations between the commissioners and the General Court, having been conducted with considerable vigor for more than twelve months, were abruptly terminated, the commissioners left Boston for the province of New Hampshire, and soon after returned to England. April 10, 1666, Sir William Morrice, secretary of state under King Charles II., notified Richard Bellingham, governor of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, that his Majesty was displeased with the condition of affairs and had decided to recall his commissioners, and request the General Court to elect two or three suitable persons to go with Governor Bellingham and Major William Hawthorne to England, in order to explain to his Majesty why they refused to accept the amendments to the charter and the revision of the laws proposed by the commissioners.*

A special session of the General Court was held in Boston, September 11, 1666, to consider this important communication. The elders of the churches were desired to be present and give their advice in the weighty matters under discussion. A letter was prepared and ordered to be sent to his Majesty's secretary of state, criticising the conduct of the commissioners and declining to send representatives to England, having already submitted in writing their objections to the proposed amendments to their charter, "and therefore cannot expect that the ablest persons among us could be in a capacity to declare our cause more fully." †

* Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts, vol. i., Appendix xix.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 317.

At the same session of the court, petitions favoring the adoption of conciliatory measures and the repeal of all legislative acts displeasing to the king were presented from several towns in the colony.

"The humble Petition of the town of Newberry" states that the petitioners have been informed that his Majesty has lately sent to the governor and council letters expressing dissatisfaction with the result of the commissioners visit to New England, and that he has ordered the governor, with several other persons to be elected by the General Court, to proceed forthwith to England to assist in the discussion and final settlement of the differences relating to the rights and duties of freemen in the colony. In conclusion the petitioners express the hope that conciliatory counsels will prevail, and that it will not be necessary for them "to make their particular address to his majesty, and declaration to the world, to clear themselves from the least imputation of so scandalous an evil, as the appearance of disaffection or disloyalty to the person and government of their lawful prince and sovereign." This petition was signed by

Nicholas Batt	Benjamin Woodbridge	Daniel Thurston
James Browne	Nathaniel Clark	Tristram Coffin
John Atkinson	Stephen Swett	Percival Lowle
Joshua Browne	James Mirrick	Samuel Lowle
John Badger	Joseph Muzzy	John Knight, Sen
Hugh March	James Jackman	John Knight, Jun
William Chandler	Thomas Hale, Sen	Paul White
Thomas Parker	Anthony Sommerby	Abel Huse
John Woodbridge	William Thomas	Richard Kent
William Gerrish	Francis Brown	James Kent
Daniel Peirce	Anthony Short	John Kent
Richard Lowle	Abiel Sommerby	Richard Knight
Henry Short	Nicholas Noyes	Thomas Silver*

The General Court, "hauing read & taking into consideration the contents of the petitions presented from Newbery, Ipswich, Salem & Boston being for substance but one, & finding that the petic̃oners doe therein vnjustly charge, threaten & reflect vpon this court, to the dishono^{r} of the members

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., p. 168.

thereof, . . . ordered, that Captaine William Gerrish, of Newbery, Capt. John Apleton, of Ipswich, Mr Edmond Batter, of Salem, Capt Thomas Sauage, Mr Tho. Bratle Mr Habbacuck Glouer & Mr Thomas Deane, of Boston, all of them principall persons in the sajd petic̃ons, some of them persons in publicke trust, all saue one freemen of this colony & members of churches, be by the secretary warned to attend this Court in October next, to answer for the same." *

At the appointed time the petitioners appeared, and made answer to the charges brought against them. The committee to whom the subject was referred, after hearing the testimony, reported that there were unwarrantable passages and expressions in the petitions that a well-ordered government could not allow to pass unnoticed, but, inasmuch as the petitioners did not intend to transgress the laws, they should be admonished and released, except Capt. John Appleton, of Ipswich, who was censured "for saying that he hoped the Court would not be *his* judge." The deputies voted that the report of the committee be kept on file and not recorded: "consented to by the magistrates." †

The commissioners from King Charles II., in a communication to the General Court, dated May 18, 1665, complained that the provisions of the charter of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, requiring the inhabitants thereof to take the oath of allegiance to the king, were not complied with. Edward Rawson, secretary of the colony, replied the next day, "wee shall forthwith order the taking of the oath of allegiance according as the charter commands." ‡ It is evident, however, from subsequent proceedings, that the order was not strictly enforced, although some of the inhabitants of Newbury were called upon to take the oath in a modified form, as appears from the following record: —

NEWBERIE.

Joseph Coker: John Kent: Israell Webster: Job: Pilsberie, Joseph Bayly: Benjamin Lowell, Nathll Merrill: Daniell Merrill Abell: Merrill: Jno Attkinson.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 317.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cvi., pp. 174–178.
‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., pp. 200–206.

These men aboue written haue taken ye oath of ffidelitie vnto this gouerment ye 25 of february sixty eight:

before mee Robert Pike Comissr:

Jonathan: woodman: Benjamin Moss & Isaac Brown tooke ye oath of fidellity to this governt: & James Ardway tooke ye oath of a freeman of this Jurisdicon: ye 26: of ye 12th mo: 1668

before mee Robert Pike Comissr:

Henry Tuxberie & Isaac: Brown tooke ye oath of fidelity to this governt this 13: day of May 1669

before mee Robert: Pike Comissr:

Jno wells:	Pennell: Tittcom:	Richard Bartlett, jun:
Tho: wells:	John Stevens:	william Ilsly jun
Jno Swett:	Jonathan Wedgwood	Joseph Ilsley
Moses Pilsbery:	Jacob Tappin	James Ardway jun:
Tho: west:	John Ilsly	Tho: stickney
Josuah Richison:	Sam: Bartlett	

Tooke ye oath of fidelitie to ‖ ye gouermt of ‖ this Jurisdicon this 25th day of May, 69

Peter Cheny Nathll Cheny & Amos Stickny of Nubery tooke ye oath of ffidelity to this Comon wealth this 25th of ye 3d mo 69 bfore mee

Robert Pike Comissr

Jno Bayly: Benjamin Lowell Jno Bartlet jun: & John wells: all of nuberie tooke ye freemens oath ye 2d of Octobr 1669

before me Robert Pike Comissr *

Political complications in England occupied the time and attention of the king and his legal advisers for the next four or five years; and soon after the colony of Massachusetts Bay was involved in a fierce contest with the Indians, which terminated in King Philip's War.

The heirs of Capt. John Mason and Sir Ferdinando Gorges continued, however, to press their claims to the territory under the control of the colony lying beyond the Merrimack river. The open violation of the Navigation Act in the colony was severely denounced and condemned by the Privy Council, and the law officers of the crown advised the issuing a *quo warranto* in order to secure a repeal of the charter granted in 1629.

In this emergency some concessions were considered necessary; and the General Court ordered, October 2, 1678, that as

* Norfolk Registry of Deeds, book II., leaf 143.

it hath pleased his Majesty, by letter dated April 27, 1678, to notify the authorities of the colony of Massachusetts Bay in New England "to give forth orders that the oath of Allegiance as it is by law established w^th^in the Kingdome of England, be ministered and taken by all his subjects within this colony who are of years to take an oath," that the secretary of the colony be instructed to send to every magistrate, justice of the peace, and constable in every town printed copies of the oath of allegiance to be by them administered to every male inhabitant sixteen years of age and upward, the names of the inhabitants to be taken in writing, and returned to the recorders of the county courts, to be by them enrolled. Any one refusing to take the oath of allegiance was liable to a fine or imprisonment.*

A list of their names who have taken the oath of allegiance at Newbury, 1678:†—

	Aged		*Aged*
John Emery jun	51	John Ordoway	20
Jonathan Emery	27	John Bayly	65
Israell webster	35	Isaac Bayly	24
wm Bolton	48	Ephraim Plummer	‡24
Abraham merrill	41	John Emery iun.	22
Joseph wheeler	16	Tho: Halle jun	45
Wm Longfellow	27	Hen. Short	26
Jacob Topan	31	Joseph Bayly	30
John Sewall	24	mathew Petengall	30
ffrancis Browne	46	Joseph Little	25
James Smith	33	Sam. Poore sen	55
John Emery sen	80	Sam. Poore jun	25
James Ordoway	60	John Poore sen.	63
John Topan	28	Jerem. Dauis	28
Isaac Ilesley	26	Nich. Rawlins	32
Rich. Bartlett jun	30	John Dauis	30
John Bartlett jun	23	Edward Poore	23
Tho: Bartlett	25	40 James Carre	25
Joseph knight	26	Joshua Bayly	20
20 Sam. Sayer	29	Cornelius Dauis	25
Steph. Greenleafe jun:	26	cutting Noyes	29
Jam. Ordoway jun	26	Wm Ilesley jun	28

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 193.

†Original on file in the office of the clerk of courts at Salem, Quarterly Court Files, book xxx., leaf 56. Recorded in the Registry of Deeds (Ipswich series), book iv., leaf 254.

‡These figures are indistinct, and may be "26."

	Aged
Silvanus Plummer	20
Zeck. Dauis	29
Rich. Dummer jun	28
Moses Geerish	23
Joseph Poore	24
Edmund moores sen	64
Rich. woolworth	30
Nath. Brickett	29
Nathan Parker	28
Nath. Aires	22
Abeil Long	29
Shubael Long	17
Wm Worham	26
Tristram Coffin	47
Wm Chandler	62
60 John Badger	36
Christopher Bartlett jun	23
Rich: Lowle	76
Tho: Woodridge	29
Caleb Moody	41
Jonathan wheeler	20
Nathan wheeler	18
Hugh march jun	22
Ephraim Dauis	23
John Herricks	28
Joshua woodman	41
John Rolfe	18
Tho: Lowle	27
Jonathan woodman	35
Curmac Annis	40
Edmund marshall	29
Joseph Poore	17
James Burrell	21
Percivall Lowle	40
Robt Coker	72
80 Hen. Sewall	66
John Webster sen	46
John. Webster jun	22
Dan. Lunt	36
John Atkinson	44
John Halle sen	42
Wm Randall	65
Joseph Richardson	23
Ben: Lowle	37
Tho: Halle sen	74
Antho. morse	72
Joseph Coker	38
Joseph Dole	22
ffrancis willett	43
Joseph moring	22
Hen. Jaques	60
John Kelly	37
Tho: ffollinsby	41
Joseph mirick	18
John Richardson Clr	31
100 daniel Perse	40
Tho: Noyes	30
John woollcott sen	45
John woolcott jun	18
Sam: Pettingall	33
John Granger	24
Wm Noyes	25
Andrew Godfry	22
Henry Somersby	16
James Brading	16
Edward woodman jun	50
walter Taylor	55
Wm morse	64
Rich. Petingall	60
Tho: Rogers	26
Tho: Browne	72
Benajah Titcomb	25
Beniamin Coker	26
George maior	31
ffrancis Thurley	48
120 Auth. Somersby	68
Abel Hewes	74
Wm Sayer	65
Peter Godfry	48
Rich. Bartlett sen	57
John Bartlett sen	65
John Bartlett jun	39
Daniel Massiloway	33
Hugh Pike	21
Edward Richardson jun	27
Tho: Titcomb	17
Tho Silver jun	26
Nathaneel Merrill	40

	Aged
Peniel Titcomb	27
Augustine Studman	40
Joseph Ilesley	27
Richard Jaques	22
Steph : Jaques	17
John. ffirman	31
James Coffin	19
140 Increase Pillsbury	18
Archelaus Woodman	60
Peter Topan	44
Edward Richardson sen	61
Joshua Richardson	28
Ben. Richardson	18
John Swett	30
John Deeker	32
Tho : Silver sen	56
James Jackman jun	22
Richard Jackman	19
John mighill	42
Daniell merrill	34
Abel merrill	32
Joseph Downer	40
Joshua Browne	36
John knight	30
Robt Beedle	36
Rich. Browne	27
Joseph Pike	39
160 Dan. Thurston	40
Sam. Bartlett	32
Henry Poore	26
Henry Bodwell	24
Ebenezer Hills	19
Jonathan moores	32
James Dauis	20
George Hardy	17
Elisha Ilesley	30
Dan. Thurston jun	17
John Poore jun	36
Aquila chase	26
John Chase	23
Joseph Goodridge	39
Edmund moores jun	27
Dan. Cheney	43
Wm mitchell	24
John Hoeg	35
Steph. Swett	58
Benj. Goodridge	36
180 George march	32
John Steevens	30
Job Pillsbury	35
Caleb Pillsbury	24
Abel Pillsbury	26
Daniel Chase	16
Dauid Chily	28
Hen. Lucas	18
Benj. morse	37
Robt. Adams	77
Tho : Chase	24
Wm Pillsbury jun.	22
Jerem. Goodridge	42
John Kent jun.	34
John Tucker	28
Abraham Adams	37
John mitchell	28
Sam. Plummer	60
Isaac Adams	33
Jacob Adams	23

On the back of the sheet containing this list are the following names : —

	Aged
Richard Knight	77
Hugh march sen	56
John Kent sen	37
Joshua Bointon	30
John Huggins	26
Wm Damford	30
Sam. youngloue	40
Robt. Rolinson	40
Benj. Plummer	22
Joseph Plumer jun	23
Tho : Halle iun.	19
James ffreezes	37

	Aged		Aged
Joseph muzzy	50	John Thurley	19
James Jackman sen	60	Jonathan Thurley	17
Hen. Acres	26	John Noyes	33
James Noyes	21	Moses Little	21
Wm moody	17	Nath. Cheney	31
Joseph morse	40	John Glading	37
John Guile	23	Wm Pilsbury	73
George Perse	17	Wm Ilesley sen.	70
John Halle jun.	17	Steph Greenleaf sen.	50
Daniel moody	17	Benj. Rolfe	40
Robt Long	58	Tho. Thurley	47
John Smith	31	Peter Cheney	*39

INDIANS AND INDIAN DEEDS.

The territory granted the first settlers of Newbury in 1635 by the General Court was uninhabited, except by a few Indians at the Falls, on the Quascacunquen river, and a somewhat larger number that came from the woods and hills of the north during the summer months to hunt and fish at the mouth of the Merrimack.

The laws, customs, and habits of these migratory and sometimes hostile Indians, the bounds and limits of their camping grounds, and the location of their villages are described with considerable minuteness by Rev. William Hubbard, pastor of the church at Ipswich, in his History of New England, written previous to 1682. He says: "Betwixt Kenebecke and Connecticut were observed to be about twenty societies, or companies of these savages when the English first came upon this coast." † One of these societies, or tribes, called the Tarratines, occupied the territory round about the Kennebec river. There were other Indian settlements at Casco bay and on the Saco and Piscataqua rivers. Inland, from twenty to fifty miles from the mouth of the Merrimack, the Wamoneset, Pentucket, Amoskeag, and Pennacook Indians lived, sometimes in peace, but frequently at war with each other. "At the falls of Newbury there was a noted plantation of them,

* "A list of those that have taken the oath of Alegance & fidelity of Newbury before Mr John Woodbridge, Commissioner, in Dec & Feb. 1677," will be found in the Registry of Deeds (Ipswich series), book IV., leaf 189.

† Massachusetts Historical Collections (Second series), vol. v., p. 31.

by reason of the plenty of fish that almost at all seasons of the year used to be found there, both in winter and summer." * At Agawam, also, now Ipswich, was another noted settlement, "to which belonged those of Newbury falls that lies in the midway, betwixt Merrimack and Agawam." *

When the inhabitants of Newbury decided to remove from the Parker to the Merrimack river, in 1645, a house lot was assigned to John Indian.† Soon after that date "Great Tom, Indian," conveyed to the selectmen thirty acres of planting land, "and all his right, title and interest" in the common and undivided land and woods within the limits of the town of Newbury, on the following terms and conditions: —

Witness by these presents that I, Great Tom, Indian, for and in consideration of three ponnds in hand paid by and received of the townsmen of Newbury, have given, granted, covenanted, and fully bargained, and for and by these presents do give, grant, convey, confirme, bargain, and sell all that my thirty acres of planting land as it is fenced in one entire fence in Newbury, lying neere Indian hill, with all my right, title, and interest in all the woods, commons, and lands that I have in the township of Newbury to have and to hold, all the said premises Respectively to bee to the proper use and behoof to the said Inhabitants of the Said Towne of Newbury, their heirs, executors, administrators, and assignes for ever, and I, the said Great Tom, Indian, doe hereby engage and bind myself, mine heirs, executors, and assignes unto Mr. William Gerish, Abraham Toppan, and Anthony Somerby, being Townsmen in the behalf of Said Towne, to warrantize the said Bargained premises to the said Towne and for ever defend.

In witness whereof I the said Great Tom, Indian, have sett my hand and seale April 16, 1650.

Witness the mark × of Great Tom, Indian.
JOHN BARTLET,
WILLIAM TITCOMB.

This is a true coppy of a deed, as is abovesayd, taken from the originall. Attest ANTHONY SOMERBY,
Clerk of Newbury.‡

The title to land owned by Henry Sewall, in the vicinity of Newbury Falls, was in dispute for more than twenty years. In June, 1661, the General Court ordered: —

* Massachusetts Historical Collections (Second series), vol. v., p. 32.
† See *ante*, p. 89.
‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

Whereas some Indians, as wee are informed pretend an interest in some part of the lands of Henry Sewall, wch lyeth at Newbury Falls, sometime Mr John Spencers, wch lands were purchased of the sajd Spencer, & also haue binn confirmed by the toune of Newbury vnto the sajd Henry Sewall, it is therefore ordered, by this Court, that if it shall appeare vnto the sajd Henry Sewall that the sajd Indians, or any other, haue any legall right vnto any part of the sajd land, the sajd Henry Sewall shall heereby haue liberty to purchase the same of the sajd Indians.*

Subsequently, the grandson of "Old Will" brought a suit to recover land in the possession of Henry Sewall. June 23, 1679, the depositions of Moses Bradstreet, Alice Homes, and John Todd, favoring the claim of the plaintiff, were taken and sworn to before Daniel Denison, of Ipswich.† Further consideration of the case was probably postponed until the next session of the court. Meanwhile some concessions were made; and, eventually, a settlement satisfactory to all persons interested was agreed upon.

June 14, 1681, Job Indian, grandson, Kate Indian, and Mary Indian, daughters, of Old Will Indian, of Newbury Falls, in consideration of six pounds, thirteen shillings, and fourpence paid to each of the above-named Indians. Job, Kate, and Mary, conveyed to Henry Sewall, of Newbury, a tract of land "of which a part is known by the name of the Indian field in Newbury, aforesaid, bounded as followeth; on ye northerly side with the great brooke which runeth along the side of the greate field, on the westerly side with a line runn by said Seawell from ye head of sd farme unto Newbury river at or neere the upper fales & on ye Southerly side with ye said river, as alsoe all the right, title and interest they, ye sd Job, Kate & Mary Indians have or ought to have to land at or neere Indian hill, or anywhere else within the township of Newbury abovesaid, as they are heires to old Will Indian abovesd, or otherwaise." ‡

Soon after the charter of the colony of Massachusetts Bay was vacated in 1684, the inhabitants of Newbury and other towns in Essex county were greatly disturbed by rumors that

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 21.
† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 363.
‡ Essex Deeds, vol. vi., p. 23 (134).

they were to be deprived of land granted to them by the General Court. In order to strengthen their title to the property, and prevent its seizure by the officers of the crown, the towns of Newbury, Bradford, Boxford, Gloucester, and Beverly, bought of the grandchildren of Masconomo, "the sagamore of Agawam," all the land within their territorial limits.

The deed, dated January 10, 1700–1, to the selectmen of the town of Newbury, is substantially as follows: Samuel English, "grandson and heir of Masconomet, the Sagamore of Agawam, an Indian," in consideration of the sum of ten pounds in current money of New England, paid by Cutting Noyes, Joseph Knight, Richard Dole, John Worth, and Joseph Pike, for and in behalf of said town, conveyed to the above-named selectmen "a tract of land containing ten thousand acres more or less" lying within and including the whole of the township of Newbury, "bounded easterly by y^e^ sea northerly & north westerly by Merrimack river, westerly by Bradford Line & Southerly by Rowley Line, together with all y^e^ wood, timber, lands, grounds, soyles, waters, streams, Rivers, Ponds, fishings, huntings, stones, mines, minerals, heriditaments and all the appurtances belonging to y^e^ same and to every part thereof within the said Township." * In acknowledgment of this deed of conveyance

> Samuel English y^e^ surviving heir of y^e^ Masconomet y^e^ Sagamore of Agawam appeared before us, y^e^ subscribers, y^e^ Tenth day of January in the Twelfth yeare of his maj^ties^ Reign, Anno Domini 1700–1, and acknowledged the above written Instrument to be his act & deed, before us
>
> DANIEL PIERCE, THOMAS NOYES } *Justices of y^e^ Peace.*

The same day Joseph Foster made oath "that he did know Sarah y^e^ Daughter of Maschanominet the Sagamore of Agawam, & father that Samuel English was reputed to be her eldest sonne now surviving." †

Moses Parker, also, made oath the same day "That he very well knoweth that Samuel English is y^e^ reputed son of Sarah the Daughter of y^e^ Sagamore Maschanominet & eldest son now surviving." †

* Essex Deeds, vol. xiv., p. 67. † Ibid., p. 68.

WITCHCRAFT IN NEWBURY.

"December 3, 1679, Caleb Powell being complained of for suspicion of working with the Devill to the molesting of William Morse and his family" was brought before John Woodbridge, commissioner or special magistrate at Newbury, for examination; and, after the accusation and testimony had been read, the case was adjourned until the Monday following.

The second hearing was held December 8, 1679, before the commissioners and William Morse was ordered to bring the case to the attention of the county court to be held at Ipswich in the month of March following. Caleb Powell was committed to the care of the constable "till he find security of twenty pounds for the answering of the sayd complaint." *

The testimony of William Morse and his brother Anthony Morse, of John Badger, Sarah Hale, Joseph Mirick, and Mary Tucker, will be found on file in the court-house at Salem.† Notwithstanding the strange and extraordinary character of the evidence submitted, it was not considered sufficient to convict Caleb Powell of an offence against the laws of God and man; and he was therefore discharged.

Upon hearing the complaint brought to this court against Caleb Powell for suspicion of working by the devill to the molesting of the family of William Morse of Newbury, though this court cannot find any evident ground of proceeding farther against the sayd Powell, yett we determine that he hath given such ground of suspicion of his so dealing that we cannot so aquit him but that he justly deserves to beare his owne shame and the costs of prosecution of the complaint.

It is referred to Mr. Woodbridge to hear and determine the charges.‡

The mysterious disturbances in and about the house of William Morse evidently continued while Caleb Powell was a prisoner and after he was set at liberty. Vague and contradictory reports in regard to the frivolous speech and malicious conduct of Elizabeth Morse, wife of William Morse, were cir-

* Court Files (Salem), vol. xxxii., pp. 130–133, inclusive.

† The reader will also find on pages 131 to 133, inclusive, of Coffin's History of Newbury, the substance of the testimony given by William Morse; on page 123, the testimony of John Badger and Anthony Morse; and on page 125, the testimony of Sarah Hale, Joseph Mirick, and Mary Tucker.

‡ Court Files (Salem), vol. xxxii., p. 132.

culated, and served to fasten suspicion upon her as one instigated by an evil spirit, and ultimately led to her indictment and arrest. She was brought to the Court of Assistants, sitting in Boston, for trial, and was adjudged guilty. The record reads as follows: —

at A Court of Adjourment held at Boston 20th May, 1680:

The Grand Jury presenting Elizabeth morse ye wife of Wm morse, Sr ‖she‖ was indicted by the name of Elizabeth morse for that she not hauing the feare of God before hir eyes being Instigated by the divil & having had familiarity with the divil contrary to the peace of our Souaigne Lord the King his crowne & dignity ye lawes of God & of this Jurisdiction: After the prisonr was at ye barre and pleaded not Guilty & put hirself on God & ye country for triall ye evidences produced were read & committed to ye Jury.

The Jury brought in their virdict & they found Elizabeth Morse, the prisoner at the barre, Guilty according to Indictmt. The Governr on 27th May after ye lecture pronounced ye sentence: Elizabeth Morse you are to goe from hence to the place from whence you came & thence to the place of execution, there to be hanged by the neck till you be dead, And the Lord have mercy on your Soul.

This Court was adjournd diem per diem & on 1st June 1680 The Gouvrnr & magists voted Reprieving of Elizabeth Morse, condemnd, till the next session of the Court in October.*

as Attest EWD RAWSON, *Secretary.**

Subsequently, an effort was made to still farther delay proceedings, and secure a second reprieval for the wife of William Morse. November 3, 1680, the following order was passed by the House of Deputies, but failed to receive the approval of the magistrates: —

The deputies on perusal of the acts of the honorable Court of Assistants relating to the woman condemned for witchcraft doe not understand why execution of the sentence given against her by said court is not executed and that her second repreevall seems to us to be beyond what the law will allow and doe therefore judge meete to declare ourselves against it with reference to the concurrence of our honored magistrates hereto. WM TORREY *Clerk.*

Not consented to by the magistrates.

EDWARD RAWSON *Secretary.*†

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxxv., p. 18; Court of Assistants (manuscript records), p. 11; Court of Assistants (printed records), p. 159; Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 126.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxxv., leaf 18.

When the General Court assembled in May, 1681, a petition, dated "Newbury May 14, 1681," signed by William Morse, was presented to the deputies and magistrates, asking for a review of the evidence given in the Court of Assistants, implicating Elizabeth Morse in the charges brought against her.*

At the same session William Morse also presented the following petition: —

To the honored governor, deputy governor, magistrates and deputies now assembled in Court May the eighteenth 1681.

The most humble petition and request of William Morse in behalfe of his wif (now a condemned prisoner) to this honored court is that they would be pleased so far to hearken to the cry of your poor prisoner, who am a condemned person, upon the charge of witchcraft and for a witch, to which charge your poor prisoner have pleaded not guilty, and by the mercy of God, and the goodness of the honored governor, I am reprieved and brought to this honored court, at the foot of which tribunal I now stand humbly praying your justis in hearing of my case and to determine therein as the Lord shall direct. I do not understand law, nor do I know how to lay my case before you as I ought for want of which I humbly beg of your honors that my request may not be rejected, but may find acceptance with you it being no more but your sentence upon my triall whether I shall live or dy, to which I shall humbly submit unto the Lord and you,

WILLIAM MORSE in behalf
of his wife Elizabeth Morse.†

The deputies, in General Court assembled, voted to grant the prayer of the petitioner; but the magistrates declined to give their consent.

The deputies judge meet to grant the petitioner a hearing the next sixth day and that warrants goe forth to all persons concerned from this Court then to appear in order to her farther triall, our honored magistrates hereto consenting. WM TORREY *Clerk.*

May 24, 1681 not consented to by the magistrates
EDWARD RAWSON, *Secretary.*†

No farther action was taken by the General Court, and a few days later the Court of Assistants issued the following decree: —

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxxv., leaf 18. See also Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 127–129.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxxv., leaf 19; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 130.

Att a Court of Assistants held at Boston 1st June 1681

present
Symon Bradstreete Esq^{r} Gō
Tho Danforth Esq^{r} dep^{t} Gou
Dani: Gookin Esq^{r} maj^{r} Gen
Dani Dennison Esq^{r}
Jn^{o} Pynchon
Joseph Dudley
Nath Saltonstall
Tho Sauage
Jn^{o} Hull
James Russell
Peter Tilton

In Ans^{r} to the peticon of W^{m} morse in behalf of his wife Elizabeth morse & of hirs also. The Court Judgeth it meet to Reprieve the sajd Elisabeth morse the Condemned prisoner to the end of the next session in October and in the meantime order hir dismission from the prison in Boston to Returne home wth hir husband to Newbery Prouided she goe not aboue sixteen Rods from hir Oune house ‖ & land ‖ at any time except to the meeting house in Newbery nor remoove from the place Appointed hir by the minister & selectmen to sitt in whilst there

past E. R. S.*

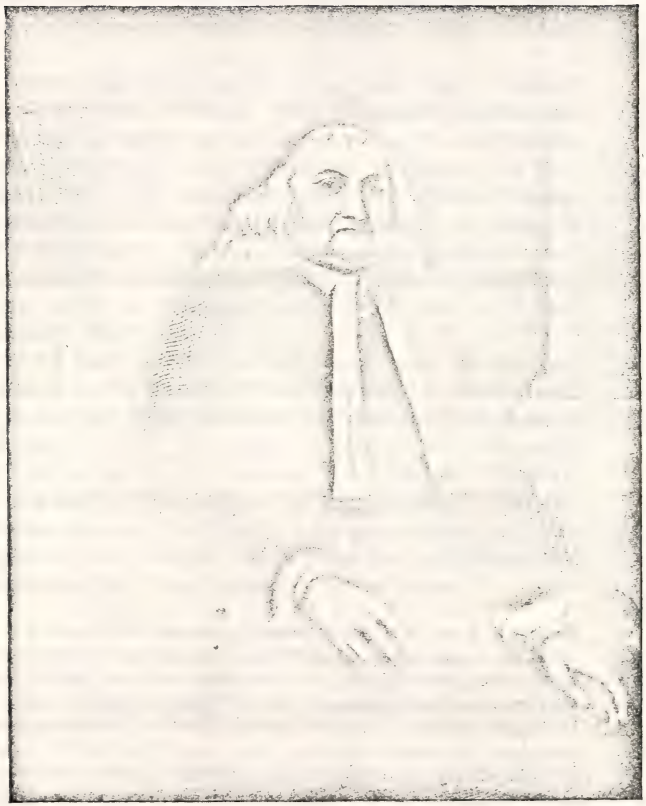
Although Elizabeth Morse was not pardoned, but only reprieved until the end of the October session of the General Court in 1681, she returned to Newbury, where she remained until her death, in the house owned and occupied by her husband, on the southeasterly side of what is now known as Market square, Newburyport.†

William Morse died November 29, 1683. His wife was living at that time, and was appointed one of the executors of his will. She made oath January 8, 1683–4, to the inventory of his estate. The date of her death is unknown, but at her decease the old homestead became the property of her daughter Abigail, wife of John Hendricks. June 19, 1696, Moses Pingry and wife Abigail (formerly Abigail Hendricks) sold the house and land to Daniel Davison.

SAMUEL SEWALL.

The worthy and upright judge who sat on the bench at the witchcraft trials in Salem in 1692 was closely identified with the early history of Newbury, and manifested, during a long and eventful life, a deep and abiding interest in the welfare and prosperity of the town.

* Records of the Court of Assistants, p. 133; Ibid. (printed copy), p. 189.
† "Ould Newbury," pp. 627–629.



His father, Henry Sewall, came to Newbury in 1635. In 1646 or soon after, Henry Sewall and his wife Jane (Dummer) Sewall returned to England, where they remained for several years. In 1659, Henry Sewall came again to Newbury, and two years later his wife and children followed him.

Samuel, the eldest son of Henry and Jane (Dummer) Sewall, was born at Bishop Stoke, Hampshire, England, and came with his mother to Newbury in 1661. He was fitted for college by Rev. Thomas Parker, and graduated from Harvard in 1671. He married, February 25, 1675–6, Hannah, daughter and sole heir of John Hull, goldsmith and master of the mint at Boston. He was a member of the governor's council, under the colonial and provincial charters, for nearly forty years, and for ten years chief-justice of the province of Massachusetts Bay.*

In his diary, which is an interesting and valuable contribution to the history of New England, he recorded with great care and fidelity the events and incidents that came to his notice, and did not neglect to mention the visits made and the advice given to relatives and friends in Newbury. In a book that he published in 1697, entitled "The New Heaven upon the New Earth," † he gave expression to his hopes and fears in words that Whittier has incorporated and immortalized in "The Prophecy of Samuel Sewall."

It is remarkable that Mr. [Thomas] Parker, who was a successfull schoolmaster at Newbury in Berkshire in the happy days of Dr. [William] Twisse; was much about this time [1634] preaching and proving at Ipswich, in Essex, [Mass.] That the Passengers came over upon good Grounds, and that God would multiply them as He did the Children of Israel. His text was Exod: 1, 7. [And the Children of Israel were fruitful and increased abundantly, and multiplied and waxed exceeding mighty: and the land was filled with them.] As Mr. Nicholas Noyes who was an Auditor, and is yet living, lately informed me, Mr. Parker was at this time, 1634, principally concerned in beginning Newbury

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 245–259.

† "*Phænomena quædam Apocalyptica ad Aspectum Novi Orbis Configurata.* Or, some few Lines towards a description of the New Heaven as It makes to those who stand upon the New Earth." First edition (Boston), 1697, pp. 59, 60. Second edition, 1727. (Both editions in Boston Public Library.)

Phænomena quædam

APOCALYPTICA

Ad Aſpectum NOVI ORBIS configurata.

Or, ſome few Lines towards a deſcription of the New

HEAVEN

As It makes to thoſe who ſtand upon the

NEW EARTH

By *Samuel Sewall* ſometime Fellow of *Harvard* Colledge at *Cambridge* in *New-England.*

Pſalm, 45. 10, *Forget alſo thy own people, and thy fathers houſe.*
Iſai 11 14. *But they ſhall fly upon the ſhoulders of the Philiſtins toward the weſt.*
Act. 1. 6 --- 8 *Lord, wilt thou at this time reſtore again the kingdom to Iſrael?* --- *ye ſhall be witneſſes unto me unto the uttermoſt parts of the earth;* haſta lo ultimo de la tierra. *Spaniſh Bible.*
Luke, 15 24. *For this My Son was dead, and is alive again; he was loſt, and is found.* V 32. *For this thy Brother &c.*

Ille non deerit Promiſſis; reſtituet Regnum *Iſraeli*; ſed ſuo modo, loco, ac tempore. *Bullinger* Nequis iſta a me dicta, aut adducta accipiat, quaſi contendendi, aut adverſandi ſtudio; ac non diſcendi potius, ac conferendi gratia *Fox* Mede Apoc p. 371. *ad Philalam Sextam.*

MASSACHUSET;
BOSTON, Printed by *Bartholomew Green, and John Allen.*
And are to be ſold by *Richard Wilkins*, 1697

where the Learned & Ingenious Mr Benjamin Woodbridge, Dr. Twisse's successor had part of his Education under his Uncle Parker. Mary Brown (now Godfrey) the First born of Newbury is yet alive,* and is become the Mother and Grandmother of many children. And so many have been born after her in the Town that they make three or four large Assemblies wherein God is solemnly worshipped every Sabbath,

As long as Plum Island shall faithfully keep the Commanded Post; Notwithstanding the hectoring words and hard Blows of the proud and boisterous Ocean; As long as any Salmon, or Sturgeon shall swim in the streams of the Merrimack; or any Perch or Pickeril in Crane Pond; As long as the Sea Fowl shall know the Time of their Coming, and not neglect seasonably to visit the Places of their Acquaintance; As long as any Cattel shall be fed with the Grass growing in the meadows, which do humbly bow themselves before Turkie Hill; As long as any Sheep shall walk upon Old Town Hills, and shall from thence pleasantly look down upon the River Parker, and the fruitful Marishes lying beneath; As long as any free and harmless Doves shall find a White Oak or other Tree within the Township to perch, or feed, or build a careless Nest upon; and shall voluntarily present themselves to perform the office of Gleaners after Barley-Harvest; As long as Nature shall not grow old and dote; but shall constantly remember to give the rows of Indian Corn their education by Pairs; So long shall Christians be born there; and being first made meet, shall from thence be Translated to be made partakers of the Inheritance of the Saints in Light. Now, seeing the Inhabitants of Newbury, and of New England, upon the due Observance of their Tenure, may expect that their Rich and gracious LORD will continue and confirm them in the Possession of these invaluable Privileges; *Let us have grace whereby we may serve God acceptably with Reverence and godly Fear. For our God is a consuming Fire.* Hebrews 12: 28, 29.

* In 1697. She died April 14, 1716.

CHAPTER IV.

1685–1765.

In 1679, New Hampshire was created a royal province, with John Cutts, Esq., of Portsmouth, as its first president. In 1680, Robert Mason, grandson of Capt. John Mason, came over from England to look after his estates. He claimed, under the grant made to his grandfather before the settlement of Massachusetts, all the land from Naumkeag (Salem) to the Merrimack river, and proceeded to give leases and demand rents for the occupation of the same, under a threat of seizure and sale.

February 16, 1681–2, the inhabitants of Gloucester and other places adjacent addressed a petition "To the Kings most excellent Majesty," stating that for more than fifty years they and their predecessors had owned and occupied the land now claimed by Mr. Robert Mason, and had never, until now, been molested or disturbed in the possession of the same, and humbly imploring his Majesty to interpose his royal authority and protect his loyal and obedient subjects in the maintenance of their legal rights. The Newbury men who signed this petition were Caleb Moody, Daniel Pearce, Tristram Coffyn, Nicho: Noyce, Joseph Pike, Richard Dumer, Henry Sewall, Jno. Hale, and Jno. Woodbridge.*

At a meeting held at Whitehall July 20, 1683, the Privy Council of the king decided to issue a *quo warranto* against "the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay," and ordered that "Mr. Edward Randolph be sent to New England with the notification of the said *quo warranto*." June 21, 1684, the Court of Chancery, to which the business had been transferred, made a decree vacating the charter.† Counsel for the colony moved for an arrest of proceedings on the

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., pp. 334–336.
† Palfrey's History of New England, vol. iii., p. 390.

ground that time had not been allowed for procuring a power of attorney between the issuing of the writ of *scire facias* and the day appointed for its return; but the court ordered, October 23, 1684, final judgment to be entered, and the charter annulled.*

Charles II. died February 6, 1685. In December, 1686, Sir Edmund Andros became governor of all New England; and Robert Mason was a member of his council.

Perplexed with doubt and anxiety, the inhabitants of Newbury, anxious to retain possession of the land that then, according to English law, reverted to the crown, evidently endeavored to establish and maintain friendly relations with the new government.

Robert Mason on his way from Boston to Portsmouth often stopped in Newbury for consultation and conference with some of its most prominent citizens, and occasionally exerted his influence with the governor to secure appointments for his friends in various positions of honor and trust, as the following letter indicates: —

GREAT ISLAND (Portsmouth), Aug. 13, 1687.

To his excellency Edmund Andros,

Sir,

Your excellency may please to remember I proposed some persons as fitting to serve his majesty in the town of Newbury both in civil and military affairs. In my return to this place I had discourse with several persons, the most considerable of that town, that by want of justices of the peace, nothing hath been done at the meeting of those inhabitants for settling the rates and other concerns of the publick. Mr. Woodbridge, one of the justices is very ancient and crazy and seldom goes abroad. Mr. Dummers, the other justice, lives six miles from the place and therefore very unfit for that service for the town of Newbury, besides his other qualities in not being of the loyal party as he ought to be. I doe therefore intreat of your excellency, that in the commission of the peace my two friends, Daniel Pierce and Nathaniel Clarke may be put, which I assure myself will be for his majestys service and to your excellencys satisfaction.

There are no military commissions sent to that place and therefore I doe intreat your excellencys favor that commissions be sent these following persons:

* Palfrey's History of New England, vol. iii., p. 394.

Daniel Davison to be Capt of Horse for the Town of Newbury and Rowley, Stephen Greenlif, Junior, Lieut., George March, Cornet.

Thomas Noice Capt of ffoot
Stephen Greenlif, Sen. Lieut } first company
James Noice, Ensign

Nathaniel Clarke, Capt of ffoot
John March, Lieut } second company
Moses Gerrish, Ensign

I shall desire your excellency that Mr. Davison may have his commission first for raising the troops there being many young men that will list themselves under him if not before listed by the Captain's ffoot. He is very well beloved and I presume will have the completest troops in the country.

I shall be extreem glad to heare of my good ladys safe arrival, which so soon as I shall understand, I will make a speedy journey to Boston to kiss her hand. I came last night to this place. I hope all things will go easy so that I may have no occasion of using the former severities of the law against my tenants. I had rather see them rich than poor. I humbly kiss your excellencys hands and am

Your excellencys servant,

ROBERT MASON.*

In 1688, Robert Mason died suddenly at Kingston, on the Hudson river, while on a journey from New York to Albany in company with Sir Edmund Andros.

After his decease his two sons, finding it difficult to establish their claim to the disputed territory, and impossible to collect from the inhabitants anything by the way of rent, sold to Samuel Allen, a merchant of London, "All that Province or tract of land in New England in America commonly called New Hampshire, lying between the Rivers of Namekeke and Piscattaqua, and the ground & soil therein, and also the South half of ye Isles of Shoals."†

The charter of the province of Massachusetts Bay, granted by King William and Queen Mary October 7, 1691, provided "that nothing herein conteyned shall extend or be understood or taken to impeach or prejudice any right title. Interest or demand which Samuel Allen of London, merchant, claiming from and under John Mason, Esq., deceased or any other person or persons, hath or have, or claimeth to have,

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., pp. 20 and 21.
† Memoir of Capt. John Mason, published by the Prince Society, 1887, p. 51.

hold or enjoy of, in to or out of any part or parts of the premises scituate within the limitts above menconed." *

The dividing line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire remained unsettled for many years. August 10, 1737, the legislatures of the two provinces met by adjournment, one at Salisbury, Mass., and the other at Hampton Falls, N.H. A cavalcade of mounted horsemen escorted Governor Belcher and the members of the Massachusetts legislature from Boston to Newbury, another company accompanied them to the dividing line, and three additional companies led the procession to Hampton Falls. The occasion was one of considerable excitement, and the pomp and parade of the governor's escort was humorously described and mildly ridiculed in the following lines: —

"Dear Paddy, you ne'er did behold such a sight
As yesterday morning was seen before night.
You in all your born days saw, nor I didn't neither,
So many fine horses and men ride together.
At the head, the lower house trotted two in a row,
Then all the higher house pranc'd after the low;
Then the Governor's coach gallop'd on like the wind,
And the last that came foremost were troopers behind;
But I fear it means no good, to your neck nor mine;
For they say 'tis to fix a right place for the line." †

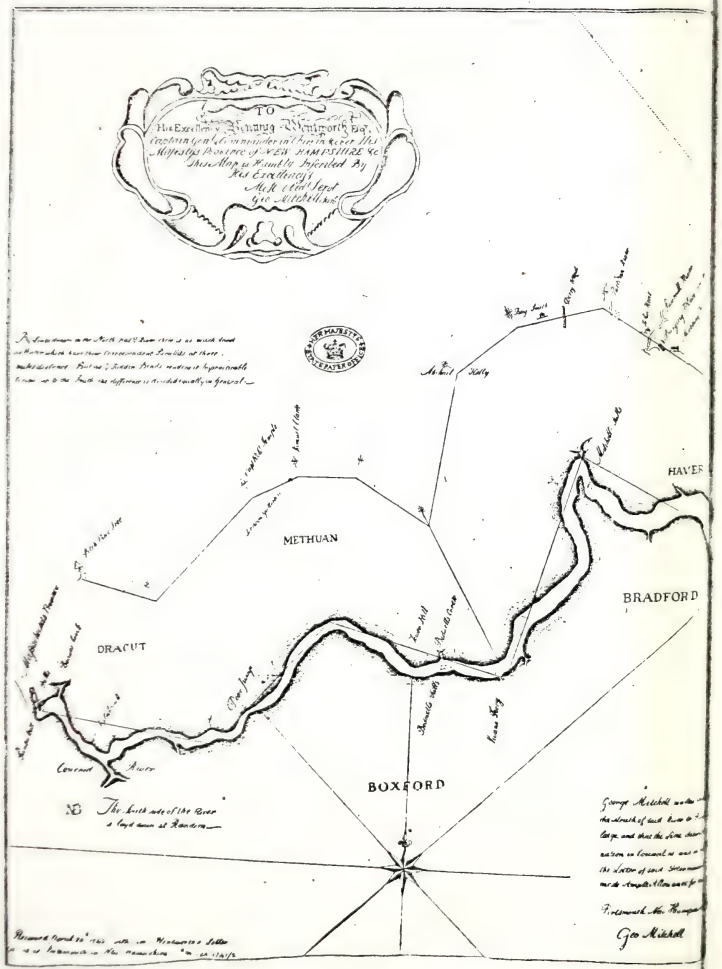
The members of the two provincial legislatures were unable to agree upon the details of the plan submitted to them for the settlement of the questions in dispute, and adjourned, after several weeks of deliberation and discussion, without accomplishing the object for which they assembled.

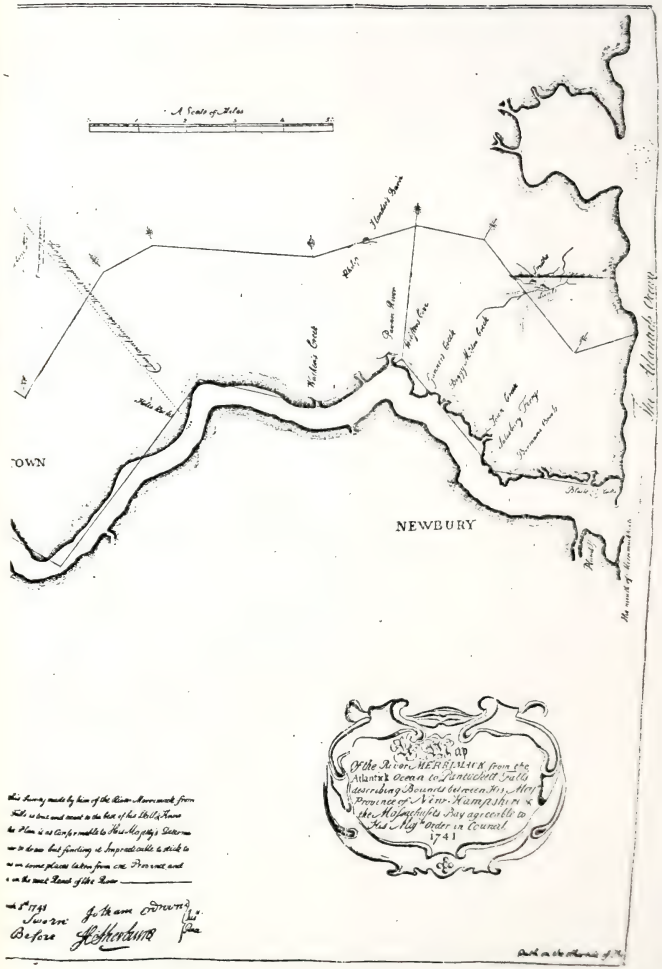
In 1740, the dividing line was fixed and established by the "King and the Lords of the Privy Council," but some questions of importance in regard to the laying out and surveying of the same were left undecided until the close of the nineteenth century.

In 1785, the heirs of Samuel Allen and the descendants of Robert Mason were contending in the courts of Massachusetts

* Province Laws, vol. i., p. 10.
† Belknap's History of New Hampshire, vol. ii., p. 139.


NEWBURY
DRAC
Covenant
NB
A Map
of the River HERBSMACK from the
Atlantick Ocean to Pantuckett Falls
describing Bounds between His Majesty's
Province of New-Hampshire &
the Massachusetts Bay agreeable to
His Majesty's Order in Council
1741
&c
The Atlantick Ocean


METHUAN
DRACUT
BRADFORD
BOXFORD
HAVER
Merrimack River
Spicket River
Cobbets Hill
Haggets Pond
Holt Hill
Bare Hill
Round Hill
Rocky Hill
Mitchell Hill
Mitchell Holly
Mitchell Mill
Mitchell Creek
Mitchell Brook
Mitchell Meadow
Mitchell Pond
Mitchell Swamp
Mitchell Plain
Mitchell Ridge
Mitchell Valley
Mitchell Stream
Mitchell Bridge
Mitchell Road
Mitchell Lane
Mitchell Farm
Mitchell Orchard
Mitchell Garden
Mitchell Barn
Mitchell House
Mitchell Well
Mitchell Fence
Mitchell Gate
Mitchell Path
Mitchell Trail
Mitchell Ford
Mitchell Ferry
Mitchell Landing
Mitchell Wharf
Mitchell Dock
Mitchell Slip
Mitchell Basin
Mitchell Harbour
Mitchell Bay
Mitchell Point
Mitchell Island
Mitchell Shoal
Mitchell Reef
Mitchell Channel
Mitchell Anchorage
Mitchell Moorings
Mitchell Buoy
Mitchell Beacon
Mitchell Light
Mitchell Lighthouse
Mitchell Keeper
Mitchell Family
Mitchell Graveyard
Mitchell Church
Mitchell Parsonage
Mitchell Schoolhouse
Mitchell Tavern
Mitchell Inn
Mitchell Store
Mitchell Post Office
Mitchell Blacksmith
Mitchell Carpenter
Mitchell Cooper
Mitchell Tanner
Mitchell Weaver
Mitchell Miller
Mitchell Baker
Mitchell Butcher
Mitchell Grocer
Mitchell Doctor
Mitchell Lawyer
Mitchell Judge
Mitchell Sheriff
Mitchell Constable
Mitchell Jailer
Mitchell Prisoner
Mitchell Gallows
Mitchell Pillory
Mitchell Stocks
Mitchell Whipping Post
Mitchell Ducking Stool
Mitchell Scold's Bridle
Mitchell Witch
Mitchell Ghost
Mitchell Devil
Mitchell Hell
Mitchell Heaven
Mitchell Purgatory
Mitchell Limbo
Mitchell Nowhere
Mitchell Everywhere
Mitchell Somewhere
Mitchell Anywhere
Mitchell Nothing
Mitchell Something
Mitchell Everything
Mitchell Anything
Mitchell Nobody
Mitchell Somebody
Mitchell Everybody
Mitchell Anybody
Mitchell Alone
Mitchell Together
Mitchell Apart
Mitchell Near
Mitchell Far
Mitchell Here
Mitchell There
Mitchell Now
Mitchell Then
Mitchell Always
Mitchell Never
Mitchell Sometimes
Mitchell Often
Mitchell Rarely
Mitchell Usually
Mitchell Occasionally
Mitchell Frequently
Mitchell Constantly
Mitchell Eternally
Mitchell Forever
Mitchell Amen


NEWBURY
Merrimack River
Parker River
Turkey Hill
Indian Hill
Plum Island
Newbury Neck
Newbury Meadows
Newbury Common
Newbury Marsh
Newbury Creek
Newbury Brook
Newbury Pond
Newbury Swamp
Newbury Bridge
Newbury Road
Newbury Lane
Newbury Path
Newbury Trail
Newbury Ford
Newbury Ferry
Newbury Landing
Newbury Wharf
Newbury Dock
Newbury Slip
Newbury Basin
Newbury Harbour
Newbury Bay
Newbury Point
Newbury Island
Newbury Shoal
Newbury Reef
Newbury Channel
Newbury Anchorage
Newbury Moorings
Newbury Buoy
Newbury Beacon
Newbury Light
Newbury Lighthouse
Newbury Keeper
Newbury Family
Newbury Graveyard
Newbury Church
Newbury Parsonage
Newbury Schoolhouse
Newbury Tavern
Newbury Inn
Newbury Store
Newbury Post Office
Newbury Blacksmith
Newbury Carpenter
Newbury Cooper
Newbury Tanner
Newbury Weaver
Newbury Miller
Newbury Baker
Newbury Butcher
Newbury Grocer
Newbury Doctor
Newbury Lawyer
Newbury Judge
Newbury Sheriff
Newbury Constable
Newbury Jailer
Newbury Prisoner
Newbury Gallows
Newbury Pillory
Newbury Stocks
Newbury Whipping Post
Newbury Ducking Stool
Newbury Scold's Bridle
Newbury Witch
Newbury Ghost
Newbury Devil
Newbury Hell
Newbury Heaven
Newbury Purgatory
Newbury Limbo
Newbury Nowhere
Newbury Everywhere
Newbury Somewhere
Newbury Anywhere
Newbury Nothing
Newbury Something
Newbury Everything
Newbury Anything
Newbury Nobody
Newbury Somebody
Newbury Everybody
Newbury Anybody
Newbury Alone
Newbury Together
Newbury Apart
Newbury Near
Newbury Far
Newbury Here
Newbury There
Newbury Now
Newbury Then
Newbury Always
Newbury Never
Newbury Sometimes
Newbury Often
Newbury Rarely
Newbury Usually
Newbury Occasionally
Newbury Frequently
Newbury Constantly
Newbury Eternally
Newbury Forever
Newbury Amen

and New Hampshire for the land granted Capt. John Mason in 1622.*

In 1899, the marks and bounds between the two states were adjusted and completed under the supervision of a board of commissioners, of which the Hon. George W. Cate, of Amesbury, was a member.

January 5, 1686–7, the selectmen of Newbury presented the following petition: —

To Sr Edmond Andrewes, Knight Governor of his majesties possessions and Dominions in New England in America.

The Humble Petition of the Inhabitants of the Towne of Newbury in the County of Essex in New England sheweth:

Whereas our Sovereign Lord King James the Second of his most gracious favor hath been pleased to Send your Excelency to be Governour over us in these his majesties Territories and Dominions in America, and hath nominated sundry prticular Gentlemen of this Country to be your excelencys Honourable Councill for the right management of affairs for the ease and good of his subjects here, and there not being one of the sd Councill that doth inhabite neerer unto us than twenty miles, and this Towne wth the rest of the Townes Cittuate uppon ye River Merrimack (being none of the inferior parts of this Country) are found to be at greater charg than other places for want of such officers as are very needfull & yt other Townes are priveledged with.

Wee therefore humbly crave that your excellency would be pleased to take it into your consideration to appoint & impower some man or men to take the acknowledgment of deeds and give oaths and a clark to issue forth all such warrants and writts as are usuall and needfull for County Courts, wch will be of a great ease to us of that burthen which of late wee have sustained and your petitioners shall be forever bound to pray for, and are

Your excelencys most Humble servants

Henry Short	Selectmen of ye
John Badger	Towne of New-
Benj. Morse	bury in ye name
Cutting Noyes	& by vote of ye
Joseph Little	sd Towne.†

What action was taken by the governor and council in answer to this petition is uncertain. Probably a commissioner

* Memoir of Capt. John Mason, p. 130.

† Town of Newbury Records, vol. ii. (1680–92), p. 57.

was appointed to attend to the acknowledgment of deeds, the issuing of writs, and the punishment of crime.

Revenue was needed for the support and maintenance of the colonial government; and, January 20, 1686–7, the following notice was sent: —

To the Selectmen and Constables of Newbury.

His Excelency ye Govrnour and Councill having by yr order of the 12th of this instant January directed the Treasurer to give forth his warrants prsuant unto an order of councill of ye 4th of ye above said January for a single Country Rate of one penny in ye pound to his Majesty for support of ye Government to be assessed levied & collected according to former usage.

You are therefore Required in his Majesties name to assess and levie upon ye severall inhabitants of your Towne equally & proportionally according to ye severall Rates and according to former usuage and custom for ye raising & levying of publick charges, ye full sum of one penny in the pound making a prticular account & list thereof under ye severall hands of you ye selectmen, certifying ye sum totall into ye Treasurer and ye said list deliver unto ye constables of your Towne who are alike required to levie and collect ye same forthwith making distress where need shall bee (according to former mañr) taking up severall sorts of Grain at such prices as were lately set forth by ye president and Councill viz: Wheet at 5s, Rye & pease at 4s, Indian Corn at 2s 9d & oats at 2s per bushell & in case any pay money in lieu of country pay they are to be abated one third of all which ye Constables are required to make good Account & speedy payment to ye Treasurer, or his order. See yt all sorts of Graine Be merchantable & yt you receive no leane cattell nor horses. Hereof faill not as you will answer ye contrary at your perill.

Dated in Boston 20th day of January An. Do. 1686–7 in ye second yeare of his Majestys Reigne JNO USHER *Treasurer.**

On the twenty-fifth of February following, the selectmen levied a tax upon all the inhabitants of Newbury, which was entered in full upon the records of the town, and a return thereof made to the treasurer of the colony as follows: —

Worshipful sr, according to your warrant bearing date January 20, 1686–7 we have made a rate according to former usage and custome ye sum of which £40 & 10s (heads being rated by us at 20d A head as formerly) wch rate we have now delivered to ye Constables of our Towne in

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. ii. (1680–92), p. 64.

two p^ts viz: to Joseph Ilsley constable y^e sum of twenty three pounds & ten shillings & to Moses pillsbury constable ye sum of Seaventeen pounds both w^ch we have ordered to be forthwith gathered and delivered to yourself according to your warrant.

y^r humble servants
y^e selectmen of Newbury,
HENRY SHORT
JOHN BADGER
BENJ MORS
CUTTING NOYES
JOSEPH LITTLE *

At a meeting held in Boston June 1, 1687, "His Excellency Sir Edmund Andros, Knt," being present with the following councillors,

Joseph Dudley	Jno Usher
W^m Stoughton	Jno Hinks
Robert Mason	Richard Arnold
Waite Winthrop	Edward Randolph,
Rich^d Wharton	

it was "ordered that all publique Records in the late Government now annexed under this Dominion be brought to this towne and put into y^e custody of y^e Secr^y or his Deputy." †

June 22, 1687, his Excellency "ordered that the records of Essex county be delivered into the hands of stephen Sewall who is commissioned to be clerk of the Inferiour Courts in the County of Essex." ‡

At this time John Usher was treasurer and receiver-general of New England. He was ordered to send out warrants for the assessment and collection of taxes to meet the annual expenses of the government.

Many inhabitants of the colony refused to pay these taxes, and the treasurer was compelled to purchase arms and ammunition for the expedition against the Penobscot Indians with his private funds or by the use of his personal credit. After the Revolution of 1689 he was sued for the recovery of a large sum of money due on several unsettled accounts. The case was decided against him. He was imprisoned, and

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. ii. (1680–3), pp. 62, 63.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., leaf 128. ‡ Ibid., vol. cxxvi., leaf 364.

his property seized and sold. Among the papers that remained in his possession until his death was the following tax list of the inhabitants of Newbury in 1688, fourteen years of age and upwards : *—

TAXES UNDER GOV. ANDROS.

Town Rate of Newbury, 1688.

An Invoyes of August, '88. Newbury.	Heads.	Houses.	Plow Lands.	Meadow.	Past^{r}.	Horses.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Oxen.	Cows.	3 yr old.	2 y old.	1 yr old.	Sheep.	Hoggs.
Jn^{o} Woodbridg, Esq^{r}	0	4	30	50	40	2	0	0	6	8	3	6	6	34	
Capt Richd Dumer, Esq^{r}	1	4	12	40	40	2	0	1	2	8	0	4	6	30	2
Capt Dll Peirce	1	4	40	50	100	5	1	1	8	14	3	7	7	60	12
M^{r} Richd Kent	0	2	6	20	30	2	0	0	2	2	0	0	0	20	3
M^{r} Richd Dole	1	4	15	30	40	4	1	0	4	12	4	10	10	40	6
Henry Short	1	2	12	20	30	3	0	1	4	5	3	2	1	30	5
M^{r} Perc Lowle	2	1	5	10	0	1	0	0	4	4	1	1	1	10	2
M^{rs} Lowle & Thomas	1	1	5	10	0	0	0	0	4	4	1	1	1	10	2
Dec. Noyes	1	4	16	30	4	2	0	0	4	9	5	3	3	33	6
Ensign Clark	3	4	14	16	10	2	0	1	4	5	0	0	0	30	3
Doct^{r} Toppan	3	4	14	12	1	2	0	0	3	4	6	2	4	50	3
M^{r} Longfellow	1	2	6	10	0	1	0	0	0	1	2	1	1	10	2
Serj Richardson	0	2	12	16	3	2	0	0	2	3	1	0	0	10	1
Serj Moodey	3	4	18	8	2	3	0	0	4	6	0	1	3	30	4
Serj Coker	3	2	12	12	0	3	0	0	4	4	2	0	0	30	1
Serj Badger	2	3	10	18	4	2	0	0	4	8	0	2	2	25	4
Serj Noyes	1	2	10	12	8	1	0	0	2	5	2	2	1	20	4
Serj Hale	3	2	7	0	0	2	0	0	4	4	2	2	0	16	5
Corp^{l} Edmund & Jonath^{n} Moers	1	2	12	20	20	2	1	0	2	3	4	1	0	18	1
M^{r} Lunt	1	1	7	10	0	2	0	0	2	4	2	0	2	6	4
M^{r} W^{m} Moodey	1	2	18	15	0	2	0	1	4	5	3	0	5	20	5
M^{r} Moses Gerrish	1	3	10	10	6	2	0	0	2	6	0	0	0	15	1
M^{r} W^{m} Noyes	1	2	4	0	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	12	0
Richd Jackman	1	1	3	1	2	1	0	0	2	2	0	1	3	6	0
Abrā Addams	1	2	12	30	20	2	0	0	4	8	4	3	4	30	3
Edmund Moers, Jun^{r}	1	1	2	12	16	1	0	0	0	3	0	0	2	6	3
Joseph Goodridg	1	1	8	15	10	2	1	0	4	4	3	2	4	16	0
Dunkan Stuard	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	2	7	3	1	0	14	1
Charls Stuard	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
W^{m} Chandler	1	1	4	0	0	2	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	8	1
Jn^{o} Bartlet, Sen^{r}	2	2	10	12	0	2	0	0	4	4	0	0	0	30	3
Joshua Richdson	1	0	6	10	0	1	0	0	0	4	1	0	1	10	1
W^{m} Danford	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Joshua Boynton	1	0	10	20	3	1	0	0	1	2	1	2	2	3	1
John Kent Sen^{r}	1	2	14	30	80	3	0	0	4	12	0	3	4	35	4
Georg & Moses Little	1	2	12	34	8	2	0	0	6	5	4	4	4	40	6
James Jackman Sen^{r} & Jun^{r}	1	2	6	9	2	2	0	0	4	4	3	2	2	15	5
Joseph Downer	1	1	6	8	3	2	0	0	2	4	2	1	1	20	3
Benj Coker	1	1	6	0	0	0	0	1	0	2	0	0	0	8	0
M^{r} Jos Woodbridg	1	0	0	0	0	2	1	0	0	3	0	0	0	0	0
Nath^{n} Wheeler	1	1	3	5	10	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	2
Benj Wheeler	1	1	3	5	10	1	0	0	0	0	0	3	0	0	2

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, April, 1878, pp. 156–164, inclusive.

An Invoyes of August, '88. Newbury.	Heads.	Houses.	Plow Lands.	Meadow.	Pastr.	Horses.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Oxen.	Cows.	3 yr old.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Sheep.	Hoggs.
Thomas Titcomb	1	0	3	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Richd Petengall	0	0	4	6	0	0	0	0	2	3	0	0	1	6	2
Samll Petengall	0	0	4	6	0	1	0	0	2	3	1	0	0	10	1
Mattw Petengall	0	2	1	0	0	1	0	0	2	4	0	0	0	13	3
Cornt March	1	4	14	8	12	6	0	0	4	9	4	3	3	35	2
Tho: Thurlo	2	4	16	16	20	3	0	0	0	4	4	2	1	10	1
ffranc Thurlo	2	1	18	10	18	0	0	0	2	2	0	1	1	10	2
John Thurlo	1	0	2	0	0	1	0	0	2	1	0	0	0	0	0
Stephn Jaques	2	4	18	20	10	2	0	0	4	6	2	2	2	50	6
Thomas Hale Senr	1	2	7	20	5	2	0	0	2	4	3	2	2	15	0
Thomas Hale Junr	1	2	7	20	5	1	0	0	2	3	2	2	1	10	2
Richd Dole Junr	1	2	6	10	0	1	0	0	2	2	0	1	1	10	2
Widw Poer	0	1	4	6	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
John Poer	1	3	6	8	12	1	0	0	1	5	4	4	2	20	4
Henry Poer	1	1	2	6	0	1	0	0	2	4	0	0	0	10	0
Joseph Poer Senr	1	1	2	4	0	1	0	0	0	4	0	0	0	10	2
Danill Thirston	2	3	12	20	6	2	0	0	2	5	2	2	0	10	0
Jos: Plumer Senr	2	2	14	24	10	1	0	0	2	4	3	3	0	20	2
Samll Plumer	1	2	7	15	6	1	0	0	2	4	1	1	3	12	2
Ephram Plumer	1	1	3	10	6	1	0	1	2	3	0	2	1	12	3
James Browne	2	1	6	12	0	2	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	15	2
Widw Knight	1	1	8	18	8	2	0	0	4	3	0	2	3	12	3
John Knight	1	2	8	12	6	1	0	0	2	3	0	2	1	12	3
Joseph Knight	1	2	6	12	4	3	0	1	5	7	1	2	6	12	3
Benj Rolfe	4	3	26	22	20	3	0	0	4	4	1	4	2	30	5
John Noyes	2	1	5	12	0	1	0	0	2	4	2	0	1	15	6
ffrances Willet	2	1	1	0	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0
Nicho Rawlince	0	0	2	1	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	5
Samll Hills	2	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	6	1
Jno Hendrick	1	1	4	10	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	1	0	4
Mr Tucker	1	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	1
James Carr	1	1	6	10	0	1	0	0	2	2	0	0	0	5	0
Joseph Mayo	1	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
William Worum	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Benj Person	2	1	6	0	0	1	0	0	2	3	1	0	0	6	2
Joseph Moring	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	1	0	10	0
Robt Mingo	1	1	0	4	4	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	2
Timoth Noyes	1	1	4	0	0	1	0	0	2	4	2	0	0	10	5
Jonath Clark	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
Joshua Mors	1	2	11	16	0	1	0	0	4	5	0	2	2	16	3
John Kelly	3	2	14	20	7	4	0	0	3	5	3	0	3	12	4
Jonathn Emery	1	1	6	6	0	0	0	0	2	3		1	0	6	0
Jno Atkin Senr	2	4	6	6	0	1	0	0	2	4		0	0	16	2
Jno Webster Jur	1	1	2	4	0	1	0	0	0	2		1	0	10	2
Elisha Ilsley	0	1	6	10	0	2	0	0	0	3		1	0	20	3
Isaack Ilsley	1	1	3	5	0	1	0	0	2	2		0	0	4	2
Peter Cheny Senr	4	1	2	6	0	1	0	0	0	2		0	0	0	1
Danll Cheny (Constable)	2	2	10	20	14	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Joseph Pike	2	1	8	18	6	2	0	0	4	4		3	4	20	2
Jno Wicomb	2	1	8	6	0	2	0	1	2	4		2	0	0	4
George White	0	0	0	10	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Jno prson Senr Jur	0	0	0	12	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Jno Moodey	1	0	6	6	0	1	0	0	0	1		0	0	0	0
Phillip fflood	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	2		0	0	0	0
Wm Molton	1	2	0	0	0	1	0	1	0	2		0	0	6	0

An Invoyes of August, '88. Newbury.	Heads.	Houses.	Plow Lands.	Meadow.	Pastr.	Horses.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Oxen.	Cows.	3 yr old.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Sheep.	Hoggs.
Collen ffrazer	1	0	2	6	6	1	0	0	0	5		0	2	0	0
Antho. Mors	1	2	3	0	2	0	0	0	0	1		1	1	12	0
Jn° Hale Jur	2	1	6	10	4	2	0	0	2	3		2	1	0	1
Joseph plumer Junr	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	2	4		2	0	12	2
Peter Cheny Jur	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
George hardee	1	1	6	0	0	0	0	0	2	4		0	0	6	1
Thomas Green	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
James Stuart	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Ben Goodridg Jur	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Hugh Mathews	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1		0	0	0	0
Silvanus Plumer	1	1	7	15	6	2	1	0	2	3		2	1	12	3
Saml Greenleaf	1	0	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	1		0	0	0	0
James March	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Nath Clark Jur	2	2	6	4	0	1	0	0	2	2		0	0	12	1
Edward Ordway	1	2	6	6	0	2	0	0	4	2		2	0	15	1
Jn° March	2	3	2	0	0	2	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	1
Abell Huse Jur	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Wm Huse	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Danll Peirce Jur	1	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	2	1		0	0	6	0
Jn° Stickney	1	2	6	3	0	1	0	0	0	2		0	0	2	1
Joseph Wheeler	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Mr L. Hart	3	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Steph Emery	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0		0	0	0	0
Capt Tho: Noyes	1	4	16	30	3	4	0	0	5	7	0	0	0	38	7
Mr H. Sewall	0	4	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	2
Levt Woodman	0	1	10	16	2	1	0	0	4	4	2	0	2	10	3
Levt Greenlef Senr	3	2	10	8	10	4	0	0	6	6	0	0	3	25	3
Levt Greenlef Jur	3	4	1	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	4
Ensign Toppan	2	2	8	10	5	1	0	0	4	5	0	2	2	25	0
Serj Browne	2	2	12	4	8	1	0	0	2	8	0	0	4	20	1
Serj Emery	1	2	9	4	8	3	0	0	2	6	2	1	4	20	5
Serj Webster	2	2	6	10	0	2	0	0	2	7	1	0	0	20	2
Serj Little	2	2	12	12	20	2	0	1	6	12	5	4	5	30	5
Mr Woodman & Jonathan	1	2	8	16	4	0	0	0	2	4	0	0	2	15	0
Mr Jn° Sewall	0	2	6	8	6	1	0	0	4	6	1	0	2	20	4
Decn Long	2	1	11	15	3	1	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	10	1
Decn Coffin	3	4	5	8	3	2	0	0	4	5	2	1	3	30	2
Dr Dole	1	4	2	0	4	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	1
Mrs White	0	4	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	1	0	1
Corpll Smith	2	2	14	16	0	1	0	0	4	3	1	0	0	20	2
Jn° & Joseph Bayley	1	2	24		0	2	0	0	4	9	3	2	0	30	4
Henry Somerby	2	2	12	20	24	2	0	0	4	6	2	2	1	30	2
Isaac Bayley	1	2	15	6	0	1	0	0	4	6	0	1	3	20	3
Richd Bartlet Senr	0	2	7	4	1	1	0	0	0	3	0	0	2	0	1
Saml Bartlet	1	1	4	2	10	2	0	0	0	3	1	2	0	10	2
Richd Bartlet Jur	2	2	2	0	6	2	0	0	0	5	0	1	0	10	2
Mr H. March Senr	0	1	2	1	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
Abram Merrill	2	2	12	4	0	2	0	0	2	5	0	2	0	20	4
Daniel Merrill	2	2	12	0	0	2	0	0	2	5	4	0	4	30	6
Abell Merrill	1	1	5	0	0	1	0	0	0	5	2	2	2	10	4
Jn° Merrill	1	1	5	3	0	1	0	0	2	1	0	0	0	8	0
Penull Titcomb	2	2	9	20	0	2	0	0	2	4	1	1	2	20	2
Wm Titcomb	1	1	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Caleb Richdson	2	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	2	1	0	0	1	1
Joseph Richdson	1	1	6	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	6	0

An Invoyes of August, '88. Newbury.	Heads.	Houses.	Plow Lands.	Meadow.	Past.	Horses.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Oxen.	Cows.	3 yr old.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Sheep.	Hoggs.
Penll Titcomb	1	4	1	8	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	1	1	10	0
Jno Kent Junr	3	1	12	6	12	1	0	0	4	5	0	0	1	16	0
James Ordway	2	2	9	10	0	2	0	1	4	4	0	1	2	30	2
John Ordway	3	3	5	0	0	1	0	0	2	2	2	0	2	30	1
Peter Marshall	2	3	5	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	7
Jno Badger Junr	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Jno Kingsbury	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Joseph Rowleson	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Mr Wm Nisbitt	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
John Browne	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
John Davis	1	1	1	0	0	1	0	0	4	2	2	0	2	10	1
Zach Davis	1	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	1
Ephrm Davis	1	2	2	0	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	1	0	0	0
Jeremiah Davis	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
Cornis Davis	1	1	3	0	0	1	0	0	2	4	0	0	0	7	4
Edwrd Woodman	0	1	4	0	6	1	0	0	0	4	0	1	1	15	1
Samll Poer	2	1	8	0	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	0	1
Joseph Poer Junr	1	1	8	0	12	1	0	0	2	3	2	0	2	20	4
Edwrd Poer	1	1	2	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	6	0
Aquilla Chace	1	1	10	0	10	1	0	0	2	4	0	1	1	15	2
Danll Mussilloway	1	1	4	0	0	1	0	0	4	4	0	0	2	16	3
Benj Lowle	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	8	1
Charls Anis	3	1	5	0	0	3	0	0	0	5	2	2	0	20	3
Hugh March Junr	3	1	9	0	0	1	0	0	2	2	0	0	0	0	1
John Swett	1	1	12	12	4	0	2	0	2	4	1	0	2	12	3
Abiell Long	1	1	6	8	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	4	1
Widw Rebe Browne	1	1	6	0	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	10	2
Jno Browne	1	1	2	0	0	1	0	0	2	2	0	0	1	0	2
Peter Godfrey	0	1	12	4	12	0	0	0	0	3	0	1	2	6	1
Richd Browne	3	2	17	18	10	3	0	0	4	5	2	2	0	12	1
Joshua Browne (Constable)															
Henry Lunt	2	1	8	12	6	1	0	0	2	3	0	0	0	10	1
Wm Bolton	2	0	6	0	0	2	0	0	1	5	0	0	0	8	3
Wm ffaning	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	0
Tho: Rodgers	1	0	6	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	3	0	7	1
Jno Mitchill	1	1	6	4	0	1	0	0	2	1	0	0	0	3	1
Tho Chace	1	1	8	1	0	1	0	0	0	3	0	2	1	8	3
Tho: Holinsbee	1	0	2	0	0	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
Abell Huse	1	0	8	10	4	2	0	0	2	4	0	0	0	10	2
Moses Chace	1	1	2	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	1	0	1	7	0
Hugh Pike	1	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	0
Wm Muffit	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Jno Emery Junr	1	1	10	6	20	2	0	0	2	5	0	3	1	6	3
Wm Sawyer	0	2	12	12	0	1	0	0	4	4	0	2	2	9	3
Steph. Sawyer	1	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	3	0	0	0	7	1
Jno Sawyer	1	1	5	0	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	0	1	10	2
Samuell Sawyer	1	1	8	5	4	2	0	0	2	5	0	0	3	10	2
Jno Chace	1	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	0	0
Benj Mors	2	2	10	5	0	1	0	0	2	3	1	1	2	12	2
Zach Ayers	1	1	5	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	2	3	0
Tho: Bartlet	1	1	2	0	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	1
Jno Greenleaf	2	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	0	1
Jno Worth	1	1	6	0	0	1	0	0	2	2	0	1	2	8	1
Abell Pilsbury	1	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Job Pilsbury	0	1	10	4	10	2	0	0	2	3	1	3	0	12	3

An Invoyes of August, '88. Newbury.	Heads.	Houses.	Plow Lands.	Meadow.	Past.	Horses.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Oxen.	Cows.	3 yr old.	2 yr old.	1 yr old.	Sheep.	Hoggs.
Wm Pilsbury	1	1	4	0	0	0	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	8	1
David Kily	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
James Coffin	2	2	0	0	0	0	0	1	0	2	0	0	0	0	1
Joseph Ilsley	1	2	8	12	6	1	0	0	2	4	2	3	2	20	3
Tobi Coleman	1	0	4	6	0	1	0	0	2	3	0	2	0	0	4
Jonath Thurlo	1	1	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	8	0
Richd Thurlo	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
—— Ayres						2	1	0	0	7	2	1	0	3	1
Samll Ayres	1	1	12	40	5	3	0	0	4	5	1	4	0	16	7
John Craw	1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
Henry Toltwood	1	0	0	0	0	1	0	0	4	0	0	0	0	0	0
Henry Dole	2	2	0	0	0	1	0	0	0	2	0	0	0	5	3
Total	269														

By virtue of a warrant from Jno Usher Esqr Receivr Genll of his Majes Revenues wthin his Territory and Dominion in Newe England bearing date July 14, in ye fourth year of his Majes Reigne Annoq Dom' 1688. We ye subscribed Comissioner & Selectmen of Newbury being mett together this 30 of August 1688 have made a list of the male prsons of our Towne. from foreteen years old & upwards & a true estimation of all Reall & prsonall estate, according to ye act of Councill according as is contained in these five sheets & ye sum is Sixty pounds two Shillings & sixpence.

Thomas Noyes, Com

{Indorsed.}

Newberry Rate
£60 2 6

D. Davison
D. Peirce
Nathll Clarke
Jacob Toppan
} Selectmen for the Towne of Newbury.

Daniel Cheny
Joshua Browne
} Constab.

Newberry Rates

(The rate was written on six sheets. The second sheet begins with the name of Rich'd Petengall, the third with that of Jonath'n Emery, the fourth with that of Capt. Tho. Noyes, the fifth with that of John Davis, and the sixth with that of Benj. Mors.)

PROVISIONAL GOVERNMENT.

When it became known that King James II. had been compelled to leave England, and that William, Prince of Orange, had entered London in triumph, the inhabitants of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, irritated and exasperated by the arbitrary laws and illegal taxes to which they had been subjected under Sir Edmund Andros, determined to submit no longer to his despotic rule. April 18, 1689, they demanded the surrender of the fort on Castle island in Boston harbor, seized and imprisoned Sir Edmund Andros, and in the month of July following sent him to England by order of King William III.

A committee of safety, composed of some of the most

prominent citizens of Boston, was appointed to correspond with the authorities of other towns in the colony in regard to the organization of a temporary government.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Newbury, held May 6, 1689, Capt. Thomas Noyes and Lieut. Stephen Greenleaf, sr., were chosen to consult with the Committee of Safety in Boston, "and consider with them what may be best for the conservation of the peace of the country." * Plans for a provisional government, with all the powers and privileges needed for such an emergency, were matured, and submitted to the freemen of the colony for approval.

May 20, 1689, the inhabitants of Newbury voted that "we freely now give our consent to the freemen of this Towne to make choyce of the Gov^r, Dept. Gov^r, and the Assistants chosen and sworn in the year 1686 to be our Lawfull authority, and desire our Representatives which we make choyce of to attend this business this weeke or so long as they necessiarily may be detained in settling this matter and that the ffreemen choose and send down their deputys as formerly." *

At a meeting held June 3, 1689, Capt. Thomas Noyes and Lieut. Stephen Greenleaf, sr., were again chosen to represent the freemen of Newbury in Boston in compliance with an order received from the Committee of Safety, dated May 30, 1689.

June 21, 1689, "by order of the Governm^t & Committee of Safety dated June 14, 1689," a meeting was held for the election of town officers in Newbury. Richard Dummer was chosen moderator, Moses Little and Benjamin Morse constables.

Moses Gerrish, Joseph Pike, Abraham Adams, Joseph Knight, and John Emery, selectmen.

John Noyes, Richard Brown, Daniel Merrill, and John Badger, way wardens. It was also "voted to allow the selectmen only twenty shillings a piece for this years service."

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town held July 1, 1689,

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., p. 101.

. . . ffor the settling of our millitia for the prsent exegences it was voted that our desire is that all our milletery officers that were in comission upon May 12, 1686 do take ye care and conduct of us in peace and war, as they in their discresion shall see meete untill we shall have time and opportunity for a farther choyce.*

It was also voted yt the selectmen shall forthwth provide eight bushels of wheat & get it amediately made into biskit to be disposed of according to ye discression of the Captains to such souldiers as shall go out against ye Indians or for ye use of the Towne otherwise, if yr be not occasion for ye end aforesd.*

Also we desire & empower ye sd Committee of militia to appoynt so many houses to be fortified among us as they shall see cause & to proportion so many familys to each fortification according to theyr discression.*

The new charter establishing the province of Massachusetts Bay was, after considerable delay, granted by the king in September, 1691; and Sir William Phips was appointed royal governor. He arrived in Boston May 14, 1692; and a few days later the new government was inaugurated with an imposing civil and military parade. Writs were issued for an election of deputies to the General Court to be held on the eighth day of June following. Capt. Daniel Pierce and Capt. Thomas Noyes were chosen to represent Newbury in the first legislative assembly convened under the new charter.

DIVISION OF THE UPPER COMMONS.

As early as May 21, 1679, a committee, consisting of Mr. John Woodbridge, Mr. Richard Dumer, jr., Henry Jaques, Tristram Coffin, John Emery, jr., Francis Brown, John Baily, Robert Long, Richard Bartlett, James Ordway, Tho. Hale, jr., and Capt. Daniel Peirce, was appointed to devise, if possible, a way or plan for the division among the freeholders of the "upper commons," or the "upper woods" as they were sometimes called, from Artichoke river to the Bradford line.

In consequence, however, of some dissatisfaction among the inhabitants, who were not freeholders, and therefore not directly benefited by the proposed distribution, no definite plan was adopted until several years later. At a legal meet-

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii.

ing of the freemen and freeholders, held January 16, 1683–4, it was voted "that six thousand acres of the upper common shall be lotted out, namely, one thousand acres to the non-freeholders, and soldiers, and five thousand acres to the freeholders, to every freeholder alike, with an addition to some few men that have deserved more, and this shall not be a precedent to the future in the ordering or dividing of any other part of the common." *

Further proceedings were delayed until the freemen and freeholders could agree upon the size of the lots and the number of persons to whom one or more of these lots should be assigned.

May 5, 1686, a committee consisting of John Woodbridge, Esq., Capt. Richard Dumer, Capt. Daniel Peirce, Capt. Thomas Noyes, Lieut. [Tristram] Coffin, Deacon [Cutting] Noyes, Deacon [Robert] Long, Ensign [Nathaniel] Clarke, Mr. Richard Bartlet, Lieut. [Stephen] Greenleaf, Mr. Richard Dole, sr., Sergt. [Caleb] Moody, James Ordway, sr., Sergt. John Emery, jr., Joseph Pike, George March, and Henry Short, was chosen "to agree upon a meete way of dividing the commons and bring in they^r result and conclusion to the towne." *

The committee reported October 20, 1686; and the town voted "that the upper commons be divided in the following manner; namely, the six thousand acres, one-half of them in quantity and quality be divided among the freeholders, to every freeholder a like share, and the other half of said commons be divided among all such inhabitants of this towne, and freeholders as have paid rates two years last past, proportionable to what each man paid by rate to the ministers rate in the year 1685." *

October twenty-first, a committee was appointed to lay out the land. At a town meeting held November twenty-sixth the lots were drawn, and December second the lot-layers were ordered to give the freeholders possession of the lots "in the name of ye town."

On the first page of the Proprietors' Book, volume second,

* Town of Newbury Records.



A FREEHOLD LOT IN "THE UPPER WOODS."

the bounds and dimensions of these lots, with the names of the freeholders to whom they were assigned, are recorded, and also the following statement: —

Whereas the freeholders & inhabitants of the Towne of Newbury did by a vote of theyrs dated October 20, 1686 pass a vote y^t^ the upper comons be divided that is the six thousand acres, the one half to ye freeholders, to every freeholder a like share as in ye s^d^ vote may appeer more at large And whereas ye Town at a Legal meeting October 21, 1686 did then apoint and choose Capt Danll pearce, Lieu^t^ Greenleaf, Lieu^t^ Coffin, Ensign Clark, Joseph Pike, and Serjent John Emery & Henry Short to be a committee to laye out ye above s^d^ six thousand Acres to ye freeholders and inhabitants of Newbury according to the rule above mentioned

The freehold lotts being laid out by ye s^d^ Committee, and ye freeholders meeting Nov. 26, 1686 they did then draw ye lotts y^t^ is the freehold lotts as is hereafter expressed.

And at a legall meeting of the freeholders Dec. 2, 1686 and of the whole Towne it was voted y^t^ ye two lott layers viz. Lieu^t^ Coffin & Henry Short should lay out to ye freeholders and give them possession in the name of y^e^ Towne of y^r^ freehold lotts according as they were drawne which is done and Bounded as followeth together with ye high wayes which were appointed by the Committee the second of Dec. 1686

The first range of lotts for the freeholders begining at Serj John Emerys ffarm * and so running up Merrimack river unto Mr. Gerrish his farme.†

One hundred and six lots were recorded as laid out by the committee appointed December 2, 1686; but the record was declared to be imperfect, and it was made void at a town meeting held September 26, 1687. On that day the inhabitants of the town appointed Tristram Coffin, Joseph Pike, John Emery, and Capt. Thomas Noyes to make a new list of the lots, giving their bounds and limits and the names of the freeholders by whom they were drawn. The same committee was chosen January 27, 1687–8, at a meeting of the freeholders; but, Capt. Noyes declining to serve, Richard Dole was elected in his place.

The committee reported in detail March 2, 1687–8, carefully describing each lot as follows: —

* At Artichoke river.

† Mr. John Gerrish's farm was at or near the dividing line between the town of Newbury and Bradford.

The first lot fig^r^ (1) being in estimation thirty rods broad at Bradford rode & twenty nine rods broad at the end next the River be it more or less, Laid out to the originall right of Samuel Scullards freehold drawn or claimed by ensign Nathaniel Clark Bounded by Serj Emerys land easterly, Bradford Rode southerly, by the Second lott westerly, by the highway of four rods broad next Merrimack River northerly.

The Second Lott fig^r^ (2) being in estimation eighteen rods broad at Bradford rode & at y^e^ river and twenty five rods broad be it more or less Laid out to the original right of Thomas Colemans freehold drawn or claimed by Serj ffrancis Browne bounded by the first lott easterly, Bradford Rode southerly, by the third lott westerly, & by the high way of four rods broad next Merrimack River northerly.

One hundred and eleven lots, with one additional to Peter Cheney "for the Mill freehold," were recorded, and also the statement of the committee made December 2, 1686, and printed on the preceding page, to which a clause was added laying out "a highway or Rode thru' our s^d^ land to Bradford line, begining at Artichoak River and so continuing to Bradford line," four rods wide.*

DIVISION OF THE LOWER COMMONS.

The committee appointed, May 5, 1686, to agree upon a plan for dividing the common land belonging to the freeholders of Newbury, recommended, October 20, 1686, that eleven hundred acres of the lower commons be divided into five general pastures, and the rest of the commons into wood lots, according to the rule adopted in the division of the upper commons.

October twenty-first, the freeholders voted to allow the wood lots to remain undivided "for feeding, burning, and carting," and December 13, 1686, Capt. Thomas Noyes, Thomas Hale, sr., Ensign [] Toppan, Joseph Ilsley, and Abraham Merrill were appointed a committee to lay out the five pastures.†

January 13, 1701–2, the freeholders voted to divide, "according to former rule, eighteen hundred acres of the lower

* Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. ii., pp. 22–40, inclusive.

† Ibid., vol. i., p. 17.

commons, reserving pasturage for four cows for the ministry in the east end of the towne, three for the ministry in the west end, three for the free school, and the herbage of twenty cows for the benefit of the towns poor." *

January 21, 1701–2, a committee was appointed "to stint as to herbage" all the common land remaining undivided, and also to apportion among the freeholders and inhabitants, according to the rule previously adopted, all the wood and timber standing on the said land. The committee, "consisting of John Pike, Jacob Toppin, Aquila Chace, Stephen Jaques, Henry Somerby, John Ordway, Henry Short, and Thomas Hale," completed their work December 12, 1702.†

June 22, 1708, the herbage on the wood lots and on other land lying in common was again divided among the freeholders and inhabitants of the town in proportion to the tax that each man paid for the support of the ministry in 1685.

July 6, 1708, a committee appointed for that purpose reported in favor of dividing the wood lots into two general pastures, and the other common lands into four pastures, to be held by the persons to whom they were assigned for their sole use and benefit.‡

March 14, 1714–15, the town granted Joseph Ilsley, Richard Kelly, John Pike, and others "liberty to build a pound by the country road near John Hales house for the impounding of cattle trespassing upon the general pasture at old town."

RIVER LOTS AND PUBLIC LANDINGS.

When the new town was laid out in 1645, there was evidently a narrow strip of land along the bank of the Merrimack river that was not divided among the freeholders.

March 14, 1698–9 the lottlayers w^th^ Maj^r^ Thomas Noyes, M^r^ George March, Cap^t^ Stephen Greenleaf, & M^r^ William Noyes were chosen a committee to measure the Bank of Merrimack River belonging to the Towne from Cap^t^ John Kents to Col^l^ Peirces little meadow § and bring

* Town of Newbury Records; also, Proprietors' Records, vol. ii., pp. 86–100, inclusive.

† Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. ii., pp. 47–85, inclusive.

‡ Ibid., vol. ii., pp. 110–125.

§ Capt. John Kent's land was at the foot of what is now Kent street, Newburyport, and Col. Peirce's little meadow was near the corner of Ocean avenue and Plum Island turnpike.

an acct to the Towne as also to examine the Records who they are who have a right to said lands.*

January 19, 1703–4, a committee was chosen to divide the land on the bank of the Merrimack river into lots; and February 13, 1704–5, it was voted to number the lots, beginning at "Mr pearces meadow."

Voted yt one man shall draw for every proprietor. Voted yt ye highway above sd lotts shall be left two rods broad.† Voted that Sergt William Titcomb should draw the lotts for every proprietor which was then done.‡

On pages 105 to 108, second volume of the Proprietors' records, the numbers and dimensions of these lots are given, with the names of the persons to whom they were allotted; the ways, or landing places, from four to sixteen rods wide, leading to the river; also, the following statement: —

Whereas at a legal meeting of the proprietors of ye cōmons of the town of Newbury, January 19, 1703–4 Lieut Col Thomas Noyes Esq. Maj. Daniel Davison, Esq. Capt Stephen Greenleaf, and Capt Henry Somerby were by vote chosen to divide the bank against Merrimack river to ye proprietors of Newbury, by ye same rule as ye six thousand acres in ye upper woods was. Only the rate proportion and freehold proportion of every proprietor be laid together, ye said gentlemen having finished ye said work and presented it to ye town at ye meeting on March 9, 1707–8. The town yn by yr vote orderd ye recording of it which is as followeth: . . .

The number of ye river lots, begining near Mr Pierces farm and ending at Mr Woodman's lane.§

At a meeting of the proprietors, held May 20, 1715, the committee named above was ordered to make a more perfect record of the bounds and dimensions of the river lots and landing places; and this order was complied with January 28, 1715–16.‖

STRANGERS AND PAUPERS.

In the articles of confederation between the colonies of Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth, and Connecticut, approved by

* Town of Newbury Records.

† This highway is now Water street in Newbury and Newburyport.

‡ Town of Newbury Records. § Woodman's lane is now Kent street, Newburyport.

‖ Proprietors' Records, vol. ii., pp. 193–223. There were two hundred and twenty-five lots in this division, and ten ways, or landing places, from the river.

the General Court of Massachusetts October 12, 1670, and ratified and confirmed by a board of commissioners assembled at Plymouth September 5, 1672, "It is ordered that where any person or persons shall be found in any jurisdiction to have had their aboade for more than three months, and not warned out by the authority of the place, . . . every such person or persons shall be accounted an inhabitant where they are so found." *

Great care was taken to see that only persons of good reputation and ability obtained a legal settlement in Newbury. March 14, 1681–2, Sergt. Nathaniel Clark was appointed by the selectmen "to warne Evan Morris out of the towne of Newbury." †

This notice, if served, was probably disregarded. At all events, the freeholders voted June 21, 1689, "that Aquila Chace who hath now undertaken to keep Evan Morris from this time for the space of half a year and to provide for him wholesome food and attendance suitable, upon his performance thereof the Towne engages to give the said Aquila Chace ten shillings per weeke in good country pay if the said Morris shall live so long with him, but if said Morris shall dye wthin that time the said Chace shall have proportionally, to be paid monthly." ‡

April 6, 1687 a warrant was granted to warne out of ye towne W^{m} Nisbett, Edw. Badger and one David that lives at Mr. Thurlos.‡

Householders were not allowed to admit or entertain "either as inmates, boarders or tenants" any person or persons for more than twenty days, without giving notice to the selectmen or town clerk, under a penalty of forty shillings.§

Frequent violations of this law occurred within the limits of the town, and the payment of the fine imposed was in many cases acknowledged and recorded substantially as follows: —

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 481.

† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 137.

‡ Town of Newbury Records.

§ Province Laws, vol. ii., pp. 386, 616.

July 23, 1734 Then received of Mr James Badger the sum of forty shillings for Breach of the Law in taking in a tenant and not Informing ye town clerk nor selectmen of ye town of his so doing; the tenants name is Nathan presly with his wife and four children.

WILLIAM ILSLEY, MOSES GERRISH, JOSEPH COFFIN } *Selectmen for Newbury* *

November 25, 1734 Received of Moses Titcomb forty shillings for taking in a tenant and not Informing ye town clerk nor Selectmen of ye town of his so doing; the tenants name is Stephen Jackman with his wife and several children.*

MERCHANDISE LOST AND FOUND.

The General Court, in a law passed June 15, 1698, provided that any person finding horses, sheep, cattle, money, or goods "shall give notice thereof in writing unto the clerk of the town in which they were found, to be entered in a book to be kept for that purpose: and shall also cause the same to be cryed by the constable or publick cryer in such town, on three several days, at a publick meeting of the inhabitants thereof; and to be posted up in some publick place." †

A few of these legal notices, recorded by the town clerk of Newbury, are as follows: —

In the month of April, 1714, Peter Coffin reported having found "a sword or rapier."

May 16, 1715, Mr. Fawn Clement found a lot of ship timber "to ye number of about seaventy sticks which are hewed and suitable for fuddocks and naval timbers and knees."

June 15, 1715, Major D. Davison reported having found "a wallet with about nine pounds of cotton wool in it & a small bag with about eight pound of sugar in ye sd bag."

March 30, 1718, Joseph March reported as found "in September last a cannoo of about twelve foot in length and about three foot in wedth with a bolt and Ring in ye hed of sd cannoo and a piece of plank across ye stern: ye cannoo was very much shaken."

* Records of the Selectmen of Newbury.

† Province Laws, vol. i., p. 326.

October 15, 1719 Mr. Joseph Boynton of Rowle informed of his finding three pounds, one shilling & six in paper money.

November 30, 1727 a gold ring was found in the town of Newbury by John Bradbury of Salisbury.

April 20, 1728 a little before sun sett found in ye Towne of Newbury a wash leather deerskin by Enos Bartlet without any mark.

April 18, 1736 Found by Mr John Noyes one silver seal in ye Town of Newbury with the letters H. I. marked in said seal.

January 12, 1736–7 Joseph Lunt informed that he & John Moodey Junr found a pine mast of about fifty three foot long on plumb Iland.

November 30, 1760 taken up by Richard Kent one barrell of Cyder supposed to be Drove on Shore near his house, by stress of weather, no owner as yt appears.

MORTGAGE LOANS AND BILLS OF CREDIT.

September 20, 1721, the town of Newbury voted to receive its proportion of the bills of credit issued by the treasurer of the province of Massachusetts Bay, under the act passed by the General Court July 13, 1720; and Deacon Nathaniel Coffin, Ensign William Titcomb, and Lieut. Henry Rolfe were appointed trustees to take charge of the same.

They shall also let out & improve sd money for ye benefit of sd Towne at five per cent per annum to settled substantial inhabitants of our Towne & they shall lett to no person less than ten pounds & shall lett to no one person more than thirty pounds at one time & that upon good personal security & they shall not lett sd money for longer time than one year at a time,— and we do allso give sd trustees or ye major part of them full power to receive and gather in all ye money which they shall so lett out with ye interest which shall become dew for ye same & they shall pay into ye Towne or their order, yearly ye interests of sd money as it shall become due & shall render to ye Towne yearly a faire & Just account of their doings in this afaire in writing under their hands, so long as they are continued in sd office of Trustees: allso ye Towne reserves liberty to Release sd trustees & chuse others when they se cause to do it: & sd Towne reserves liberty to give sd trustees other instructions to act by in this business which sd Trustees shall conform to: when given.*

November 22, 1727, the General Court provided for another loan of sixty thousand pounds in bills of credit to the various towns in the province. April 16, 1728, "Majr Joseph Ger-

* Town of Newbury Records.

rish, Deacon Abiel Somerby and Deacon Caleb Moody" were chosen trustees by the town of Newbury to receive and take charge of bills of credit to the amount of £1,328, 15*s*., and to manage and invest the same upon the following terms and conditions: —

1. They shall let to no one man more than thirty pounds or less than ten pounds of our bills of credit.
2. They shall take good & substantiall sureties or personal security according to y^e^ province act.
3. They shall let out none of s^d^ Bills of Credit for a longer time than one year & shall let none of said Bills of Credit out of this Towne.
4. They shall gather in & pay in unto y^e^ Treasurer of y^e^ province four per cent annually according to y^e^ province act.
5. That no man be taken as a surety for more than one man at a time.
6. The said Trustees shall act in this afaire as they shall receive instructions from y^e^ Towne.
7. They shall give to y^e^ Towne a plain, just & true account of their doings herein under their hands from time to time when it shall be called for.*

February 25, 1729–30, the inhabitants of Newbury voted "that one hundred pounds of this Towns bills of credit which are in y^e^ hands of Henry Rolf, Esq, Ensign William Titcomb & Nath^ll^ Coffin (as they are a committee imployed by s^d^ Town, ect.) for & toward y^e^ paying of Francis Wilks, & Jonathan Belcher, Esq. for what cost & charge they have been, or may be at, in doing business (at y^e^ court of great Britain) for & in behalf of his Majesties province of y^e^ Massachusetts Bay in New England; y^e^ selectmen are hereby ordered to draw said money out of y^e^ hands of said committee & send it to y^e^ speaker of y^e^ House of Representatives to be by him disposed of for y^e^ use & servis above mentioned if y^e^ selectmen se cause to do it." †

Subsequently a part of the interest received from these bills of credit was used to defray the expenses of the Third Parish Church in Newbury.‡

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Ibid. "Passed in the affirmative, and not one man was known to vote against it."

‡ "Ould Newbury," p. 433.

PLUM ISLAND.

For nearly fifteen years after the incorporation of the town of Newbury the General Court retained possession of the low, narrow island that extends from the mouth of the Ipswich river to the mouth of the Merrimack. The following order was passed March 13, 1639: —

> Plum Island is to remaine in the Courts power only for the present Ipswich, Newebury, and the newe plantation (Rowley) between them may have the use of it, till the Court shall see cause otherwise to dispose of it.*

At a meeting of the freemen of Newbury held March 6, 1648–9, "... there was chosen Mr. William Gerrish, John Saunders, Daniel Pierce, Henry Shorte, Richard Knight, Robert Coker, William Titcomb, Archelaus Woodman and John Merrill, to bee a committee for the towne to view the passages into Plum Island and to informe the courte by way of petition concerning the rights the towne hath to the sayd island and to have full power with Mr Edward Rawson to draw forth a petition and present it to the next general courte." †

> Mr Edward Rawson, Mr John Spencer and Mr Woodman was chosen by the towne to joyne with those men of Ipswich and Rowley, that was appointed to bee a committee about Plum island.†

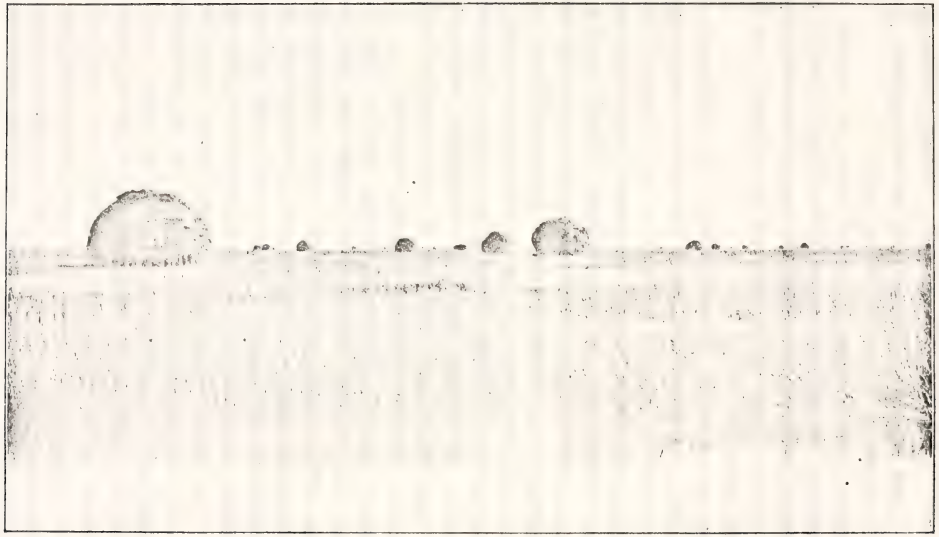
At the next session of the General Court, Thomas Parker, Percival Lowle, John Spencer, John Saunders, James Noyes, William Gerrish, Edward Woodman, Henry Shorte, and Richard Knight (or Kent?) presented a petition "in the name of the whole town," in which they set forth the claims of the inhabitants of Newbury to the free and unrestricted use of the whole island. The General Court, however, granted October 19, 1649, "two parts to Ipswich, two to Newbury, and one to Rowley." ‡

September 23 and 26, 1661, all the marsh land in Newbury bordering on Plum Island river was divided among the

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 252.

† Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

‡ Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 50, 51; Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxii., pp. 24, 25.



NEWBURY MARSHES.

"Where merry mowers, hale and strong,
Sweep, scythe on scythe, their swaths along
The low green prairies of the sea."

freeholders of the town.* The first division extended from Rowley bounds to Sandy beach, in lots of four acres each numbered from one to fifty-one, and the second division from one to thirteen, inclusive; also, about one hundred acres "beginning at the upland next Merrimack Barre and so extending to Sandy Beach," seventeen lots in all, of varying size, from four to ten acres each; "also the marsh land in the neck over the Great River," fourteen lots of five acres each.†

The incoming tide, with the salty flavor of the sea, frequently overflowed the low, level marshes and rendered them productive and valuable. Large crops of salt hay were cut from them every year without fear of impoverishing the soil. Mowing machines and horse-rakes had not then been invented, and hand scythes were used in cutting, and small wooden rakes in turning and making the hay that was piled in cone-shaped stacks or ricks until it could be removed.

Although the northerly end of Plum island is only a succession of sandhills, with a few straggling bushes and thin patches of coarse grass scattered here and there, the southern extremity is more fertile. Horses and cattle belonging to the inhabitants of Ipswich, Newbury, and Rowley, were pastured there during the summer months; and sometimes the number was so large that the scanty herbage growing there was insufficient to support them. In answer to the petition of the selectmen of Ipswich, the General Court ordered, May 30, 1679, "that no horses or cattle be put upon said island without the consent of the major part of the proprietors of the said island." ‡

At that date all the land on the northerly side of the Rowley line, on Plum island, was held in common by the inhabitants of Newbury, except about eighty acres previously granted Richard Dole and Henry Jaques in exchange for a certain number of acres of marsh land.

"June 10, 1662, there was laid out unto Richard Dole &

* The statement in Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 64, and in "Ould Newbury," p. 213, that the island was divided at that time, is incorrect, as the division evidently included only the marsh land along Plum Island river.

† Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., pp. 67–74, inclusive.

‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 232; also, "Ould Newbury," p. 213.

Henry Jaques a parcell of upland in plumb island joyning to Rowley bounds on the south and Newbury marsh on the west" * by Richard Knight, John Knight, William Titcomb, Archelaus Woodman, and Hugh March for the town of Newbury. November 12, 1675, the same persons, with the addition of John Emery, sr., consented to a revision of the bounds and limits of the above-described land.†

April 5, 1714, the town of Newbury "voted to grant liberty to M^r^ Benjamin Woodbridge and M^r^ Henry Somerby to cut timber on Plum Island to finish two wharfs with." ‡ It was also voted May 8, 1717, "that all neat cattle and horses shall be kept off Plum Island from May first to October first every year." § In 1739, the General Court passed an act to prevent horses, cattle, sheep, and swine from running at large on Plum island. This act was renewed from time to time until the year 1792.

March 25, 1755, the proprietors of that portion of the island lying within the limits of Newbury met at the town-house in Newbury. A committee was chosen to prosecute all persons trespassing upon the property of the proprietors, and the same committee was instructed to take charge of all merchandise thrown upon the beach by the force of the wind or the action of the sea. Similar committees were appointed at meetings held in 1756, and subsequently.§

At a meeting of the proprietors, held September 2, 1827, the standing committee, consisting of Daniel Adams, 3d, Anthony Davenport, and Josiah Little, were instructed to sell at public auction "all the lands belonging to the said Proprietors in the town of Newbury"; and December 29, 1827, "as agents for the Freeholders & Proprietors of common and undivided land in Newbury, West Newbury, and Newburyport," they sold and conveyed by quitclaim deed for the sum of six hundred dollars to Moses Pettingell, of Newbury, "That part of Plumb Island lying & situate in said town of Newbury, containing twelve hundred acres, more or less," "reserving for public use the public buildings and the way leading to the

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i., p. 89. † Ibid., p. 67.

‡ Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 185. § Town of Newbury Records.

same: also a privilege for the dwelling house & for the light houses belonging to the United States." *

SMALL-POX AND OTHER CONTAGIOUS DISEASES.

Stringent rules and regulations were adopted by the town of Newbury to prevent the introduction of contagious diseases.

March 10, 1690–1, the selectmen were ordered to see that all persons infected with small-pox were removed to some isolated place, and provided with nurses and attendants. They were also ordered to supply food and clothing to the persons so removed, and to the families of those who were unable to take care of themselves.†

March 24, 1729–30, the selectmen were instructed "to use their utmost endeavors to prevent persons & goods being brought from Boston into this Towne whereby we may be in danger of having ye small-pox brought among us." †

March 10, 1751–2, a committee was chosen to inspect all vessels that came into the Merrimack river, "to see whether there are any cases of small-pox on board"; and the same committee was instructed to give immediate notice to the selectmen if they found any person sick with small-pox in any dwelling-house within the limits of the town. On the twenty-seventh day of March following, the selectmen were authorized to prohibit the passing and repassing of boats over Parker river containing goods liable or supposed to be infected with small-pox. They were also instructed to build a dwelling-house on Plum island, "near the upper end of said island," for the town's use; to order all vessels coming into Merrimack river "to anchor below Hook's Point until they are Properly examined; and to publish the substance of these votes in the newspapers of the day." †

Bills for labor, glass, and lumber "for ye house on Plum Island," were charged in the account of disbursements rendered by the selectmen for the year 1752.

In November, 1759, several cases of small-pox were re-

* Essex Deeds, book ccxlvi., p. 270. † Town of Newbury Records.

ported in the West parish, "near the plains"; and, before the disease could be stayed, thirty-six persons, all but two of them adults, died.

March 28, 1763, the inhabitants of the town appointed a committee to select a convenient place for a "Pest House," and ascertain the cost of building the same; and May 12, 1763, they voted "to build the Pest House in the great pasture, to be 38 feet long, 28 feet wide and one story high." *

January 27, 1763–4, the selectmen were authorized to provide gates for the old-town bridge and Thorley's bridge, and also gatemen, or guards "to prevent any person infected with the small pox from coming into the town." *

May 15, 1764, the town voted that the selectmen of Newburyport be notified that the guards appointed to prevent the spread of small-pox had been discharged, and that travellers could pass the gates at the bridges without inspection.*

AMMUNITION AND POWDER-HOUSE.

The selectmen of Newbury were required to provide powder and ammunition for the militia, and were instructed to keep a reasonable supply on hand at all times.

September 2, 1670, John Bartlett, William Chandler, Edmund Moores, Samuel Plummer, and Caleb Moody, selectmen, "received of Nathaniel Clarke a barrell of powder for the Townes use for which they agree to pay ten pounds." *

January 9, 1676, the selectmen ordered "that a barrel of powder be purchased & also fifteen hundred flints." *

Under the law enacted by the General Court November 22, 1693, every town in the province of Massachusetts Bay was required to provide "a barrel of good powder, two hundred weight of bullets and three hundred flints for every sixty listed souldiers." †

In 1722, the selectmen of Newbury had on hand seven bags and two casks, containing five hundred and forty-three pounds of bullets, and eight casks, containing three hundred and fifty-seven pounds of powder.‡

* Town of Newbury Records. † Province Laws, vol. i., p. 131.

‡ Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 192.

May 15, 1741, the inhabitants of the town voted to divide, in equal proportions, among the organized parishes all the ammunition belonging to the town, and to instruct the selectmen to see that it was safely stored and kept.*

May 16, 1743, the selectmen were authorized to agree with some suitable person to build a convenient house "in which to keep the town's stock of ammunition"; but they evidently did not avail themselves of the privilege granted them, for the inhabitants of the town voted, October 30, 1745, that the selectmen provide a suitable place "in which to keep the Town's stock of powder," and, March 12, 1753–4, ordered the selectmen "to build a powder house." *

February 19, 1754–5, the selectmen paid Abiel Somerby £6, 5*s*. 4*d*. "for bricks for y^e^ Powder House"; and a few weeks later they paid several small bills for shingles and rocks and for labor on the building.

SECOND PARISH.

As early as 1685 the inhabitants of the west end of the town, living four or five miles from the meeting-house, asked permission and help to enable them to establish and maintain the public worship of God near their own dwellings. Three or four years later a few individuals erected a meeting-house on land at or near the place where "the way to the mill, at the mouth of Artichoke river" crosses the road leading to Bartlett's cove, marked X on the map on page 239. They invited Mr. Edward Thompson to officiate as minister there; but the town objected to his coming, and protested against his being allowed "to set up a lecture and preach."

After a long and bittter contest between the zealous friends and vigorous opponents of Mr. Thompson, a compromise was effected, and a committee appointed December 21, 1694, "to draw up articles and proposals in order to setting off part of the west end of the towne" as a separate parish.

January 1, 1694–5, the town voted

... that Pipe Stave Hill, near Daniel Jaques' house shall be the place for the meeting house, and those that live nearest to the place

*Town of Newbury Records.

shall pay to the ministry there, and those that live nearest to the old meeting house shall pay there: the inhabitants of the west end to choose a minister for themselves, only Mr Thompson excepted. The meeting house to stand where it do until the major part of them see cause to remove it.

It is not to be understood that any of those that are usually called the ffarms, or those lands commonly called the ffalls are to belong to the west part of the Towne as to the maintaining of a minister but the dividing line shall be from the middle way between the proposed place on pipe stave hill to the old meeting house and from the sd midle way in the Rode to run on a streight line to ffrancis Brownes house neer birchen meadow & so streight to the Little pond.*

The dividing line between the First and Second parishes shown on the map on page 239 extends from A to C, and thence to a point on the Merrimack river, nearly opposite Deer island, numbered 25.

During the summer of 1696 the building erected by the inhabitants of the west end of the town in 1689 or 1690 was enlarged and repaired. About an acre of land adjoining was enclosed with a stone fence or wall, and is now known as "the burying ground at Sawyer's hill." †

May 17, 1700, Deacon Benjamin Morss was instructed to prepare a petition to be presented to the General Court for authority to levy taxes and to elect assessors, collectors, and other officers necessary to carry on the work of the parish; ‡ and January 25, 1710–11, Sergt. John Ordway and Sergt. Joseph Pike were appointed a committee "to desire ye town of Newbury to choose men to join with them to run ye line between ye Town & ye West precinct and also to settle ye bounds according to the Towns vote." §

March 13, 1710–11 Major Henry Somerby and the two lot layers chosen a committee to run the line between ye Town and the West precinct.‖

Samuel Sewall states in his diary, under the date of May 10, 1709, that he "visited cousin Jacob Toppan and laid a stone in the foundation of ye meeting house at Pipe Staff hill." The building of this new house of worship created

*Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., p. 23.
† "Ould Newbury," pp. 363–367.
‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 15.
§ Ibid., p. 29.
‖ Town of Newbury Records.

considerable dissatisfaction in the parish; and some of the inhabitants living in the vicinity of Sawyer's hill, by the advice and with the assistance of Mr. John Bridger, of Portsmouth, N.H., erected in 1711 "Queen Anne's Chapel." On Sundays and holy days they held service there "according to the rubrics and ritual of the established Church of England" until the close of the year 1766. The land upon which the chapel stood now forms a part of Belleville cemetery, Newburyport.*

November 11, 1734, the inhabitants of the First parish in Newbury, in answer to the petition of Lieut. Joseph Pike and others, voted to enlarge the Second parish (which had been reduced by the incorporation of the Fourth parish), and make some changes in the dividing line, as follows: —

> Beginning at the midway between the two meeting houses in said parishes, in the road near where John Chace formerly dwelt, thence running to the westerly end of Thomas Browns house, formerly called John Browns upper house, and on the same line to the way on ye southerly side of said House, and thence by said way running southeasterly to the way leading from John Coffins to the way called Ash street and thence to run westerly by said way to the way by which Dea. Thomas Chace dwells, called Wheat street, being the bounds between the second and fourth parishes: on condition said second parish abate the money which they have assessed on Andrew Downer as to poll and estate within said line, and the said Downer and his estate, Real and personal, are reserved to the first parish during their pleasure, which is to be abated if accepted by said second parish and entered in their Records as accepted on the aforementioned conditions.†

December 31, 1734, the inhabitants of the Second parish voted "to accept the addition which the first parish in Newbury granted to the second parish by their vote on the 11th day of November 1734." ‡

As originally laid out, the parish covered a large area, and included many picturesque hills within its limits. Crane Neck hill, Ilsley's hill, Turkey hill, and Archelaus hill lifted their dome-shaped summits above the level of the surrounding country, while Indian hill and Pipe-stave hill were con-

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 363-390. † Newbury (First Parish) Records, p. 24.
‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 75.

spicuous landmarks often mentioned in the early records of the town. *

Only a few months after the organization of the parish the inhabitants were greatly alarmed by an attack on the house of Mr. John Brown, then standing on the southwesterly side of Turkey hill. October 7, 1695, a party of Indians, who had secreted themselves in that vicinity, seized and carried away nine captives, all women and children.†

BYFIELD PARISH.

At a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of Newbury, held December 9, 1701, "Upon y^e^ request of Mrs Elizabeth Dumer, M^r^ John Dumer, Mr Joshua Woodman, M^r^ William Moody, John Tricomb, Nathan Wheeler, Mrs. Jane Gerrish in behalf of her Tenant M^r^ Richard Dumer, John Smith, Philip Goodridge Joshua Woodman, M^r^ John Cheney, rollen ffraiser, Philip de-lane, Robert Mingo y^t^ the one half of their ministry rate heere may be abated for the next rate that is to be made," ‡ it was voted to grant their request, as the petitioners were then living at "the falls," on Parker river, four or five miles away from the First Parish meeting-house, and somewhat farther from the recently organized church in the Second parish. December 16, 1701, about the same number of persons residing in the adjoining town of Rowley asked and obtained an abatement of one-half the tax imposed upon them for the support of the minister in that town. In 1702 a few individuals, owning property in the vicinity, erected a meeting-house on or near the dividing line between Newbury and Rowley, and invited Rev. Moses Hale to become their pastor. He accepted the invitation, and a parsonage was built for him in 1703.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of Rowley, held March 16, 1702–3, it was voted:

> . . . that the inhabitants of Rowley living on the northwest side of the Bridge called Rye Plain Bridge, and on the northwest side of the hill

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 339–356.

† Ibid., pp. 287–290; also pp. 392–393. House No. 184, on map of West Parish, p. 392, "Ould Newbury," was owned and occupied by John Brown in 1695.

‡ Newbury Town Records.

called Long hill and joined with the farmers of Newbury that doth border on us in building a new meeting house for the worship of God shall be abated their rates in the ministry rate in the town of Rowley if they maintain with the help of our neighbours at Newbury an Athorodox minister to belong to and teach in the meeting house that they have built, until such time as it is judged that there is sufficient number to maintaine in the northwest part of our towne a minister without the help of our neighbours of Newbury that doth border on us.*

February 20, 1703–4, the inhabitants of the parish, having met for consultation at the residence of Rev. Moses Hale, decided to call the place "Byfield" in honor of Col. Nathaniel Byfield, of Boston.† The Newbury part of the parish was set off October 21, 1706.

Upon reading the petition of the Inhabitants of The falls in y^e^ town of Newbury, It was voted y^t^ y^e^ Dividing Line in reference to their procuring and maintaining a minister amongst themselves and for y^t^ only, said Line shall begin att Rowley Rivers mouth, and so up said River to Rowley line & so all thence of the Southwardly side of the falls River & of the Northwardly side of the falls River, taking in John Cheney w^th^ his land he lives on, and M^r^ Moodeys ffarm, and the ffarm comonly called M^r^ Longfellows ffarm, and M^r^ Gerishes farm, and the westerly part of y^e^ farm called Thirlow farm until it comes to the Dividing line between Francis Thirlow farm & Thomas Thirlow farm, — for so long a time as they shall maintain an orthodox minister amongst them. ‡

May 13, 1707, the bounds and limits of the parish on the Rowley side were established.

Beginning at the great rock in Newbury line, at the head of the great swamp lots, and so along by the northwest end of those lots to Thomas Jewett's land, and so on between said Jewett's land and Rye plain land to the bridge called Rye plain bridge and so [on] the way that runs to Long hill, being at the path this side of Francis Nelson's house, and so to Long Hill, and so along to the road at the elder's plain that goeth to Samuel Brocklebank's farm and following on to the farm laid out as the right of Thomas Barker and so to Bradford line, and along as Bradford line runs to Newbury line.§

The parish was incorporated in answer to a petition signed by John Dummer in behalf of the inhabitants of Newbury

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., pp. 344, 345. † "Ould Newbury," pp. 291–300.
‡ Town of Newbury Records. § History of Rowley, by Thomas Gage, p. 96.

and Rowley "of the Parish or Precinct upon Newbury Falls commonly called Byfield." The petition states that the parish has been set off by the consent of both towns, and a church organized. He therefore asks that its inhabitants may be further established by an act or order of the General Court, and granted the privileges, immunities, and powers usually granted to such parishes, and that they may be authorized to choose assessors and collectors to levy and collect taxes, etc.*

October 28, 1710, the General Court ordered

> . . . that the Precinct or District upon Newbury Falls sett off by Newbury & Rowley, commonly called Byfield, be an established, acknowledged Precinct within the Intent of the Law, To have, use & Exercise the Powers and Privileges by law granted to such, for the Maintenance & Support of the public Worship of God there: And forasmuch as the Time for the anniversary choice of Officers for this Year is past. The Clerk of the said Precinct is hereby impowered that notwithstanding to warn a meeting of the Inhabitants, and they to proceed to choose assessors & a Collector for y^e^ same.†

The Newbury part of Byfield parish is shown on the map on page 239, "beginning at the mouth of Rowley river," number 9 on the map, running up that river to the Rowley line, marked R, and thence in a northwesterly direction to a bound of stakes and stones, numbered 15, and thence by a broken line to a point on a branch of the river Parker, marked N, and thence by the branch of said river to the bound begun at.

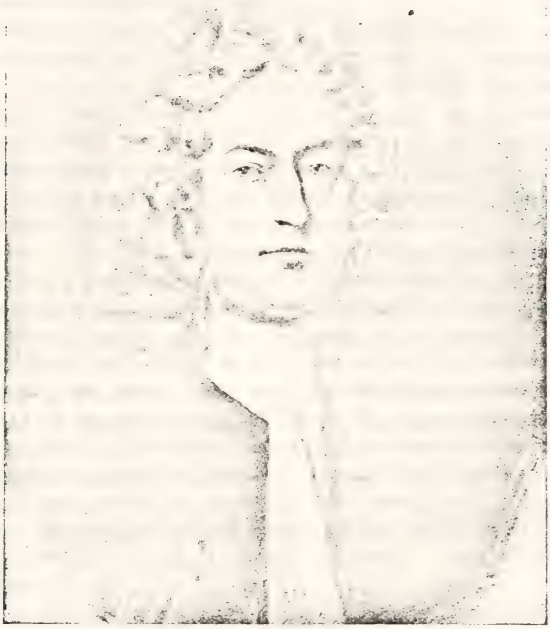
Several changes have been made in the boundary lines since 1785, to suit the convenience of the inhabitants of that neighborhood. Since the incorporation of Georgetown in 1838 the parish has formed a part of three towns; namely, Newbury, Rowley, and Georgetown.

In the burying-ground adjoining the meeting-house erected by the inhabitants of Byfield parish there is a gravestone sacred to the memory of Mehetable, wife of William Moody, who died August 8, 1702. "She was the first interred in this place."

When the parish was incorporated, Stephen Longfellow,

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 344.

† Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. ix., p. 74.



Wm Dummer

son of William Longfellow, paternal ancestor of the poet, Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, was living at Newbury Falls, "at the place commonly known as ye high field," and Richard Dummer, jr., owned the farm, bounded on the northeast and the northwest by the river Parker (subsequently sold to Mr. Eben Parsons, brother of Theophilus Parsons), now known as the Fatherland farm.*

William Dummer, grandson of Richard Dummer, sr., was appointed deputy governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay June 15, 1716, and held that office for fourteen years. From January 1, 1723, to July 28, 1728, while Samuel Shute, governor of the province, was in England, William Dummer occupied the gubernatorial chair; and, after the death of governor William Burnet, September 7, 1729, he was again at the head of the government for nearly twelve months. He gave his dwelling-house and farm in Byfield parish to a board of trustees, with instructions that the annual income thereof should be "appropriated and set apart towards the maintenance of a grammar school master." A school-house was erected on the Dummer farm, and dedicated February 28, 1763. The next day the school, under the charge of Samuel Moody, of York, Me., as master, commenced its regular sessions. It is still in successful operation, under the charge of Mr. Perley L. Horne, A.M. In 1782 an act of incorporation was passed by the General Court, providing for the management and control of the school, under the title of "The Trustees of Dummer Academy in the County of Essex." †

The photo-engraving on the opposite page is taken, by permission of Mr. Joseph N. Dummer, of Rowley, from a half-tone plate in his possession. The portrait, painted previous to 1750, probably, from which the plate was taken, is the property of the trustees of the academy.

THIRD PARISH.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the First parish in Newbury, held September 19, 1722, it was voted

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 305-312 and 327-330. † Ibid., pp. 313-325.

. . . that all the Inhabitants that Desire it, on the Northerly side of y^e^ Lane called Chandler's Lane, and from the uper End of said Lane on a Strait Line to y^e^ Northerly side of Capt John Marchs farm and thence on a strait Line to John Browns house untill it comes to y^e^ Line of y^e^ Second Parish for said Town, Shall Have Liberty to Build a meeting house for them selves In y^e^ most Reasonable Place for the Convenience of said Inhabitants, and when they are Duly Quallified for it In y^e^ Judgment of said Parish, are to be set off and freed from the Ministry for this Part of said Parish.*

The boundary line of the Third parish, beginning at the lower end of Chandler's lane (now Federal street, Newburyport), marked E on the map on page 239, runs in a southwesterly direction to Capt. John March's farm, marked D, and thence to the line of the Second parish, marked C, and thence by the line of that parish to a point on the Merrimack river, numbered 25.

June 9, 1725, the inhabitants of the First parish voted that all persons living within the bounds and limits named in the order adopted September 19, 1722, that are willing to be set off, shall be freed from the maintenance of the ministry in the First parish. At this date a meeting-house had been erected in the centre of a triangular piece of land now known as Market square, Newburyport. It was dedicated June 25, 1725.

A few individuals in the vicinity of Chandler's lane, and a considerable number residing in the northerly part of the new parish, objected to the bounds and limits agreed upon, and appealed to the General Court for relief. A committee appointed by the house of representatives November 26, 1725, the governor and council concurring, after careful investigation reported in favor of incorporating the parish, eight families living beyond the dividing line, on the southerly side of Chandler's lane, to be set off with their estates to the new parish. This report was read and accepted at a session of the General Court held December 18, 1725.†

March 22, 1726–7, the inhabitants of the First parish voted

* First Parish Records, p. 3.

† Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xiii., pp. 40, 87.

The report is printed in full on pp. 430 and 431, "Ould Newbury"; but the date of its presentation to the General Court was December 18, 1725, not November 3, 1728, as there stated.

. . "that the third parish (called y^e^ water side parish) should have the first Parishes right in y^e^ old bell w^ch^ was formerly improved for y^e^ old meeting house." *

Although this vote was passed at the request of a committee appointed by the Third parish, no further action seems to have been taken in regard to it. Possibly the consent and co-operation of the inhabitants living within the limits of the Second parish could not be obtained. At all events, the Third parish voted May 23, 1727, to purchase a bell weighing about four hundred pounds, and also "voted that Jonathan Woodman should treat with some gentlemen in Boston to send a bell for said parish."

In 1730, about an acre of land on the southwesterly side of Frog pond, now known as "The Old Hill Burying-ground," Newburyport, was enclosed with a board fence and set apart as a burial-place by the inhabitants of the Third parish.†

In 1736, the meeting-house was enlarged; and September 30, 1740, Rev. George Whitefield preached his first sermon in Newbury to an immense congregation, that occupied every available seat and filled to overflowing the aisles and galleries of that spacious building.‡

During the war between France and England, Col. Moses Titcomb, who was in command of a battery at the capture of Louisburg in 1745, re-enlisted in the English army when hostilities were renewed, in 1755, between those powers. From the same pulpit Rev. John Lowell, pastor of the church, delivered a sermon, May 22, 1755, before Col. Titcomb and the men under his command previous to their departure for the seat of war. Four or five months later memorial exercises were held in the same place to commemorate the life and character of Col. Titcomb, who was killed in the battle at Crown Point September 8, 1755.§

On the unoccupied land on the westerly side of the meeting-house a huge gridiron was erected after the surrender of Quebec, September 19, 1759; and there with demonstrations of joy an ox was broiled or roasted, and songs were sung commemorating the victories of the year.‖

* First Parish Records, vol. i. † "Ould Newbury," p. 453. ‡ Ibid., p. 526.
§ Ibid., pp. 464–473. ‖ Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 224.

FOURTH PARISH.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the Second parish, held August 26, 1729, it was "voted to answer the petition that was put in to ye General Court by some of the inhabitants of y^e^ west precinct in Newbury on August ye 20^th^ 1729, to have ye precinct divided into two parishes." *

A committee was appointed to prepare a statement to be presented to the General Court; and John Brown, surveyor, was employed to make a map of the parish, showing the proposed line of division.† After considerable discussion and delay the freeholders consented, January 12, 1730–1, to the organization of the new parish, and appointed a committee, consisting of Nathaniel Coffin, Joseph Gerrish, and Henry Rolfe, to take such steps as might be necessary to carry the vote into effect.

May 20, 1731 voted to desire y^e^ Honourable General Court to confirm and establish y^e^ division which they [the committee] have made.‡

June 1, 1731, Benjamin Hills and others opposed the report of the committee, and petitioned the General Court to give the new parish more territory and straighten the dividing line, "which is now very crooked and inconvenient." The petitioners, however, after a prolonged hearing were given "leave to withdraw"; and the bounds and limits of the Fourth parish were established as follows: —

Begining at the southerly end of the way that runs on the northeasterly side of Deacon Thomas Chases homestead where he now liveth & running up said way [Whit street or Merrill's lane] until it comes to Abel Merrill's land where he now dwelleth & thence to run on the southerly side of said Merrill's land until it comes to the next way [Downer's lane] which lies on the northeasterly side of said Merrill's land, and thence on the said way until it comes to the south way, so called, and then to run up said south way until it meets with the land of M^r^ John Carr or M^r^ Thomas Noyes and then to run across to the Bradford road so as to take in all the land of the homestead of the said M^r^ John Carr and M^r^ Thomas Noyes' land on the westerly side of said line

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 66.

† "Ould Newbury," pp. 391–395.

‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 68.

and from thence to run down the lane called Baylys lane to Merrimack river, which line is to the westward of Mr Joshua Bailey's dwelling house and that the inhabitants of such Precinct be vested with the Powers, Privileges and Immunities which other Precincts within the Province have or by law ought to have.*

The division line between the Second and Fourth parishes begins at the point B on the map on page 239, and runs in a northerly direction to J, thence easterly to I, northerly to H, westerly to G, and thence northerly to F on the Merrimack river.

December 4, 1733, this line was slightly changed in answer to the petition of Thomas Chase and others.†

Rev. William Johnson was the first minister of the Fourth parish. He was settled September 15, 1731, and retained his office until his death, February 22, 1772.

FIFTH PARISH.

May 21, 1760, a petition was presented to the General Court, asking that a portion of the Second parish, on the easterly side of Artichoke river, and a portion of the Third parish, on the westerly side of Toppan's lane extending to the Merrimack river on a line to be agreed upon, might be set off and made a new parish.

There was considerable dissatisfaction in the Second parish at this time on account of the location of the meeting-house built during the summer of 1759. November 18, 1760, the inhabitants of the parish "voted y^t Mr Enos Bartlet, Deacon James Brown, and Tristram Coffin are a commi^tt to trye to remove the uneasiness from any if they can . . . on ye account of placing ye meeting house." ‡

February 18, 1761, the inhabitants of the Second parish appointed a committee to draw up a statement of reasons why the petition of Moses Little and others to be set off and incorporated as a separate parish should not be granted, and Mr. William Foster and Deacon Edmund Bayley were in-

* Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xv., pp. 82, 83; also, "Ould Newbury," p. 392.

† Newbury (First Parish) Records. ‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 131.

structed to present the same to the General Court in the month of March next.*

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the Third parish, held February 11, 1761, it was voted

. . . that Daniel Farnham, Esq Mr Timothy Pike & Mr Charles Hodge be a committee to make answer at the next setting of the general court to a petition lately preferred to sd court by a number of the second & third parishes wherein they pray that the general court would set them off all the westerly part of sd parish as far as Mr Moses Moody's land on the north side of the highway and as far as Toppan's lane on the south side of said way. †

The General Court, however, after due deliberation granted the prayer of the petitioners, April 17, 1761, and established the bounds of the new parish, as follows: —

. . . begining at the north east Corner of Mr Moses Moody's land by Merrimack river, thence by said Moody's land on the southerly side to the country road [now High street, Newburyport]‡ thence eastwardly to Toppan's lane and down to the westerly end of the said lane, thence, upon a straight line to the southeast corner of Francis Brown's land, to the South way, so called, thence westerly by the said way to the southwest corner of the Second Parish, thence by said Parish to Stephen Sawyer's land on the northerly side, thence by said Sawyer's land to the Road nigh his dwelling house, thence to John Rogers' mill dam, thence to the mouth of the Artichoke river at the river Merrimack, together with Capt. Stephen Ordway and his estate.§

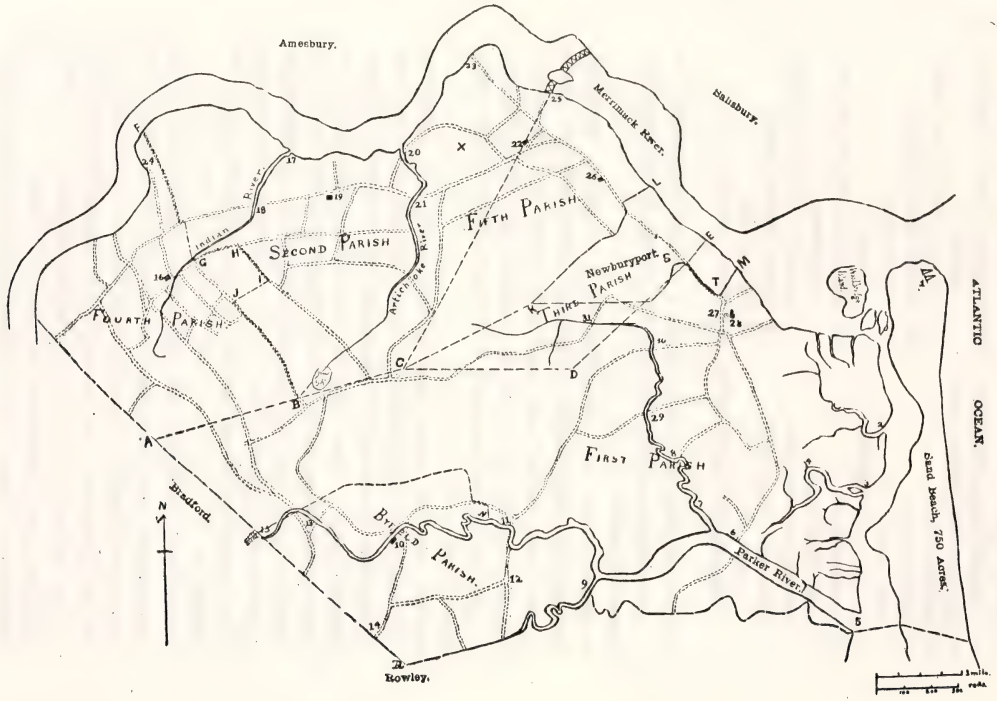
All persons living within the above-named limits, except "Edward Toppan, Samuel Cook, John Poor, Mary Morgaridge, Elizabeth Pilsbury, William Weed, John Downing, Joseph Downer, Andrew Downer, John Rogers, junior, Peter

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 132. † Newbury (Third Parish) Records.

‡ Moses Moody owned a large tract of land between the Merrimack river and the country road, now High street, Newburyport, extending from Moody's lane, now Woodland street, to a way subsequently laid out and named North street, now Oakland street, Newburyport.

When the Fifth parish was incorporated, the southerly side of Mr. Moody's land was taken as the boundary line. North street was evidently not laid out until 1815, perhaps later. In a deed of conveyance to Thomas Emery, dated November 21, 1796, Moses Moody mentions "land I have reserved for a road two rods wide" ("Ould Newbury," p. 687); and Timothy Osgood sold to Samuel Osgood, April 15, 1815, land and buildings in Newburyport bounded "northeasterly on Merrimack street, northwesterly on a new street to be laid down two and one half rods wide" (Essex Deeds, vol. ccv., p. 272). June 7, 1837, John Pearson, 3rd, conveyed to True Choate the same property, "bounded northeasterly by Merrimack street and northwesterly by North street" (Essex Deeds, vol. ccc., p. 265).

§ Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xxiii., p. 705.



MAP OF NEWBURY—1795.

SHOWING PARISH LINES.

Rogers, and Abiel Rogers," were declared, by order of the General Court, inhabitants of the Fifth parish.

The boundary line of the parish, beginning at a point on the Merrimack river marked L on the map on page 239, runs by a broken line to the letter K, thence to C, thence to B, thence to the Artichoke river, thence by said river to its mouth, and thence by the Merrimack river to the bound begun at.

A meeting-house was erected on Meeting-house lane, now Noble street, Newburyport; and a church was organized July 22, 1762. The first and only minister of the parish was settled September 1, 1762, and dismissed April 28, 1784. Subsequently, a new religious society was formed in the parish, now known as "The Belleville Congregational Church and Society of Newburyport"; and a new meeting-house was erected on High street, near Moody's lane, now Woodland street, Newburyport.

The map on the preceding page is reproduced from a drawing made by E. March for the town of Newbury in 1795.* A few lines showing the metes and bounds of the several parishes have been added: otherwise it is an exact copy, upon a reduced scale, of the original now on file at the State House in Boston.

The location of any house or place named in the following list can be found by its corresponding number on the map: —

1. Light Houfes on Plumb island Point.
2. Little Pine Island River.
3. Great Pine Island River.
4. Pine Island Mills.
5. Pa[r]ker River.
6. Pa[r]ker River Bridge.
7. Little River.
8. Pearsons Mills.
9. Rowley River.
10. Newburyport Woollen Manufactory and Moody's Mill.
11. Thurla's Bridge.
12. Dumer Accadamy.
13. Thurla's Mill.
14. Byfield Meeting House.
15. Bound of Newbury, Bradford & Rowley.
16. Meeting House in the third Parish.
17. Indian River.
18. Bridge over Indian River.
19. Meeting House in the second Parish.
20. Artichoke River & Hoopers Mill.

* Massachusetts Archives (Town Plans), vol. ix., plan 30.

21. Artichoke Bridge.
22. Meeting House in the fourth Parish.
23. Amesbury ferrey.
24. Sweats ferrey.
25. Efsex Merrimack Bridge.
26. Friends Meeting Houfe.
27. Meeting Houfe in the first Parish.
28. Meeting House Pond.
29. Mill Bridge.
30. Trotters Bridge.
31. New Bridge.

The double prick'd lines exhibit the roads.

Reputed distance from the Centre of the Town to Salem, 24 Miles; to Boston, 42 Miles.

AREA OF WATER IN THE TOWN.

	Acres.
Flats around Woodbridge's Island	853
Plumb jsland River	359
Little Pine Island river	25
Great Pine Island river	30
River Parker	490
Little River	77
Indian River	19
Artichoke River	38
Meeting Houfe	5
	1896

TOWN-HOUSE AND COURT-HOUSE.

A new meeting-house, the third one "sett up on the knowle of upland by Abraham Toppan's barne," was erected during the year 1700. July 22, 1702, the selectmen were instructed "to consider and report what it will cost to remove the old meeting house farther from the new meeting house, and to fitt it up for a court house, towne house and school house." *

March 17, 1702–3, the town voted to repair the building and make such alterations as were necessary for the accommodation of the Court of General Sessions and the pupils of the town school; but after further consideration this plan was abandoned, and May 23, 1705, "the old meeting house was granted to Richard Brown with liberty to remove it." *

Twenty years later, February 25, 1724–5, the freeholders voted to build a town-house at the upper end of Greenleaf's

*Town of Newbury Records.

lane, now State street, and appointed a committee to make an estimate of the cost of the land, labor, and materials needed.

At a meeting held May 13, 1728, the subject was again under consideration; but no definite action was taken at that time. February 22, 1730–31, the town reconsidered its vote to build a town-house "at ye uper end of Greenleaf's lane," and voted to build it in Chandler's lane, now Federal street.

The estimated cost of the new building and the dissatisfaction arising from the change of location created a strong feeling of opposition to the measure. Subscription papers were circulated for the purpose of raising money to build a court-house and town-house near the tavern at the head of Muzzey's lane, now Marlborough street; and May 11, 1733, the First parish of Newbury was granted "liberty to build a convenient town house within two years at their own cost and charge near lieutenant John March's house." *

May 7, 1734, Benjamin Morse, jr., sold to the First parish a lot of land "bounded westerly & northerly by land of the said Mors, easterly by a way, and southerly by land reputed to be Mr. Fowlers," to build a town-house upon.†

September 18, 1734, the inhabitants of Newbury voted that the interest received from the bills of credit issued by the state should be applied "toward the finishing the Towne House now in building, provided the inhabitants of ye first parish go on & finish said House without asking anything more of the Towne and that said House shall be made sure to the Towne and County by a vote of the first parish as may be reasonable after it is finished." *

November 11, 1734, the parish voted that the town house "now standing in Newbury near y^e^ Dwelling house of Lieu^t^ John March shall be for y^e^ use of the town of Newbury and for y^e^ use of the County of Essex for y^e^ keeping and holding of Courts &c." ‡

January 28, 1734–5, James Noyes and John Pearson conveyed to a committee of the First parish in Newbury, consist-

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Essex Deeds, vol. lxix., p. 3; vol. cxxxii., p. 34; and "Ould Newbury," pp. 198–200.
‡ Newbury (First Parish) Records.

ing of Joseph Gerrish, Henry Rolf, John March, and Charles Pierce, "one Town House, so called, standing in Newbury aforesaid on a piece of land sold by Benjamin Mors, jun, to the First Parish in Newbury." *

February 27, 1734–5, Mr. John Pearson was authorized to receive from John Appleton, treasurer of the county of Essex, the sum of two hundred pounds in settlement for the town and court house built by the parish.†

Twenty-five years later, when the building needed repairs, an effort was made to remove it to a more convenient location. May 20, 1760, Dr. Nathan Hale and several other petitioners applied to the town for an appropriation for repairing or removing the town-house. This petition was not granted, and on the twenty-sixth day of May following an unsuccessful effort was made to authorize the selectmen to erect a new building nearer the centre of the town.

In 1762, the county of Essex appropriated two hundred pounds for a new court-house in Newbury, "provided the town raise a like sum for the same purpose." This proposal was not acceptable to the legal voters of Newbury; and they declined March 29, 1762, to co-operate with the county in the erection of the proposed building. Some of the inhabitants of the Third parish, however, subscribed a sum sufficient to defray the cost of "a court house for ye use of said county and the inhabitants of the town of Newbury"; and July 7, 1762, Daniel Farnham, Michael Dalton, Jonathan Bayley, Thomas Woodbridge, and others purchased of Joseph Clements eleven rods of land "on Fish Street adjoining his dwelling house," and conveyed the same to John Choate, treasurer of Essex County "for the uses and purposes above expressed and for no other use or purpose whatever." ‡ On this land, at the corner of Fish, now State, and Essex streets, a commodious town and court house was erected within the present limits of the city of Newburyport.

The old town-house, on High street, at the head of Marlborough street, was sold in 1780, and removed.

* Essex Deeds, vol. lxviii., p. 11.
† Newbury (First Parish) Records.
‡ Essex Deeds, book cxi., p. 111.

ALMSHOUSE.

May 17, 1682, the town "voted that the selectmen shall have power to take care that the poore may be provided for, and to build a cottage or cottages for them according to their discretion." *

February 6, 1704–5, the selectmen were ordered to ascertain and report at a subsequent meeting the probable cost of a building suitable for an almshouse. The estimates submitted were evidently unsatisfactory; and no further action was taken until March 12, 1722–3, when "Ensigne William Titcomb, Richard Kent, Esq, & Cap[t] Henry Rolfe were chosen a committee to view a place for an alms house & make an estimate of the cost of land & of the building to be built." † The report of the committee was not acceptable to the legal voters of the town, and further consideration of the subject was indefinitely postponed. March 12, 1733–4, a committee, consisting of Doctor Nathan Hale, Joseph Atkins, Esq., Jonathan Poor, Joseph Gerrish, Esq., and Deacon Joshua Moody, was chosen to select a suitable lot of land and procure plans for the proposed new almshouse; but the location selected and the plans agreed upon were vigorously opposed by some of the inhabitants, and after a heated debate the recommendations of the committee were defeated. ‡

At a town meeting held March 8, 1736–7, the question was again discussed; and a committee was appointed to consider the advisability of erecting a building for the accommodation of the poor of the towns of Newbury, Amesbury, and Salisbury, "also to ascertain what proportion of the probable cost each of the above named towns will pay." ‡

The committee was unable to secure the co-operation of Amesbury and Salisbury upon terms and conditions that were considered mutually advantageous; and, after several ineffectual attempts to harmonize conflicting views and interests, the plan was abandoned, although an unsuccessful effort was made to revive it in the spring of 1743. §

December 13, 1743, Joseph Gerrish, Henry Rolfe, and

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i. † Ibid., vol. iv., p. 217.
‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. iv. § Merrill's History of Amesbury, p. 206.

John Greenleaf were instructed "to buy land to set a gaol & work house upon & to provide materials &c for said buildings." *

February 4, 1743–4, they purchased a lot of land, four rods wide, on King street, now Federal street, Newburyport. May 15, 1750, the selectmen were ordered "to view the work house and see that it is properly finished." *

March 14, 1757–8, a committee was appointed to see whether a suitable addition could be made to the workhouse for the accommodation of the poor of the town, or whether, upon the whole, it would be more advantageous to buy another lot of land and erect a new building. This committee reported March twenty-seventh; and after some discussion another committee was appointed to purchase, for the use of the town, the dwelling-house of Caleb Moody on Cottle's lane, now Bromfield street, Newburyport.

May 23, 1758, a committee was chosen to sell to the county of Essex the prison house and land in Newbury, and purchase with the proceeds a building suitable for a workhouse for the accommodation of the poor.

For some reason unknown the dwelling-house on Cottle's lane was not purchased; and May 8, 1760, Thomas Woodbridge and Robert Roberts conveyed to the selectmen of Newbury half an acre of land on the southeast side of King street, now Federal street, Newburyport, and there the new workhouse was built.†

October 20, 1763, the town voted to build a small house in the rear of the workhouse for the insane.

COURT OF COMMON PLEAS AND GENERAL SESSIONS.

Under the charter granted by King William and Queen Mary in 1691, courts of justice were established in every county in the province of Massachusetts Bay. The fourth section of the thirty-third chapter of the Acts and Resolves of the General Court, passed November 25, 1692, provided that the Court of Common Pleas should be held "for the

* Town of Newbury Records. † Essex Deeds, book cxiv., p. 252.

county of Essex, at Salem, on the last Tuesdayes in June and December: at Ipswich, on the last Tuesday in March, and at Newbury on the last Tuesday in September." *

The first session of the court in Newbury was held in the meeting-house of the First parish September 26, 1693. The presiding judges were Hon. Bartholomew Gedney, of Salem, Hon. John Hawthorne, of Salem, Hon. Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, and Hon. Jonathan Corwine, of Salem.

A large number of criminal and civil cases were disposed of at this term of the court. The most important, from a local point of view, was an action of trespass brought by James and Richard Carr against Capt. Edward Sargent for carrying men and horses over the Merrimack river. The defendant stated in his answer that Capt. John March was the proper owner of the ferry, and that he was then in the king's service on the eastern frontier. The case was continued to the next inferior court in the county.†

All laws enacted in the province of Massachusetts Bay, under the charter of 1692, were submitted, in compliance with the provisions of that charter, to the King and Queen of England, or to their successors in office, for approval. Some exceptions were taken to the act passed November 25, 1692; and it was disallowed by the Privy Council August 22, 1695.

On the third day of October, 1696, the General Court revived and continued in force until the month of May following the act establishing courts of justice in the province. ‡ June 19, 1697, another act was passed, providing for the trial "of all matters and issues in fact arising or happening in any county or place within the province, by a jury of twelve men." § Both these acts were disallowed November 24, 1698.

On the twenty-sixth day of June, 1699, two acts, one appointing the times and places "for holding of courts of general sessions of the peace," and the other establishing "inferiour courts of common pleas in the several counties of the province," were passed by the General Court and ap-

* Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, vol. i., p. 73.
† Records of the Court of Common Pleas (Salem), vol. i., p. 286.
‡ Province Laws, vol. i., p. 248. § Ibid., 286.

proved by the governor. Under these acts courts were held "for the county of Essex, at Salem, on the last Tuesdays in June and December; at Newbury on the last Tuesday in September; and at Ipswich on the last Tuesday in March." *

No objections were raised by the Privy Council to the acts passed in 1699, re-establishing the courts of justice in the province; and no alteration in the time or place of meeting was made until January 28, 1764, when the town of Newburyport was incorporated, and "an act for erecting a part of the town of Newbury into a new town by the name of Newburyport" was passed, defining its powers and privileges and expressly providing

> ... That the inferior court of common pleas, and the court of general sessions of the peace, by law appointed to be held at Newbury on the last Tuesday of September annually, shall for the future be held in Newburyport on the last Tuesday of September annually and to all intents and purposes shall be considered as when held in the town of Newbury as aforesaid, any law to the contrary notwithstanding. †

WATCH-HOUSE AND JAIL.

For the detention of criminals or persons accused of disorderly conduct a watch-house was built at a very early date in Newbury. It was evidently located near the meeting-house. The selectmen were ordered April 8, 1673, to keep it in good repair. ‡

January 4, 1705–6, Capt. Henry Somerby, Capt. Stephen Greenleaf, Capt. Edward Sargent, and others were granted a lot of land "between y^e^ watch house & y^e^ meeting house pond joyning to Dr. Toppan's fence to sett up a stable w^ch^ they are to injoy during the Towns pleasure." ‡

January 29, 1706–7, the town voted "that there be a gaole or prison built in Newbury ... provided the county be at one half of the cost and charge." ‡

The jail was erected near the meeting-house, and was probably in use for thirty-five or forty years. The *News Letter*,

* Acts and Resolves, vol. i., pp. 367–370. † Ibid., vol. iv., p. 677.
‡ Town of Newbury Records.

published in Boston, under the date of August 31, 1725, says: —

> About midnight a company of rioters assembled on horseback and with crow bars broke the doors, bolts and locks of the gaol in Newbury and took off on spare horses Isaac Brown and Hugh Ditson charged with capital offences. Governor William Dummer offered a reward of fifty pounds for their apprehension.*

At the Court of General Sessions held at Salem July 9, 1734, Benjamin Marston, sheriff of Essex county, asked "for the better security of the prisoners" that a house for the jail-keeper might be erected near the jail in Newbury. The court ordered Nathaniel Coffin, Richard Kent, and Joseph Gerrish to ascertain what proportion of the cost of the proposed building the inhabitants of Newbury would pay.†

September 23, 1734, a committee was appointed by the town to select a suitable lot of land on which to build "a prison or house of correction"; and September 21, 1736, the judges of the Essex county courts were asked to give their consent "to the removal of the gaol now standing in Newbury" to a more convenient location, "in order that it may be made serviceable as a prison or house of correction." ‡ This plan, however, did not meet with favor, and was subsequently abandoned.

At the General Sessions of the court held at Salem the last Tuesday in December, 1743, the subject was again considered; and the court ordered the erection of a county jail and prison house "at or near the place where the old prison stands in Newbury." Col. Berry, Major Greenleaf, Joseph Gerrish, Henry Rolfe, and Thomas Rowell were appointed a committee to erect a strong and substantial building at a cost to the county of not more than one hundred and twenty-five pounds. §

February 7, 1743–4, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to grant "ye county of Essex so much of a piece of land as is needful for to build a prison upon and a house for the keeper

* Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 196.
† Court of General Sessions (Salem), 1726–44, p. 336.
‡ Town of Newbury Records.
§ Court of General Sessions (Salem), 1709–46.

of said prison & for a yarde, to be taken out of that piece of land which was purchased by y^e^ Towne of Newbury of M^r^ Anthony Sommerby as by a deed dated February y^e^ 4^th^, 1743 may appear. Said land is lying on y^e^ northerly side of & joyning to King street." *

The jail or prison was erected during the summer of 1744. On the twenty-third day of May, 1758, the selectmen of Newbury were authorized and instructed to sell all the town's right, title, and interest in the property on King street; and July 21, 1758, they conveyed to the county of Essex "the house adjoining the Prison which has been improved as a work house, also the land purchased of Anthony Somerby with all the buildings thereon." †

THE CURFEW.

October 18, 1700, the town appointed Col. Daniel Pierce and Tristram Coffin, Esq., a committee to procure a new bell, "of about four hundred pounds weight," for the First parish meeting-house.

January 4, 1705–6, "voted that the new bell be hanged in the turret of the meeting house with all convenient spede," also "that the bell be rung at nine of the clock every night and that the day of the month be every night tolled." ‡

May 14, 1707, the selectmen were authorized "to employ some suitable person to ring the nine o'clock bell this year." ‡

June 18, 1708, the town "voted that the nine a clock bell should be rung at nine of the clock precisely, nightly for the year ensuing." ‡

For the year 1711 the town employed Benjamin Morse "to ring the bell at nine o'clock every night, and sabbath days and lecture days." ‡

November 30, 1723, the selectmen paid Henry Lunt, 3d, for ringing the nine o'clock bell, five pounds.

In 1725, a meeting-house was erected, on what is now known as Market square, Newburyport, for the Third parish

* Town of Newbury Records. King street is now Federal street, Newburyport.
† Essex Deeds, book cv., p. 137; "Ould Newbury," p. 620.
‡ Town of Newbury Records.

in Newbury. At a parish meeting held May 23, 1727, a committee was appointed "to purchase a bell weighing about four hundred pounds"; and February 21, 1727–8, the assessors of the parish were authorized to agree with Ambrose Berry to ring the bell till the March meeting. March 19, 1727–8, it was "voted that the bell of the Third Parish be Rung at nine of the clock." *

Ambrose Berry, constable, in settlement with the selectmen of the town for the year 1730, is credited with five pounds "for ringing ye nine o'clock bell."

In 1731, the selectmen paid "£5 to Henry Lunt ye 3rd for ye nine o'clock bell."

The custom of ringing the nine o'clock bell is still continued in that part of Newbury which was set off in 1764, and incorporated as a new town by the name of Newburyport.

EARTHQUAKES.

During the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, earthquakes occurred with considerable frequency in the town of Newbury. Three years after the first settlers landed at Parker river a violent trembling and shaking of the earth surprised and alarmed them. June 1, 1638, the following statement was entered upon the town records: —

> Being this day assembled to treat or consult about the well ordering of the affairs of the towne about one of the clocke in the afternoone, the sunn shining faire, it pleased God suddenly to raise a vehement earthquake coming with a shrill clap of thunder issuing as is supposed out of the east, which shook the earth and the foundations of the house in a very violent manner to our great amazement and wonder, wherefore taking notice of so great and strange a hand of God's providence, we were desirous of leaving it on record to the view of after ages to the intent that all might take notice of Almighty God and feare his name.

Other earthquakes occurred March 5, 1642–3, January 26 and February 5, 1662–3, and February 8, 1684–5.

Rev. Mathias Plant noted, with considerable care and minuteness, in the early records of Queen Anne's Chapel,

* "Ould Newbury," p. 432.

many remarkable facts in relation to the numerous convulsions of nature, accompanied by a loud rumbling noise of apparently subterraneous origin, that occurred in the months of October, November, and December, 1727, and for the next fifty years the records contain frequent references to similar occurrences; but, so far as known, the damage resulting from the most severe of these earthquakes was comparatively slight and unimportant.*

THE OBSERVANCE OF SUNDAY AND HOLY DAYS.

November 4, 1646, the General Court ordered that any person living within the limits of the colony of Massachusetts Bay, who shall without just cause, neglect to attend public worship "shall forfeite for his absence from ev^ry such publicke meeting 5^sh.." †

Joseph Peasley, who was one of the early settlers of Newbury, removed to Salisbury in 1646 or soon after. October 19, 1658, he, with several other persons residing in that town, was ordered to appear at the General Court to answer to the charge of wilfully neglecting public worship on the Lord's day.‡ He disregarded the orders of the court, and continued to teach and exhort among his friends and neighbors in the new town of Salisbury, now Amesbury, Mass. He was censured and fined, and subsequently forbidden to preach within the limits of the colony. §

May 11, 1659, the General Court "ordered that whosever shall be found observing any such day as Christmas or the like, either by forbearing of labour, feasting, or any other way, upon any such accounts as aforesaid, every such person so offending shall pay for every such offence five shillings as a fine to the country." ‖ This law was not repealed until May 27, 1681. ¶

May 24, 1677, the constables of every town were ordered

* Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 197–199; Mrs. E. Vale Smith's History of Newburyport, pp. 51–55, 404.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 178.

‡ Ibid., vol. iv., part I., p. 351. § Ibid., p. 390. ‖ Ibid., p. 366.

¶ Ibid., vol. v., p. 322.

to make diligent search on every Lord's day in all suspected places where Quakers were supposed to meet for worship, and cause them to be apprehended and punished according to law.*

October 15, 1679, the selectmen or constables of Boston were authorized to set a guard at sunset on Saturday night, "to prevent any footman or horseman w^th^out such good account of the necessity of his business as may be to them satisfactory" from leaving the town.

. . . all persons attempting to ride or drive out of towne after sun sett w^th^out such reasonable sattisfaction given shall be apprehended & brought before authority to be proceeded against as Sabbath breakers; and all other townes are impowered to doe the like as need shalbe.†

This law was modified after the colonial charter was annulled and the province of Massachusetts Bay established; but travelling on the Lord's day was forbidden, and no person could pursue his journey that day beyond the nearest inn or place of shelter under a penalty of twenty shillings. ‡

Samuel Sewall, one of the judges of the Superior Court, having returned from a session of the court held at Portsmouth, was in Newbury Sunday, May 13, 1716. In his diary he wrote under that date: —

In the evening I had an inkling that two merchants came from Ipswich. I said, How shall I do to avoid Fining them? I examined Richard Gerrish. As I understood him they lodg'd at Major Epes's on Saturday night, and went to the publick worship there: and when the afternoon Exercise was over, came to Newbury. They Travailed not in service Time: and had a ship at Portsmouth ready to sail which wanted their Dispatch. Alleg'd that M^r^ Peter La Blond was gone sick to Bed. I took his word to speak with me in the morning. I consulted with Col. Thomas who inclined to admonish them as young and strangers and let them go.

The following day he wrote: —

By long and by late I spake with M^r^ Richard Gerrish, Jun^r^ and Mr. Peter La Blond by whom I understood they were at Mr Wigglesworths in the morning and at Ipswich Meeting in the Afternoon. Being in a strait, I had pray'd to God to direct. I considered Col.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 134. † Ibid., p. 239.
‡ Province Laws, vol. i., p. 58.

Thomas was not a Justice there: that this Profanation of the Sabbath was very great; and the Transgressors fleeting from Town to Town and County to County could rarely be Censured. On the other hand they were young, Mr. La Blond's mother my neighbour, Mr. Gerrish had a smell of Relation; both of them of another Province; and I fear'd lest my Cousin's Custom might be lessn'd by it. because I had the Information from her Husband, whose wife, my Cousin, was a Gerrish, and cousin to this Rich[d] Gerrish, only Child of Capt Rich[d] Gerrish of the Bank. Mr. La Blond apear'd brisk as if he ail'd nothing. I came to this Resolution that if they would make such a submission as this I would let them pass: viz; We do acknowledge our Transgressions of the Law in Travailing upon the Lord's Day, May 13, 1716 and do promise not to offend in the like kind hereafter, as witness our Hands.

RICHARD GERRISH.
PETER LA BLOND.

This offer they rejected with some Disdain and Mr. La Blond paid me a 30[s] and 10[s] Bill of Credit for both their Fines. I immediately paid it to Samuel Moodey Selectman of Newbury (they have no Town Treasurer). . . .

All fines and penalties imposed and collected under this law of the province were to be used for the benefit and relief of the poor of the town where the offence was committed, "and delivered into the hands of the selectmen or overseers of the poor for that end."

At the Superior Court at Ipswich, May 19, Judge Sewall wrote: —

Here Mr. Hern informs me that Gerrish and La Blond went from Platt's at Salem on the Lord's Day morn; He spake to them against it; They said they could but pay 5[s]. Ferryman told me Two were carried over about the time of going to meeting. Crompton informs me that they were at his house, and went not to meeting at Ipswich: went away late in the Afternoon: So that they Travail'd 22 Miles or more that day. I hope God heard my Prayer, and directed me to do Right and accepted me.*

SLAVES AND SLAVEHOLDERS.

Negroes and Indians were held in servitude and recognized as property in the colony and in the province of Massachusetts Bay until the close of the Revolutionary war and the adoption of the State constitution in 1780.

* Diary of Samuel Sewall, vol. iii., pp. 81–83.

In Newbury, the number of slaves was never very large; but as early as December 29, 1649, William Hilton conveyed and assigned "James my Indian & all y^e^ interest I have in him" to George Carr in payment for one-quarter part of a vessel. Abraham Tappan, John Bond, and Edmund Greenleaf were witnesses to the bill of sale to which "James y^e^ Indian" gave his consent by affixing his mark.*

Capt. Paul White, who died July 22, 1679, owned "one negrow," valued by the appraisers of his estate at thirty pounds.

Subsequently many other inhabitants of the town, engaged in agricultural, industrial, or mercantile pursuits, found it convenient to employ slave labor, and frequently imported negro servants from the Barbadoes or other islands in the West Indies.

The inventory of the estate of Henry Rolfe, taken in the month of April, 1711, has the following item: "An old negroe man valued at £10." In the settlement of the estate of Moses Gerrish "an Indian Slave" is valued at twenty pounds. Similar items are frequently found in old books of account as well as in wills and deeds of conveyance, recorded previous to the year 1780.†

Cutting Noyes sold to Richard Kelly, of Newbury, January 15, 1713, "a Spanish ingon boy named Sesor by our judgmente under 10 yers old" for the sum of thirty-eight pounds.‡

Joshua Bayley, Sr., of Newbury, in his will dated June fifteenth and proved August 6, 1722, gave to his negro servant, Robert, several lots of land and also his freedom:

> Said Robert shall not be sould or be disposed of to any person, but said Robert shall faithfully serve my said wife Elizabeth during the term of her natural life, and after Her Decease said Robert shall have his freedom, and Injoy said Real Estate during the term of his natural life. . . . And as concerning my Black Servant Robert, I do give him a surname and that is freeman, so that his name is Robert freeman.§

* Norfolk County Records (Salem), book ii., leaf 197.

† Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 336–339.

‡ Coffin Papers (Essex Institute, Salem) vol. i., pp. 61-76.

§ Probate Records (Salem), book cccxiii., p. 487; Essex Antiquarian, vol. v., p. 123.

November 4, 1725, Jonathan Poore sold "to Mr Richard Kelly a nagrow man called Reuben" for one hundred pounds in "Billes of Credet." *

Rev. Matthias Plant, minister at Queen Anne's Chapel, in his will dated February 25, 1751, and proved May 7, 1753, makes the following bequest: —

I give unto my negro garl Luce all but seventeen acres of a lott of Land laid out to the original right of James George, called the great Farms in Almsbury [now in New Town, N.H.]. I also give her her Freedom after the Decease of my widow Lydia Plant. But my will is that my negro garl Luce shal not come into possession of said Land untill the decease of my said widow, But my said widow shal have the Improvement and profit of it During the term of her natural life in as full and ample a manner as if I had made no Bequest of said land to sd negro garl Luce. Moreover if said widw Lydia Plant shall Declare before three or four Indifrent persons of good ability and understanding, or give a sartificat in writing from under her own Hand (or if she does not give it from under her hand but sais nothing against her) That the said negro garl Luce hath in all Fidelity, from time to time, both in Word and Deed behaved herself very respectfully and Dutifully as an Honist and faithful servant. she ye sd Luce shal be Intitled to the above Privelidge & Bequest. But on the contrary if her behaver be disonist, stubourn to what she ought to be to me or her sd mistres, then this my Bequest of freedom and Land given to her & her assigns shal be void and of none effect, and the said Luce in this case shal be my sd widws and she shal Dispose of her at her own Discresion Tho I would not have my sd widw make a slave of her if she should be gilty of some common fallings, but such faults shall be lookt over. But in case my negro garl Luce should forfet her rite to her freedom and Land which I have Bequested her, Then in that case I. give and Bequeath the same to and for the use of the minister of Queen Ann's Chapel, in Newbury, for the time being: and I give it By the name of Gleeb Lands.

Lydia Plant, widow of Rev. Matthias Plant, in her will dated September 29, 1753, and proved October 22, 1753, gave her negroes, "Robin and Lucy," their freedom, and liberty also to live for four years in the house that she owned and occupied at the time of her decease, with the use of household utensils, beds, sheets, blankets, etc.

Samuel Morgaridge, shipwright, in his will dated October 30, 1753, proved April 8, 1754, gave his wife the use of the

* Coffin Papers (Essex Institute, Salem), vol. i., pp. 61, 76.

dwelling-house where he then lived, and the service of negro Peter "if he behaves well." The executors of his will were authorized to let, sell, or use his negroes Primus and Lucy; "also to sell my negroe Peter if he proves unruly and disobedient to my wife." In the inventory of his estate "three negroes" were valued at £133, 6*s*. 8*d*.

At the close of the year 1754 there were thirty-four male and sixteen female slaves in Newbury sixteen years of age and upwards, according to the census taken by order of the governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay.*

January 29, 1765, Mary Morgaridge, widow, sold to Enoch Sawyer, of Newbury, physician, her life interest in the dwelling-house bequeathed to her by the will of her late husband, Samuel Morgaridge, and also "a molat man called Peter, and a negro woman called Luce." †

The following items are credited in her account as executrix filed March 12, 1765: ‡ —

Received for negro Primus	£31.12. 0
For the use of Primus for eight years .	37. 6. 8
For the use of Negro Lucy	5. 0. 0
Negro Peter valued at	44. 8.10
Negro for use of children	44. 8.10

Sarah, widow of John Weed, gave a bond for fifty pounds to the selectmen of Newbury, September 22, 1768, as security for the support of her negro "Joel," in case he was unable to support himself after he was given his freedom.§

Marriages were not uncommon among the slaves of Newbury, and were usually recorded in manner and form substantially as follows: —

October 13, 1749 married Scipio negroe servant of Mr Samuel Moody, Junr of Newbury, and Rose negroe servant of Mr Benja Harris of Newbury.‖

October 24, 1754 married John & Elizabeth servants of Mr Henry Rolfe.‖

June 20, 1779 md Cambridge servant to Col Little & Cate, servant of Mrs Hannah Sawyer widow both of Newby.‖

* Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Second Series, vol. iii., p. 95.

† Essex Deeds, book cxv., leaf 163.

‡ Probate Records (Salem), book ccexlii., p. 62.

§ Essex Institute Historical Collections, vol. xxxv., p. 157; also, "Ould Newbury," p. 137.

‖ First Parish (Church) Records.

Two articles in the warrant for a town meeting to be held August 8, 1775, read as follows: —

Article 3. To see if the town will signify by their vote their Disapprobation of Slavery, or of keeping slaves, and, if voted, then

Article 4. To see if the Town by their vote will instruct their Representative to use his utmost Endeavors in the General Court that all Slaves in this Colony may be set at Liberty.*

No definite action was taken by the legal voters of Newbury at that date. When the articles were reached in the order of business, they were, in the words of the record, "dismissed."

Rev. Moses Parsons, who was settled as minister in Byfield parish, June 20, 1744, was the owner of three slaves,— two men and one woman. He was a faithful and devoted pastor; but during the last years of his life he was involved in a controversy with one of the deacons of his church, Benjamin Colman, who bitterly opposed the holding of men and women in bondage, and publicly asserted that "Mr Parsons was guilty of the wicked practice of man stealing."

Several communications were published in the newspapers of the day by Deacon Colman, condemning in vigorous language the buying and selling of slaves; and December 21, 1780, the parish voted to suspend him "from the fellowship and communion of the church till he does by repentance and confession give christian satisfaction for the offence he has committed."

October 26, 1785, two years after the death of Rev. Mr. Parsons, Deacon Colman acknowledged that in his controversy with the late worthy minister of the parish he had urged "his arguments against the slavery of the Africans with excessive vehemence and asperity"; and he was thereupon restored to membership in the church, and reappointed to the office of deacon.†

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 340–350, inclusive; also, Memoir of Chief Justice Parsons by his son, Theophilus Parsons, pp. 17–19.

GRIST-MILLS, WIND-MILLS, AND SAW-MILLS.

At the close of the year 1685 there were three grist-mills and one oatmeal or malt mill in the town of Newbury, but they were evidently overcrowded with work; and March 16, 1685–6, "The Towne being sensable of y^e^ great want of another corn mill they did by a vote desire Cap^t^ Daniell Peirce, Cap^t^ Thomas Noyes, Ensign Nath^l^ Clark, Mr. Richard Dole and Samuell Plumer, at y^r^ owne charg to view such place or places as may be most convenient for y^e^ setting up of a Mill; as also to treat w^th^ such persons that may be damnified thereby, and to bring report to y^e^ Towne." *

January 5, 1686–7, a committee was appointed "to treat with Peter Cheney about setting up a corne mill and a fulling mill upon the Falls river." *

Peter Cheney, who purchased of John Bishop the mill near Four Rock bridge on Little river in 1663, proposed, February 15, 1686–7, "to build and maintaine a good and sufficient grist or corn mill within two years, and a fulling mill within three yeares at ye upper falls [Quascacunquen river] and to full ye townes cloth on the same terms that Mr. John Pearson † doth full cloth, and resign up his interest in Little river on condition that the town give him fifty acres of land joyning to Falls river." ‡

This proposal was accepted by the town. December 25, 1689, "Peter Cheney was allowed one year longer in which to finish his fulling mill." After his decease a portion of the land, with the buildings thereon, was sold to Benjamin Pearson, who was engaged in the manufacture of woollen goods in that locality until his death in 1731. For nearly a century after that date the business was continued by the children and grandchildren of Mr. Pearson, and the property still remains in the possession of his lineal descendants. §

In 1688, the building of another grist-mill on Little river

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Mr. John Pearson had a fulling mill, and carried on the clothier's trade at or near the present location of the Glen Mills, Rowley.

‡ Town of Newbury Records; also, Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 18.

§ "Ould Newbury," pp. 301–303.

was authorized by the town; but for various reasons the work was delayed, and the mill was not completed until six or eight years later.

May 25, 1688 The Towne Grants theyre interest in the stream of the Little River to the mouth of it whear it vents into the great River to Henry Short for to build a Grist Mill uppon for the Townes use provided he build it in such place as may Answer the Townes end & grind theyr corne for them from time to time, provided he build it within one yeare, and if he do not build it he is to pay to the Towne five pounds & the Towne to have theyre interest in the streame again. The Mill to be set at the cart place or at the mouth of the River.*

December 26, 1689 The Towne having now relinquished any former obligation of Henry Short to the Towne uppon ye account of Building a Mill not by him performed Do hereby give, grant and empower all theyr right, title & interest in the stream of the Little River to Henry Short his heyrs and Assigns so long as he his heyrs & assigns shall build and maintain a sufficient corne mill for the Townes use and to grind for the Towne of Newbury before any other Towne. But provided through defect of the Dam or Mill the said Mill should faile of grinding for the Townes use the above said stream shall not be forfeited provided it faile not a yeare or two.*

March 10, 1695–6, Granted to Henry Short thirty five acres of land towards the building of his mill to be laid out in the comon land of Newbury.*

August 11, 1708, John Short sold to Lieut. Jeremiah Pearson, of Rowley, nine acres of land on the easterly side of Little river, "together with ye dwelling house and ye grist mill standing on said River" and the water privilege, "as it was granted to my honored father Henry Short late of Newbury deceased at a meeting of the inhabitants of the town held Dec. 26, 1689." †

Mr. Silas Pearson, a descendant of Lieut. Jeremiah Pearson, owned the mill and two other grist-mills, with an unfinished saw-mill, when they were all destroyed by fire June 12, 1813.‡

Subsequently, a new mill was built by Mr. Silas Pearson about one hundred rods farther to the westward on the same stream. January 15, 1831, he petitioned the General Court

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Essex Deeds, vol. xxxii., p. 204.
‡ Newburyport Herald, June 15, 1813.

to legalize the removal of his mill and dam, "doubts having arisen whether he had a right to remove his said Dam and Mill without the consent of the Legislature." *

"An act to confirm Silas Pearson in the location of his Dam across Little River in the town of Newbury . . . for the purpose of retaining water to carry a tide mill, agreeably to a grant from the said town (in the year 1689) in as full and ample a manner as if the said dam had been erected by the authority of this court," was passed March fourteenth, and approved by the governor March 15, 1831.

In 1843, the property was sold to Mr. James B. Knight, who operated a grist-mill there until the close of the year 1874.

WINDMILL AT FROG POND.

"July 9, 1703 Ensign Stephen Jaques, M^r^ Benjamin Woodbridge, & Henry Jaques petitioned the Towne to grant them a suteable piece of land to sett a windmill on that Hill neere penuel Titcombs." This petition was granted, "Provided when the windmill fails or is unservisable the land shall returne to the Towne w^th^in three years after the failure of s^d^ mill if a windmill be not rebuilt againe w^th^in s^d^ time." †

This mill was built near the southeasterly end of Frog pond, and was probably used for the grinding of corn and wheat until 1774, when the slight eminence on which it stood was graded to a level with the land in that vicinity, and made available as a training field.‡

March 29, 1771, Abraham Larkin was crushed to death while examining the machinery in the top of this windmill.§

SAW-MILL AT INDIAN RIVER.

For ten or fifteen years after the division of the upper commons Indian river was navigable for small boats. In 1706, perhaps earlier, a temporary dam was built at the mouth of the river, and a saw-mill erected there.

* See advertisement of petition in Newburyport Herald, January 18, 1831.
† Town of Newbury Records.
‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 610–612.
§ Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 239.

November 26, 1686, the proprietors of the common lands in Newbury voted "that Indian River shall be free so far as the tide flows for passing & repassing of Boates and Canoos at all times: it is to be accounted a highway free for all men to transport by water." *

October 30, 1706, the proprietors authorized the selectmen to lay out a highway on the westerly side of Joseph Knight's lot, and at the same meeting voted to employ "Serjeant Joseph Pike to build a bridge over Indian river near his saw mill." †

"The highway near Indian river running four rods wide to Joseph Pike's mill and thence over the river below said mill" was laid out by the selectmen November 1, 1706.‡

Joseph Pike, having given an obligation to build the bridge near his saw-mill, "he was released from the conditions of his obligation provided he agrees to repair all damage at his own cost that may happen to said bridge by reason of his impounding the water above it." §

At a meeting of the proprietors of Newbury, held June 18, 1707, he was granted "the liberty of hanging two gates one at the upper end of the way" near the Bradford road, and the "other is to be hung near the mouth of Indian River across the s^{d} Riv^{r}, y^{e} last s^{d} Gate to be so conveniently hung y^{t} it may open wth the flood & shut wth the ebb." ‖

SAW-MILL AT CART CREEK.

March 9, 1707–8, Edmund Goodridge and John Noyes, jr., petitioned the proprietors for liberty to set up a saw-mill on Cart creek. The committee appointed to view the place made a favorable report, and the petition was granted June 22, 1708.¶

MILLS AT PINE ISLAND.

January 13, 1756–7, the town granted Nathaniel Lunt, Benjamin Rolfe, Jonathan Plumer, and Stephen Ilsley liberty to erect a grist-mill and saw-mill at Pine Island creek on certain

* Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 15.
† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 173.
‡ Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 29.
§ Town of Newbury Records.
‖ "Ould Newbury," p. 341.
¶ Ibid., p. 32.

conditions, the grantees giving bonds to save the town harmless from damage arising from the overflowing of the banks or meadows on said creek.*

September 10, 1760, Nathaniel Lunt sold to Benjamin Rolfe and Stephen Ilsley "all his right title and interest in the mills lately erected at the Landing Place at Pine Island Creek." †

The half-tone print on the opposite page gives a view of the landing-place as it now appears. A mill-stone, formerly used for the grinding of corn, is the only memorial left of the mills that were destroyed by fire December 5, 1797.

DISTILLERIES AND MALT-HOUSES.

Cattle-raising, farming, and fishing were the most prominent industries in Newbury fifty years after its first settlement; but, in addition to the saw and grist mills, of which mention has already been made, several distilleries and malt-houses were in operation.

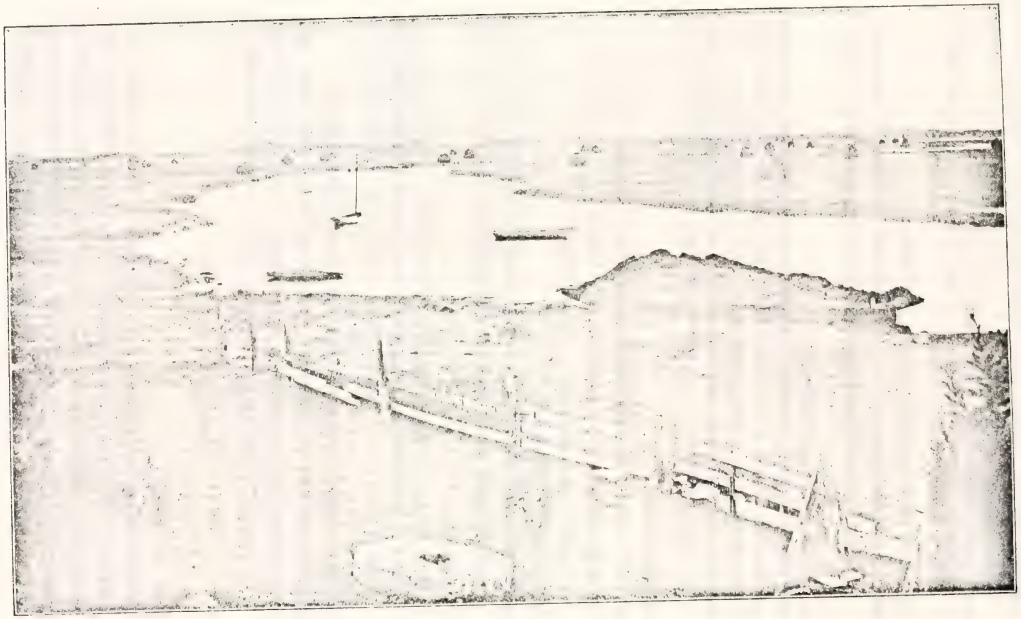
August 25, 1653, Edmund Greenleaf sold a dwelling-house and one acre of land, with a still-house and the fixtures connected therewith, to Capt. Paul White.‡

In 1662, the Court of General Sessions at Salem licensed Capt. Paul White "to still strong waters for a yeare and sell by the quart"; and March 5, 1677, he petitioned the town of Newbury "for about a rod of land at the hanging of the hill before his still-house on the street." ‡

Col. Daniel Pierce had two or more malt-houses on land at the southeasterly corner of Chandler's lane, now Federal street, and the way by Merrimack river, now Water street, Newburyport, previous to the year 1700,§ and on the northwesterly corner of the same streets or highways Caleb Moody built a malt-house as early as 1673.‖ In 1692, James Ordway, sr., owned a dwelling-house and malt-house on the northwesterly corner of Ordway's lane (now Market street) and the way near the river, now Merrimack street, Newburyport.¶

At a later date other malt-houses and distilleries were estab-

*Town of Newbury Records. † Essex Deeds, book cxi., p. 23.
‡"Ould Newbury," p. 177. § Ibid., p. 123. ‖ Ibid., p. 149. ¶ Ibid., p. 307.



LANDING PLACE AT PINE ISLAND.

lished. May 18, 1738, the selectmen of Newbury, with Henry Rolfe and Charles Pierce, justices of the peace, granted Joseph Lunt, jr., "liberty to erect a still house on the corner of Thomas Moodeys lane by the end of his Malt house for the distilling of strong liquors." * This grant was recorded August 24, 1738.

LIME-KILNS AND ROPEWALKS.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century the tanning of leather was well established, ship-building was carried on quite extensively, and a large and profitable trade had been developed between Newbury and the West India islands.

> This Summer [1697] Ensign James Noyes hath happily discovered a Boddy of Marble at Newbury, within half a mile of the navigable part of Little River; by which means very good Lime is made within the Province.†

Several kilns were built for the burning of lime within the limits of the town, and for many years the business was prosperous and profitable.‡

Cordage was probably manufactured in Newbury previous to 1748. John Crocker, in a petition presented March 8, 1747–8, to the inhabitants of the town, makes the following statement: —

> Whereas his present occupation of Rope making has been found for time past very beneficial not only for the sea faring business of this Towne but also as thereby many poor people are imployed he therefore asks permission to set up a rope walk between Abiel Somerby's land and the windmill for such a term of years as they [the freeholders of the town] shall think proper.§

The petition was granted; and the selectmen were authorized to lay out the land for the purpose designated, the petitioner to have the use of it for ten years.‖

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Phænomena quædam Apocalyptica, etc., or, The New Heaven and the New Earth, by Samuel Sewall, first edition (1697), p. 60, in Boston Public Library.

‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 421–423.

§ Town of Newbury Records, p. 74.

‖ "Ould Newbury," pp. 610, 611. In 1803, there were five cordage manufactories in Newbury, employing from forty to fifty men and boys, and producing annually from two to three hundred tons of cordage, valued at about $70,000 (History of Newburyport, by Caleb Cushing, p. 88).

From 1724 to 1737, Capt. Crocker was master of a vessel that made many voyages between Boston and London. He was a member of Christ Church, Boston, and married, April 12, 1727, Mary, daughter of Thomas and Mehitable Savage, of that town.* He removed to Newbury in 1737, probably. "Elizabeth, daughter of Capt John Crocker & Mary his wife," was baptized by Rev. Matthias Plant August 8, 1737. Capt. Crocker was one of the wardens of Queen Anne's Chapel in 1739 and a vestryman in 1740. He was afterwards a prominent member of St. Paul's Church, and was annually elected to the office of warden or vestryman of that church from 1743 to 1753. He died March 19, 1763, and was buried in St. Paul's churchyard, then in Newbury, now within the limits of the city of Newburyport.

The Massachusetts Gazette, published in Boston, April 7, 1763, contains the following obituary notice: —

Newbury March 19, 1763 This Day died here in the 71st year of his Age Capt John Crocker a gentleman that was well known in the town of Boston where he formerly lived and was many years in the London Trade. He was universally beloved and esteemed for his re-markable Honesty and good Nature, and other amiable Qualities. The memory of the Just is blessed.

HAY SCALES.

Ponderous scales for weighing hay, grain, and other heavy merchandise were erected at a very early date near the centre of the town, on Fish street, now State street, Newburyport.

May 23, 1753 the town granted liberty to Samuel Titcomb and John Harris to build a substantial engine to weigh hay, to stand where the old engine stood near the head of Fish street.†

A petition, signed by James Knight and others, "inhabitants of Newbury," for liberty to erect hay-scales on the highway, nearly opposite the town-house, at the head of Muzzey's lane, now Marlborough street, was granted March 13, 1758–9.‡

* Rev. Anson Titus, of Tufts College, who has given much attention to genealogical research, says that Thomas Savage was a goldsmith by trade; that he was for many years in Barbadoes, but subsequently came to Newbury, where he died August 23, 1749. His grave and the grave of his wife "Mehitable," who died June 6, 1737, are in the Old Hill Burying ground, Newburyport.

† Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), p. 94. ‡ Ibid., p. 117.

MANUFACTURE OF COMBS.

The manufacture of combs was established in Newbury in 1759 by Mr. Enoch Noyes. The business is still carried on successfully in West Newbury and in Newburyport.*

THE INCORPORATION OF NEWBURYPORT.

June 10, 1763, a petition, signed by William Atkins, Daniel Farnham, Michael Dalton, Thomas Woodbridge, Patrick Tracy, and many other inhabitants of Newbury, living at or near the water side between Cottle's lane, now Bromfield street, Newburyport, and the dividing line of the Fifth parish, now Oakland street, Newburyport, was presented to the General Court, asking that a portion of the town of Newbury might be set off and incorporated as a separate town.

Many reasons why this request should be granted were stated in the petition. Considerable emphasis was laid upon the fact that the farming population persistently opposed any and all measures advocated by "the merchants, traders and mechanics" living at the water side; that the petitioners were obliged to provide fire engines at their own cost, for the protection of their property; that there were no fixed and stated schools, but only movable ones, and no public schoolhouses within the limits of the proposed new town; that there was no town treasurer, the selectmen serving in that capacity in violation of the law of the province; that the taxes were illegally assessed; and also that the new townhouse on Fish street, now State street, lately built by some of the petitioners, with the aid and consent of the courts of Essex county, had not been used by the town on account of complaints and objections to its location.

The General Court ordered "that the town clerk of Newbury be served with a copy of the petition, and the inhabitants be notified to appear on the second Tuesday of the next sitting of the Court to show cause why the prayers of the petitioners should not be granted."†

* Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 225.

† Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, vol. iv., p. 698.

On the twenty-eighth day of January, 1764, the General Court passed "an act for erecting part of the town of Newbury into a new town by the name of Newburyport," which was approved by Francis Bernard, governor of the province, February 4, 1764. The first section of this act gives the bounds and limits of the new town as follows: —

Where As the Town of Newbury is very large, and the Inhabitants of that Part of it who dwell by the Water-side there, as it is commonly called, are mostly Merchants, Traders, and Artificers, and the Inhabitants of the other Parts of the Town are chiefly Husbandmen, by means where of many Difficulties and Disputes have arisen in managing their publick Affairs:

Be it enacted by the Governor, Council and House of Representatives, That that Part of the Town of Newbury, and the Inhabitants thereof included within the following Line: namely, begining at Merrimack River, against the North-easterly End of the Town way Commonly called Cottle's Lane, and running as the said Lane doth on the easterly side of it, to the highway commonly called High Street; and so westerly as the said highway runs, on the northerly side thereof, till it comes to a town way known by the name of Fish Street; and thence southwesterly as the way goes, and on the easterly side thereof, leading by Benjamin Moodey's to a place called the West Indies, until it intersects a streight line drawn from the southerly side of the highway against Cottle's Lane aforesaid, to a rock in the great pasture near the dividing line between the third and fifth parishes there; and so as the said streight line goes, until it comes to the dividing line aforesaid; and from thence as the said dividing line runs, by the said fifth parish, down to the Merrimack River, and thence, along said river to the place first mentioned,— be and hereby are constituted and made a [separate and] distinct Town by the name of Newburyport, and vested and endowed with all the Powers, Priviledges and Immunities that the Inhabitants of any of the Towns within this Province do or ought by Law to enjoy; save that they shall have the Right of chusing and sending from time to time but one Person to represent them in the Great and General Court of this Province.*

The act provided, also, that only one representative should be elected annually from the remaining part of the town of Newbury; that the boundary lines between the several parishes should remain as heretofore by law established; that public buildings and other public property should be equitably

* Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, vol. iv., p. 676.

divided, accounts adjusted, and settlement made according to the valuation fixed by the last tax levy.

June 6, 1765, the inhabitants of Newbury appointed a committee to confer with a committee from Newburyport in regard to the value of the public buildings, within the limits of Newbury, belonging to the inhabitants of both towns; and March 11, 1766, this committee was authorized to demand and receive from the town of Newburyport all sums due in settlement of claims to that date.*

The dividing-line between Newbury and Newburyport can be traced on the map on page 239, beginning at the point marked M on the Merrimack river, thence running to the point marked T, thence to S, thence to K, thence to L, and thence by the Merrimack river to the bound begun at.

* Town of Newbury Records.

CHAPTER V.

1765–1902.

After the incorporation of Newburyport the inhabitants of Newbury voted, September 19, 1764, to hold the next annual town meeting in Rev. Moses Hale's meeting-house in the Second parish, "provided the inhabitants of that parish consent thereto." *

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the Second parish, held October 16, 1764, liberty to use the meeting-house for the transaction of public business, "in the month of March next," was granted without debate.† The annual meetings of the town were held there until May 19, 1767, when it was voted "that, hereafter, the town house in the first parish shall be the place of meeting until further orders." *

March 8, 1768, the subject was again under consideration; and the town voted that "the next annual meeting shall be held in the second parish." The town-house at this time was very much out of repair, and repeated efforts were made to improve its condition. Votes passed at one meeting, authorizing the selectmen to make the necessary repairs, were reconsidered and declared null and void a few weeks later.

March 13, 1770, the town voted that hereafter, until otherwise ordered, "one half the town meetings shall be held in the second parish." March 10, 1772, the inhabitants again assembled in the town-house; but, after choosing a moderator, they voted to adjourn to the meeting-house in the First parish, where the regular order of business was taken up and disposed of. Subsequently, town meetings were held alternately in the First parish and the Second parish meeting-houses until March 10, 1818, when the inhabitants were notified to meet in the Newburyport Academy, then within

* Town of Newbury Records. † Second Parish Records, p. 139.

the limits of the town of Newbury, the old town-house having been sold at public auction to John Mycall, Esq., in 1780.*

At a meeting held in the academy April 6, 1818, a committee was chosen to select a suitable place for a town-house; and a few weeks later land owned by Dudley A. Tyng, Esq., at the corner of the Bradford road and the way to the Amesbury ferry, now in Newburyport, was purchased, and the building of a new town-house decided upon. June 18, 1818, the legal voters of the town were summoned to attend a meeting to be held in the Second parish meeting-house, "to see if they will suspend building the town house until the determination of the Legislature is known respecting the division of the town." †

At this meeting 229 votes were cast in favor and 309 against discontinuing the work; but in the month of July following, at a meeting held in the Newburyport Academy, the town voted to reconsider its action in regard to building a town-house in the Fourth parish, and decided that it should be erected in the First parish between the head of Greenleaf's lane, now State street, and the toll-house on the Newburyport turnpike. October 1, 1818, the selectmen were authorized by an unanimous vote (241 persons voting in favor of the motion and no one opposing it) to purchase a lot of land near the turnpike, owned by Moses Brown, and to remove from the Fourth parish to this land all the lumber and other materials that could be used in the construction of a town-house.

The building was completed during the following winter, and March 9, 1819, the inhabitants of Newbury assembled for the first time in the new town-house, and continued to meet there annually until April 17, 1851, when the General Court ordered that a portion of the town of Newbury, including the town-house, should be set off and annexed to the town of Newburyport.‡

*"Ould Newbury," pp. 198–200, 649.

†Town of Newbury Records, also Essex Deeds, book ccxvii., p. 204.

‡The town-house is still standing nearly opposite the entrance to the Oak Hill Cemetery. For several years it was used by the city of Newburyport for the accommodation of the pupils of the Brown High school. It was afterwards sold and converted into a dwelling-house.

During the next two or three years public meetings were held in the high-school building near the First parish meeting-house and at the vestry in Pearson's Mills village. March 20, 1854, the selectmen were authorized to purchase a lot of land and build a town-house in the farms district between the estates of Luther Noyes and John N. Kent. The first meeting in this new town-house was held November 13, 1854.

PRIVATE AND PUBLIC CONVEYANCES.

Heavy carts for the transportation of merchandise and agricultural products, drawn by oxen or horses, were in use in Newbury as early as 1670, and perhaps earlier; but men and women, travelling for business or pleasure, went on foot or rode on horseback. Carriages or coaches for the transportation of passengers were considered a costly luxury in the province of Massachusetts Bay previous to the year 1700. Jonathan Wardell set up the first hackney coach in Boston in 1712.*

The improvement in roads, and the gradual increase of wealth in the province, led to the introduction of the calash, a low, two-wheeled carriage, with a top that could be thrown back or raised at pleasure, drawn by one horse. The passenger chair, or chaise, having two, sometimes four, wheels, came into use about the same time. Sulkies and gigs, for carrying a single person, soon followed. At a later date the curricle, a two-wheeled carriage, with seats for three or four persons, drawn by two horses, was a popular conveyance on long lines of public travel.

Judge Sewall, having sailed in the sloop "Samuel and Hannah" from Boston for York, was forced by head winds to land at Marblehead. In his diary, under the date of May 13, 1718, he wrote: "Went to Salem in a Calash my Bro^r provided. From thence with the Post got to Newbury that night." †

For the better accommodation of travellers the General

* Memorial History of Boston, vol. ii. (note), p. 452.
† Diary of Samuel Sewall, vol. iii., p. 184.

Court ordered, June 23, 1718, "that at Charlestown, Winnisimmet [Chelsea] Salem and Newbury ferries there be henceforth provided and kept on each side of the water, by the ferry men of the respective ferries, a pair of planked trucks of a sufficient breadth for the Safe and more convenient passing of coaches, colashes, horses and cattle, in and out of the ferry boats, on penalty of ten shillings for every three months neglect," etc.*

In 1737, a tax of thirty shillings per annum on the owner of a coach or chaise having four wheels, and twenty shillings per annum on the owner of a chaise, calash, or chair having two wheels, was imposed by order of the General Court. A memorandum on the fly-leaf of the records of the town of Newbury gives the names of some of the persons taxable under this law, as follows: —

Joseph Atkins, chaise, May 26, 1738.

Lieut Joseph Pike, calash, June 12, 1738.

Edmund Greenleaf ordered his new chaise to be entered July, 1738.

Joseph Moulton informed the town clerk that he owned a chaise July 31, 1739.

Lieut John Emery, chaise, March 20, 1739–40.

Benjamin Moody paid for his chaise for one year past twenty shillings, March 24, 1739–40.

Rev. Matthias Plant, minister at Queen Anne's Chapel, noted in his memorandum, or account book, the following items: —

Aug. 12, 1748 I pd Jacob Chaice for painting my chair 1.10.0.

Aug. 25, 1748 pd Pearson for oil & paint for chair 0.17.0

He also acknowledged at a subsequent date the receipt of ten shillings for the use of his chair, or chaise, from Newbury to Boston and return.

From the tavern kept by John Stavers in Portsmouth the first stage, or passenger chair, with two horses, and capable of carrying four persons besides the driver, started on Monday, April 20, 1761, for Boston, passing through Newbury on the way, returning in season to reach Portsmouth Friday night. For many years this stage continued to make one trip every

* Province Laws, vol. ii., p. 102.

week to Boston and back, leaving Portsmouth, however, on Tuesday instead of Monday, and returning on the Saturday following. Bartholomew Stavers, brother of John Stavers, published in May, 1763, the following notice: —

THE PORTSMOUTH FLYING STAGE COACH

Is now finished, which will Carry Six persons inside: runs with four or six horses: each person to pay 13s 6d to Boston and 4s 6d to Newbury. Sets out from the sign of the Earl of Halifax, every Tuesday morning between 7 and 8 o'clock, goes thro' Newbury to Boston, and will put up at inns on the road where good entertainment and attendance are provided for the passengers in the coach. The subscriber, Master of the Stage coach, is to be spoke with from Saturday night to Monday night, at Mr. John Stavers', innholder, at the Sign of the Earl of Halifax.

BARTHOLOMEW STAVERS.*

In 1774, the following advertisement appeared in the Massachusetts Gazette: —

STAVERS STAGE COACH

NUMBER ONE

Continues to ply from Portsmouth to Boston with FOUR HORSES equal to any in America: sets out from Portsmouth on Tuesday mornings, reaches Boston next Day: Leaves Boston Friday mornings reaches Portsmouth next day, at said Staver's House, where is good accommodations for Carriages and Horses. He takes Care and provides good Drivers. His Carriages for twelve years have never been overset nor Passengers met with any Hurt.

N.B. Such as want a Passage from Boston are desired to apply to Mrs. Bean's in King Street.†

During the same year Mr. Ezra Lunt commenced to run a line of coaches from Newburyport through Newbury, Ipswich, and Salem to Boston, making two trips a week each way. In The Essex Journal and Merrimack Packet, a newspaper printed in Newburyport, in the month of May, 1774, is the following advertisement: —

STAGE COACH

That constantly plies between Newburyport and Boston sets out with four horses every Monday morning, at 7 o'olock, from Newbury-

* "Rambles about Portsmouth," p. 187.

† Putnam's Monthly Magazine, July, 1892, p. 76.

port, and arrives at Boston the same day; leaves Boston every Thursday morning, and reaches Newburyport the same day. Such ladies and gentlemen as want a passage from Newburyport to Boston, are desired to apply at the house of the subscriber, opposite to the Rev. Mr. Parson's Meeting House. And those from Boston to Newburyport, at the house of Mrs. Beal, in King Street.

It is hoped this very expensive undertaking will meet with encouragement from all ladies and gentlemen as they may depend on the punctual performance

Of the people's most obedient servant

EZRA LUNT.*

At the breaking out of the Revolutionary war, Mr. Lunt sold his horses, carriages, and stable fixtures, and enlisted in the Continental army. April 21, 1795, Jacob Hale and son announced that they would run a line of stages through the towns of Newbury and Ipswich to Boston, "twice a week, on Mondays and Thursdays, returning Wednesdays and Saturdays." Seats to be secured at Mr. Hale's house on Federal street, Newburyport, "near Mr. Dana's meeting-house." † April 22, 1800, Joseph and Benjamin Hale advertised in the Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette that "the stage formerly run by Mr. Jacob Hale" "will leave Federal street opposite Mr. William Bartletts" once a week for Boston.

In 1818, the Eastern Stage Company was organized; and under the management of Mr. Benjamin Hale, Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland, and others, a line of stages was established and maintained from Dover to Portsmouth, N.H., and from thence to Newburyport, Newbury, Ipswich, Topsfield, and Boston.

April 14, 1836, the Eastern Railroad Company was incorporated by the General Court of Massachusetts. The road was opened from Boston to Newbury on the nineteenth day of June, 1840, and to Newburyport on the twenty-eighth day of August following.

In 1850, the road from Newburyport through Byfield was built to Georgetown, and from thence, in 1851, to Bradford. Two years later, it was extended from Georgetown through Topsfield and Wakefield, and leased to the Boston & Maine

* Gage's History of Rowley, p. 465; also, Putnam's Monthly Magazine, July, 1892, p. 77.
† Impartial Herald, April 21, 1795.

Railroad Company. In 1884, the Eastern and the Boston & Maine railroads were consolidated, and are now under the management of one board of directors.

These roads, in connection with the street railway from Parker river to Newburyport,* and the street railway through Byfield, operated by the Georgetown, Rowley & Ipswich Railroad Company,† give the inhabitants of Newbury opportunity to enjoy frequent and easy communication with other towns in Essex county.

TURNPIKES.

In order to shorten the distance between Newburyport and Boston, and render it possible for travellers to make the journey more expeditiously, the building of a turnpike was proposed and zealously advocated; but the inhabitants of Newbury, believing that it would divert travel from the old road, via Parker river bridge to Ipswich and Boston, voted, May 11, 1802, to oppose the project. The General Court, however, on the eighth day of March, 1803, authorized "Micajah Sawyer, William Coombs, Nicholas Pike, Arnold Wells, William Bartlet, John Pettingell, William Smith, John Codman and James Prince and all such persons as are or shall be associated with them under the name of the Newburyport Turnpike Corporation" to lay out and build a turnpike road, four rods wide, from the head of State street in Newburyport, through Newbury, Rowley, and Ipswich, to Topsfield, and thence in a southwesterly direction, in as nearly a straight line as possible, to Chelsea bridge, with liberty to erect turnpike gates and establish tolls, to be collected from every person travelling in a coach, cart, or other carriage over that road. The company organized, and ordered the preliminary surveys to be made without delay. During the summer of 1803 the work of construction was begun. The turnpike was completed in 1806 at a cost of nearly $420,000.

* Completed and operated July 10, 1890, as a horse railroad from Newburyport to "trayneing green," Newbury, extended to Parker river, May 30, 1891, equipped and first used as a street electric railway June 27, 1891.

† Supplied with electric motive power and opened for the transportation of passengers April 30, 1900.

It was never popular with the travelling public, and proved to be an unprofitable investment for the capitalists who built it.

February 24, 1806, the General Court passed "An Act to establish Plum Island Turnpike and Bridge Corporation." Although the subscribers to the capital stock of this corporation were nearly all citizens of Newburyport, the turnpike, about two miles long, extending from the northeast end of Rolfe's lane, now Ocean avenue, Newburyport, to a point on Plum island about one mile north of Sandy beach, so called, together with the bridge over Plum Island river, were wholly within the limits of the town of Newbury. The turnpike and bridge were completed before the close of the year. The corporation has been several times reorganized; and visitors are now transported to and from Plum island over this bridge and turnpike in cars connected with the Citizens' Electric Street Railway system of Newburyport.

BRIDGES.

For the accommodation of travellers on their way from Newbury to Rowley and thence to Boston, a bridge was built over the Parker river, near the residence of Richard Thorlay, previous to the year 1654. It was one of the earliest bridges erected in New England, and the first one over navigable waters within the limits of the town of Newbury. It has been several times enlarged and repaired.

In September, 1660, a committee was appointed by the court at Ipswich to view the bridge and highway between Newbury and Rowley. This committee reported June 25, 1661; and the court ordered the county treasurer to pay the sum of forty pounds to Ezekiel Northend and John Pickard, provided they build "a sufficient horse bridge six foot wide" over the Parker river.* Messrs. Northend and Pickard evidently assigned or sublet their contract to John Woolcott.

When the bridge was completed, the committee reported that it was inadequate and unsatisfactory.† November 25, 1662, John Woolcott, who built the bridge, agreed to make it

* Salem Court Records, vol. iv., p. 71. † Salem Court Files, vol. viii., p. 94.

strong and substantial;* and June 30, 1663, the court ordered the county treasurer to pay him the balance due according to the terms of the contract.†

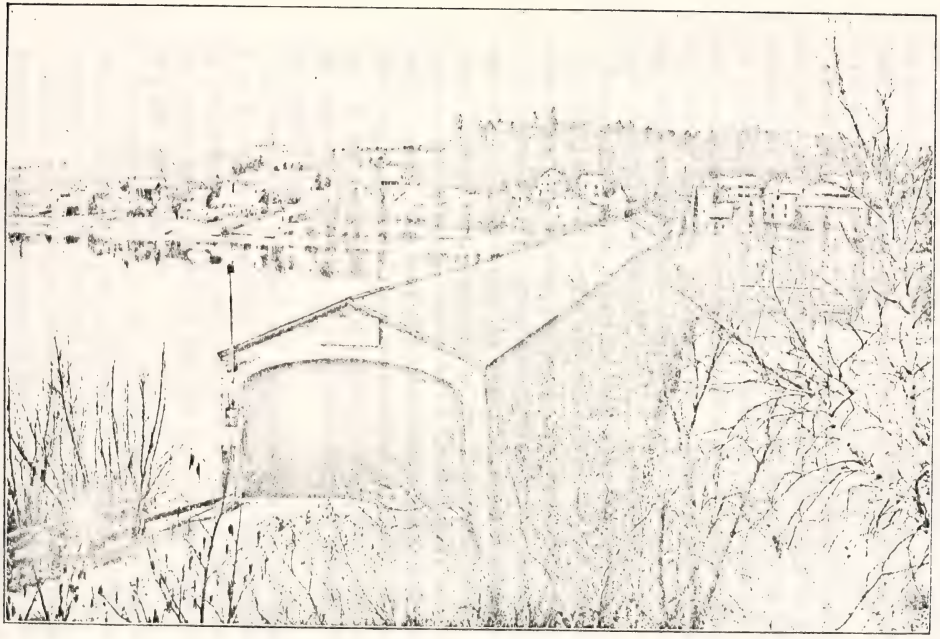
In 1758, a larger and more serviceable bridge over the same river from Newbury neck to Oldtown ferry landing, was built with funds raised by means of a lottery authorized by an act of the General Court passed January 29, 1750–1. It was maintained as a toll-bridge until 1850, when the rights and privileges of the corporation were surrendered to the commonwealth. In 1853, it was rebuilt by the county of Essex and made a free bridge. Since that date the annual charges for repairs and maintenance have been paid by the inhabitants of the town of Newbury.‡

The Essex–Merrimack Bridge Company was incorporated February 24, 1792, and built, during the following summer, a bridge over the Merrimack river connecting Deer island with the towns of Newbury and Salisbury. In the year 1810 the main portion of this bridge was taken down, and a chain suspension bridge erected in its place. February 6, 1827, some of the chains supporting this structure gave way, and the bridge, with a loaded team, two men, four oxen, and one horse, fell into the river below. The horse and men were saved, but the oxen were drowned. During the following summer the bridge was rebuilt and maintained as a toll-bridge until the fourth day of August, 1868, when it was laid out as a public highway under the provisions of an act passed by the General Court in the month of June preceding.§

June 14, 1794, Enoch Sawyer, William Coffin, Joshua Wingate, Jacob Brown, Joseph Newell, Amos George, Ephraim Elliot, Moses Moody, William L. Abbot, and William Cutler, "with such other persons as may be associated with them," were made and constituted a corporation by the General Court, and authorized to build a bridge over the Merrimack river "from the public landing at Swett's ferry in Haverhill to the opposite shore in Newbury." The bridge was built at or near Holt's rocks, and was known as the Rocks

* Salem Court Records, vol. iv., p. 107. † Ibid., vol. iv., p. 118. For a more extended account of Thorlay's bridge the reader is referred to "Ould Newbury," pp. 201–211.

‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 530–539. § Ibid., pp. 593–604.



ROCKS BRIDGE, FROM WEST NEWBURY.

bridge by the travelling public, although "Merrimack bridge" was the name given to it in the act of incorporation. It was one thousand feet in length, and connected Rocks village in East Haverhill with the upper parish in Newbury, now a part of the town of West Newbury.

The bridge, built in a substantial manner, supported by five piers and two abutments, was completed on the twenty-sixth day of November, 1795. The event was celebrated by the display of flags, the ringing of bells, the firing of cannon, and by a procession of workmen, officers of the corporation, and citizens generally, who marched in military order over the bridge, escorted by a troop of horsemen under the command of Captain Boardman.*

A heavy freshet, that raised the water in the Merrimack river to an unprecedented height, with the floating ice that formed a temporary dam between the piers, swept the bridge away in the spring of 1818, completely destroying it. No effort was made to rebuild it until the year 1828, when the General Court granted "the proprietors of the Merrimack Bridge" liberty to build a bridge "upon the old foundations at or near Holt's rocks." The work of reconstruction, begun in April, 1828, was completed early in the month of November following. It was maintained as a toll-bridge until 1868, when it was made free and laid out as a public highway by order of the General Court.

In 1883, it was repaired and supplied with a new swinging draw of modern construction. In 1892 it was strengthened by the addition of two new piers, and in 1894 a portion of the bridge on the Haverhill side was removed and replaced by a new iron structure.

The half-tone print on the opposite page gives a view of the covered way as it was in 1828 and as it appears from the Newbury, now West Newbury side of the river.

Several years previous to the rebuilding of Rocks bridge some of the prominent citizens of Amesbury became interested in a plan to revive and restore, if possible, the popularity of the old route of travel over Hook's ferry by building a

* Impartial Herald (Newburyport), December 1, 1795.

bridge, across the Merrimack river, from the mouth of Powow river to the old ferry landing-place on the opposite shore, in Newbury.

Robert Patten, and other persons who were interested with him, presented a petition to the General Court, May 27, 1824, asking for an act of incorporation for the purpose named, subject to such restrictions as the General Court might consider necessary. On the seventh day of June the Senate concurred with the House of Representatives in the appointment of a committee to view the location, and investigate the claims set forth by the petitioners as well as the objections urged by the opponents of the measure. A strong remonstrance from the inhabitants of Haverhill, and other towns on the river, undoubtedly induced the committee to recommend "that further consideration of the subject be referred to the next General Court." This recommendation, adopted February 15, 1825, although unsatisfactory to the petitioners, was accepted by them; and no further attempt was made to secure the coveted charter. During the following summer a new movement was inaugurated that resulted in the building of a bridge two or three miles below the place selected by Robert Patten and his associates.

As early as February 27, 1802, William Bartlet and Nicholas Pike applied to the General Court for liberty to build a bridge from Newburyport to Salisbury, and also a road to connect it with a proposed turnpike from Portsmouth to Boston. On the eleventh day of May the town of Newbury voted to oppose the erection of a bridge over the Merrimack river from Newburyport, and also voted to oppose the building of a turnpike to Boston. The inhabitants of other towns on the river objected, on the ground that the proposed bridge would be an obstruction to navigation.

June 12, 1802, a special committee was appointed by the Senate and House of Representatives to visit Newburyport, hear the testimony of the petitioners as well as the remonstrants, and report the result of their investigations at the next session of the General Court. February 28, 1803, this committee reported "inexpedient to grant the prayer of the

petitioners," and, apparently, no farther action was taken for nearly twenty-five years.

March 4, 1826, James Prince, John Wood, Stephen Frothingham, "and all other persons associated with them" were authorized to erect a bridge over the Merrimack river, from Newburyport, between Market and Kent streets, to some convenient point in the town of Salisbury; and, also, to lay out and make a road four rods wide from the bridge on the Salisbury side to the county road leading to the meeting-house in East Salisbury. The bridge was built during the summer of 1827. It rested on four stone piers and two abutments, and was supported in part by chains that extended from the top of a high wooden arch, built on the west bank of the river, to the centre of the span between the stone abutment and the first pier, and thence over the top of a second arch, built on that pier, to the centre of the second span, and so continuing until the Salisbury shore was reached.

LAWS AND ORDERS FOR THE PROTECTION OF FISH.

William Wood, in his description of New England published in London in 1634, says, "In this river [Merrimack] is sturgeon, Sammon and Basse, and divers other kinds of fish." * "The sturgions be all over the countrey, but the best catching of them be upon the Shoales of *Cape Codde* and in the River of *Mirrimacke* where much is taken, pickled and brought for England, some of them be 12, 14, 18 foote long." *

On the twenty-sixth day of March, 1642, the town of Salisbury "granted to Robert Ring two acres of upland upon the island † over against Watts sellar ‡ to be employed about fishing for two years." §

At that date there was no settlement on the southwesterly bank of the Merrimack river. The name "Watts Sellar" was probably applied to a shallow excavation or pit that marked the spot where a house for the accommodation of fishermen once stood; subsequently the new town, which in-

* *Ante*, p. 25. † Ring's Island, opposite foot of State street, Newburyport.
‡ In rear of the present police station, Newburyport. § Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 37.

cluded all the territory within the present limits of Newburyport, was laid out and occupied by the early settlers of Newbury.

The catching and curing of sturgeon soon became an important and profitable industry. Large quantities were boiled, pickled, packed in kegs, and shipped every season to Boston, London, and elsewhere. May 7, 1673, William Thomas, of Newbury, then seventy-four years of age, petitioned the General Court to prohibit the pickling or putting up of sturgeon by any person for transportation, "except such as by lawful authoritie shall be licensed thereto." * In answer to this petition the county courts were authorized "to license able and fitt persons to boyle and pickle sturgeon for sale," and also to appoint searchers, or inspectors, to examine the kegs when packed, and mark the weight and quality of the contents thereon.†

Regulated and controlled by the provisions of this law, the business continued to grow and thrive in Newbury for many years. During the summer months, sturgeon were abundant, and, when taken fresh from the water and properly cooked, were esteemed a great luxury. Samuel Sewall, on his way from Boston to Hampton and Portsmouth, "Stopped in Newbury, July 8, 1701, and eat sturgeon at Major Davison's." ‡

Salmon were also caught in large numbers; and tradition asserts that they were so plentiful at certain seasons of the year that apprentices stipulated in their articles of agreement that they should not be compelled by their employers, who supplied them with food and clothing, "to eat salmon more than three times a week." Before the close of the seventeenth century, however, a more extended market reduced the overabundant supply; and baked or boiled salmon became a popular and favorite dish with farmers and laborers as well as with men of prominence in the province of Massachusetts Bay.

In May, 1695, Judge Sewall, returning from a special court, "held at Mr Shaplighs just over against Dover," invited

* Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 114.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part II., p. 553.
‡ Samuel Sewall's Diary, vol. ii., p. 38.

Mr. Thomas Danforth, Mr. Elisha Cook, Col. Hutchinson, and other gentlemen who accompanied him, to dine at his expense, on salmon, at Capt. Edward Sargeant's tavern, at the water-side, in Newbury.*

May 13, 1718, the town of Newbury granted Moses Chase, Abraham Annis, Joseph Pike, William Morse, and others liberty to use the flats near Holt's rocks, on condition that they give one salmon per year to Rev. Christopher Toppan, pastor of the First church, and one to Rev. John Tufts, pastor of the Second church in Newbury, "if they catch them." †

"An act to prevent the destruction of salmon and other fish in Merrimack river" was passed by the General Court, February 28, 1765,‡ but the fines and penalties imposed by this act were evaded, and the business of catching and curing salmon was continued until the growth of large manufacturing cities, the impurity of the water, the erection of dams at Lowell and Lawrence, seriously interfered with the movements and habits of fish coming from the sea, at the spawning season, and ultimately led them to seek purer streams.

For the protection and preservation of bass in the Parker river the General Court, in answer to a petition from the inhabitants of Newbury,§ provided by a law passed April 26, 1771, that fish should not be taken from that river, at certain seasons of the year, under severe penalties.‖ The provisions of this law were not strictly enforced; and March 2, 1793, "An act to enable the town of Newbury to regulate and order the taking of Fish called Shad, Bass and Alewives in the river Parker within the limits of said Town," and providing further "that the inhabitants of Newbury at their annual meeting may determine and order in what manner and at what time fish may be taken from said river," was passed by the General Court.

May 7, 1793, the town of Newbury "voted that no person be allowed to put a seine, hedge, weir or drag net into the

* Samuel Sewall's Diary, vol. i., p. 406. † Town of Newbury Records.
‡ Province Laws, vol. iv., p. 741. § Town of Newbury Records, May 24, 1770.
‖ Province Laws, vol. v., p. 134.

river Parker, at any season, for the purpose of fishing for or catching of any Bass, shad or alewives in s^d river," and also "voted that no person be allowed to catch any of s^d Fish with a Dip net or any other way from the First day of December to the First day of April." *

The enforcement of these rules and regulations was intrusted to Capt. Stephen Kent, David Dole, jr., and Stephen Adams, jr. Although faithful and diligent in the discharge of their duties, they failed to accomplish the purpose for which they were appointed; and the power and authority of the General Court was again invoked to prevent the wholesale destruction of fish in Newbury. February 22, 1797, another act, more stringent in its provisions, was passed, prohibiting, under severe penalties, the sale of bass caught in the Parker river, and providing for the election of fish wardens to enforce the act; but the results were unsatisfactory, and the General Court endeavored to improve the condition of affairs by another act, passed March 8, 1806, requiring mill-owners to make a sufficient way for the passage of fish over their mill-dams, and directing them to keep the fish-way open and well supplied with water from the fifteenth day of April to the first day of June. Additional acts were passed March 4, 1809, February 26, 1813, and April 18, 1837, without, however, increasing the number of fish in Parker river to any appreciable extent.

Committees were chosen from time to time to carry the provisions of these acts into effect, but violators of the law continued to escape arrest and prosecution. Many of the offenders were from neighboring towns; and the inhabitants of Newbury, in order to keep out all intruders, voted, April 19, 1858, to prohibit the taking of fish from Parker river or its branches, at any time, by any person not having a legal residence within the limits of the town. In 1869, the law was again modified; and now the catching of fish in the ponds, streams, or rivers of Massachusetts, is controlled and regulated by commissioners appointed by the State.

* Town of Newbury Records.

FIRE-ENGINES AND FIREMEN.

For more than a century after the settlement of Newbury disastrous fires were subdued or extinguished by the primitive appliances and methods then in use. Ladders borne upon the shoulders of men from the nearest workshop or farm-house were raised to the roof of the burning building; and water, by means of buckets passed from hand to hand, was thrown with more or less dexterity upon the devouring flames.

When fire-engines were first introduced, they were rude and clumsy affairs, consisting mainly of a square or oblong cistern on wheels, fitted with pumps worked by levers and supplied with water brought in buckets from the nearest available source of supply.

In 1744, the General Court authorized the appointment in every town in the province "of a suitable number of persons not exceeding ten who shall be denominated firewards and have each, for a distinguishing badge of the office, a staff of five feet long painted red and headed with a bright brass spire six inches long." *

March 13, 1753, Nathan Hale and others presented a petition to the inhabitants of Newbury "about a fire engine." It is evident that the prayer of the petitioners was promptly granted; for "Will[m] Richards, John Brett, Enoch Plumer, Samuel Nowell, Benjamin Cole, Eliphalet Noyes, Benj[a] Sweet, Jonathan Titcomb, Henry Friend, Somerby Moody, and John Sewall," having built an engine-house at their own expense, and taken care of the fire-engine for several years previous to May 21, 1759, were then "excused from other service in town affairs so long as they continue to take proper care of said engine and faithfully attend in case of fire." †

March 9, 1762, a petition was presented to the town of Newbury, stating that a company had been formed to take care of the fire-engine, that Gideon Woodwell had been chosen captain, and that he and his associates desired to be released

* Province Laws, vol. iii., p. 214. † Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), pp. 93, 118.

from certain minor duties while serving as firemen. The petition was signed by the following persons: —

Jonathan Marsh	Joshua Norton	Richard Smith
Benjamin Knight Jun	John Follinsby	Bulkley Emerson
Jacob Rolfe	William Johnson	David Whitmore
Thomas Cross	Hezekiah Coleby Jun	Joseph Rolfe
Francis Hodgekins	Gideon Woodwell	Nath^{l} Hunt
John Nowell	Jonathan Parsons Jun	Moses Nowell
Benjamin Gerrish	Ebenezer Swasey	Thomas Rogers
Jonathan Whitmore	Charles Cook	Nath^{l} Knapp Jun

The prayer of the petitioners was granted so far as to exempt twenty of s^{d} Petitioners from highway rates & petty affairs in the town. *

At the same meeting the town voted to organize a company to take charge of the fire-engine imported by Michael Dalton and others from London in May, 1761. The following persons were appointed members of the company: —

Richard Titcomb	John Sewall	Offin Boardman
Isaac Johnson Ju^{r}	Joseph Collins	Jacob Toppan
Benjamin Pidgeon	Samuel Nowell	Joseph Rowell
Abraham Gallashan	John Stone	Benjamin Pike
Michael Tappan	Samuel Greenleaf	Leonard Smith
Jacob Gideon	Joseph Titcomb 3^{d}	John Stickney Jr
Obadiah Horton	Joseph Remick	Samuel Coker

They were also excused from serving as subordinate officers of the town, and were by a special vote exempt from the payment of highway taxes.†

Voluntary associations were also formed to assist the firemen in the performance of their duties. Every member of the "Dernier Resort Fire Society," organized in 1761, was required to provide himself with "two good leather buckets, two strong bags, and a knapsack for food or clothing."

These fire-engines were located in the centre of the town, and were set off and transferred to Newburyport when that town was incorporated in 1764.

February 7, 1786, the selectmen of towns, "that are or may be provided with fire engines," were authorized by the

* Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), p. 133. † Ibid., p. 132.

General Court to appoint suitable persons, not exceeding fifteen to any one engine, to be under the direction of the firewards of the town, "and subject to such rules and regulations as they shall adopt." The firemen were placed in charge of the engines to which they were appointed, and were required to respond quickly at every alarm of fire, and assist in subduing the flames.

Previous to 1803 that part of Newbury known as "Belleville" was provided with a fire-engine. One article in the warrant for the town meeting held April 4, 1803, reads as follows: —

To see if the town will erect a suitable building to cover an engine which has been lately purchased by Enoch Sawyer and others.

No definite action was taken in regard to the erection of an engine-house during that year; and the subject was not again brought to the attention of the voters until another engine had been purchased by some of the prominent citizens residing in the vicinity of Marlborough street, at the lower end of the town.

At the annual meeting held May 9, 1805, the selectmen were authorized to expend two hundred dollars to build two engine-houses, and provide sixty-four buckets, to be equally divided between the two engine societies.

At a town meeting held April 7, 1806, the following persons were appointed fire-wards: —

FOR ENGINE NUMBER ONE.

John Rollins	Farnum How	Robert Dodge
Orlando B. Merrill	Jacob Little	Ebenᶻʳ Whitmore

FOR ENGINE NUMBER TWO.

Capt David Little	Richard Pike	Philip Coombs
Stephen Ilsley	Capt Ebenezer Stocker	Samuel Goodwin
	Joseph Lunt Colby	

May 9, 1808, the following fire-wards were appointed: —

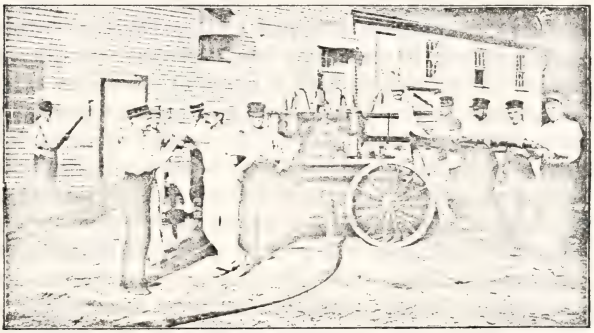
FOR ENGINE NUMBER ONE.

Jacob Little	Robert Dodge	Orlando B. Merrill
John Rollins	Farnum How	Ebenᶻʳ Whitmore

FOR ENGINE NUMBER TWO.

Benjamin Perkins	Mayo Gerrish	Samuel Goodwin
Jacob Swett	Isaiah Ilsley	Stephen Ilsley
Capt David Little	Major Benj Stickney	Moses Adams Jun
Philip Coombs	Richard Pike	Abram Wheelwright

When "Belleville" and "Joppa" were annexed to Newburyport in 1851, engines numbered one and two were transferred, with other public property from the town of Newbury, and subsequently under the name of "Torrent, number



FIRE ENGINE, 1850.

seven," and "Neptune, number eight," they were united with the fire department of the city of Newburyport. Since that date, owing to the sparseness of the population and the isolation of the dwelling-houses, it has not been considered necessary or advisable to keep or maintain fire-engines within the present territorial limits of Newbury.

THE ADOPTION AND RATIFICATION OF THE CONSTITUTION OF THE STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS.

During the year 1777 the General Court, acting as a convention, prepared a constitution for the government of the State of Massachusetts, and on the twenty-eighth day of February, 1778, submitted it to the people for their approval.

On the tenth day of March the town of Newbury appointed a committee to examine the proposed constitution, and report the result of their investigations at a subsequent meeting to be called by the selectmen. June second, this committee recommended that the legal voters of the town refuse to accept or adopt the constitution on account of its many and serious defects.*

Meetings were held in every town throughout the state, and after an exciting canvass the proposed constitution was rejected by a large majority of the votes cast.

February 20, 1779, the General Court passed a series of resolutions directing the selectmen of towns to ascertain whether the freeholders and inhabitants of their respective towns favor the "calling of a State Convention for the sole purpose of forming a new Constitution," and to return to the Secretary of State, previous to the first Wednesday in June following, the number of persons voting for or against the proposed measure. On the twenty-first day of May the town of Newbury voted "that in case a major part of the People of this State shall appear to be for a new form of government at this time then, in that case, this Town instruct their Representatives to act for a Convention to be called in such a way and manner that all the good People in the State (as nearly as may be) may have an equal voice in forming the said constitution." †

Having ascertained that the inhabitants of more than two-thirds of the towns in the state were in favor of the proposed convention, the General Court recommended, June 17, 1779, that delegates from every town should be elected to meet in Cambridge "on the first day of September next . . . for the sole purpose of framing a new Constitution."

August fourth, Mr. Richard Adams, Enoch Sawyer, Esq., and Mr. Ebenezer March were chosen to represent Newbury, and with many eminent men from other towns in the state assembled at the time and place designated. The convention organized by the choice of Hon. James Bowdoin, president, and Samuel Barrett, Esq., secretary. Rules were

* Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), p. 382. † Town of Newbury Records.

adopted, several important committees appointed, and the general principles of the proposed declaration of rights discussed. The convention continued its deliberations until the seventh day of September. It assembled again October twenty-eighth, for another session of nearly two weeks, when it adjourned to meet, January 5, 1780, in the representatives' chamber in the state house at Boston.

March 2, 1780, the members of the convention agreed upon the constitution that was soon after printed and submitted to the legal voters of the state for their approval or rejection. They also recommended that the votes cast for or against the constitution should be examined and counted by the delegates to another convention to be held in Boston June 7, 1780.

On the twenty-ninth day of May, Enoch Sawyer, Esq., Mr. Richard Adams, and Mr. Ebenezer March were re-elected to represent Newbury in the examination of the returns; and at the same meeting it was also voted, "that the Delegates from this Town be authorized to Joyn with their Brethren in Convention & Determine when the Constitution shall take Place, Provided that two Thirds of the male inhabitants of this state vote for the same." *

On the sixteenth day of June, 1780, the convention declared that the constitution had been adopted by the requisite number of votes, and "Resolved, that the said Constitution or Frame of Government shall take place on the last Wednesday in October next."

PARISH TAXES AND PUBLIC WORSHIP.

As early as May 24, 1770, an effort was made to secure for the inhabitants of Newbury "liberty to attend public worship in any meeting house in Newbury or Newburyport and pay taxes where they attend." † This effort, however, was unsuccessful; and no further action was taken until March 10, 1794–5, when the town of Newbury voted "that the inhabitants of this town have liberty to attend Publick

* Town of Newbury Records. † "Ould Newbury," p. 516.

worship where they choose and be subject to the Rules and Regulations of that Society where they generally attend and be exempted from taxation elsewhere for the support of publick worship." *

Major Samuel Noyes, Lieut. Nathaniel Emery, Deacon Solomon Haskell, and Capt. Paul Moody were appointed a committee to petition the General Court for the enactment of a law legalizing the vote and providing for the assessment and collection of taxes in the manner proposed.

An act authorizing the First parish in Newbury to "exempt from taxation those persons who produce a certificate from any incorporated religious society stating that they are members of that society and are willing to be taxed therein" was passed June 17, 1796.† This act, however, did not exempt the inhabitants of other parishes in Newbury from the payment of taxes for the support of public worship in the parishes where they resided, even though they were faithful and devout members of, and regular contributors to religious societies elsewhere.

The subject was again brought to the attention of the legal voters of Newbury at a meeting held May 9, 1808; and a committee was appointed to prepare and present a petition to the General Court for such amendments or modifications of the law as were necessary to give to the inhabitants of the town "liberty to attend publick worship where they please."* But the liberty asked for was not obtained until the third article of the declaration of rights established by the constitution of the state was amended in 1833.†

INOCULATING HOSPITAL.

At the beginning of the Revolutionary war the inhabitants of Newbury were greatly alarmed by the prevalence of small-pox. The art or practice of vaccination was then unknown; but many persons were voluntarily inoculated with the disease in its most virulent form, in order that its ravages might be mitigated under the care and attention of experienced physicians.

* Town of Newbury Records. † "Ould Newbury," p. 517.

It is evident, however, that the legal voters of the town were opposed to the unrestricted and unguarded use of that privilege. November 26, 1773, they appointed a committee of five persons "to take such measures as may be necessary to prevent Inoculation of the small pox at the house of Capt Moses Little, or elsewhere in the town." *

July 9, 1776, the General Court passed "an act Impowering the Justices of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace in the Several Counties in this Colony to permit one or more Inoculating Hospitals to be erected in each of Said Counties." April 11, 1777, this act was amended, and some important regulations and restrictions added.†

March 10, 1777–8, the town of Newbury voted to petition the General Court for liberty to provide a suitable place within the limits of the town "for inoculation for small pox."*

This vote was subsequently reconsidered, but after a delay of some weeks was again passed and again reconsidered.

In the mean while the Court of General Sessions for the county of Essex authorized the erection of an inoculating hospital on Kent's island; and Stephen Cross and other citizens of Newbury and Newburyport united in a petition to the General Court, asking that the directors of the hospital might be allowed to retain possession of the property and manage its affairs without interference.

April 11, 1778, the General Court adopted a series of resolutions, in substance as follows: —

> Moses Frazier, Samuel Tufts, Jonathan Marsh, Ebenezer March, John Pearson, Junior, Joseph Stanwood and Paul Lunt, appointed by the last Court of the General Sessions of the Peace holden for the County of Essex, as Directors of an inoculating Hospital then allowed by said Court of Sessions to be erected and established on Kent's Island in the town of Newbury, are hereby permitted to continue said Hospital, they to be Directors till the further order of the General Court:
>
> And as the Inhabitants of the Town of Newbury Port join in the expense of erecting and furnishing said Hospital, [It is] further resolved, that no preference be given to the Inhabitants of the Town of Newbury but that the Inhabitants of the Town of Newbury Port have equal right to admission into said Hospital with the Inhabitants of the Town of Newbury &c &c.‡

* Town of Newbury Records. † Province Laws, vol. v., pp. 554, 633.
‡ Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xxxviii., p. 429.

Subsequently, the report that several persons had been inoculated for small-pox at the house of Mr. Josiah Little created considerable excitement; and, June 8, 1778, a committee was chosen, and instructed to prosecute any person who had aided or assisted in communicating the disease at the time and in the manner designated. The committee was also directed to prosecute any doctor "that shall attend said persons or administer medicine to any of them contrary to law." *

How long the hospital on Kent's island was used for the accommodation of patients who desired to be inoculated with small-pox is uncertain. On the twenty-second day of August, 1778, a petition was presented to the General Court, asking that the practice might be discontinued in Newbury.

Ten or fifteen years later Newburyport built and maintained a hospital in the common pasture, where persons voluntarily inoculated with the virus of small-pox were allowed to remain, under the care of experienced physicians, until fully recovered.

WOOLLEN FACTORY AT BYFIELD.

In 1793, William Bartlet, Benjamin Greenleaf, and other Newburyport capitalists became interested in a plan, proposed by John and Arthur Schofield, two Englishmen who came to Newburyport that year, for manufacturing blankets and other woollen goods by machinery.

January 29, 1794, Benjamin Greenleaf, Philip Aubin, William Bartlet, Richard Bartlett, Offin Boardman, jr., Moses Brown, David Coffin, William Coombs, John Coombs, Mark Fitz, Abel Greenleaf, John Greenleaf, Andrew Frothingham, Michael Hodge, Nicholas Johnson, Nathaniel Knapp, Peter Le Breton, Joseph Moulton, Theophilus Parsons, Ebenezer Wheelwright, Edward Wigglesworth, and others were incorporated as "The Proprietors of the Newburyport Woolen Manufactory." †

As water power was needed to move the machinery, the proprietors by their agent purchased of Paul Moody, of New-

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Special Laws, State of Massachusetts, Acts of 1794.

bury, March 26, 1794, about six acres of land partly covered with water, on both sides of the Falls river, in Byfield parish, also a grist-mill on the premises, with all its privileges, and there erected a factory suitable for manufacturing purposes.* The carding-machines used in the factory were made by the Schofield Brothers in Newburyport, and the other machinery by Messrs. Guppy & Armstrong, of the same town.

It is said that the company was the first one incorporated for the manufacture of woollen goods in the United States. It was not successful, however, financially. In 1803, the original shareholders sold their stock to William Bartlet; and in 1804 he sold the property to John Lees, an Englishman, who converted it into a factory for the manufacture of cotton cloth.†

August 24, 1824, the property was sold at public auction to Gorham Parsons, of Brighton,‡ who conveyed it, May 29, 1826, to Paul Moody of Lowell.§ April 16, 1832, the heirs of Paul Moody reconveyed the property to Gorham Parsons,‖ who leased it for a term of seven years to William N. Cleaveland, of Newbury, and Solomon Wildes, of Boston, "partners in trade and manufacturers under the firm name of William N. Cleaveland & Co." ¶ August 2, 1842, Mr. Parsons sold the factory to Theophilus Parsons, of Boston,** who conveyed it May 12, 1846, to Moses Emery Hale and others, of Newburyport.††

May 20, 1848, Francis V. Noyes purchased the factory,‡‡ and subsequently leased it to Alfred Durant and to his brother, Rev. Henry Durant, who manufactured bedsteads and other household furniture there. It was destroyed by fire in 1859; and the land, "with several small buildings thereon," was sold to Daniel Lunt, of Newbury, March 3, 1860,§§ who con-

* Essex Deeds, vol. clvii., leaf 153. The land upon which this factory was erected was granted by the town of Newbury in 1636 to John Spencer and Richard Dummer to build a grist-mill upon. November 10, 1710, Nathaniel Dummer sold to William Moody, grandfather of Paul Moody, all his right, title, and interest "in ye River in ye Township of Newbury called ye Falls River which was granted unto my Grandfather Mr Richard Dumer by ye sd Towne of Newbury," with the land on which the saw-mill of Mr. Dummer then stood (Essex Deeds, vol. xxv., leaf 133). † Ibid., book clxxv., leaf 190. ‡ Ibid., book ccxxxix., leaf 210. § Ibid., book cclxi., leaf 63. ‖ Ibid., book cclxiv., leaf 121. ¶ Ibid., book cclxiii., leaf 190. ** Ibid., book cccxxxii., leaf 281. †† Ibid., book ccclxviii., leaf 106. ‡‡ Ibid., book cccxcviii., leaf 72. §§ Ibid., book dciii., leaf 257.

veyed the property May 9, 1860, to Leonard A. Morrison and Horatio M. Howard.* On the first day of June, 1863, the land, including the water privilege, etc., was transferred to Leonard Morrison, of Methuen, who rebuilt the factory and fitted it with machinery for the manufacture of cotton yarn.†

Leonard Morrison died April 26, 1875; and Leonard A. Morrison died previous to February 10, 1880. Amanda R. Savage, guardian of William H. Morrison and Ina B. Morrison, minors, "children of Leonard A. Morrison, late of Newbury," sold May 4, 1880, three undivided fourth parts, and Henry P. Chaplin and others, of Georgetown, sold one undivided fourth part of the factory at Byfield, including the mill privileges and water power, to James A. C. Whittier and Hugh U. Ewing, of Boston.‡

Mrs. Lizzie M. Adams, wife of George W. Adams, conveyed all her right, title, and interest in the property to Messrs. Whittier & Ewing, April 26, 1880.§ James A. C. Whittier sold his one undivided half of the land, buildings, water power, etc., to Hugh U. Ewing, of Boston, March 17, 1886.‖

C. A. E. Ewing and Hugh Ewing, copartners under the firm name of Hugh U. Ewing & Co., purchased the property July 9, 1892,¶ and August 3, 1893, made an assignment, for the benefit of their creditors, to Henry A. Gowing, trustee,** who sold the buildings, water privileges, etc., December 8, 1893, to Jacob F. Brown, of Brookline. The same day Mr. Brown gave a deed of the property to Samuel Williams,†† who sold one undivided half December 25, 1894, to Alfred S. Williams.‡‡ On the second day of July, 1897, Samuel and Alfred S. Williams conveyed all their right, title, and interest in the land and the buildings thereon to the Byfield Woollen Company, the present owners.§§

* Essex Deeds, book dcix., leaf 179. † Ibid., book dclii., leaf 99. ‡ Ibid., book mxxxvii., leaves 3 and 4. § Ibid., book mxxxv., leaf 261. ‖ Ibid., book mclxix., leaf 234. ¶ Ibid., book mcccxlix., p. 1. ** Ibid., book mcccIxxxv., p. 501. †† Ibid., book mcccxcvii., p. 37. ‡‡ Ibid., book mcccexlix., p. 367. §§ Ibid., book mdxv., p. 133.

SALT WORKS.

The tax imposed by Parliament in 1767 on paper, glass, tea, and other articles of merchandise imported into the province of Massachusetts was regarded as burdensome and unjust. September 19, 1768, the legal voters of Newburyport elected Benjamin Greenleaf delegate to a convention to be held in Boston for consultation and conference in regard to the measures that should be adopted to stop the importation of merchandise from England.*

The merchants and traders of Newbury and Newburyport were in the habit of importing large quantities of salt from Great Britain at that date. In order to promote and encourage its manufacture and provide an adequate supply for home consumption, the inhabitants of Newburyport, immediately after the election of Benjamin Greenleaf at the town meeting held September nineteenth, "Voted to exempt Capt James Hudson from the payment of Town, County and Province taxes for 1767 and 1768, in answer to his petition, for encouragement to go on with his salt works." *

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury, held on the fourteenth day of March, 1768–9, a petition from Capt. James Hudson was presented, asking for a loan of one hundred pounds for two or three years. The amount of the loan and the time fixed for its repayment were discussed at some length, and aroused some opposition; but at the close of the debate it was unanimously voted, "that the town will let out to Cap[t] James Hudson a certain sum of money to Enable him to Carry on his salt works." †

September 4, 1769, the town of Newburyport voted to approve the agreement made with the merchants and traders of Boston in regard to the importation of goods from Great Britain; and September 19, 1769, the town of Newbury voted to give Capt. James Hudson, of Newburyport, the sum of twenty pounds to enable him to carry on and complete his salt works.† Eight pounds were also appropriated by the town of Ipswich "to assist James Hudson to carry on the salt works he has lately erected." ‡

* Town of Newburyport Records, p. 125. † Town of Newbury Records.
‡ Felt's History of Ipswich, p. 98.

The manufacture of salt at that date was a slow and difficult process. Sea water was evaporated by means of large boilers, under which fires were kept burning night and day. After the close of the Revolutionary war improved methods of making salt were introduced. Water-tight vats, twenty feet square and ten or twelve inches deep, were so arranged that water could be pumped from the ocean by means of a windmill into the first vat, and then conducted, after sufficient exposure to the heat of the sun, to a second vat, and then to a third and fourth, until a strong brine was formed and crystals of salt appeared.

In 1830, a Frenchman by the name of Gilshenon, with a few Newbury and Ipswich men who were interested with him, commenced the manufacture of salt at the southerly end of Plum island. He bought two hundred and fifty acres of land, laid out and dug a canal about one-third of a mile long, eight feet wide, and ten feet deep, which he connected with twenty-eight vats that were supplied with water pumped from the canal by means of windmills. He constructed also an overshot wheel, fifteen feet in diameter and five or six feet in width, which was made to revolve by the strong and vigorous efforts of a large bull, walking in treadmill fashion, within the wheel, which was suspended in an upright position from a heavy wooden frame. On the outer rim of this revolving wheel shallow buckets were attached that lifted the water from the canal into the vats on calm, still days, when the windmills were unable to do the work.*

The business was not a financial success; and the property, consisting of eighty acres of upland, one hundred and seventy-five acres of salt marsh, two dwelling-houses, two barns, "with a dam across a creek running through the place by means of which with but little expense a good water power may be obtained," "also six wind mills with pumps and apparatus entire," was advertised February 20, 1832, to be sold by George W. Heard, of Ipswich. It was probably purchased by Francis J. Oliver, of Boston, who conveyed it September 22, 1834, to Daniel Dole, of Ipswich.†

* Historical Address by Mr. Philip D. Adams (Newburyport Daily News), October 26, 1900.
† Essex Deeds, book cclxxviii., leaf 62.

MANUFACTURE OF NAILS AND BRADS.

The manufacture of cut nails and brads was begun in Newbury in 1795. Jacob Perkins, son of Matthew and Jane (Dole) Perkins, of Newburyport, was the inventor of a machine for cutting and heading nails, for which he was granted a patent January 16, 1795. He became acquainted with Samuel Guppy, of New York, and John Warren Armstrong, of Boston; and with their aid and assistance he produced at Byfield the first nails that were cut and headed at one operation, in America.*

In the Impartial Herald, November 24, 1795, the proprietors, "Messrs Guppy & Armstrong and Jacob Perkins, inventor," announce that they have three machines in operation "at Byfield six miles from Newburyport," and will have a supply of brads and nails for sale within two weeks, "much superior and twenty per cent cheaper than imported nails."

On the day that this announcement was made in the Herald, Ebenezer Stocker, Abraham Wheelwright, and Ebenezer Wheelwright, directors of the Newburyport Woollen Manufactory, conveyed to Jacob Perkins a lot of land with a corn-mill thereon in Amesbury, "Commonly called Waits Mill."† The power needed for driving the nail machinery was secured by the purchase of this mill, then standing on the south bank of the Powow river; and early in the spring of 1796 the manufacture of nails in Byfield was discontinued, and the machinery removed to the mill or factory in Amesbury.

ALMSHOUSE.

April 4, 1808, the town of Newbury voted to purchase the house, barn, and about seventeen acres of land, formerly owned and occupied by Rev. Matthias Plant, at or near the corner of the road leading to Amesbury ferry and the way to Essex Merrimack bridge, now Spofford street, Newburyport. This property was placed under the care of the overseers of

* The Essex Antiquarian, vol. ii., pp. 69–74.

† Essex Deeds, vol. clxiv., leaf 95.

the poor, and for many years was made serviceable and useful as an almshouse and town farm.*

At a meeting held March 17, 1828, the legal voters of the town authorized the purchase of a farm in Byfield, owned by Enoch Moody, "containing two hundred acres of land more or less with the buildings thereon," to be placed under the care and control of the overseers of the poor; and April 7, 1828, they ordered that all persons receiving aid from the town should be removed to the town farm, and that all the stock and agricultural implements needed to carry it on successfully should be provided forthwith.†

On the sixteenth day of May, 1829, "the former Poor Establishment owned by the town of Newbury and known by the name of the Plant Place" was sold to Elias Jackman;‡ and after that date all persons dependent upon the town for assistance were supplied with food and shelter at the farm in Byfield parish.

February 2, 1852, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to sell the town farm (at Byfield), and appointed a committee to make the necessary arrangements and attend to the sale of the property.§ March 29, 1852, the overseers of the poor were authorized, "in case the town farm is not speedily sold, to lease the same for the ensuing year."§ April 30, 1852, Daniel Lunt, treasurer of the town of Newbury, conveyed to Calvin Noyes "about one hundred and eighty acres of land with all the buildings thereon, formerly owned by Enoch Moody";‖ and, February 7, 1874, a supplementary deed, confirming and perfecting the title from the town of Newbury to Calvin Noyes, was recorded.¶

Since the sale of the almshouse and the farm at Byfield, all persons dependent upon the town for support have been pro-

* Essex Deeds, vol. clxxxv., leaf 69. Anthony Davenport, of Newburyport, for two thousand dollars, sold, April 14, 1808, to Thomas Hale, treasurer of the town of Newbury, in trust for said town, about fifteen acres of land, with dwelling-house and other buildings thereon, bounded as follows: beginning on the westerly corner of the road leading from the road to Amesbury ferry to Deer Island bridge, thence northwesterly by the road leading to Amesbury ferry, thence northeasterly by land of David Jackman and others, thence southeasterly by land of Joseph Jackman, thence southwesterly by the road first named, to the bounds begun at.

† Town of Newbury Records: also, Essex Deeds, vol. ccxlviii., leaf 107.

‡ Essex Deeds, vol. cclviii., leaf 96. § Town of Newbury Records.

‖ Essex Deeds, book dclxv., leaf 25. ¶ Ibid., book dcccxlvii., leaf 181.

vided for in private families by the payment of a fixed sum for board and clothing.

THE INCORPORATION OF THE TOWN OF WEST NEWBURY.

As early as March 30, 1777–8, a petition was presented to the town of Newbury, asking that all the territory on the westerly side of Artichoke river to the Bradford line might be set off and made a separate township.

> . . . begining at the mouth of Artichoak river running southerly by said river to Littles meadow and from thence on a straight line to the bridge in the road near John & Stephen Browns, and from the bridge by the brook to the South Way, then running by the northerly side of the South Way to Johnsons corner, so called, and from thence on a straight line to a white oak marked tree, the bounds between Newbury, Rowley & Bradford, and from thence on Bradford line to Merrimack river and by Merrimack river to the mouth of the Artichoak river, the bound first mentioned.*

The prayer of the petitioners was at first favored by a majority of the legal voters of the town; but, after further consideration, the subject was indefinitely postponed.

February 19, 1793–4, a committee was chosen to see what terms and conditions could be made, "provided the inhabitants of Newbury agree to set off the three northwesterly parishes," and petition the General Court, at its next session, to incorporate the said parishes as a separate and distinct town. On the seventh day of April, Col. Samuel Gerrish, Stephen Hodge, Esq., and Mr. Stephen Brown were authorized and instructed to prepare and present a petition asking the General Court to consent to the incorporation of the new town. This action, however, was reconsidered on the twenty-third day of April; and on the fifth day of June another attempt to set off and organize a new town "on the northerly side of a line begining on the Merrimack river and running by a way, now known as Oakland street (at that time the dividing line between Newbury and Newburyport), to a marked stone in common pasture, thence in a westerly direction to the

*Town of Newbury Records, (1731–85) p. 374.

Bradford line, and by said line to the Merrimack river, and thence easterly by said river to the bounds first named," was defeated by a vote of 216 opposed to 145 in favor of the measure.*

No further action was taken until June 11, 1818, when the inhabitants of Newbury were again asked to give their consent to a division of the town on substantially the same lines as had been previously proposed; but the opponents of the measure, after a long and fierce struggle, were able to defeat it.*

A few months later, however, Samuel Woodman and others presented a petition to the General Court, asking that all the territory between the mouth of the Artichoke river and the Bradford line, within the limits of the Second and Third (formerly the Fourth) parishes, might be set off and incorporated as a separate town; and November 2, 1818, at a meeting of the legal voters of Newbury, the representatives of the town were instructed to oppose the petition, and prevent, if possible, any further consideration of the subject.*

Although active and vigorous measures were adopted to counteract the earnest and determined efforts of the petitioners, the General Court, after a prolonged hearing, passed February 18, 1819, "An act to incorporate the town of Parsons"; † and March 9, 1819, the legal voters of Newbury elected Josiah Little, Esq., Silas Little, Esq., Moses Little, Esq., Jacob Gerrish, Esq., and Mr. Eben Pearson a committee to adjust the debts and make a settlement with any committee that may be appointed by the inhabitants of the town of Parsons.*

Subsequently, a change in the name of the new town was made by an act of the General Court, passed June 14, 1820, providing that "the said town shall hereafter be called and known by the name of West Newbury." ‡

*Town of Newbury Records.

†This act is printed in full on p. 1863, vol. ii., History of Essex County, J. W. Lewis & Co., publishers.

‡History of Essex County, J. W. Lewis & Co., publishers, vol. ii., p. 1864.

WATER SUPPLY FOR MANUFACTURING PURPOSES.

In 1844, the James Steam Mill, for the manufacture of cotton goods, was erected in Newburyport. During the following year, Gen. Charles. T. James, Charles J. Brockway, Esq., and other prominent citizens petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation to enable them to erect and maintain a bleachery in the town of Newbury, and also to provide an adequate supply of water for manufacturing and domestic purposes.

The original plan of the petitioners contemplated the erection of a bleachery at Bartlett springs and the laying of pipes through the streets of Newbury and Newburyport for the purpose of supplying both towns with pure water. A committee, appointed by the inhabitants of Newburyport to examine the plan and make such suggestions and recommendations as they considered advisable, reported in favor of granting the prayer of the petitioners; and February 13, 1846, the town voted to give its consent to the incorporation of the company by the General Court. The estimated cost of the bleachery and water-works, however, rendered some modification of the plan necessary; and after further consideration a new source of supply was agreed upon, and incorporated in the act passed March 7, 1846.

At a town meeting held February 13, 1846, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to favor the prayer of the petitioners, and, also, voted to allow the company, when organized, to lay water pipes, under certain restrictions, through the principal streets of the town.* On the seventh day of March, 1846, the General Court passed an act incorporating "The Newbury Spring Bleaching Company";† and the town of Newbury voted, August 1, 1846, "to grant the James Steam Mill Company the privilege of laying a water pipe along High street, from the head of State street to Federal street, upon condition that the town have the right to put in fire plugs, at its own expense, in such places as it may think proper." *

Land on the southwesterly side of Oak Hill cemetery,

* Town of Newbury Records. † Acts and Resolves for 1846, chap. 85.

with a small pond adjoining, was purchased, a pumping station erected, and water for extinguishing fires and for manufacturing purposes was conveyed in pipes down the turnpike, now State street, Newburyport, to High street, thence to Federal street, down Federal to Ann, now Atwood street, thence through Purchase to Charles street, and thence to the James Steam Mill, Newburyport, now owned by the Peabody Manufacturing Company. Sixty-four hundred feet of iron pipe was laid, at a cost of ten thousand dollars, and the work completed previous to December 1, 1846.*

Subsequently, the pipe at the corner of Ann and Federal streets, Newburyport, was connected with the property now owned by the Peabody Manufacturing Company, on Federal street, formerly known as the Globe Steam Mills.

ANNEXATION OF A PART OF NEWBURY TO NEWBURYPORT.

Although the town of Newbury after the incorporation of Newburyport in 1764, and West Newbury in 1819, was greatly reduced in population as well as in taxable property, repeated attempts were made to still further reduce the area and population of the town by many persons, residing within its limits, who were engaged in mercantile or commercial pursuits, and, therefore, not in full sympathy with the farmers, who practically controlled the administration of municipal affairs.

Mr. Ebenezer Wheelwright and several other prominent merchants of Newbury earnestly advocated the adoption of a plan that would, if accepted, take a narrow strip of land on the westerly side of High street, "with the dwelling-houses thereon," and make it a part of Newburyport. The subject was brought to the attention of the General Court; and an order of notice was served on the inhabitants of Newbury, April 23, 1821, to appear and make answer to the prayer of the petitioners. At a town meeting held on the twenty-second day of May a committee was appointed to attend the

* Newburyport Herald, December 1, 1846, and January 26, 1847.

hearing, and oppose any further division of the town.* The General Court, after a full and careful consideration of the subject, granted the petitioners "leave to withdraw."

Seven years later the inhabitants of Belleville parish, formerly the Fifth parish, desired to be set off and incorporated as a separate town; and March 17, 1828, the legal voters of Newbury consented to the proposed plan of separation, and agreed to set off all the territory on the westerly and northwesterly side of a line beginning on Merrimack river, at or near the foot of North street, thence on the line of Newburyport to the bound stone in the common pasture, and thence on a straight line to West Newbury.* On the seventh day of April the selectmen were authorized to confer with the inhabitants of that part of Newbury included within the bounds and limits of the proposed new town, and agree, if possible, upon the terms and conditions of separation.*

The opponents of the plan, however, were active and persistent in their efforts to defeat it. On the eighth of May, 1828, Mr. Ebenezer Wheelwright and others presented a petition asking that a part of Newbury, "Begining at the Bound Stone in the Common Pasture, between the towns of Newbury & Newburyport thence on a straight line to the most Eastwardly corner of West Newbury, thence on a straight line to Plumb Island Bridge, thence on the same straight line to the Sea, thence by the Sea and Merrimack River to the most Eastwardly bound of Newburyport, thence by Newburyport line to the first Bound," * might be set off and annexed to Newburyport. The legal voters of the town declined to grant the prayer of the petitioners, and, December 15, 1828, voted to oppose the petition of Mr. Ebenezer Wheelwright at the General Court, and favor the petition of Mr. Henry Merrill and other inhabitants of Belleville parish to be set off as a town by themselves.* The committee on towns, to whom both petitions had been referred, reported January twenty-ninth; and February 5, 1829, their report was accepted, "granting the petitioners leave to withdraw." †

Three years later, another attempt was made to set off all

*Town of Newbury Records.

†Massachusetts Archives (Journal of the House of Representatives, vol. xlix.).

the land on the easterly side of a line begining at the bound stone in the common pasture, and extending southeasterly to Plum island bridge, and thence to the sea. December 29, 1831, the town of Newbury voted to favor the petition of Mr. John Wills and others, and also voted to give its consent to the separation asked for "on such terms and conditions as the General Court may establish." *

On the fourth day of January following, the subject was again under consideration; and a motion to choose a committee to attend the General Court and oppose the prayer of the petitioners was carried by a vote of 174 in favor to 152 against the measure.* April 9, 1832, John Merrill, Esq., Moses Little, Esq., and Daniel Adams, 3d, Esq., were appointed to defend the interests of the town and protest against any farther consideration of the petition of John Wills and others. February 11, 1832,* the General Court granted the petitioners "leave to withdraw."

November 19, 1834, the town of Newbury was notified that Mr. Roger S. Howard and others had filed a petition praying that all persons residing within certain bounds and limits named in said petition might be set off and annexed to the town of Newburyport. A committee was appointed to confer with the petitioners and induce them, if possible, to make some concessions in regard to the proposed division of the town.*

This committee reported December 10, 1834, that the division lines asked for by the petitioners, though to some extent indefinite and uncertain, were substantially the same as those named in the petition of 1832. Instead of dividing the town, as requested, the committee recommended that Newbury and Newburyport should be again united; and a committee, consisting of John Merrill, Moses Little, John Chickering, Jacob Gerrish, and Daniel Plumer, was appointed to confer with the town of Newburyport and endeavor to bring about the desired result.* The conference was held, but the plan of reunion was defeated after an animated discussion by the legal voters of Newburyport.

* Town of Newbury Records.

A few years later another attempt was made by Ebenezer Wheelwright and others to induce the General Court to set off a portion of the town of Newbury to be annexed to the town of Newburyport. January 4, 1843, a committee was appointed to oppose the prayer of the petitioners.* After a prolonged hearing the subject was referred, February 28, 1843, to the next General Court.

February 13, 1846, the petition of John Porter and others to the General Court, asking that Newbury and Newburyport might be made one town, was under consideration; and the town of Newbury voted, 191 to 134, not to favor the plan proposed by the petitioners.* But on the twenty-third day of February a committee, consisting of Micajah Lunt, Daniel Plumer, Josiah Little, Daniel Noyes, Enoch Hale, Stuart Chase, and John Currier, jr., was chosen "to consider the expediency of uniting the towns of Newbury and Newburyport." This committee reported March 2, 1846, in favor of the measure; but the legal voters declined, by a vote of 176 to 235, to adopt the recommendation of the committee.

January 4, 1847, the town of Newbury voted to consent, upon such conditions as the General Court may impose, to the passage of an act providing that the territory and inhabitants within the following described lines may be set off and annexed to the town of Newburyport, namely: —

Beginning at the line of Newburyport on the South Westerly side of High street near the Newburyport Turnpike, thence Southeasterly by the Southerly side of High street to a point opposite the head of South street; thence in a direct line to the most Southerly bend in the Plum Island Turnpike and parallel therewith to the ocean: thence by the ocean and Merrimack River to the line of Newburyport.*

Mr. Abner Keniston and others, having petitioned the General Court "to set off that part of the town called Belleville," the inhabitants of Newbury voted, February 8, 1850, not to oppose the petition.* The General Court, however, declined to grant the prayer of the petitioners; and the following year William Goodwin and others presented a similar request, and Moses Pettingell and others, in behalf of the in-

* Town of Newbury Records.

habitants residing between South (now Bromfield street) and Marlborough streets, asked to be annexed to Newburyport.

March 11, 1851, the town agreed to favor the passage of an act by the General Court providing for the annexation of a portion of Newbury to Newburyport, and voted to appoint a committee to adjust the line of separation and make arrangements for an equitable division of the town property. The bounds and limits agreed upon included all the territory on the westerly side of Newburyport to the Artichoke river, and a large tract on the easterly side, extending to the light-keeper's house on Plum island. These bounds are given in detail in the first section of "An Act to Annex a Part of the Town of Newbury to the town of Newburyport," approved by his Excellency George S. Boutwell, governor of the commonwealth of Massachusetts, April 17, 1851.*

Since that date there has been no change in the territorial bounds and limits of the town of Newbury. The northern boundary line runs from the point marked A, on the Map, on the next page, to B; thence to C, D, E, F, and G. The dividing line between Newbury and Georgetown runs from G to H, and the line between Newbury and Rowley from H to I, and thence to the point marked J on Plum island.

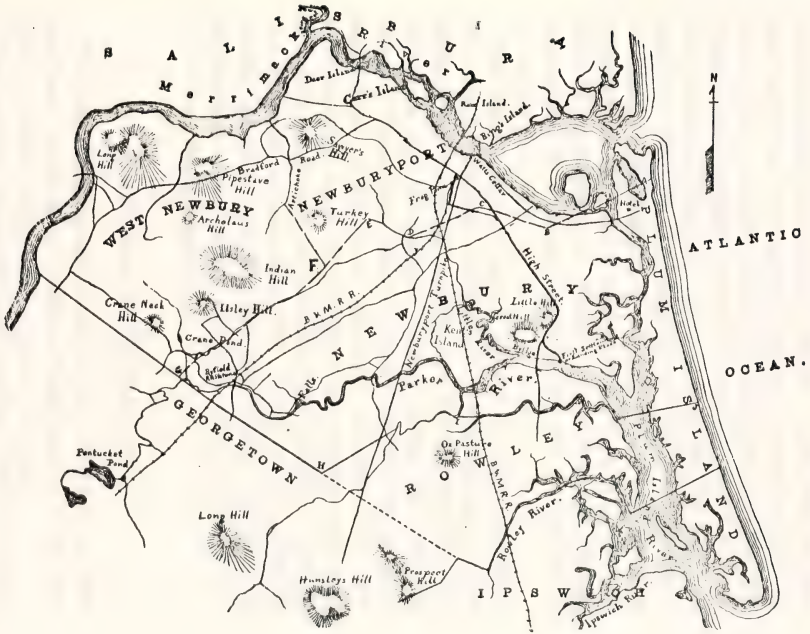
SILVER MINES.

In 1874, traces of silver ore were found in a few scattered rocks lying on the surface of a pasture owned by Mr. Richard Jaques, in the vicinity of the "Birchen meadow," not more than one hundred and fifty or two hundred rods in a southeasterly direction from the oak-tree now standing in the "Gerrish pasture," to which reference is made on page 130.

The mineral deposits of that neighborhood were carefully analyzed, and in 1875 "The Chipman Silver Mining Company" was organized to make further explorations and devise ways and means for a thorough and systematic development of the property.†

*Acts and Resolves for 1851, chap. 54.

† Newburyport Herald, May 27, 1875.


SALISBURY
Merrimack R.
Deer Island
Cow's Island
Round Island
Big Island
N
Large Hill
Bradford
Pipestave Hill
Archelaus Hill
WEST NEWBURY
Salter's Hill
Turkey Hill
NEWBURYPORT
Ferry
Ferry Creek
Hotel
PLUM ISLAND
ATLANTIC
OCEAN.
Indian Hill
B.M.R.R.
Crane Neck Hill
Hisley Hill
Crane Pond
Rocky Hill
NEWBURY
High Street
Little Hill
Reed Hill
Kent's Island
Parker River
Parker
Pentucket Pond
GEORGETOWN
Os Pasture Hill
ROWLEY
Rowley River
Long Hill
Humleys Hill
Prospect Hill
IPSWICH
Ipswich River

Workshops were erected, steam drills and pumping machinery provided, and a shaft forty feet deep was sunk through solid rock, exposing, according to the report of experts, rich veins of lead and silver. Excavations in other parts of the town were made with gratifying results. Land that had been almost worthless was eagerly bought or bonded at fabulous prices. The excitement reached its height when the schooner "Nadab" was chartered to take a cargo of ore to New York to be smelted and assayed. June 2, 1875, the last few loads needed to make up the cargo, on the way from the mines, were met at the junction of Auburn and Pond streets in Newburyport, and escorted down State street to Commercial wharf by a procession of citizens carrying flags and banners, accompanied by a military band playing the popular airs of the day.

The reports received several months later from this cargo of ore were somewhat conflicting and discouraging; but the directors of the mining company were hopeful, and continued operations with more or less activity during the following season. The business, however, was found to be unprofitable; and work at the mines was temporarily suspended. At intervals during the next two or three years attempts were made by the introduction of new machinery to increase the production of crude ore, and reduce the cost of taking it from the mines; but the results were not satisfactory. In 1880, the machinery was sold, and the attempt to establish silver mining in Newbury was abandoned.

ANNIVERSARY CELEBRATIONS.

The first centennial anniversary of the settlement of Newbury was, according to tradition, "duly noticed in the front yard of Colonel Joseph Coffin's house," in 1735.

The second centennial was celebrated May 26, 1835. Public exercises were held in the meeting-house of the First Religious Society on Pleasant street, Newburyport; and dinner was served in a temporary pavilion erected on land near the Newbury town-house, now included within the

limits of Oak Hill cemetery, Newburyport. Interesting and eloquent speeches, appropriate to the occasion, were made by Hon. Edward Everett, Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, Hon. Caleb Cushing, Hon. George Lunt, and other distinguished guests who were present.

On the tenth day of June, 1885, the two hundred and fiftieth anniversary was celebrated, under the direction of the Historical Society of "Ould Newbury," in city hall, Newburyport. A chorus of male and female voices, led by Mr. Norman McLeod, accompanied by an orchestra of skilled musicians, rendered several appropriate selections. An original ode by Mrs. Louisa P. Hopkins was read; and Rev. Samuel Colcord Bartlett, president of Dartmouth College, delivered an able historical address.

At the close of the exercises in the hall, dinner was provided for over one thousand guests in a spacious tent erected on vacant land on High street, near the head of Bromfield street, Newburyport. Brief after-dinner speeches from men prominent in the social or political life of "Ould Newbury" occupied the time and attention of the assembled company until seven o'clock P.M.

In the evening a reception or levee was held at the city hall where many citizens from Newbury and the neighboring towns gathered to listen to the music of a small but well-trained orchestra, to greet old friends and acquaintances, and to examine the large and valuable collection of paintings loaned for that occasion and hung for that day and evening on the walls of the common council chamber. *

*Report of the Celebration of the Two Hundred and Fiftieth Anniversary of the settlement of Newbury, published in 1885.

CHAPTER VI.

CHURCHES AND PASTORS.

TRADITION asserts that Rev. Thomas Parker preached his first sermon in Newbury under the branches of an oak-tree that stood on the north bank of the Quascacunquen (Parker) river; that a covenant to walk together according to the precepts of the gospel, in brotherly love, was agreed upon at the close of the sermon; that Rev. Mr. Parker was chosen pastor, and that other church officers were then elected, "ye members expressinge their voats therein by lifting up the hande." *

Thomas Parker was the only son of Rev. Robert Parker, an eminent clergyman of Wiltshire, England. He came to Boston in 1634, in the ship "Mary and John," with his cousins Nicholas Noyes and Rev. James Noyes.† During the following winter he was at Agawam, now Ipswich, Mass., and organized a company there for the settlement of Newbury, on the Quascacunquen river, to which place he removed with a few personal friends and acquaintances in the spring of 1635.‡

Rev. James Noyes, assistant pastor, or teacher, of the church, was the son of Rev. William Noyes, who married Anne, sister of Rev. Robert Parker.§ He came to America in 1634 with his wife, Sarah Brown, eldest daughter of Joseph Brown, of Southampton, in the same ship with his cousin Rev. Thomas Parker. He preached for a year at Watertown, and came to Newbury in 1635.

* Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 17.

† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. ix., p. 267.

‡ "At this general court [May, 1635] some of the chief of Ipswich desired leave to remove to Quascacunquen to begin a town there, which was granted them, and it was named Newberry." (Winthrop's History of New England, edition 1853, vol. i., p. 191.)

§ Mather's "Magnalia," edition 1853, vol. i., p. 481.

The statement that Rev. William Noyes married Anne Stephens, daughter of Nicholas Stephens, printed on page 165, "Ould Newbury," is probably incorrect.

Nicholas Noyes, who came with his brother, Rev. James Noyes, to Boston in 1634, evidently returned to England in 1638, and came again to America the next year, bringing Anthony Somerby with him (New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xxxii., p. 411).

The Temple measured:

OR,

A brief Survey of the *Temple myſtical*,

Which is the Inſtituted

CHURCH of CHRIST.

Wherein are ſolidly and modeſtly diſcuſſed,

Moſt of the material Queſtions touching the Conſtitution and Government of the Viſible Church Militant here on Earth.

Together with

The ſolution of all ſorts of OBJECTIONS which are uſually framed againſt the Model and Platform of Eccleſiaſtical Polity, which is here aſſerted and maintained.

In particular here are debated,

The points of ſo much Controverſie, touching the Unity of the Church, The Members of the Church, The Form of the Church, and Church Covenant, The Power of the Church, The Officers of the Church, and their Power in Church-Government, The Power of Magiſtrates about the Church, and ſome Church Acts, as Admiſſion of Members, and other things ſet down in the Table before the Book.

By JAMES NOYES Teacher of the Church at *Newbery in New England.*

LONDON:

Printed for EDMUND PAXTON, and are to be ſold at his Shop in *Pauls* chain, over againſt the Caſtle Tavern neer to the Doctors Commons. 1647.

He was a strong and vigorous supporter of ecclesiastical rights and privileges, and published "The Temple Measured," a book devoted mainly to the discussion of questions relating to church government. From a copy of this book, now in the Boston Public Library, a photograph of the title-page is here reproduced. As a specimen of typographical art connected with the early history of Newbury, it cannot fail to interest the reader.

The first meeting-house in Newbury was probably erected on or near the three acres of land afterwards sold to John Emery, from which twenty rods were reserved "for a burying place as it is bounded with stakes with a way to it from the street." *

The church was composed of earnest and devout men and women, who were evidently more liberal in their views of church fellowship and discipline than the inhabitants of other towns in the colony of Massachusetts Bay. Thomas Lechford, "an attorney and solicitor of Clements Inne, in the county of Middlesex, England," after a residence of three or four years in Boston, Mass., wrote and published in London, in 1642, "Plain Dealing or Newes from New England," in which he says: "Of late some Churches are of opinion that any may be admitted to Church fellowship, that are not extremely ignorant or scandalous: but this they are not very forward to practice except at *Newberry*."

In 1643, there was an assembly of all the churches of the colony at Cambridge. "The principal occasion was because some of the elders went about to set up some things ‖according‖ to the presbytery, as of Newbury, etc. The assembly concluded against some parts of the presbyterial way, and the Newbury ministers took time to consider the arguments, etc." †

In all essential particulars, however, the inhabitants of Newbury conformed to the order of public worship established at Boston and elsewhere, except that for many years they assembled at the beating of a drum or the raising of a flag instead of the "wringing of a bell."

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 16 and 24.
† Winthrop's History of New England, edition 1853, vol. ii., p. 165.

Every Sabbath or Lords day, they come together at Boston, by wringing of a bell, about nine of the clock or before. The Pastor begins with solemn prayer continuing about a quarter of an houre. The Teacher then readeth and expoundeth a Chapter: Then a Psalm is sung, which ever one of the ruling Elders dictates. After that the Pastor preacheth a Sermon, and sometimes *ex tempore* exhorts. Then the Teacher concludes with prayer, and a blessing.

Once a moneth is a Sacrament of the Lords Supper, whereof notice is given usually a fortnight before, and then all others departing save the Church, which is a great deale less in number than those that goe away, they receive the Sacrament, the Ministers and ruling Elders sitting at the Table, the rest in their seats, or upon forms: . . . Then a Psalme is sung, and with a short blessing the congregation is dismissed. . . . About two in the afternoone, they repaire to the meeting-house againe: and then the Pastor begins, as before noone, and a Psalme being sung, the Teacher makes a Sermon. He was wont, when I came first, to reade and expound a Chapter also before his Sermon in the afternoon. After and before his Sermon, he prayeth.*

Then came the baptism of children and the gathering of money or goods for the maintenance of the minister or the support of the poor of the church, "one of the Deacons saying, Brethren of the congregation, now there is time for contribution, wherefore as God hath prospered you, so freely offer."

This done, then follows admission of members, or hearing matters of offence, or other things, sometimes till it be very late. If they have time, after this, is sung a Psalme, and then the Pastor concludeth with a Prayer and a blessing.†

The removal of the inhabitants of Newbury from Parker river to the "new town" on Merrimack river led to a prolonged discussion in regard to the removal of the meeting-house. It was ordered to be taken down and a new one set up on or before the twentieth day of October, 1647, "in or upon a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppans barne." ‡

The land upon which this second house of worship stood now forms a part of the burying-ground near the "trayneing green" in the First parish of Newbury. There were no pews on the floor of the house or in the gallery, but seats or

*Lechford's "News from New England," pp. 16, 18. † Ibid., p. 19.
‡"Ould Newbury," p. 93.

benches were provided; and January 24, 1651, the selectmen ordered "that every householder, both men and women, shall sit in those seats that are appointed for them during their lives."

September 21, 1654 it was ordered that the Townes men select shall forthwith Examine & require an account of the money or goods that hath bin gathered to purchas a bell in whose hands it is & to make report to the towne.*

May 14, 1658, a committee was appointed by the inhabitants of Newbury to lay out to Mr. Woodman ten or twelve acres of marsh near Plum island, Mr. Woodman having agreed to pay for the same in boards or nails for the meeting-house.*

A more commodious building, dedicated to the public worship of God, was erected, early in the spring of 1661, on the southerly side of the old meeting-house, which was allowed to stand until the new one was completed. In June, seats were assigned to all the adult inhabitants of the town according to their social rank and condition. Into this new meeting-house Lydia (Perkins) Wardwell, wife of Eliakim Wardwell, of Hampton, N.H., came naked to answer those who accused her of teaching false doctrines and separating herself from the church. For this offence she was ordered to be severely whipped and pay the cost and fees of the court at Salem, May 5, 1663.†

A bell, probably purchased with the money gathered in 1654, served to call the inhabitants together on Sundays and lecture days. Elizabeth Webster was sentenced, in 1663, "to stand at the meeting house dore at Newbury the next lecture day from the ringing of the first bell until the minister be ready to begin prayer with a paper on her head, written in capital letters: FOR TAKING A FALSE OATH IN COURT." †

December 25, 1665, Anthony Morse was employed to ring the bell and also "to see that the meeting house be cleane swept and the glasse of the windows be carefully lookt unto, if any should happen to be loosed with the wind, to be nailed

* Town of Newbury Records. † See *ante*, chap. iii., p. 124.

close again. . . . For this service he shall have £3, for every year." *

Rev. Thomas Parker officiated as pastor of the church, without an assistant or colleague, for six or seven years after the death of Rev. James Noyes in 1656.

Rev. John Woodbridge, who came to New England in the ship "Mary and John," with his uncle, Rev. Thomas Parker, was clerk of the town of Newbury from 1635 to 1638. In 1639, he married Mercy, daughter of Thomas Dudley, governor of the colony of Massachusetts Bay. He studied for the ministry while a school-teacher in Boston and was ordained pastor of the church organized at Andover, October 24, 1645. He returned to England in 1647 with his wife and family, and remained there sixteen years.†

In 1663, he came again to New England, and was elected assistant pastor of the church at Newbury, with a salary of thirty pounds for the first half-year.

October 26, 1664, "the towne voted that Mr. Parker should have but sixty pounds per year." This sum, however, was increased to eighty pounds a year, June 3, 1665; and the same day the annual salary of Rev. John Woodbridge was fixed at sixty pounds.*

At this time the inhabitants of Newbury were greatly disturbed by questions relating to the government of the church and to the exercise of ecclesiastical authority by Rev. Mr. Parker. They manifested in various ways their disapprobation of the doctrines taught by the pastor and his worthy colleague.

November 1, 1665 It was voted whether Mr. Woodbridge should be chosen by papers to preach to the towne for one year. There were four votes in the affirmative and thirty one blanks.*

At the same meeting it was voted: that Mr. Woodbridg should have the last spring Rate and that the Selectmen shall have power to make another Rate for this halfe yeare past of thirty pounds more.*

It was also ordered that Mr. Woodbridges Rates for the two years past shall be paid within two months after this day, and then the select-

* Town of Newbury Records.

† His farm in Newbury was on the easterly side of "trayneing green." Capt. Benjamin Swett and his brother-in-law Nathaniel Weare had a lease of this farm for seven years, from 1655 to 1662. (See New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. vi., p. 50.)

men shall go to Mr. Woodbridge and see who hath not paid, and such as are delinquent the select men shall have power to sumons them before the commissioners to recover it.*

During the long controversy that divided the church into two nearly equal parties the salary of Rev. Thomas Parker was regularly paid, but there was evidently a contest over the amount raised annually for the benefit of Rev. Mr. Woodbridge.

April 25, 1666 It was voted that Mr. Parkers four score pounds by the yeare should be continued to be paid to him yearely. And Mr Woodbridge to have sixty pounds a yeare till the Towne take further order.*

March 4, 1666–7 voted that Mr Woodbridge should have three score pounds for the yeare as he had formerly.*

March 2, 1667–8 Mr Woodbridge was voted by counting man for man, called over, to have sixty pounds a yeare for his preaching.*

May 21, 1670 It was voted that the order in the Towne booke that gives Mr Woodbridge three score pound a yeare for his preaching is made voyd.*

At a meeting of the selectmen held February 4, 1667–8, the seats in the meeting-house were rearranged and assigned to the members of the church according to their social rank and condition.

Daniel Lunt proposed for a seat for severall women [his wife and her sister Smith & John Kent, Jun. his wife . . . Peter Chenyes wife, John Lunts wife & John Poore, Jun. his wife] the Selectmen ordered that the 2 short seats neere [] should be for them to be made into one.*

Dec. 3, 1668 the selectmen granted Liberty to Nathaniel Clarke, Mr Edward Woodman, Benjamin Lowle, John Kelly & John Kent, Jun. to build a pew for their wives at their own charg: in the meeting house from the east end of the South gallery to the pulpit to be & remaine to them & their heirs forever.*

This pew was probably the first one built in the meeting-house at Newbury, and ultimately led to the building of others under the supervision of the selectmen. Seats or benches, however, were in general use; and new ones were occasionally provided for the accommodation of the inhabitants of the town. February 25, 1668, Richard Dummer,

*Town of Newbury Records.

Jr., Thomas Woodbridge, and fifteen or eighteen other persons were authorized by the selectmen to occupy certain specified seats, "provided that they do pay their equal shares & proportions for the building of them." *

John Woolcott and Peter Toppan were presented to the court held at Ipswich, April 28, 1669, "for disorderly going and setting in a seat belonging to others" in the meeting-house. For this offence they were admonished, and ordered to pay the costs of court.†

February 21, 1669–70, the selectmen ordered "that a paire of staires be made in the porch to go up & downe into the gallery." *

May 21, 1670, the inhabitants of the town voted to provide additional seats for the north and south galleries of the meeting-house; and a committee was appointed to see that the work was promptly done.

Notwithstanding the ecclesiastical difficulties that divided the church at this time, the number of worshippers was constantly increasing.

September 19, 1670 it was voted that the selectmen should have liberty to place such as wanted seats in the meeting house & to procure a bason for the church & to order Thomas Turvill to his kinsmans, also to be helpful to the poor.*

January 31, 1670–71, the selectmen authorized Caleb Moody, John Hale, Benjamin Rolfe, John Webster, Abel Somerby, Nathaniel Clarke, Percivall Lowle, Jonathan Woodman, Daniel Thurston, Benjamin Lowle, and John Swett to build at their own charge "a pew in the south east corner of the meeting house" to be assigned to them for the use of their wives and daughters.*

The ecclesiastical difficulties and dissensions that disturbed the church for nearly twenty-five years culminated in an appeal to the county court in 1669 and to the Great and General Court in 1671.‡ Mr. Edward Woodman was accused of publicly denouncing Rev. John Woodbridge as a preacher

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Ipswich Court Records, vol. ii., p. 94.

‡ For a full and detailed account of this prolonged controversy see Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 72–112.

retained in the church by craft and subtilty and Rev. Mr. Parker "as an apostate and backslider from the truth," who would set up a prelacy, and, though unsupported by a council of cardinals, would exercise more power than the pope.

From the evidence presented to the court it appears that Mr. Woodman was interrupted in his speech, on the occasion referred to, by Capt. Gerrish, who made some reference to his gray hairs. Mr. Woodman in answer said, "Capt. Gerrish, my gray hairs will stand in any place where your bald head will stand."

After a careful examination of the evidence submitted, the following decree was entered upon the records of the court: —

MARCH 30, 1669.

Having heard the complaint prsented to this Court agst Mr Edward Woodman do judge some passages relating to Mr Parker & Mr Woodbridge to be faulse and scandalous and that concerneing Capt Gerish, rep'chfull, and p'voking and the whole genally offensive, And hath therfore ordered that the sayd Mr Woodman shall be seriously & solemnely admonished and enjoyned to make a publique Confession at the next publique Towne or church meeting at Newbury of his sinfull expressions & just offence that he hath given or else to pay five pounds & to pay costs and fees.

I dissent from this sentance Samuell Symonds
And I dissent Wm Hathorne

Wee conceive the law allows not liberty to the members of this Court to enter their dissent in this Case, being a criminal case, & not properly concerneing religion or any other qualifiecation mentioned in ye law

SYMOND BRADSTREET DANIELL DENISON.

Mr Edward Woodman appealed from this Judgmt to the next court of Assistants at Boston

He recognized in the sum of £20 with William Titcomb surety to prosecute his appeal and be of good behavior in meantime.*

A council composed of delegates from eight or nine churches was held in Newbury, November 5, 1669, to consider the questions involved in this unfortunate controversy, and settle, if possible, the differences that threatened to disrupt the church. Some advice was given in a spirit of kindness and brotherly love, that seemed to allay the excitement tem-

* Ipswich Court Records, vol. ii., p. 92.

porarily; but the contest was renewed a few months later with increased vigor, and April 19, 1670, a second council assembled at the meeting-house in Newbury. After a prolonged hearing and careful deliberation, articles of agreement were drawn up and signed by Rev. Mr. Parker for himself and his friends and supporters, "and by Mr. Edward Woodman and the brethren that were with him."

These articles of agreement expressly declared "that the platform of discipline established by the general court" should be the rule or standard of the church at Newbury, and that all matters of controversy should be brought to the church for settlement.* It soon became evident, however, that the work of reconciliation was incomplete, and that the condition of affairs was very discouraging. Meetings called for the discussion of matters relating to church membership or discipline were exciting and boisterous. On one occasion Mr. Woodman and his friends "raised an hubbub, knocking, stamping, hemming, gaping to drown the reading" of charges preferred against them by their pastor.† A few months later the same persons, or a majority of them, having met together and chosen a moderator, proceeded to admonish Rev. Mr. Parker, "and to suspend him from the exercise of his office." ‡ Thereupon complaint was entered in the court held at Ipswich in the month of April, 1671, accusing Mr. Edward Woodman, Mr. Richard Dummer, William Titcomb, Richard Bartlet, and others, to the number of forty-one in all, of disorderly conduct, dishonoring the holy ordinances of the church, and speaking contemptuously and reproachfully of their pastor, Rev. Mr. Parker.§

On the twenty-ninth day of May, 1671, the court found the defendants "guilty of very great misdemeanors, though in different degrees," and imposed a fine varying in amount from one noble (six shillings and eightpence) to twenty nobles upon the persons named in the indictment, together with the charges of witnesses and the fees of court.

Two days later, however, the questions in dispute were brought to the attention of the General Court; and the

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 88. † Ibid., p. 94. ‡ Ibid., p. 99. § Ibid., p. 90.

churches at Charlestown, Boston, Dedham, and Roxbury were ordered "to send their elders and messengers to the church at Newbury," and advise with the pastor and people there, "and make such suggestions as may be necessary to re-unite them in the bonds of brotherly love." *

Rev. Thomas Parker and his friends were evidently opposed to the order of the General Court, which practically annulled the decision of the county court, and called a council of the churches to meet at Newbury.

In answer to an Address exhibited by the Reverend Mr Thomas Parker of the ch at Newbury referring to the act of the Councill sent by Sundry Chhs according to the appoyntment of the Hond General Court in May last, Sundry writings & pposals having been agitated and it appearing difficult to have a right understanding of the matter unless the parties concerned be admitted their lawful plea, This Council do not judge it expedient to exr't their powr to any present interposition therein, but do advise them to attend to councills of peace & therein to the submitting themselves one to another in the feare of ye Lord according to ye practice of the congregational chh. here settled.

past September 12, 1671.†

The council assembled in due time; and, after hearing the testimony of the elders and prominent members of the church, and making such inquiries and personal investigations as the circumstances of the case warranted, a report was agreed upon, and presented to the General Court, severely criticising Mr. Edward Woodman and his supporters, but at the same time declaring that his suspension from membership in the church was made in violation of the letter and spirit of the gospel, and, therefore, null and void. The report also requested and advised Rev. Mr. Woodbridge "not to impose himself or his ministry upon the church," nor obstruct the members in their choice of an assistant pastor, provided they observe "the gospel rule and approved church order." Preachers and hearers, although divided upon questions of doctrine and discipline, were exhorted "to walk according to the rule of faith, love and the order of the gospel," and to manifest "a mutual, hearty and free forgiveness of each other according to the rule of Christ."

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 487; Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 101; Massachusetts Archives, vol. x., pp. 59, 60.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. x., p. 107.

May 15, 1672, the General Court accepted and adopted the report made by the council of churches, and ordered Edward Rawson, secretary of the colony, to notify the church at Newbury, "pastor and people, preachers and hearers, however before divided," to conform to its requirements and heed its admonitions, if they would avoid further difficulties and complications.*

This communication, although firm and resolute in tone, did not secure the unanimity expected; and the General Court, October 23, 1672, appointed a committee, consisting of Mr. Thomas Danforth, Mr. William Stoughton, Dr. Leonard Hoar, Capt. Thomas Clarke, Mr. Joshua Moody, and others, to confer with the pastor and people at Newbury, and urge them to submit, with meekness and humiliation, one unto the other, "and in case there shall appear any refractoriness in any amongst them that the persons so sent cannot prevail with them that they then make return to the next court of election what they find and do therein." †

Although no report of the conference has been discovered, some compromises and concessions were probably suggested by the committee, and promptly accepted by the church at Newbury. The questions in dispute were adjusted without further legislative action on the part of the General Court.

Rev. John Woodbridge did not probably retain his office as teacher in the church after the close of the year 1672.

He still continued to reside in Newbury, however; and June 1, 1677, he was authorized by the General Court to take depositions and acknowledgment of deeds. Subsequently, he was appointed one of the associate magistrates for the county of Essex; and in 1683 he was elected "assistant" to the General Court, and by virtue of his office was qualified to punish criminals and solemnize marriages.‡ He died March 17, 1695.

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part. ii., pp. 521–524; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 110, 111.

†Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 549; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 112.

‡Mr. John Woodbridge, of Newbury, was granted by the General Court, October 11, 1682, "the priviledge that other teaching elders have as to freedome from rates, so long as he shall be imployed in constant preaching." Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 379.

THE Visions and Prophecies OF DANIEL EXPOUNDED:

Wherein the Mistakes of Former INTERPRETERS

are modestly discovered, and the true meaning of the TEXT made plain by the Words and Circumstances of it.

The same also illustrated by clear Instances taken out of HISTORIES which relate the Events of time mystically foretold by the holy Prophet.

Amongst other things of Note, touching the *Two Witnesses*, the *New Jerusalem*, the *Thousand yeers*, &c. here is propounded a new Way for the finding out of the determinate time signified by DANIEL in his Seventy weeks; when it did begin, and when we are to expect the end thereof. Very considerable, in respect of the great stirs and tumults of this present Age wherein we live.

By *Thomas Parker*, sometime of *Newbury* in *Berk*-shire, and now Pastor to the Church at *Newbery* in *New-England*.

Dan. 12.4. *But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: Many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be encreased.*
Joh. 5.39. *Search the Scriptures.*
1 Thess. 5.21. *Prove all things, hold fast that which is good.*

London, Printed for *Edmund Paxton*, and are to be sold by *Nathanael Webb* and *William Grantham*, at the Grey-hound in *Pauls* Church-yard. 1646.

In January, 1672–3, Rev. John Richardson was employed to assist Rev. Mr. Parker in the ministry. He was the oldest son of Amos and Mary Richardson, of Stonington, Conn.* He was ordained "teacher to the church of Christ in Newbury" October 20, 1675, and pastor December 25, 1675.†

Rev. Thomas Parker died April 24, 1677. For several years previous to his death he was totally blind. Although old and infirm, he was able to prepare students for college, and taught them Latin, Greek, and Hebrew from memory.

About a year and half before he died, that which he had long feared befel him, viz: the palsey in his tongue: and so he became speechless, and thus continued until his death: having this only help left him, that he could pronounce letters, but not syllables or words. He signified his mind by *spelling* his words, which was indeed a tedious way, but yet a mercy so far to him and others.‡

During his life he published "The Visions and Prophecies of Daniel," and "A Letter to Mrs. Elizabeth Avery touching Sundry Opinions by her Professed and Maintained." He also wrote the dedication and introduction to a posthumous work of Rev. James Noyes, entitled "Moses and Aaron, or the Rights of Church and State."

The title-pages of these books, as well as a portion of the introduction to and dedication of Rev. Mr. Noyes' posthumous work, "Moses and Aaron," are here reproduced from original copies now in the possession of the Boston Public Library. They reveal, in visible form and shape, something of the religious thought and life that prevailed in Newbury in the seventeenth century, and are especially interesting and valuable to the student of local history.

* History of New London, Caulkins, p. 302.
† Newbury (First Parish) Records.
‡ Mather's Magnalia (ed. 1853), vol. i., p. 486.

The Copy of a

LETTER

Written by

Mr. *Thomas Parker*,

Paſtor of the Church of *Newbury* in

New-England,

TO

His Siſter, Mrs *Elizabeth Avery*,

Sometimes of *Newbury* in the County of Berks,

Touching ſundry

OPINIONS

BY HER

Profeſſed and Maintained.

Novemb. 22. 1649.

Imprimatur

John Downame.

London, Printed by *John Field* for *Edmund Paxton*, at *Pauls-Chain*, over againſt the *Caſtle* Tavern, near the *Doctors Commons*. 1650.

Moſes and Aaron:

Or, The Rights of CHURCH and STATE;

Containing two

DISPUTATIONS.

The former concerning the Church, in which are examined the principles of Separation, and their inconſiſtency with truth and peace demonſtrated: and the Government of the Church vindicated into the hands of her proper Rulers.

The latter aſſerts the ſacredneſſe of the perſons and authority of Kings againſt Sacrilegious uſurpation and King-killing.

By that judicious and faithful Miniſter of Chriſt, Mr. *JAMES NOYES*, ſometimes of *Newbury* in *NEW ENGLAND.*

Publiſhed by *Benj. Woodbridge*, Rector of *Newbury* in the County of *BERKS.*.

Numb.16.3. *And they gathered themſelves together againſt* Moſes *and againſt* Aaron, *and ſaid unto them, Ye take too much upon you, ſeeing all the Congregation are holy every one of them, and the Lord is among them: Wherefore then lift ye up your ſelves above the Congregation of the Lord?*

Jude ver.11. *Periſhed in the Gain-ſaying of* Coreh.

LONDON,

Printed by *T. R.* for *Edmund Paxton*, in *Pauls-chain*, over againſt the *Caſtle* Tavern, near *Doctors Commons* 1661.

TO THE READER.

Gentle Reader,



Thou mayest not expect this work ſhould be ſo perfect and exact, as if the Author had been living to put it out himſelf. The original Copy alſo was lately loſt in a ſhip foundred at Sea; and he wrote this Treatiſe in the laſt half year of his life, which was a time of continual weakneſs and ſickneſſe ending in his death. I did often preſs him long before to ſet down his notions in writing; but he was ſtill averſe, until the foreſaid half year of his laſt continuance on earth. Notwithſtanding all theſe diſcouragements, I thought it not meet to deprive thee of the uſe of this his laſt labour, becauſe I conceived it would be very uſeful for the preſent time.

* * * * * * * *

The Author M^r James Noyes (my worthy collegue in the ministry of the Gospel here) was a man of Singular qualifications, in piety excelling, an implacable enemy to all herisie and schism, and a most able warrior against the same.... He was couragious in danger and still was apt to believe the best, and made faire weather in a storm. He was much honoured and esteemed in the Countrey, and his death was much bewailed. I think he may be reckoned among the greatest worthies of this age. Upon the rising of our late usurpers, and the beheading of our most gracious and most excellent King Charles the first, of blessed memory, by a villanous stroke and under a wicked pretence of Justice & upon the defeating of our renowned King Charles the Second (whom God preserve) he fell into such a depth of sadness and sorrow of heart that it hastened his death as was believed. So he died in the 48^th^ year of his age Octob. 22, 1656. He left behind him this posthume, imperfect and incompleat, which if he had lived he would have perfected with the addition of many rare and excellent notions, for the enlightning and discovery of truths

Thine in the Lord

THO: PARKER

*Pastor, though unworthy, of the church in Newbury in N. E.**

* Introduction to "Moses and Aaron," published in 1661.



To the moſt HIGH and MIGHTY PRINCE *CHARLES* the ſecond, by the Grace of God KING of great Britain, *France* and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith, *&c.*

* * * * * * * *

Now as touching this work that followeth I have presumed to dedicate the same to your Royal Majesty, because the matter of it pertaineth to your consideration and because of the singular joy and hopes I have of your ascending into the Throne, and because the Author was a special lover of your Royal Father (of blessed memory) and of your majesty, the fall of whom stuck so close and neer unto him and wrought in him so deep sorrow and affliction, that it is thought to have been the principal cause of his death. Let your Majesties Gracious acceptation Countenance the work. . . .

Now the God of all Grace and Mercy, who hath raised up your Majesty into the Throne of Royal Government . . . confirm and establish you upon your Throne, and crown you with grace, prosperity and glory, unto his own everlasting praise, the beauty and enlargement of the Church and to the laying a foundation of higher advancement of yourself in the future world than can be here expected. This is, and shall be the constant prayer of

Your Majesties Most Loyal
Servant and Subject
THOMAS PARKER.

A minister of the Gospel, though unworthy, and Pastor to the Church of Newbury in New England.

*Written from Newbury in New England August 6, 1660.**

* Dedication of "Moses and Aaron," published in 1661.

Rev. John Richardson came to Newbury, as previously stated, in 1673; but he was not ordained pastor until two years later. He was evidently an earnest and faithful preacher, and was successful in healing the dissensions that had disturbed the church for more than a quarter of a century.

January 31, 1672–3, a committee, consisting of "Capt Gerrish, Richard Dole & Ensigne Greenleaf," was chosen "to build a house for the ministry the same dimensions every way according as Nath: Clarkes house is with an addition of a porch," to be paid for by a town vote.*

December 3, 1673, the committee above named was authorized and directed to superintend "the building of Mr Richardsons house & to carry it on to the finishing of it & the selectmen were ordered to make a Rate for the building of it." *

"March 2, 1673–4 It was voted that the finishing of the house for the ministry & the alteration of it is left to the selectmen," who were also ordered "to see that six acres of land be laid out for the ministry between Rich: Brownes pasture and Capt Gerrishes land," and also to buy glass and nails for the house.*

December 6, 1674, Rev. John Richardson was admitted to membership in the church at Newbury;† and March 1, 1674–5, Nathaniel Clark and Henry Jaques were appointed a committee "to complete the ministry house" according to the plans agreed upon, and the selectmen were instructed to notify all persons owning carts or oxen, suitable for hauling lumber or stone, to bring them to the committee, with such other implements and tools as were needed or could be used in building a fence or wall about the house and the pasture adjoining.*

At the same meeting (March 1, 1674–5) it was voted that a salary of one hundred pounds should be paid Rev. John Richardson annually, each person to pay his proportion on or before the first day of November, "one half in merchantable

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 115.

barley at the malt houses of Daniel Pierce or Caleb Moody" and the other half in pork, wheat, butter, or Indian corn, to the satisfaction of Mr. Richardson.*

May 7, 1675 Daniel Peirce Senr Nath: Clarke & John Bartlet Senr were chosen to compleat the finishing & fencing of the ministry house.*

In the summer of 1676 permission to build a new seat in the meeting-house, "in the south corner of the womens gallery," led to an exciting episode, which ultimately resulted in the indictment of Joshua Richardson, Caleb Richardson, and Edward Ordway "for breaking into the meeting house at Newbury, breaking of a pew and chairs &c." They were tried and convicted at the court held at Ipswich, March 27, 1677, and sentenced to be severely whipped or pay a fine of ten pounds with costs and fees, and also to give bonds for their future good behavior. Richard Carr, who was accused of being associated with them in the commission of this unlawful act, was found "not guilty," and discharged.†

August 18, 1680, the selectmen ordered that Anthony Morse should every Sabbath day go or send his boy to Mr. Richardson and tell him when he is going to ring the last bell every meeting and for that service is to have ten shillings a year added to his former annuity.*

Aug 29, 1681 The selectmen agreed with James Mirricke to keep the meeting house & sweep it and Ring the bell twice every meeting according to former custome in season, and to bring a bason of water to the meeting house when children are to be baptized, and to give notice to Mr Richardson when he goes to Ring the last bell every meeting both Sabath days & lecture days, and for this service the selectmen do engage in the behalfe of the Towne, that the said James Mirricke shall have yearly paid to him out of the Towne Rate the sum of three pounds & 10 shillings. And the said James Mirrick is hereby engaged also to dig graves as occasion may be, for which he is to have three shillings for every man & womans Grave in the somer & when the frost is out of the Ground, but also in winter he is to have foure shillings for such graves &c &c.*

At a town meeting held January 23, 1684–5, "Richard Bartlet not appearing, he being a deputy to the general

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Ipswich Court Records, vol. ii., p. 290; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 119.

court," Nicholas Noyes was chosen moderator, and the following vote was then passed: —

The towne taking into consideration the Lord hath bin pleased to disable our Reverend Teacher by fever & that he is not able to carry on the worke of the ministry at present. It was therefore voted that the towne will allow twenty shillings in pay every Sabbath to such as shall carry on the worke of the ministry During the time of Mr Richardsons sickness. And also desire the Deacons to take [] for such as may preach among us from one Sabbath to another untill god provide otherwise for our help.*

During the following summer the inhabitants at the west end of the town were exceedingly anxious to erect a house of worship in that neighborhood, and asked liberty to employ a suitable person to carry on the work of the ministry among them. This humble request, however, was not granted. Nevertheless, the petitioners proceeded to build, without permission, a meeting-house in the vicinity of Sawyer's hill, and employed Mr. Edward Thompson to preach there. A long and serious contest followed, which ultimately led to setting off part of the west end of the town as a separate parish.†

Mr. John Clark was invited to assist Rev. John Richardson in the discharge of his ministerial duties, and also to keep a grammar school at the west end of the town. He declined the invitation, and Rev. Christopher Toppan was asked to undertake the work. May 28, 1694, Mr. Toppan replied that he could not give an affirmative answer to the proposal submitted to him, but expressed his willingness "to help in the work of the ministry in Newbury for a year in order to further settlement as Gods providence shall make way." *

Rev. Mr. Richardson died April 27, 1696; and, on the fifteenth day of May following, the church invited Rev. Christopher Toppan to take the entire charge of the parish. May twenty-fifth, the freeholders and inhabitants of the town voted to give him forty pounds a year in money and forty pounds a year in provision, so long as he carried on the whole work of the ministry among them.*

In the month of July following, the town granted him two

* Town of Newbury Records.

† For the details of this prolonged controversy see pp. 349–356.

acres of land to be laid out in some convenient place near the meeting-house, "provided that he be ordained and settle in the town." *

He accepted the office of pastor of the church, and was ordained September 9, 1696. For more than twenty years he occupied the parsonage built for Rev. Mr. Richardson, on Floyd's lane, now Hanover street, Newbury.†

Services in the meeting-house on Sundays and lecture days were announced by the ringing of a bell; but persons living at a distance were not satisfied with that way of calling the inhabitants together, and the town voted, November 8, 1697, to authorize the selectmen "to procure a flagg for the meeting house to be put out at the ringing of the first bell and taken in when the last bell is rung." ‡

In the month of July following, "the worshipfull Coll Daniel Pierce, Esq. Capt Thomas Noyes and Serj. Stephen Jaques" were chosen a committee to prepare plans and ascertain the probable cost of a new meeting-house.‡ December 21, 1698, an agreement was made with Sergt. Stephen Jaques to furnish the labor and materials for the new building, to be constructed according to plans and specifications submitted, for the sum of five hundred and thirty pounds: "Sixty foote in length & fifty foote in breadth and twenty foote in the stud, or post." February 8, 1698–9, it was voted to increase the length of the posts and studs to twenty-four feet, and to pay Sergt. Jaques not over twenty pounds additional for this extra work.§

December 18, 1699 Coll Danl Peirce & Majr Thomas Noyes were by vote desired & impowered to imploy ye Honrble Capt Samuel Sewall of Boston, Esq. To procure a good and sufficient meeting hous Bell for the Towne of Newbury suitable for our Towne considering ye Remoteness of our dwellings.

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Rev. Christopher Toppan was born December 15, 1671, and graduated at Harvard College in 1691. He was a son of Dr. Peter Toppan, of Newbury. July 17, 1718, he purchased of Nathaniel Clark seven and a half acres of land, with a dwelling-house thereon, now owned and occupied by Capt. Moses J. Milliken, Newburyport (Essex Deeds, book xxxvi., leaf 89). April 29, 1746, he sold to his grandson, Christopher Toppan, son of Edward Toppan, of Hampton, N.H., "land in Newbury with the house I now dwell in, bounded westerly on the country road, easterly on New Lane, so called &c." (Essex Deeds, book lxxxvii., leaf 269). The country road, is now High street and New lane is now Allen street, Newburyport.

‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., p. 48. § Ibid., p. 50.

It was also voted y^t^ a new pulpitt should be made for the new meeting hous.*

There was evidently some delay in procuring a new bell, and April 22, 1700, the town voted "y^t^ Serj^t^ Jaques shall forthwith hang the [old] meeting-house bell in the New Terrett." †

August 21, 1700 voted y^t^ y^e^ Selectmen are apoynted to desire and imploy Cap^t^ Jeremiah Dum̃er, of Boston, Esq^r^ to procure a good meeting hous Bell for the east p^t^ of the Towne of Newbury of about 400 waite.‡

October 18, 1700 voted that Coll. Dan^l^ Pierce, Esq. & Tristram Coffin, Esq. be impowered to procure a meeting house bell for the new meeting house of about four hundred waite.§

April 30, 1701 voted that when the East p^t^ of the Towne of Newbury shall be supplyed w^th^ a new meeting house Bell, that then the present meeting house Bell shall be & remaine to be a schoole Bell & improved for y^t^ use.‖

January 4, 1705–6 voted that the new Bell be hanged in the Terret of the meeting house & y^t^ the selectmen se that it be done with all convenient speede, also to take care that the Bell be Rung at nine of the clock every night, and that the day of the month be every night tolled.¶

October 18, 1700, a committee was appointed to assign seats in the new meeting-house to the freeholders and inhabitants of the town; and the same day "It was also voted y^t^ a pew be built for y^e^ ministers wife next y^e^ pulpit stayrs, . . . also y^t^ Coll Dan^l^ Peirce, Esq. should have his first choyce of a pew & Maj^r^ Thomas Noyes, Esq shall have the next choyce for a pew." §

In the month of November following, Henry Short, Henry Somerby, Tristram Coffin, Nathaniel Coffin, Capt. Edward Sargent, Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet, and many others were granted liberty to build pews, at their own charge, for the accommodation of their wives and families; and on the sixteenth day of December the committee appointed "to seat the meeting house" reported the names of three hundred and thirteen persons, inhabitants of the First parish in Newbury, to whom they had assigned seats. The location of

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., p. 55. † Ibid., p. 58. ‡ Ibid., p. 62. § Ibid., p. 65. ‖ Ibid., p. 77. ¶ Ibid., p. 120.

these seats and the names of the persons assigned to them were entered in full upon the records of the town.*

January 19, 1702–3, Ensign Jaques and Richard Kelly were appointed a committee "to build a convenient porch to the west dore of the meeting hous heere at the east p^{t} of Newbury and sutible and convenient Gutters to s^{d} meeting house." †

March 17, 1702–3, the town voted that the old meeting-house "be repayred and fitted for a Court House & Schoole House"; but this vote was afterwards reconsidered, and May 23, 1705, "the old meeting house [was] then Granted to M^{r} Richard Brown, Junior, wth liberty to remove it."

The new edifice, erected during the summer and winter of 1699, was large and commodious.

The body of the house was filled with long seats. Contiguous to the wall were twenty pews. The spaces for the pews were granted to particular persons, who appear to have been principals. Before the pulpit and deacon's seat was a large pew containing a table, where sat the chiefs of the fathers. The young people sat in the upper gallery, and the children on a seat in the alley, fixed to the outside of the pews. The floor measured 60 by 50 feet. The roof was constructed with four gable ends, or projections, one on each side, each containing a large window, which gave light to the upper galleries. The turret was in the centre. The space within was open to the roof, where was visible plenty of timber, with great needles and little needles pointing downwards, which served at once for strength and ornament. There were many ornaments of antique sculpture and wainscot. It was a stately building in the day of it, but it was not my lot to see it in all its ancient glory. Long ago a wall was spread overhead, and the floor was occupied by pews. The roof was made plain, the four very steep sides terminating in a platform which supported a steeple.‡

All questions relating to the temporal affairs of the First church in Newbury were discussed and settled at the annual or special meetings of the town, and appropriations of money for the minister or for building the meeting-house were recorded on the same page with the election of constables, fence-viewers, surveyors of highways, and other officers of the

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., pp. 69–72. †Ibid., p. 92.

‡Appendix to a sermon preached September 17, 1806, by Rev. John S. Popkin, of Newbury.

town. But after the Second church was organized and parish lines established, meetings for the consideration of town affairs and meetings of the parish for the consideration of church affairs were held independently of each other, and separate books of record were kept by the town and parish clerks.

Early in the spring of 1722, the inhabitants of the First parish in Newbury invited Mr. Daniel Holbrook "to assist Rev. Christopher Toppan in the ministry." Some objections were made to the proposed settlement of an assistant pastor; and, April 6, 1722, a committee was chosen to confer with Mr. Toppan and Mr. Holbrook in order to remove the objections, if possible.*

On the twelfth day of July, the church voted to invite Mr. Holbrook to accept the office of teacher, or assistant pastor; and, on the nineteenth day of September following, the parish voted to unite with the church in the invitation and make an effort to secure a favorable answer.

At this time the division of the parish and the organization of a new church was earnestly advocated by the inhabitants of Newbury living in the vicinity of Greenleaf's lane, now State street, Newburyport.

September 19, 1722 it was voted that If ye Inhabitants at ye westerly end of said [First] Parish Do obtain a meeting house and be orderly set off from this Parish; that then sd Inhabitants at sd westerly end shall be reimbursed what money they shall disburse towards ye settlement of the said Mr Holbrook besides his yearly Sallery, and that all the Inhabitants that desire it, on the Northerly side of ye Lane called Chandlers Lane, and from the uper end of said Lane on a Strait Line to ye Northerly side of Capt John Marches, from and thence on a strait Line to John Browns house untill it Comes to ye Line of ye Second Parish In said Towne, Shall Have Liberty to Build a meeting house for them selves In ye most Reasonable Place for the Conveniency of said Inhabitants. And when they are duly Qualified for it In ye Judgment of said Parish To be set off and freed from the ministry In this Part of said Parish (as many of ym as are willing for it and desire it) as to their polls and estates that Lay on ye northerly side of sd Line.†

*Newbury (First Parish) Records, p. 1.

†Newbury (First Parish) Records, vol. i., p. 3. Three years later a meeting-house was erected on a triangular lot of land, now known as Market square, Newburyport: and December 18, 1725, the General Court adopted an order establishing the Third parish of Newbury ("Ould Newbury," p. 430).

November 6, 1722, the inhabitants of the First parish voted to pay Mr. Daniel Holbrook eighty pounds a year for his services,

> . . . the said Mr Holbrook to preach a lecture once a month (if the Rev. Mr Toppan agree thereunto) and that he take due care to visit his Parishoners and to see that ye head & masters of families take due care to catachise their children and servants as may be thought needfull.*

Mr. Holbrook evidently entered upon his duties without delay, and would undoubtedly have been ordained assistant pastor of the church at Newbury, had his life been spared. He was seized with a sudden illness, while preaching, on Sunday, April 14, 1723, and was obliged to leave the pulpit. He died five days later.†

March 22, 1725–6, a committee was chosen to attend to the repairing of the meeting-house and making it more comfortable; and, July thirteenth, the parish voted

> . . . that the four Gable ends In ye Roof of ye meeting House be Taken Down and that each Part opened thereby be well Timbered and Boarded and Shingled up and made tite & Sound up to ye Platform In ye same form on Each side as ye hip Rafters now stand, and that Mr. James Noyes should undertake and Perform ye above said work. §

It is evident, however, from subsequent votes of the parish that two of these "gable ends" were left standing for ten or fifteen years. May 20, 1729, it was voted to shingle the back side of the meeting-house, divide the large window into two parts, put in new window glass where necessary, and make other needed repairs.

> March 13, 1729–30 voted that those who live remote from ye meeting house should have liberty to go Into ye schoolhouse on Sabath days for their comfort In wet, cold or hot seasons, as they may have occasion to use.§
>
> March 22, 1730–31 William Ilsley and Joseph Morse, Junior, were chosen and appointed to tune the psalm In ye meeting house In time of Publick worship and take their Turn In that work that it may be done with ye more ease and cheerfulness. And the said Morse is appointed

*Newbury (First Parish) Records, vol. i., p. 4.

†Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 193. §Newbury (First Parish) Records.

to sit in the fore seat of ye south body with ye said Ilsley for ye managing said work.*

May 6, 1740, a committee was appointed to provide an upper floor or ceiling for the meeting-house, "either over ye Beams or under as the Comttee think most proper"; and September 17, 1740, the parish voted "that the two gables now standing on ye meeting house be taken down and the places where they stand be well timbered, Boarded & shingled as the other sides of said house are," provided the carpenters employed to repair the meeting-house will do this extra work without charge.*

In 1742, the religious excitement in Newbury was intense. Revival preachers attracted large crowds of attentive listeners, and meeting-houses were frequently occupied without the consent or approbation of the conservative orthodox ministers of the town. In an anonymous communication, published in the Boston Evening Post, May 3, 1742, "the reverend N. Rogers of Ipswich, Mr. Daniel Rogers and Mr. Bewell, candidates for the ministry," are charged with having come into Newbury "and taken possession of Mr. Lowell's meeting house without his knowledge, or asking leave of the proprietors of the house, or the consent of the church or congregation. . . . An attempt of the like factious nature was made upon the reverend Mr Toppan's meeting house, but Mr. Toppan being present the party was repulsed."

In the Boston Gazette or Weekly Journal, published May 17(?), 1742, the statements made in the communication quoted above were denied. A newspaper controversy followed that lasted several months. In the Boston Evening Post, July 12, 1742, the facts as stated in the article published on the third day of May were reiterated, and the truth established by a certificate signed by Abraham Titcomb and Humphrey Richards, and sworn to before Henry Rolfe, justice of the peace.†

Disorderly and irreverent boys occasionally disturbed the sanctity of the Sabbath, and aroused the indignation of the older and more sedate inhabitants of the town.

*Newbury (First Parish) Records.

† See Boston Evening Post; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 212.

At a meeting of the selectmen held July 6, 1663 Gyles Cromlom was chosen for this yeare to look that the boyes be kept in order, & take notice of such as are out of order & give notice to the selectmen & he shall have six shillings out of the next towne vote.*

October 9, 1711, voted that ye select men shall forthwith imploy severall persons to take care ye Boyes be kept in order on Sabath days & satisfie sd persons out of ye money of ye parish to which they belong for their service.†

March 25, 1723 Mr Joseph Knight and Mr Nathan Noyes were chosen to take care of ye youth in said Parish that they be kept In order on Sabath Days & Especially In time of Publick worship.‡

March 22, 1730–31 Mr. John Lunt was chosen to sit In ye Gallery to take care and keep ye youth still In time of Publick worship and to Inform parents & masters of such as are found to be unruly.§

February 6, 1745–6 voted that the stairs that lead into the upper galleries shall be stopped up so that the boys cannot go up in said galleries on Sabbath days and the committee of the parish are hereby impowered to see it done speedily.§

July 16, 1745, Rev. John Tucker was invited to assist Rev. Christopher Toppan in the work of the ministry in the First church in Newbury. This invitation was vigorously opposed by some of the most influential men in the parish, and finally resulted in the withdrawal of a large number of disaffected brethren and the organization of a new religious society. Although greatly perplexed and disturbed by the lack of harmony in the parish, Rev. Mr. Tucker accepted the call October 11, 1745, and on the twentieth day of November following he was ordained assistant pastor of the church.‖

January 19, 1745–6, fifteen or twenty persons who had opposed the settlement of the new minister were notified to appear at a meeting to be held four days later, and answer to the accusations brought against them. This notice was evidently ignored by the disaffected brethren, and subsequently

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i. † Ibid., vol. iii., p. 157.

‡ Newbury (First Parish) Records. p. 7. § Newbury (First Parish) Records.

‖ Rev. John Tucker was born in Amesbury, September 20, 1719. The services at his ordination were simple and impressive. After the singing of a psalm, prayer was offered by Rev. William Johnson, of the Fourth church in Newbury, now the Second in West Newbury, which was followed by a sermon from the text (2 Corinthians vi:1): "We then as workers together with him beseech you also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain," by Rev. Payne Wingate, of Amesbury. Rev. Caleb Cushing, of Salisbury, gave the charge to the people, Rev. John Lowell, of the Third church in Newbury, now the First in Newburyport, gave the right hand of fellowship, and Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the Second church in Newbury, now the First in West Newbury, made the closing prayer.

they were solemnly admonished for contemptuous behavior and wilful neglect of public worship by the elders of the church. Every person who had voluntarily abstained from communion, or had openly denounced the doctrinal views of Rev. Mr. Tucker, was called upon to confess his misdeeds and manifest a spirit of penitence and contrition. The perverse and obdurate brethren, however, persisted in their schismatical opinions, and soon after organized a new church, and invited Rev. Jonathan Parsons, of Lyme, Conn., to become their pastor.*

After this date, the communion service was usually omitted during the winter months, from the first day of December to the first day of April following. The male members of the church were assessed twelve pence and the female members ninepence every year, "to provide bread and wine for the communion table," but the deacons were authorized to excuse all poor and needy persons from paying this assessment.†

Sins of omission and commission were frequently confessed by penitent transgressors of the moral law at the close of divine service on Sundays and lecture days. In many instances "for a gross breach of the seventh commandment" the offenders were admonished, "restored to charity," and their children admitted to the rites of baptism." †

Although a large proportion of the congregation came on foot to the meeting-house, many who lived at a distance rode on horseback. Frequently, the great number of horses tied near the doorway were a serious inconvenience to the devout worshippers; and March 12, 1751–2, the parish voted that "the sexton inform those People that hitch or tie their horses near the South Door of the meeting House so that they move said horses that they shall not Discomode the women getting on their horses." †

The parish also voted, June 17, 1761, "to make use of Mr. Tates & Dr. Bradys version of the Psalms, together with a number of Dr. Watts Hymns usually bound up there with, in their publick singing," and on the twelfth day of

*"Ould Newbury," pp. 508–525. † Newbury (First Parish) Records.

November following "voted to build a pew in some convenient place in the meeting house for the accommodation of the singers." *

The reading of the Bible in the pulpit without words of comment or explanation from the minister was considered unprofitable and dangerous; but April 19, 1769, the subject was thoroughly discussed, and, after a prolonged debate, it was voted "that it is agreeable to y^e^ church the scriptures be read in publick." *

Soon after this date extensive repairs were made on the meeting-house. A committee appointed to examine the roof reported in October, 1763, that it was in an unsafe condition, that the "turret" should be removed and the bell taken down. This report, after considerable discussion, was accepted; and the parish voted, November 28, 1763, "that the bell should be hung in the highway near John Brown, Esq's land & nearly opposite to the porch of the meeting house." On the second day of December, Mr. Brown signed a written agreement giving the parish permission to erect on his land a suitable tower or frame for the support of the bell, "to remain there until removed to some other place by vote of the parish."

In 1772, the roof of the meeting-house was strengthened, and a tower or turret erected thereon, "with a copper weather cock on top of the Piremid." The bell was then hung in the place provided for it in the turret.

All persons residing within the limits of the First parish in Newbury were taxed for the support of public worship in that parish. February 4, 1773, the inhabitants "voted not to release any of the pretended churchmen from the payment of taxes." At the Court of Common Pleas held at Ipswich in the month of March, 1773, Rev. Edward Bass, rector of St. Paul's church, Newburyport, brought a suit against the treasurer and collectors of the parish, "to recover taxes paid said parish by Nicholas Short and John Dole both inhabitants of the First Parish in Newbury, but regular communicants of St. Paul's Church." John Lowell, Esq., of Newburyport,

* Newbury (First Parish) Records.

appeared as attorney for the defendants, and Daniel Farnham, Esq., also from Newburyport, for the plaintiff. The jury rendered a verdict in favor of the parish, and the plaintiff appealed to the Superior Court of Judicature for the county of Essex. Upon a review of the case in the Superior Court in the month of June, 1774, the defendants were held liable to pay the sum of £3, 4*s*. 8*d*. upon certain conditions, but were allowed to deduct witness fees, costs of court, etc.

In consequence of the extraordinary high price of wine in 1777, every male member of the church was expected to pay three shillings and every female two shillings and sixpence for the support of the communion table. In 1779, the tax was raised to $6.50 for every man and $5.50 for every woman. In 1780, the men were called upon to pay twenty dollars and the women sixteen dollars each to meet the expenses of the communion table for that year.

After the death of James Mirrick, who was sexton of the church for twenty-five or thirty years, the selectmen made the following agreement July 11, 1711:—

> Benj Mors ye 3d is to ring ye Bell and sweep the meeting house for one year, the year to begin the 1st of July 1711, sd Mors is to Ring the Bell at nine of the clock every night and Sabath days and Lecture day and such like. And sd Mors is to winge or Rub down the principle seats the day after sweeping of the meeting hous. And sd Mors is to have for his years service about ye meeting hous eight pound and ten shillings, one half to be paid in money and the other half as money. Also to toule the Bell till the minister comes.*

March 28, 1732, Henry Lunt was chosen sexton, and allowed eighteen pence a week for sweeping the meeting-house and twelve pence a week for ringing the bell. He served until March 15, 1736–7, when Humphrey Richards was elected. Henry Lunt died August 9, 1737.

Humphrey Richards was chosen sexton annually until March 15, 1784, when a committee was appointed to provide a sexton for the year ensuing. Mr. Richards died previous to February 1, 1785.†

* Town of Newbury (Selectmen's) Records, 1693–1728, p. 162.

† Moses Short's Book of Burials.

Moses Short was probably appointed sexton in 1784. His first burial, according to the record, was made December 30, 1784. He served as sexton until 1836.

Reuben Jackman was sexton from April, 1836, to April, 1841.

Elisha Bean was sexton from 1841 to 1850, and Jeremiah C. Young from 1850 to 1857.

Hiram Young was chosen sexton in March, 1857, and served until March, 1874.

Elisha Bean was sexton in 1874, and Moses Young from 1875 to 1885.

In March, 1885, Albert Tilton was chosen, but declined to serve, and George W. Haskell was appointed to fill the vacancy. Mr. Haskell retained the office until 1889.

William Rogers was sexton from 1889 to October or November in 1890, when Moses Young was appointed to fill out the unexpired term. From that date to the present Mr. Young has been annually elected sexton of the First parish in Newbury.

Rev. Christopher Toppan died July 23, 1747. After his death, Rev. Mr. Tucker remained in sole charge of the parish for nearly fifty years. In 1766, a few dissatisfied members of the church proceeded to organize a new society, and made preparations to erect a new meeting-house, nearly opposite the old one, on land purchased of Mr. John Brown.* The house was raised and boarded, but for some reason was never finished. In a violent storm of thunder, lightning, wind, and rain it was blown down, February 9, 1771.

In the summer of 1766 an attempt was made to call a council of churches to consider the disorganized condition of affairs in the parish, but the effort was unsuccessful. March 29, 1767, the subject was again discussed, and the refusal of the pastor to unite with his unfriendly critics in calling a council of churches was sustained.†

* February 24, 1766, John Brown sold to Joshua Coffin, Nicholas Short, Jacob Knight, Samuel Noyes, John Dole, jr., Joseph Jaques, Moses Noyes, jr., Isaac Noyes, and Nathan Peirce a lot of land in Newbury "to erect a meeting house upon for the Publick Worship of God." Essex Deeds, book cxix., leaf 63; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 233.

† Newbury (First Parish Church) Records.

Rev. John Tucker died March 22, 1792, in the seventy-third year of his age. For several years after that date the church remained without a pastor, although an effort was made to secure the services of Rev. Samuel Mead in 1793 and of Rev. Phineas Randall in 1795; but both gentlemen declined the call extended to them. On the twenty-eighth day of January, 1796, Rev. Abraham Moor was invited to take charge of the parish. He accepted the invitation, and was ordained on the twenty-third day of March following.* Theological differences had not then separated churches that were strictly orthodox from those holding a more liberal faith; and Rev. Thomas Cary and Rev. John Andrews, pastor and assistant pastor of the First Religious society of Newburyport, although not believers in the Calvinistic creed, were among the clergymen invited to attend and participate in the ordination exercises.

Rev. Mr. Moor was not at that time strong and vigorous, and soon after was taken seriously ill. He died of pulmonary consumption June 24, 1801. Rev. Nathaniel Noyes supplied the pulpit until the spring of 1804; and Rev. John Snelling Popkin, of Boston, was installed pastor of the church on the nineteenth day of September following.† In the exercises on that occasion, Rev. John Andrews, of Newburyport, gave the right hand of fellowship.

November 9, 1805, the parish voted to build a new meeting-house; and May 4, 1806, Rev. Mr. Popkin preached for the last time in the old one before it was taken down.‡ The frame of the new building was raised June 17, 1806. It was sixty-one feet long and fifty-one feet wide. It was completed and dedicated with appropriate exercises September 17, 1806.

During the pastorate of Rev. Mr. Popkin the church was united and prosperous. On the twenty-seventh day of September, 1815, having been invited to accept a professorship in Harvard College, he asked to be released from his pastoral

*Rev. Abraham Moor, the son of Deacon John and Mary (Cochrane) Moor, was born in Londonderry (in that part of the town now Derry), N.H., September 8, 1763.

†Rev. Mr. Popkin was ordained in Boston in 1799. Previous to his settlement in Newbury, he officiated for several years at Wenham, Mass., and at Londonderry, N.H.

‡From the sermons preached May fourth and September seventeenth, 1806, by Rev. Mr. Popkin, many facts incorporated in this sketch have been taken.

duties. On the fifth day of October following, a council was called, at which the First Religious society of Newburyport was represented by Rev. John Andrews.

After long deliberation the council, with great unanimity, voted to advise Rev. Mr. Popkin to accept the professorship and take up the important work to which he had been called, but at the same time earnestly exhorted him to retain his office as pastor of the church at Newbury. Yielding to the advice of the council and the solicitation of friends, he remained in charge of the parish until September 3, 1816, when he tendered his resignation, which was duly accepted.*

Meanwhile the parish and church united in extending an invitation to Rev. Leonard Withington to become their pastor. He was unwilling to accept the position unless some changes were made in the church covenant and in the ordinances relating to the baptism of children whose parents were not in full communion with the church.* These changes were agreed to; and October 16, 1816, at the suggestion of Rev. Mr. Withington, a committee was appointed to confer with the members of the First Presbyterian church in Newburyport in regard to the animosities and misunderstandings that had resulted from the organization of that church in 1745. A reconciliation was effected, past differences "were buried in oblivion," and October 31, 1816, Rev. Leonard Withington was ordained pastor of the First church in Newbury. Rev. Daniel Dana, pastor of the First Presbyterian church, and Rev. John Andrews, pastor of the First Religious society of Newburyport, were among the ministers invited to assist in the ordination exercises.*

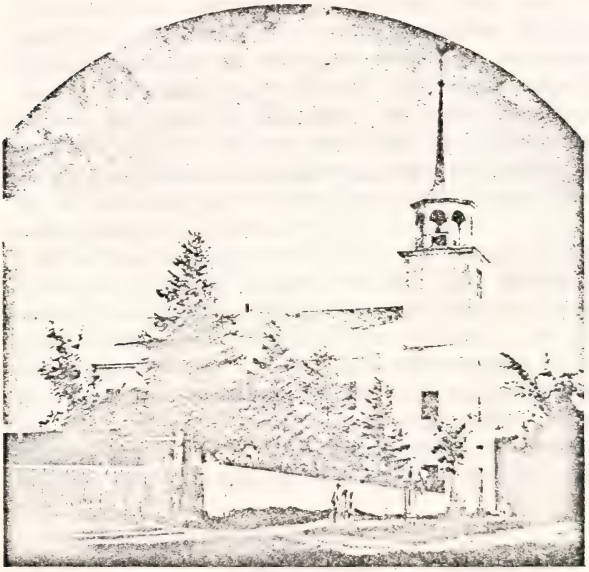
For more than forty years Rev. Mr. Withington served the parish as preacher and pastor with great acceptance and ability. He resigned the active duties of that office October 31, 1859, but remained senior pastor of the church until his death, April 26, 1885.

January 20, 1859, Rev. John R. Thurston was ordained assistant pastor. January 26, 1868, the meeting-house, built in 1806, was destroyed by fire. A new house of wor-

* Newbury (First Parish Church) Records.

ship was erected on the opposite side of the street, and dedicated on the fourth day of March, 1869. The land upon which the old house stood now forms a part of the burying-ground near "the trayneing green."

Rev. Mr. Thurston resigned his office as assistant pastor, and was dismissed March 28, 1870, at his own request.



FIRST PARISH MEETING-HOUSE.

BUILT IN 1806. DESTROYED BY FIRE IN 1868.

Since that date the pastors of the church have been: Rev. Omar W. Folsom, settled October 31, 1872, resigned June 5, 1884; Rev. Francis W. Sanborn, settled November 20, 1884, resigned October 20, 1896; Rev. Charles S. Holton, settled May 11, 1897.

SECOND CHURCH IN NEWBURY.

In 1685, fifty years after the first settlers landed on the banks of the Quascacunquen river, and one year before the common land in the "upper woods" beyond the Artichoke river was divided, a petition was presented to the inhabitants of Newbury for the employment of a suitable person to attend to the work of the ministry at the west end of the town. Although the petitioners lived at some distance from the meeting-house, and could not "with any comfort or convenience come to the public worship of God," their request was not complied with; and four years later a few individuals built, at their own expense, a building thirty feet square, at or near the place now known as the burying-ground at Sawyer's hill, for the accommodation of those who desired to attend public worship in that neighborhood.*

At a town meeting held February 25, 1689–90, a committee was appointed to confer with Rev. John Richardson, pastor of the First church in Newbury, in regard to the proposed settlement of a minister at the west end. This committee reported that Rev. Mr. Richardson declined to give any advice; and, considering the difficulties and disadvantages that would be likely to result from the organization of a new religious society in the town, the committee recommended that the privilege asked for should not be granted at that time.

On the eleventh day of March following,

John Emery	Abraham Merrill	Joseph Bayley
John Emery Jun.	Samuel Bartlet	Richd Bartlet
Benj Lowle	Jno Bartlet	Joseph Richardson
Jno Ordway	Stephen Emery	Jno Merrick
Jno Chace	Joshua Browne	Stephen Sawyer

in behalf of the inhabitants of the west end of the town, submitted two proposals.

1. That the Towne would agree to make a rate for the maintenance of two ministers so that we at the new Towne might have the word of God preached among us at the West meeting house and that by a Lov-

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 363–366.

ing agreement of the towne together, which wee your friends & broathers have long wished for, and now would hope that we may Lovingly agree in. But now if the Towne will not grant us that proposition, our second is,

2. That the Towne would grant us their free consent [to establish] the ministry among us upon our own charg & that the Towne would Lovingly agree to a Dividing line between us so we may know what families may now belong to the West meeting house &c.*

These proposals were not favorably received, and after some delay the inhabitants of the west end extended a call to Mr. Edward Tompson to be their minister. The town objected to this unauthorized display of authority; and on the fourteenth day of July, 1691, "did by vote manifest their dislike against it, or against any other minister whom they should call, until ye church and towne are agreed upon it, looking upon such a thing to be an intrusion upon ye church and towne." *

From this decision a few individuals residing in the vicinity of the newly erected meeting-house appealed to the General Court; and the town, at a meeting held December 2, 1691, passed the following resolve: —

Whereas divers of the inhabitants of our Towne presented to the Honoured Genll Court a petition dated Octo. 1 1691 to be established a people by themselves for the maintainance of the ministry amongst them & whereas the Honoured Genrll Court at a session of yrs in Boston 14th of Octobr 1691 ordered yt a copy of sd petition be sent to the Towne of Newbury and that oportunity be given them at the next sitting of the Court to present what they have to offer why the petioners should not be granted what they move for, if they have anything against it.

The inhabitants of the Towne did then by vote manifest ymselves against the new Townes men having yr petition granted & did then desire ye worshippful Jno Woodbridg Esq. Capt Peirce, Capt Noyes, Deacon Noyes and ye selectmen to draw up a petition to ye next sessions of ye Genll Court in the behalf of the Towne in way of answer to ye new Towne mens petition & that Capt Noyes should manage ye sd afare in the behalfe of ye Towne at ye next session of ye Genll Court.*

In December, 1692, the town voted to call another minister to preach at the west end, and keep school there.

May 10, 1693 It was voted yt Mr John Clarke be chosen to Asist Mr John Richardson in the worke of the ministry & to help at the west

* Town of Newbury Records.

end of the Towne of Newbury to preach to them for one yeare in order to further settlement as the Church & Towne shall agree & also to keepe a Gramer Schoole for wch the sd Towne engages to allow sd Mr Clarke Rationall satisfaction if he except of the worke.*

In a petition presented to the General Court May 31, 1693, William Moody, Henry Somerby, Joseph Kittel, and Joseph Pike, selectmen of Newbury, state that Mr. Clarke had accepted the call; but several inhabitants of the west end of the town refused to receive him, claiming that they were bound by their agreement to aid and support Mr. Edward Tompson, who was then engaged in the work of the ministry among them, and the petitioners humbly requested the honored court to take such action as might be necessary to restore order and reconcile conflicting interests in the church.†

To this petition John Emery, John Emery, jr., Abraham Morrill, and John Ordway, in behalf of the west end people, replied that they had been endeavoring for more than five years to have the public worship of God established among them; 'that many of them lived four, and some of them six or seven, miles from the old meeting-house; and that the old and infirm, especially in the winter time, were unable to travel that distance. They therefore asked the General Court for liberty to maintain a minister of their own choice, at their own cost, and also asked to be released from the payment of taxes for the support of public worship elsewhere. In order that they might live in peace and harmony with their neighbors, they desired to be set off into a separate precinct, and a rational dividing line established between them.‡

No definite action was taken by the General Court; and at a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held July 5, 1693, the subject was again considered, and after a long discussion "The Towne gave in theyr votes for the choyce of a minister for the west end of the Towne in order to a full settlement in the work of the ministry there, the inhabitants then brought in theyr votes by papers & Mr John Clarke was then chosen & not one vote against him."§

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 75.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 73; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 158.
‡ Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 74; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 159.
§ Town of Newbury Records.

The west end men evidently refrained from voting, for the same day twenty-five persons protested against the settlement of Mr. Clarke "because the new towne people have a minister already." Subsequently, Mr. Christopher Toppan was invited to preach at the west end, Mr. Clarke having declined to carry on the work of the ministry there; and September 5, 1694, Joshua Brown, John Ordway, and Samuel Bartlett petitioned the General Court "in behalf of the Company that had erected a meeting house and supplied themselves with a minister," and yet were subjected to many annoyances and indignities because they desired to attend public worship in their own neighborhood, some of their number having been imprisoned and others fined for not delivering up the key to the meeting-house. In conclusion, they humbly requested the General Court "to take some Effectual Order, for the Relief of your Petitioners and for the Quiet of the whole Towne, the Peace whereof is now so dangerously interrupted." *

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held on the twenty-second day of October following, the election of a minister for the west end of the town was again considered; and Mr. Christopher Toppan received sixty-five votes and Mr. Tompson seventeen.

December 21, 1694 Col. Daniel Pierce Esqr. Capt Thomas Noyes, Cornt George March & Abraham Merril & Ensigne Joseph Little were by vote chosen to be a committee to draw up such articles and proposals as they may think most convenient in order to seting off part of the West end of the Town for ye maintaining of ye ministry among them & to present what they shall do therein to ye Town at their next meeting.†

January 1, 1694–5 voted that Pipe stave hill near Daniel Jaques house shall be the place for the meeting house, and those that live nearest to that place shall pay to the ministry there and those that live nearest to the old meeting house shall pay there, the inhabitants at the West end to choose a minister for themselves, only Mr. Tompson excepted.‡ The meeting house to stand where it do until the major part of them see cause to remove it." §

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 81; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 160.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 307.

‡ Mr. Edward Tompson probably left Newbury early in the year 1695. He was ordained minister at Marshfield, Mass., October 14, 1696. (See New England Historical and Genealogical Register for April, 1861, p. 113.)

§ Town of Newbury Records.

Tristram Coffin, Henry Short, and Abraham Merrill were authorized and instructed to divide the town into two parishes; and on the eighteenth day of December, 1695, the following grants of land were recorded: —

. . . upon the request of the inhabitants of the West end of the town of Newbury for the settlement of the ministry then amongst them the town granted them five acres of land on the East side of Artichoke River to be Layed out so as may be most convenient for a pasture for the ministry And an acre of land near the West Meeting house for the building of a ministry house. Both which parcles of land to be layed out by a Com^te^ chosen by the town for that end, provided always that this our grant shall not prejudice the vote of the town of Jan. 1, 1694–5 where in liberty for the removal of the west meeting house is granted And when a Major part of the inhabitants according to s^d^ vote shall see cause to remove the s^d^ meeting house that then the s^d^ five acres of land here in allotted for a pasture for y^e^ ministry for the West end of the town shall be at the disposition of the town to procure Land for y^e^ ministry near the West Meeting house when removed, and also y^t^ It shall be in the power of the Major part of y^e^ inhabitants of y^e^ West end of the town to dispose of the acre of land and housing y^t^ may be built there upon for the procuring of a ministry house near the s^d^ meeting house when removed or another one built. The town also at this meeting gives the West end power to choose a man amongst them to make assessment for the ministry and for building and repairing of the West Meeting house and for y^e^ building and repairing a house for the ministry.*

At the first meeting of the inhabitants of the Second parish, December 24, 1695, a committee was appointed "to build and Repair y^e^ West meeting house and to build and repair y^e^ ministry house." † In the month of February following, twenty-four persons objected to the repairing or rebuilding the meeting-house on the plains, and earnestly advocated its removal to Pipe Stave hill. July 24, 1696, the parish "voted to confirm Rev. Samuel Belcher in the work of the ministry among us." At that date the church had not been organized; but religious services had been held in the parish, and Rev. Mr. Belcher had officiated there for several months.

November ye 18^th^ 1696 It was agreed upon that M^r^ Belcher with his family shall forthwith be removed from Abraham Merrils house unto

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 305. † Newbury (Second Parish) Records.

Sam[l] Sayers Littell Roome and the Reverend M[r] Belcher is to have the liberty of the parlor chamber when he hath oc̄ation for it.*

December 24, 1696, Joshua Brown, John Ordway, Samuel Bartlett, and John Emery were chosen "A committee for this year ensuing, for to finish the meeting house and the ministry house according to the instructions they had last year." *

Twelve months later, the parish voted "that Stephen. Emery shall have twenty pounds in grain as money for building and finishing y[e] gallaryes," and Abraham Merrill, John Ordway, and Richard Bartlett were chosen "to seat y[e] meeting house."

October 26, 1698, a church was organized; and on the tenth day of November Rev. Samuel Belcher was ordained pastor,† the ministers and messengers of the churches at Ipswich, Rowley, Bradford, and the First church in Newbury participating in the exercises of that occasion.

December 15, 1699 voted; that there should be two men chosen to agree with Moses Chase or any other person to dig and finish a suffitiant well within eight rods of the ministry house now att the west end of the towne of Newbury not exceeding in price eight pounds money.‡

Five or six years later a determined effort was made to secure a suitable lot of land and build a new meeting-house at Pipe Stave hill. This movement, however, was stoutly opposed by the inhabitants of the parish living at or near "the plains," and the work was consequently delayed for more than three years. The foundation of the new edifice was not laid until May 10, 1709.§

March 21, 1709–10 voted; that Whereas there was a committee chosen of three men to agree with a man or men to build & finish a meeting house upon Pipe Stave hill, att a meeting of y[e] inhabitants of y[e] west end of y[e] town of Newbury on february y[e] 28[th], 1705–6. The inhabitants do now except & consent to what is already done by two of s[d] comittee on y[t] account And do by their vote give full power to y[e] major part of y[e] comitte y[t] were then chosen to proceed & finish said work according to y[e] time mentioned in s[d] vote.‖

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 3.
† Diary of Samuel Sewall, vol. i., p. 486. ‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 14.
§ "Ould Newbury," pp. 368, 369. ‖ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 26.

The committee appointed February 28, 1705–6, to build the meeting-house consisted of Capt. Hugh March, Sergt. John Ordway, and Lieut. Caleb Moody; but, after long delay and repeated efforts to reconcile conflicting views and opinions, Sergt. Ordway declined to co-operate with the other members of the committee.*

February 4, 1709–10, Abraham Merrill, Samuel Sawyer, Joshua Brown, Edward Sargent, Richard Bartlett, and others, numbering fifty-five in all, presented a petition to the General Court stating that the parish had voted to build a meeting-house at Pipe Stave hill, had levied taxes to defray the cost of the same, and seized the property of some who refused to pay the amount assessed. In conclusion, the petitioners humbly pray "y^{t} if no beter method may be found out for our relief y^{t} we may be Set of so far as may agree wth righteousness & Religion to maintain our minister & ministry amongst our Selves the charge whereof we chuse abundantly rather to undergo then to haue our good ends, designs and Endeuaers above s^{d} frustrated and mad voide." †

June 2, 1710, the General Court ordered "That the Selectmen of the Town of Newbury be Served by the Petitioners with a Copy of this Petition, And That the matter be heard before this Court on ffriday the 9th Curr^{t}." †

On the twenty-second day of June, the councillors and representatives concurred in the adoption of a resolution declaring "That Pipe Staffe hill in the West Precinct of Newbury is the most convenient place for the Establishing of a meeting House for the whole Precinct," that Rev. Mr. Belcher should be requested to remove there when a suitable dwelling-house has been erected for his accommodation, and that a general meeting of the inhabitants of the precinct should be called to choose assessors to levy a tax, according to law, and apply the same when collected to the purchase of labor and materials for the construction of a meeting-house and parsonage. It was also resolved

That the Tax lately Levied in the s^{d} Precinct for the building of a

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 309; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 177.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 306; Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 176, 177.

meeting House and Ministry House and all proceedings had there upon Be and hereby is Declared to be Illegal null and void: —

And that all persons who have been Destrained for the sum or sums Set upon them to the said Tax, have the same restored to them again wth ye necessary cost and charge they have sustained thereby.*

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held April 4, 1710, it was voted "yt ye five acres of land allotted for a pasture towards ye support of ye ministry at ye west end of ye Town shall speedily be disposed of at ye discretion of a Committee as shall be chosen for sd service towards ye purchase of a parsonage near or upon pipe stave hill, provided yt Mr Belcher be not disposest there of till such time as sd parsonage be procured & prepared suteably & conveniently for his reception and comfort." †

July 15, 1710, Col. Thomas Noyes, Major Henry Somerby, and Capt. Thomas Hale, for and in consideration of eight acres of land owned by Capt. Hugh March and Lieut. Caleb Moody, sold and conveyed to the said March and Moody "the aforesaid five acres of land, bounded northerly by ye road leading to Bradford, westerly by Harty Choak river, southerly & easterly by common land, which five acres of land was granted & given by ye freeholders and Inhabitants of Newbury aforesd at a legall meeting held December 18 Anno Dom: 1695, for a pasture for a ministry and upon removal of ye meeting House at ye West end of ye said Towne this pasture to be disposed of to procure an other convenient pasture for ye ministry as by ye said vote may appear." ‡

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the Second parish held two days later, Corp. Abel Huse, Hananiah Ordway, John Emery, Ensign Stephen Emery, and Tristram Greenleaf were chosen a committee "to agree with a man to build & finish a ministry house att pipe stave hill forth-with upon the eighth free hold lot."

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 306. † Town of Newbury Records.

‡ Essex Deeds, book xxiv., folio 256. The land granted December 18, 1695, "for a pasture for the ministry," was on the easterly side of Artichoke river, nearly opposite the entrance to Hoyt's lane from Storey avenue, Newburyport. The house in which Mr. Belcher lived until his removal to Pipe Stave hill was probably located at or near the Sawyer hill burying-ground, on the road or way now known as Hoyt's lane.

April 19, 1711 voted, to choose a committee of three men to sell & dispose of ye ministry house that Mr Belcher now dwells in. . . . And allso to take the seates and boards & Glass out of ye old Meeting house to be improved in the New meeting house. And allso to remove the old meeting house & sett it up att Pipe Stave hill to be improved for a Barn for the ministry in convenient time.*

This vote was undoubtedly intended to defeat the plan that had been matured by some twenty-five or thirty persons to maintain, at their own expense, the public worship of God in the old meeting-house. Without waiting for definite action on the part of the committee, however, a small company of men and boys came down in the night from the upper part of the parish, tore down the old meeting-house, and carried away all the materials that were of value.

Determined not to submit to these disorderly proceedings, a number of persons residing in the immediate vicinity of the plains made preparations to replace the building that had been destroyed. A severe and bitter contest followed, which led to the erection of Queen Anne's Chapel in the spring of 1712.†

The meeting-house at Pipe Stave hill was probably completed before December 7, 1711, when the parish voted to raise the sum of one hundred pounds "for defraying part of the charg of building ye meeting house now standing upon pipestave hill," and March 5, 1712–3, "voted to give thirty-five shillings a year to Isaac Baily, or any other man, to take care of ye meeting house and keep the key and sweep ye meeting house well & keep it cleane." ‡

Rev. Mr. Belcher was at this time quite old and infirm. He was unable to attend to his duties as pastor, although he remained in charge of the parish until November, 1713, when he removed to Ipswich, his native place, where he died March 10, 1714, aged seventy-four.

January 15, 1713–14 voted to give Rev. John Tufts seventy pounds a year so long as Mr Samuel Belcher lives, and the use of the whole parsonage, and after the decease of Mr Belcher eighty pounds a year,

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 369, 370. † Ibid., pp. 368–386.
‡ Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 38.

provided the said Mr Tufts accepts the call to the ministry in the parish and preacheth a monthly lecture.*

On the thirtieth day of June, 1714, Rev. Mr. Tufts was ordained pastor of the church; and a few months later he published a small book on church music containing twenty-eight psalm tunes, with instructions for singing by note or rule. This work, probably the first publication of the kind in New England, was by many members of the church considered a daring innovation; but it ultimately led to the introduction of a greater variety of tunes and more skilful and harmonious rendering of them.

March 8, 1714–5, the parish voted to build a new barn near the parsonage house, to take the place of the old barn standing there, and also "voted not to make use of any of the old timber for y^e s^d Barn but such as is sound and good." † The same day a committee was appointed to attend to the seating of the meeting-house, and to make such alterations in the pews and benches as might be necessary in order to accommodate all the parishioners.‡

March 26, 1722–3, Abel Morss, Daniel Morss, John Worth, Edmund Greenleaf, Sergt. Thomas Hale, and Ensign Benjamin Smith were chosen "to look after the boys on Sabbath dayes and to give notice of their misdemenours to their masters or parents . . . and the constable and Tythingmen are desired to take their turns to look after y^e boyes between meetings." §

In 1709, a stone wall was built about the burying-ground at Sawyer's hill; ‖ and March 17, 1723–4, the parish voted to give Deacon William Morss seven pounds and ten shillings for half an acre of land "for a burying place at the north end of his land adjoyning upon y^e highway leading to Swetts ferry." ¶ At the same meeting it was voted "to buy one quarter of an acre of Ezekel Hales land for a burying place at the rate of fifteen pounds per acre unless the neighbours can find and procure a more convenient place for the above said use." **

* Newbury (Second Parish Church) Records, p. 41. † Ibid., p. 45. ‡ Ibid., p. 47.
§ Ibid., p 58.
‖ "Ould Newbury," p. 367. ¶ Ibid., p. 59. ** Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 90.

In 1729, a petition for liberty to divide the parish and organize a new church was presented to the General Court. After some delay this petition was granted. June 1, 1731, the dividing line was established; and a few months later the inhabitants on the upper or westerly side of that line organized the Fourth church in Newbury, now the Second in West Newbury.

In 1737, Rev. Mr. Tufts was accused of immorality and unchristian behavior by some of the women of his parish; and on the twenty-sixth day of February, 1737–8, a council, consisting of ten ministers and twenty delegates, was called to consider "the distressed state and condition of y^e^ second church of Christ in Newbury." Mr. Tufts vehemently opposed the investigation, and declined to co-operate with the council or question the witnesses called upon to testify against him. On the second day of March, "in consequence of the unhappy differences prevailing in the parish," he asked to be released from his duties as pastor. The church voted to grant his request; and the council, with only one dissenting voice, consented to the separation, "hoping thereby to restore harmony to the church."

November 27, 1738, the parish voted to unite with the church in calling Rev. Thomas Barnard to be their minister; and on the thirty-first day of January, 1738–9, he was ordained pastor.

June 8, 1742 voted to take down y^e^ Turret that is on the top of y^e^ meeting house, and also voted to build a Convenient Place on the Beams under the Roof in y^e^ norwest corner in ye meeting house to hold our proportion of the ammunition that shall be divided to us by the Town.*

From 1743 to 1747 many members of the church habitually absented themselves from public worship and from communion. Frequent efforts were made to induce these disaffected brethren to forsake the error of their ways, resume their accustomed seats on Sunday, and receive again the holy sacrament, but without success. Disheartened and discour-

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 86.

aged by the troubles and dissensions that disturbed the church, Rev. Mr. Barnard resigned his office as pastor March 6, 1749–50; but his resignation was not accepted until January 18, 1750–1.

Meanwhile, Rev. Moses Hale, of Rowley, had been invited to supply the pulpit with a view to his settlement in the parish; and on the twentieth day of February, 1750–1, he was ordained pastor. The fact, however, that he wore a wig was criticised and condemned with great severity by one of his parishioners.

May 1, 1752 The Church mett together to Deal with our Brother Richard Bartlet for his Known & publick offences which were exhibited against him in ye Church meeting as follows, viz.: —

1. That our said Brother Bartlet Refuses Communion with ye Chh for no other Reason, but because ye Pastor wears a Wigg & because ye Chh justifies him in it, herein setting up his own Opinion in opposition to ye Chh, contrary to that humility which becomes a christian.

2. And further in an unchristian manner he censures and condemns both ye pastor & Chh as antichristian on ye aforesaid account, and he sticks not from time to time to assert, with ye greatest assurance, that all who wear wiggs unless they repent of that particular sin before they die will certainly be damned, which we judge to be a piece of uncharitable & sinfull Rashness.*

For more than fifty years the wearing of wigs was considered unnatural and ungodly by some of the most worthy and devout men in New England. Judge Sewall often alludes to the subject in his diary, and frequently mentions the names of those who "abominate periwigs." Commenting on a sermon preached by Rev. Cotton Mather from the text, "Shall cut him asunder and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth" (Matt. xxiv: 51), he wrote, under date of March 19, 1690–1,

I expected not to hear a vindication of Periwigs in Boston Pulpit by Mr Mather; however, not from that Text. The Lord give me a good Heart and help me to know, and not only to know but also to doe his Will; that my Heart and Head may be his.†

* Newbury (Second Parish Church) Records.

† Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Fifth Series, vol. v., p. 342.

In 1758, several ineffectual attempts were made to agree upon a location for a new meeting-house. A vote to purchase a lot of land at the end of Windmill lane was passed at one meeting and reconsidered at the next. Similar action was taken in regard to several other locations during the next six or eight months. On the third day of April, 1759, however, the parish "voted to build a meeting house at the southerly end of Hanover Street," and a month later "voted to begin to take down y^e^ meeting house the 23^rd^ Day of May current and to proceed Dayley if y^e^ weather permit till it is taken down." *

A committee was appointed to supervise the erection of the new meeting-house, which was to be, according to the plans and specifications agreed upon, fifty-four feet long, forty feet wide, and twenty-four feet high. Forty pews were built on the floor of the house, and one of them by vote of the parish was given to the minister for the use of his family.

Rev. Rufus Emery, in an address delivered October 26, 1898, on the two hundredth anniversary of the organization of the Second church in Newbury, says the meeting-house was

> . . . an almost square building, having two rows of windows. It stood facing the south, on which side a wide door gave entrance. On the outside and opposite the door and back of the pulpit was a large round-topped window. Immediately in front of the window was the pulpit, and over it a huge sounding-board. The sounding-board was shaped like an open umbrella, closed at the bottom with panel work painted white. The upper part was colored blue, and terminated, I think, with a gilt finial, acorn-shaped. The pulpit was a large construction, the centre extending out beyond the sides. The whole top of the pulpit was covered with a cushion of blue figured damask, the edge ornamented with a fringe of ball tassels of the same color. The pulpit was reached by two flights of stairs, there being a landing between them. In front of the pulpit and entered from the landing were the elders' or deacons' seats. I do not remember seeing any of the officers occupying them. The only officers I remember seeing in this pew were the moderator and town clerk on occasions of town meeting. In front of the deacons' pew was an immense table leaf extending the whole length and reaching to the floor. It was only used on communion days.

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 125. This meeting-house was on Pipe Stave hill, near the residence of Mr. Eben Moody Boynton, in West Newbury.

In front of the table stood the large wood-stove, which warmed the house in winter. There were galleries on three sides of the house. The front gallery formed the singing seats, and was gained by stairs at each end. At the head of the flights of stairs were two square pews, which seemed of no use unless it was to balance two similar ones on the north wall of the house, at the ends of the east and west galleries. There was a row of pews all around the house against the walls, which were raised two steps higher than the others. The side galleries were furnished with two rows of long wooden seats, under which in the western gallery was stored the winter's supply of fuel.

Before the meeting-house was completed, Mr. Moses Little and many others, residing at the easterly end of the parish, applied to the General Court for liberty to organize a new church. In the month of February, 1761, a committee was chosen to prepare and present to the councillors and representatives a statement of the reasons why the prayer of the petitioners should not be granted; * but, on the seventeenth day of April following, the General Court ordered that a part of the Second and Third parishes, within certain bounds and limits, should be set off and established as the Fifth parish in Newbury.

October 8, 1765, the inhabitants of the Second parish voted to sell "the land where the old meeting house stood [on Pipe Stave hill] to Willet Peterson at the rate of thirteen pound, six shillings and eight pence the acre and give a Quit Claim Deed." †

On the ninth day of October, 1771, they voted to give Samuel Brown liberty to build at his own cost "A pew or seats in the meeting house over the Gallery Stairs at the South West Corner of the meeting house for the negros to set in." ‡

Rev. Moses Hale died January 15, 1779. The funeral expenses were paid by the parish, and a suitable tombstone was provided to mark his grave. For more than three years after his death the church had no settled minister. On the twentieth day of November, 1782, Rev. True Kimball was ordained pastor. He resigned on account of ill-health April

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 132. † Ibid., p. 141. ‡ Ibid., p. 154.

4, 1797, but was allowed the use of the parsonage until January 1, 1798.

Rev. Samuel Tomb, a Presbyterian clergyman of Salem, N.Y., was engaged to carry on the work of the ministry in the parish for one year from November 1, 1797; and on the twenty-sixth day of June following he was invited to become pastor of the church. He was evidently inclined to accept the invitation; and probably through his influence the parish voted August 2, 1798, to adopt the Presbyterian form of church government, and again invited him to become their pastor. This invitation was renewed October fifteenth, and accepted on the twenth-seventh. He was installed on the twenty-eighth day of November following. Many of his parishioners were dissatisfied with his views of church government; and after a stormy pastorate of seven years he resigned, and removed to another field of labor in his native state.

March 25, 1806, a committee was appointed "to supply the vacant pulpit"; and February 17, 1807, the parish voted to return to the Congregational form of church government. An unsuccessful effort was made to induce Rev. Josiah Webster to accept the office of pastor, and on the eighth day of March, 1808, the parish voted to concur with the church in extending a call to Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard. He accepted the invitation, and was installed pastor of the church. October 2, 1811, the parish "Voted to agree with the Church in accepting the resignation of Rev. Mr. Hubbard."

After a vacancy of three years the church and parish invited Rev. Gilbert T. Williams to become their pastor. He was installed June 1, 1814, and held the office for seven years. On the twenty-sixth day of September, 1821, the church voted to release him from his pastoral duties; and on the first day of October following the parish passed a similar vote.

When the town of Parsons was incorporated, February 18, 1819, and the name changed to West Newbury, June 14, 1820, the Second church in Newbury became the First church in West Newbury, a name that it still retains.

For nearly five years from October 1, 1821, the church was without a pastor. June 21, 1826, Rev. Henry C. Wright was installed; and July 7, 1833, he was dismissed at his own request.

Subsequently the pulpit was supplied for several years by clergymen from neighboring towns, who were invited to take charge of the parish temporarily.

During the summer of 1841 the meeting-house, built in 1760, was taken down; and a new house of worship, that is still standing, was erected on the site of the old one at the corner of Hanover street and the Bradford road, West Newbury, and dedicated December 22, 1841.

Rev. Henry A. Woodman was installed pastor November 30, 1842, and dismissed March 1, 1844. He was succeeded by Rev. Horatio Merrill, who was installed April 4, 1845, and dismissed in the month of August, 1847.

After a long interval, during which the church was again without a settled pastor, Rev. Charles D. Herbert was installed March 5, 1857, and dismissed by a council of churches April 17, 1865. Since that date the church has been under the pastoral care of clergymen employed from month to month or year to year to carry on the work of the ministry there. The names of those who occupied the pulpit for six months or more are as follows: —

Rev. James W. Ward, jr., from July, 1865, to June 24, 1866.
Rev. Horace Dutton, from October 21, 1866, to June 2, 1867.
Rev. Luther H. Angier, from November 10, 1867, to March, 1868.
Rev. Nathaniel Laselle, from August, 1869, to September, 1873.
Rev. James Tarlton, from December, 1874, to July, 1875.*
Rev. Charles Dame, from January, 1877, to April, 1881.
Rev. Charles D. Herbert, from June, 1881, to May, 1886.
Rev. Ezra B. Pike, from June, 1886, to March, 1890.†
Rev. Samuel Evans, from April, 1890, to March, 1891.
Rev. William W. Parker, from June, 1891, to May, 1892.

*Rev. George Dole officiated from September, 1875, to December, 1875. In 1876, the vestry in the rear of the church was built; and Rev. Daniel P. Noyes, of Byfield, was engaged to supply the pulpit from October, 1876, to January, 1877.

† During the spring and summer of 1886 the meeting-house was repaired and repainted. The old-fashioned mahogany pulpit was removed and replaced by a modern one. The morning service at half-past ten o'clock was discontinued in 1887. The afternoon service is still held at two o'clock, as usual, preceded by a Sunday-school beginning an hour earlier.



SECOND PARISH MEETING-HOUSE.

Built in 1841.

Rev. Vincent Moses, from July, 1892, to June, 1896.*

Rev. William B. T. Smith, from January, 1897, to the day of his death, January 18, 1898.

Rev. Charles H. Coolidge, from September, 1898, to April, 1901.

Rev. John Graham, from October, 1901.

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH AT BYFIELD.

In 1702, the farmers of Newbury, near Newbury Falls, and the inhabitants of Rowley "living on the northwest side of Rye Plain Bridge" erected a meeting-house at or near the dividing line between the two towns, and soon after invited Rev. Moses Hale to carry on the work of the ministry there. The church probably was not organized until three or four years later; but the exact date cannot be given, as the church records previous to 1744 have been lost or destroyed.

Rev. Mr. Hale was ordained November 17, 1706; and the parish was incorporated by the General Court October 28, 1710. Subsequently, Hon. Nathaniel Byfield, of Boston, for whom the parish was named, gave a bell, weighing two hundred and twenty-six pounds, that for more than a century called the inhabitants together on Sundays and lecture days. Rev. Mr. Hale retained his office as minister until his death, January 12, 1743.†

On the twentieth day of June, 1744, Rev. Moses Parsons was ordained pastor of the church. The old meeting-house was taken down; and during the summer of 1746 a new one was erected on the same site, "fifty six feet long, forty five feet wide, with a steeple surmounted by a gilded weather cock."

Eben and Theophilus, sons of Rev. Moses Parsons, were born at Byfield during his ministry there. The first became a wealthy merchant of Boston, with a stately summer residence at Newbury Falls that he named "Fatherland Farm," and the latter an eminent lawyer, for seven years chief-justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts.

* Rev. Mr. Moses was the first occupant of the new parsonage, at the corner of Chase street and the Bradford road, after its purchase by the society in the spring of 1892.

† "Ould Newbury," pp. 291–300.

In 1761, Lieutenant-Governor William Dummer, who had for many years been a firm and generous supporter of the church at Byfield, died, and by his will bequeathed the income of his estate in Newbury for the support of a grammar school. During the following year a school-house was erected on the Dummer farm at Byfield, and dedicated February 28, 1763, Rev. Mr. Parsons preaching a sermon appropriate to the occasion from the text, "But the liberal deviseth liberal things, and by liberal things shall he stand." The school is still in successful operation, and is known as Dummer Academy.*

At the close of the Revolutionary war, a fierce controversy between Rev. Mr. Parsons and Deacon Benjamin Colman led to the suspension of the devout anti-slavery deacon "from the fellowship and communion of the church till he does by repentance and confession give christian satisfaction for the offence he has committed." At that time Rev. Mr. Parsons was the owner of three slaves, and Deacon Colman asserted that his pastor "was guilty of the wicked practise of man stealing," "that he could justly be called a thief," and "that he had offered to sell his slave 'Violet' for a large sum of money."

These charges were presented at a meeting of the church held December 21, 1780. After a prolonged hearing the pastor was acquitted of either wilfully or wickedly violating the divine law; but Deacon Colman was suspended from his office, and censured for his intemperate zeal. Rev. Moses Parsons died December 14, 1783; and nearly two years later the worthy deacon, having confessed that he had been imprudent and unnecessarily severe in his treatment of the late pastor, was restored to fellowship and communion with the church, and reinvested with the powers and privileges that he formerly enjoyed.†

Rev. Elijah Parish, D.D., was ordained pastor of the church December 20, 1787. He was a strong and earnest advocate of the new theology called "Hopkinsianism"; and some of the inhabitants of the parish, dissatisfied with his theological

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 313–325. † Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 342–350.

views and opinions, withdrew from the church in 1794 and formed a Presbyterian society. After a precarious existence of nearly ten years the society was dissolved; and the meeting-house in which services were held was, by permission of the General Court, sold to Deacon Benjamin Colman, who removed it to a more convenient location near the old parsonage, and subsequently converted it into a young ladies' seminary. Miss Harriet Newell, Miss Mary Lyon, and other women of note were among the pupils educated there.

Rev. Dr. Parish was an able and interesting preacher. In 1810, he delivered a sermon before the governor, councillors, and members of the General Court that created considerable excitement at that time. Quotations from the sermon will be found in a speech made by Hon. Robert T. Hayne, of South Carolina, in the United States Senate, on nullification, to which Hon. Daniel Webster replied.

Several sermons in pamphlet form were published by Rev. Dr. Parish during his lifetime. He also, in connection with Rev. Jedidiah Morse, of Charlestown, Mass., published a gazetteer of the Eastern and Western continents, a sacred geography and gazetteer of the Bible, and a history of New England designed for schools and private families.*

In 1817 the bell presented to the parish by Judge Byfield was removed, and a larger one, the gift of Eben Parsons, Esq., of Fatherland Farm, was put in its place.

During his ministry Rev. Dr. Parish won the confidence and esteem of his parishioners. At his death, October 15, 1825, his friends asserted that "there was not a more united parish in the State."

Rev. Isaac R. Barbour was installed pastor of the church December 20, 1827. He was deeply interested in the questions of the day, and alienated many of his friends by the vigorous measures that he favored for the suppression of the sale of liquor and the use of it as a beverage. His sympa-

*The first edition of the History of New England was published in 1804, and the second edition in 1809 by Thomas & Whipple, booksellers, No. 2 State street, Newburyport. Some of the friends of Miss Hannah Adams contended that this book was an infringement of the copyright granted her in 1799 for a similar work. A long and bitter controversy followed; but it is evident, from a careful examination of the general design, style of treatment, and subdivision of subjects in the two histories, that the charge cannot be sustained.

thies were enlisted in the cause of temperance, and he sometimes expressed his views and opinions in language that was imprudent and indiscreet. He became involved in a controversy with some of his parishioners in regard to a letter of dismission that, after a long struggle, was granted by a vote of the church to a member who had been guilty of "trafficing in distilled spirits." Although his efforts to revolutionize and reform the habits and customs of the people were not re-



BYFIELD CONGREGATIONAL MEETING-HOUSE.

BUILT IN 1833.

warded with success, he still continued to advocate and support the doctrines and principles of total abstinence.

On the evening of the last day in February, 1833, a meeting of the friends and supporters of the temperance cause was held in the meeting-house. Early the next morning, March 1, 1833, the building was destroyed by fire. It is supposed that hot ashes, taken from the stove at the close of the evening services, placed in a wooden barrel or some other unsafe receptacle, became overheated during the night, and set fire to the building.

A few weeks later the parish accepted the resignation of Rev. Mr. Barbour, to take effect May 1, 1833.

Plans for a new meeting-house were prepared and adopted without delay. The corner-stone was laid in the month of May; and November 7, 1833, the new house of worship was dedicated. A new bell, weighing over one thousand pounds, was purchased by the parish, and hung on the framework provided for it in the steeple. In September, 1886, through the personal efforts of Mrs. A. B. Forbes, of Fatherland Farm, and other inhabitants of the parish, another and larger bell was purchased and hung in the belfry, to take the place of the old one, which was badly worn and cracked.

When the new meeting-house was completed, the pews were sold, and the money used to defray the cost of the building. In 1834, the pew-owners were incorporated by the General Court, and authorized to hold real estate and personal property, for parochial purposes, under the name and title of "The Proprietors of the Byfield meeting house."

December 25, 1833, Rev. Henry Durant was ordained pastor of the church. He resigned September 15, 1847, to take charge of Dummer Academy; but his resignation was not accepted until March 31, 1849.

Rev. Francis V. Tenney, a native of Newburyport and a graduate of Amherst College, was installed pastor March 7, 1850. He resigned March 22, 1857; and on the twenty-second of April following he was dismissed by a vote of the council of churches called to consider and advise with him in regard to his proposed removal to another field of labor.

June 16, 1858, Rev. Charles Brooks, the seventh pastor of the church was settled. His resignation was accepted November 11, 1863.

For nearly twelve years after that date the church was without a settled pastor. In 1865, Rev. Moses E. Searle supplied the pulpit for about five months. He died, suddenly, January 6, 1866. He was succeeded by Rev. Joshua S. Gay, who conducted the services for several years. From 1870 to 1875, Rev. William S. Coggin of Boxford officiated on Sundays, and the deacons of the church had charge of the meetings held on week-days.

Rev. James H. Child was ordained pastor October 7, 1875. He resigned, on account of ill-health, December 22, 1880. Since that date the pastors of the church have been: Rev. George L. Gleason, installed September 20, 1882, resigned October 2, 1888; Rev. David C. Torrey, installed June 1, 1892; resigned April twentieth to take effect May 25, 1902.*

QUEEN ANNE'S CHAPEL.

A few months after the meeting-house in the Second parish, near the burying-ground at Sawyer's hill, had been torn down by a disorderly company of men and boys from "the upper or west end of the parish," a strong and vigorous effort was made by a few individuals residing in the vicinity of Sawyer's hill to erect a new building on the Bradford road, near the dividing line between the First and Second parishes, and to employ, at their own charge and cost, a suitable person to carry on the work of the ministry there. Lumber and other materials needed for the new house of worship were purchased; and the frame was nearly completed and ready to be set up, when a committee from the church at Pipe Stave hill, under the pastoral care of Rev. Samuel Belcher, remonstrating against the exercise of unlawful authority, appealed to the General Court for advice and assistance.

July 19, 1711, "in answer to the petition from the inhabitants of the West Precinct in Newbury," the deputies and magistrates, with the approval of the governor, "Advised and Directed that the Persons named in the Petition & others concerned desist from their Proceedings to the Raising their intended Meeting House untill there be a Hearing of the Matter before this Court." †

This advice was evidently unheeded; for, on the twenty-fourth day of August, Capt. Hugh March and others in a petition to the General Court state "that several Persons in

* See The History of the Byfield Congregational Church, by Joseph N. Dummer, published in 1888, for additional facts in relation to the organization and membership of this church.

† Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. ix., p. 133.

the West Precinct of Newbury have raised & in part covered a house intended for a meeting house, notwithstanding the advice and direction of this Court on the nineteenth of July last, to desist until there had been a hearing."

The Court ordered that Samuel Bartlett, John Ordway, Deacon Joshua Brown, Joshua Bailey, Skipper Lunt, & Pennel Titcomb be now served by the sheriff with a Copy of the order of this Court of the 19th of July past, strictly forbiding them & their associates Proceeding in the Work of their intended Meeting House, untill there be a Hearing of that Affair as by the said order is directed, and that the said Persons be summonded by the Sheriff to attend this Court on the second Wednesday of their session in the Fall to answer for their contempt of the aforesaid order.*

November 2, 1711, Upon hearing the case of Newbury referring to the house late pretended to be raised for the publick worship of God on or near deacon Joshua Browns land, contrary to the direction of ye court, of wch there is no present necessity. It is ordered that the building of the said house be not proceeded in upon any pretence whatsoever but that the division of the town into two precincts between the old meeting house & that upon Pipe staff Hill be the present division of the auditory, & is hereby confirmed & established, & all Persons concerned are to yield obedience accordingly; and that the Disorders that have been in the proceedings about the said House in Browns land be referred to the next sessions of ye peace in Essex.†

In this emergency Abraham Merrill, Joshua Brown, Samuel Bartlett, and a few others, anxious to finish the building on which work had been stopped by order of the General Court, applied to Mr. John Bridger for advice and assistance. He was a zealous churchman, living at that time in Portsmouth, N.H., having been appointed "Surveyor General of Woods in America" December 24, 1705, which position he held for ten or fifteen years, marking with the queen's broad arrow trees reserved for the use of her Majesty's navy, and instructing the inhabitants in the art of "making pitch and tar, curing hemp &c." ‡ Through his influence a petition signed by John Bartlett, Joshua Brown, Joseph Annis, and Samuel Bartlett was presented to the bishop of London, humbly beseeching him to send a minister to officiate in the church to

* Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. ix., p. 142. † Ibid., pp. 159, 160.
‡ Palfrey's History of New England, vol. iv., pp. 399, 401.

be built, and called Queen Anne's chapel by the petitioners and other inhabitants of the town of Newbury.

The building was probably finished previous to August 1, 1712; and it was evidently used for public worship, according to the rubrics and ritual of the established Church of England, by Rev. Henry Harris, one of the ministers of King's chapel, Boston, who came to Newbury on several occasions, remaining fourteen days at one time.

It was the second Episcopal church erected in Massachusetts; and the parish in which it was located — now including the towns of Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury — is at the present time the oldest parish subject to the Episcopal form of church government and discipline in the diocese.

Rev. John Lambton had charge of the services at Queen Anne's chapel from November 14, 1713, until the following autumn, having been transferred from her Majesty's ship "Phenix" at the request and with the approval of Gen. Francis Nicholson, commander-in-chief of the expedition against Port Royal, and afterwards governor of Nova Scotia.

During his ministry the following petition was signed by the officers and communicants of the church, and sent to England: —

To the Hon'ble & Venerable the Society for the Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts:

We out of our ardent Love and Affection that we have for the Worship of God now professed amongst us according to the Liturgy of the Church of England humbly lay before you the necessity we have of a long time had of a Minister duly qualified according to your instructions in that behalf directed to read and preach the Word of God unto us. We return you humble thanks for the Twenty pounds we have received from General Nicholson whose piety and unbounded Charity needs no encomium, whose arrival has cheered our drooping spirits and in some measure released us from the oppression of our adversaries, as likewise for the Ten pounds given to Mr John Lambton, Chaplain to her Majesty's Ship Phenix, which is appointed to attend this Government, who is willing to officiate here till further orders from the Hon'ble Society praying that he may have the Salary during the time he is as Missionary here. We are not so fixed as we desire as to our number, but hope our increase will answer the ends expected. For the present we

are only able to give Forty pounds per annum, the Minister but just come among us, but hope in a small time to advance that sum.

The Books and other things which are usually sent along with the missionary would be very useful for the continuance and establishing us in the true worship of God and Instrumental in bringing others over who are inclining that way that in all human appearance here will be a flourishing Church. We only beg your Gracious, speedy and satisfactory answer, Beseeching Almighty God to bless all your pious undertakings is the prayer of

		Tristram Brown
		Josiah Weaver
		Nath[l] Bartlett
John Lambton, *Minister*		Rich[d] Williams
		Thomas Brown
		Thomas Bartlett
Joshua Brown, Abraham Merrill	*Church Wardens*	Joseph Annis
		Skipper Lunt
		John Eayr
		Isaac Rogers
Samuel Bartlet, Abiel Long, Sam[l] Sawyer, Joshua Brown, Jun, John Bartlet, Joseph Bayly,	*Vestrymen*	John Bartlet
		John Bartlett 3[rd]
		Richard Bartlet
		Dan[l] Osilaway
		John Merrill
		W[m] Huse
		Robert Rogers
		Nich[o] Davison
		Benja Sawyer
		Thos Follansba *

In answer to this petition, "The Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts" appointed Rev. Henry Lucas minister of the church at Newbury. He arrived September 17, 1715, and immediately entered upon the duties of his office. In spite of many discouragements and disappointments, he remained in charge of the parish until his death, August 23, 1720. During his ministry Queen Anne's Chapel was presented with a bell by the bishop of London. In a letter to Mr. Humphreys, secretary of the above-named society, John Bridger (or Bridges, as his name is sometimes printed) wrote May 19, 1718: —

* Historical Collections of the American Colonial Church, vol. iii., pp. 93, 94.

I pray give my duty to my Lord of London and acknowledge his favor to the church of Newbury for the Bell he was pleased to give them.*

Rev. Matthias Plant, who succeeded Rev. Henry Lucas, sailed from London February 16, 1721–2, and preached his first sermon in Newbury April 29, 1722. He married, December 27, 1722, Lydia, daughter of Samuel Bartlett, Rev. David Mossom, of Marblehead, officiating at the ceremony. Soon after his marriage he built a house on the road leading to Amesbury ferry, a short distance from its junction with the Bradford road and the country road, now High street, Newburyport, in which he lived until his death.

Under his care the church prospered, and the number of communicants steadily increased. He baptized many children and adults, and during the first ten years of his ministry a large proportion of the persons united by him in marriage were from Salisbury, Rowley, Salem, Marblehead, Bradford, Haverhill, and other towns in Essex county.†

At his suggestion, several alterations and additions were made to the church building.

October 20, 1725 att a meeting of the Parishioners voted that A Pew be erected at the east end of the Church for the use of Masters of vessels & strangers & the same to be built by Captn Atkins at his Discretion for Conveniency & Decency at his own Charge and other Benefactors. MATT. PLANT, *Minister.*‡

In May, 1726, the church was clapboarded, and during the same year "Joshua Browne and John Corney, Church

* Historical Collections of the Colonial Church, vol. iii., p. 131. When public worship was discontinued in Queen Anne's chapel, the communion service, Bible, and other movable property was disposed of by a few individuals acting upon their own responsibility; but the bell was allowed to remain undisturbed in the belfry. In 1770, the steeple of the deserted chapel was blown down during a violent storm. Mr. David Whitmore, an innholder living in the neighborhood, took possession of the bell, and refused to deliver it up unless ordered to do so by some person or persons entitled to it. Rev. Edward Bass, minister of St. Paul's church, Newburyport, at that time, evidently intended to bring a suit in the Court of General Sessions to recover the property belonging to the chapel; but the events immediately preceding and following the Revolutionary war undoubtedly rendered that course unadvisable.

Subsequently, the bell was hung in the belfry of a school-house on Pillsbury lane, now Ashland street, Newburyport. On the night before Christmas, 1839, it mysteriously disappeared, and since that date has not been seen. For further details the reader is referred to Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 411–413, and Rev. D. D. Addison's "Life and Times of Edward Bass," p. 126.

† Rev. Matthias Plant's Note Book or Diary.

‡ Records of Queen Anne's Chapel.

Wardens in the Queen's Chappel in Newbury, builte within the South Doore Joyning to Thos. Bartlets pew, a pew given to the above saide church for a seate for the Church Wardens to sitt in for Ever." *

November 10, 1726 voted that ye Gallerys be builte, forthwith, under the direction of the minister & church wardens.*

In 1738, Rev. Mr. Plant consented to the erection of a new church near the business centre of the town, and subscribed the sum of fifty pounds as his proportion of the cost of the same. A lot of land was purchased, and a building, "called St. Paul's Church," was erected thereon. February 3, 1742, Rev. Mr. Plant was chosen minister, and arrangements were made with him to preach in the church every other Sunday. Some differences of opinion in regard to the appointment of church wardens and the control of the pulpit led to a serious disagreement that was not settled for eight or nine years. During this interval Rev. Mr. Plant officiated occasionally in St. Paul's church, but devoted most of his time and attention to Queen Anne's Chapel. In a note-book in which he recorded some of the important events of that time he wrote,

June 3, 1743 returned from ye Convention which was held at Rhode Island and got home ye 9th of June.

July 21, 1745 then I began to preach in ye new church by ye water side by order of ye society.

During the remainder of that year and the year following Rev. Mr. Plant preached in the new church once a month; but the number of hearers was small, often not more than six or eight men and about as many women.

Meanwhile the services in Queen Anne's chapel were held on Sundays and holy days, with but few interruptions; and many worshippers assembled there to offer devout prayers, and join in the songs of praise. In 1750, the chapel was repaired at a cost exceeding one hundred pounds. Of this sum Rev. Mr. Plant contributed nearly one-half. Two years

* Records of Queen Anne's Chapel.

later he was taken seriously ill, and never fully recovered. He died April 2, 1753. In his will on file in the Probate Court at Salem is the following item: —

I give to the church (viz:) Queen Ann's Chaple in Newbury Ten Pounds Lawful money of this Province to Purchas a silver Coup for the Holy Communion which silver Coup my executorix shal Emedeatly Purchas, or shal pay the said sum to the Church Wardens of said Church in Being to purchas said Silver Coup, and forthwith Deliver it to ye sd Church to be entered in the Church Book and how many ounces of silver it contains.

After the death of Rev. Mr. Plant the parish of Newbury was placed in charge of Rev. Edward Bass, who had been appointed assistant minister, or curate, to Rev. Mr. Plant in 1752. He officiated at Queen Anne's chapel once a month until 1766, when, the building having become old and dilapidated, services were discontinued. A few persons who had been accustomed to attend public worship there organized, in 1762, the Fifth Congregational church in Newbury; but a large proportion of the communicants became earnest and devout members of St. Paul's church.

The chapel, neglected and deserted, soon began to show signs of decay. Weather-worn and weakened by wind and storm, the steeple fell in 1770, considerably damaging the main body of the building, which was then taken down, and some of the material used in the construction of pews and galleries for the Fifth Parish meeting-house.

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH.

The second Episcopal church in Newbury was built previous to 1740 on the corner of Ordway's lane, now Market street, and the country road, now High street, Newburyport. Rev. Matthias Plant, who was then in charge of Queen Anne's Chapel, subscribed fifty pounds toward the cost of the new building. When it was completed and ready for use, he was chosen minister, and notified of his election by the wardens and vestrymen of the church.

Newbury, Feb. 3. 1741-2.

We the subscribers, members of the New Church in Newbury, called by the name of St. Paul's Church, desiring the worship of God accord-

ing to the Rubric of the Church of England, do desire and do make choice of the Rev. Matthias Plant as our Minister to officiate and carry on the said worship in said church of St. Paul's, in Newbury aforesaid, — in witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands this day and year above written.

Jos Atkins	Anthº Gwynn	
Thomas Smith	Wm Atkins	Michael Dalton
Joseph Cottle	Thos Woodbridg	Edmund Cottle
Witter Cumings	Benjn Harris	*Church Wardens.**
Wm Jenkins	Ambrose Davis	

Owing to some differences of opinion in regard to his rights and privileges as minister of the church, Rev. Mr. Plant was not inducted into office until several years later.

September 30, 1747, he notified the wardens and vestrymen of the church that he would gladly meet and confer with them in regard to his appointment "as chief minister of the whole parish," * and two or three weeks later received the following note in reply: —

We received your favor of ye 10th Instant & many of ye Church people being absent prevented the answer until now; as your favor is directed to ye church wardens & Proprietors we have determined to have a meeting of ye Proprietors on friday next at ten of ye clock in ye forenoon at St Pauls Church & pray you'll favor us with your presence & we doubt not that matters can be accommodated in a friendly manner, as we have no views to answer but ye good of ye community & as speedily as possible have an agreeable gentleman seated in ye church which we shall endeavor shall be to your good liking & satisfaction as well as ourselves; we are Reverend Sir,

Your most Humble Servants

To the Reverend
Mr. Matt Plant.

Thos Tannett } *Chh*
Jno Crocker } *Wardens.**

The conference evidently did not result in an immediate settlement of the questions in dispute, as Rev. Mr. Plant was not inducted into office as rector of St. Paul's church until June 24, 1751.† Meanwhile Mr. Edward Bass, who had been studying for the ministry, was selected to assist in the work of the parish. He was sent to England and admitted to holy orders by the bishop of London May 24, 1752.

* Rev. Matthias Plant's Note Book or Diary.
† "Ould Newbury," pp. 401, 402.

After his return he entered upon his duties as an assistant to Rev. Mr. Plant, who was then in feeble health. He had charge of the whole parish, preaching one Sunday in the month at Queen Anne's chapel and the three following Sundays in St. Paul's church, after the death of Rev. Mr. Plant, which occurred April 2, 1753.

Three years later, an organ, given to King's chapel in Boston by Thomas Brattle in 1713, was purchased for use in St. Paul's church at a cost of five hundred pounds. It was removed to Newbury during the summer of 1756, and was probably the first church organ set up within the limits of the town.

In 1764, a portion of the town of Newbury, including the land upon which St. Paul's church now stands, was set off and incorporated by the name of Newburyport. After that date Rev. Mr. Bass ceased to be an inhabitant of Newbury, and the church itself became a prominent place of worship in the newly incorporated town.*

THIRD PARISH CHURCH.

The bounds and limits of the Third parish were fixed by an order adopted by the General Court, December 18, 1725. Previous to that date, however, a meeting-house had been erected on land now known as Market square, Newburyport. It was dedicated June 25, 1725; and a church was organized and a church covenant was signed and approved on the twelfth day of January, 1725–6. One week later, Rev. John Lowell was ordained pastor of the church. He was an earnest and faithful preacher, with liberal theological views, and a personality that was attractive and sympathetic. The congregation to whom he ministered rapidly increased in numbers, and in 1736 the meeting-house was enlarged. It measured, with the addition made at that time, eighty feet in length and sixty feet in width, with a gallery opposite the pulpit, and probably one on each side In September, 1740,

* See "Ould Newbury," pp. 396–419; also, "The Life and Times of Edward Bass, First Bishop of Massachusetts," by Rev. Daniel D. Addison, published in 1897.

Rev. George Whitefield preached his first sermon in Newbury to an immense audience that occupied all the available space in this large and commodious edifice.

The enthusiasm aroused by this famous preacher led to the organization of a new religious society; and in 1743 more than thirty members asked for letters of dismissal from the Third Parish church, in order that they might join the new organization. This request was refused; and several similar requests made during the next two or three years shared the same fate. At length the "new lights," or "new schemers," as they were called, resolved to put an end to the controversy; and, acting upon their own responsibility, they applied for admission to membership in the First Presbyterian church. After due deliberation their request was granted October 16, 1746.

February 9, 1754, the steeple of the meeting-house in Market square was struck by lightning, and considerable damage done to houses in that neighborhood. Benjamin Franklin, who visited Newbury in the month of November following, wrote an interesting account of the effect of the lightning upon the church steeple, and the protection furnished by a small wire that conducted the electricity in safety through the bell-tower, clock, and pendulum to the ground. This account was communicated by letter to a friend in Paris, and read before the Royal Society of London, December 18, 1755.

Rev. John Lowell died May 15, 1767; and his successor, Rev. Thomas Cary, of Charlestown, was ordained May 11, 1768.

When Newburyport was incorporated in 1764, the name and title of the Third Parish church was changed to "The First Religious Society in Newburyport." From that date the history of this church or religious society belongs to the municipality of which it now forms a part.*

*For additional facts and incidents connected with the Third Parish church see "Ould Newbury," pp. 430–447.

FOURTH PARISH CHURCH.

In 1729, the inhabitants of the westerly or upper part of the Second parish in Newbury agreed to build a meeting-house, "fifty feet by thirty-eight and twenty foot stud," on an elevated lot of land, afterwards called Meeting-house hill, near the burying-ground now known as "Walnut hill cemetery," West Newbury.

August 29, 1729, they applied to the General Court for a division of the parish; and on the fifteenth day of September, John Brown, surveyor, submitted to the committee, to whom the petition was referred, a carefully drawn map, giving the location of every house in the parish, with the name of the owner or occupant.*

After a long delay and much deliberation a line of division was agreed upon by the inhabitants of the Second parish; and March 29, 1731, they voted to petition the General Court to consent to and confirm the division. In answer to this petition, the Fourth parish in Newbury was set off and incorporated June 1, 1731.†

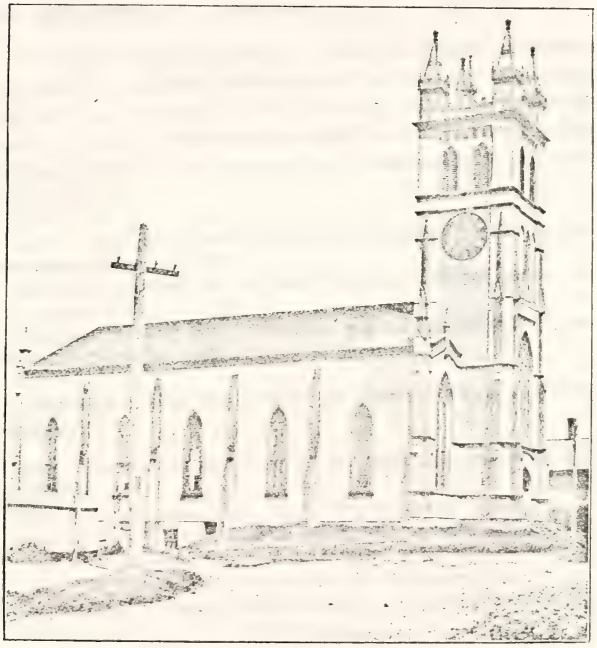
Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, Rev. William Balch, of Bradford, and Rev. John Tufts, of Newbury, officiated at the gathering, or organization, of the church, September 1, 1731. Rev. William Johnson, born in Newbury May 31, 1706, was ordained pastor on the fifteenth day of September, 1731. He died February 22, 1772 and his successor, Rev. David Toppan, was ordained April 18, 1774. He resigned September 6, 1792, to accept an appointment as Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard College. For six years after the resignation of Rev. Mr. Toppan the church was without a settled pastor. Rev. Leonard Woods was ordained December 5, 1798, and served until September 28, 1808, when he was appointed Professor of Theology at the Andover Theological Seminary. After an interval of nearly eight years, Rev. John Kirby was ordained pastor of the church June 12, 1816.

Meanwhile a new meeting-house had been erected on land

* On this map the new meeting-house is numbered 120. See "Ould Newbury," pp. 392, 393.
† Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xv., p. 82.

in Woodman's lane, now Maple street, West Newbury. This new house of worship was dedicated January 5, 1816.

Rev. Mr. Kirby sailed for Charleston, S.C., in 1818, for the benefit of his health. The vessel in which he took passage



FOURTH PARISH MEETING-HOUSE.

BUILT IN 1815. REMODELLED AND ENLARGED IN 1856.

was wrecked on Ocracoke bar on the coast of North Carolina, and he was washed overboard and drowned December 5, 1818.

The town of Parsons was incorporated February 18, 1819; but by an act of the General Court passed June 14, 1820, the name of the town was changed to West Newbury, and subsequently, by a vote of the parish, the name of the Fourth

church in Newbury was changed to the Second church in West Newbury.

Since that date the pastors of the church have been: —

Name.	*Ordained.*	*Dismissed.*
Rev. Elijah Demond	March 7, 1821	September 3, 1826
Rev. Paul Couch	March 27, 1827	August 14, 1828
Rev. John Q. A. Edgell	September 17, 1832	October 27, 1853
Rev. Davis Foster	November 1, 1855	September 1, 1867

In 1856, during the ministry of Rev. Mr. Foster, the meeting-house was removed to its present location, near the junction of Church street (West Newbury) and the Bradford road. It was remodelled and enlarged; and on the twelfth day of March, 1857, it was reopened and rededicated to the worship of God.

June 13, 1872, Rev. Seneca M. Keeler was ordained pastor: he was dismissed February 18, 1878.

September 18, 1888. Rev. William Slade was ordained pastor: he was dismissed April 22, 1891.

December 2, 1891, Rev. F. B. Noyes was ordained pastor: he was dismissed December 6, 1897.

Since that date the church has been without a settled minister.

Rev. Elbridge P. McElroy supplied the pulpit from March, 1870, to July, 1871.

Rev. M. A. Dougherty, from April, 1879, to January, 1884.

Rev. William P. Alcott, from February, 1884, to October, 1886.

Rev. F. H. Boynton, from November, 1886, to December, 1887.

Rev. C. F. Clarke, from January, 1898, to November, 1899.

Rev. George A. Martin, from December, 1899, to March, 1902.

FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH.

Two years after the first visit of Rev. George Whitefield to Newbury, a few earnest and devout friends and followers of the great evangelist erected a small house of worship on the easterly side of High street, a few rods from the southerly corner of King street, now Federal street, Newburyport, and employed Rev. Joseph Adams, of Byfield, a gradu-

ate of Harvard College, to carry on the work of the ministry there. Although zealous and faithful, the young preacher was sometimes indiscreet, and failed to win the support and confidence of the people to whom he ministered.

November 25, 1745, more than one hundred members of the First Parish church, dissatisfied with the theological views of the pastor, Rev. Christopher Toppan, and the assistant pastor, Rev. John Tucker, signed an agreement to withdraw from communion with that church, and unite with the new society in extending a call to Rev. Jonathan Parsons, of Lyme, Conn., to become their spiritual adviser and teacher.

On the third day of January, 1745–6, a few of the subscribers to this agreement organized a church, and mutually covenanted and agreed "to walk together as a church of Christ according to the rules and order of the gospel." The members of the First Parish church who were opposed to the settlement of Rev. Mr. Parsons in Newbury, and "objected to his officiating on the Lord's day to any of ye Brethren of this and the neighboring churches," appointed a committee, February 13, 1745–6, to confer with him upon the subject, and also to ascertain from the church at Lyme, Conn., the truth or falsity of some statements that had been circulated in regard to his theological views and the influence that he exerted while in the ministry there.

Without waiting for the consent or approval of the churches in Newbury, Rev. Mr. Parsons accepted the invitation that had been extended to him by the members of the newly organized society to become their pastor. The installation exercises were simple and impressive. At a meeting called for that purpose March 19, 1745–6, the pastor-elect delivered a sermon appropriate to the occasion. Some letters and testimonials upholding his theological views were read. Then, standing with uplifted hand before the congregation, he said, "In the presence of God and these witnesses I take this people to be my people"; and the clerk, rising and speaking for the church and the congregation, said, "In the presence of God and these witnesses we take this man to be our minister."

Under the law of the province of Massachusetts the members of the new society were compelled to pay taxes for the support of public worship in the parishes where they resided, unless, like Quakers, Episcopalians, and Anabaptists, they obtained permission to attend public worship elsewhere. Although vigorous efforts were made to amend or repeal the law, the General Court was not inclined to grant the relief asked for.

April 7, 1746, the newly organized church elected six ruling elders, and in the month of October following admitted thirty-eight members from the Third Parish church without credentials or letters of dismission from that church. These unusual proceedings were followed by the adoption of a resolution, September 15, 1748, to unite with the presbytery of Boston upon certain specified conditions. These conditions were accepted by the presbyters at a meeting held a few weeks later.

In the months of October and November following, several petitions were presented to the General Court asking that the inhabitants of Newbury might be released from the payment "of taxes and charges for the support of any minister of any society except for the support of the minister where they usually attend publick worship." Although William Shirley, then governor of the province, endeavored to secure for them the privileges asked for, the General Court, after a prolonged hearing, refused to grant the prayer of the petitioners.

During the next ten or fifteen years several attempts were made without success to obtain relief from the burden of "double taxation." The struggle was continued until after the adoption of the constitution of the state of Massachusetts; and some of the questions involved in the controversy were not finally settled and disposed of until June 17, 1796, when the General Court passed "An Act authorizing the First Parish in Newbury to discharge from taxation, for the support of Public Worship in said Parish, such Persons within the limits of said Parish as attend Public Worship in any other Religious Society, and are willing to be subject to taxation in such society."

Meanwhile a larger and more convenient meeting-house was erected on a lot of land on the corner of Chandler's lane, now Federal street, "and a way two rods broad," now School street, Newburyport.‡ The frame of this new house of worship was raised July 5, 1756, and religious services were held in the unfinished building in the month of August following. The steeple was not completed until three or four years later. Samuel Pettingell, while at work upon it, fell to the ground September 10, 1759, and was instantly killed.

The meeting-house is still standing within the territorial limits of Newburyport. The large square pews, the high pulpit, and the sounding-board, hung by rods from the ceiling, have been removed, and other alterations and improvements made, practically transforming the old edifice into a new one. The heavy oak frame, however, still remains undisturbed, showing no signs of weakness or decay.

Since the incorporation of Newburyport the church over which Rev. Jonathan Parsons was installed pastor in 1746 has been, and still is, known as "The First Presbyterian Church in Newburyport"; and its history from and after 1764 is identified with and forms a part of the history of that town.†

FIFTH PARISH CHURCH.

April 17, 1761, the territorial bounds and limits of the Fifth parish in Newbury were established by the General Court.‡ At that date services according to the ritual of the Church of England were held only once a month in Queen Anne's chapel, which was located near the centre of the new parish. Early in the month of June, 1761, a few persons interested in the organization of a Congregational church in that neighborhood met in the chapel without having asked or obtained permission to use the building. Rev. Edward Bass, in a letter dated June 9, 1761, protested against this disorderly conduct, and subsequently applied for advice and

‡ Essex Deeds, book cxlii., leaf 304.

† For a more extended account of the First Presbyterian church see "Ould Newbury," pp. 508–525; also, "The Origin and Annals of 'the Old South' First Presbyterian Church and Parish in Newburyport," published in 1896 by Damrell & Upham, Boston.

‡ See *ante*, p. 238.

assistance to the governor of the province, who recommended the wardens and vestrymen to grant the inhabitants of the Fifth parish liberty to use the chapel when unoccupied until a new meeting-house could be erected, "they disclaiming all right to the church and disavowing the force that has been used by them." This recommendation was consented to and approved by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, in London, February 19, 1762.*

During the following summer a meeting-house was built on Meeting-house lane, now Noble street, Newburyport; and July 22, 1762, the Fifth Parish church was organized. Rev. Oliver Noble, the first and only minister of the church, was settled September 1, 1762. The society was never very prosperous and for many years maintained a precarious existence. Rev. Mr. Noble, in spite of many difficulties and discouragements resulting from some injudicious business transactions, in which he was involved, retained possession of his office until the spring of 1784, when, by mutual consent, a council was called to dissolve the connection between pastor and people. Only two churches responded to the call. The pastors and delegates of the church at Hampton Falls and the church at Greenland, assembled in Newbury for consultation and conference, "not as an ecclesiastical council," but as individual churches, unanimously agreed April 28, 1784, that the separation should take place. A few months later Rev. Mr. Noble was ordained or installed minister of the church at Newcastle, N.H., where he remained until his death, December 15, 1792.

Religious services were held in the meeting-house of the Fifth parish for several years after the resignation of Rev. Mr. Noble; but the congregation gradually diminished in numbers, and before the beginning of the nineteenth century services were discontinued, and the church was practically extinct. In 1808, during a violent storm, the neglected and weather-worn meeting-house was blown down and completely destroyed.

Meanwhile the Fifth parish, by the incorporation of New

* "Life and Times of Edward Bass," by Rev. Daniel D. Addison, pp. 65-67.

buryport in 1764, became the Fourth parish in Newbury. A few individuals, anxious to revive and re-establish the Congregational church in that parish, agreed, January 8, 1807, to build a new meeting-house. They selected a lot of land, owned by Dr. Micajah Sawyer, on High street, near the corner of Poore's lane, or Moody's lane, now Woodland street, Newburyport,* and erected a house of worship that was dedicated November 24, 1807.

"The Proprietors of a New Meeting House in the Fourth Parish in Newbury" were incorporated by a special act of the legislature passed March 4, 1808.† The old church was revived, or a new one organized, previous to April 2, 1808. Rev. James Miltimore was installed pastor April 21, 1808. The meeting-house was struck by lightning and completely destroyed April 1, 1816. A new one was built without delay, and dedicated November 7, 1816.

In 1819, the town of Parsons, now West Newbury, was incorporated; and the name of the parish in which Rev. Mr. Miltimore officiated was again changed to the Second parish in Newbury. Rev. John C. March was ordained assistant pastor March 1, 1832. After the death of Rev. Mr. Miltimore, March 23, 1836, Rev. Mr. March had entire charge of the church and parish until his decease, September 26, 1846.

Rev. Daniel T. Fiske was installed pastor August 18, 1847. In 1851, the parish, with some additional territory, was set off from Newbury and annexed to Newburyport; and the name of the church was changed to "The Belleville Congregational Church and Society of Newburyport." January 8, 1867, the meeting-house was destroyed by an incendiary fire. A new house of worship was erected during the following summer, and dedicated December 24, 1867.

Rev. Dr. Fiske was relieved, at his request, by a vote of the parish in 1887, from some of the burdens and active duties of his office; but, at the earnest solicitation of friends, he consented to remain as senior pastor of the church, and still retains that position. The fiftieth anniversary of his ordina-

* Essex Deeds, book clxxxviii., leaf 172; also, book cxciii., leaf 79.
† See chap. 86, Acts of 1807–08.

tion was celebrated by appropriate and interesting public exercises September 14, 1897.

Rev. Willis A. Hadley was installed active pastor of the church November 30, 1887. He resigned June 1, 1891, and was succeeded by Rev. Albert W. Hitchcock, who was installed December 15, 1891, and resigned December 8, 1900.

The present active pastor, Rev. Richard Wright, was installed June 5, 1901.

FIRST METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

Rev. John Adams, commonly called "Reformation John," a minister in the Methodist Episcopal church, and a member of the New England Annual Conference, came to Newbury in 1819 and made many converts, who subsequently became connected with the Salisbury Conference, and assembled for religious worship from week to week in a school-house then standing on Marlborough street. Rev. Moses B. Lewis, Rev. S. B. Haskill, Rev. Amasa Buck, and other ministers of the Methodist church preached to those who would listen, and gradually added to the number of converts until the year 1825, when Newbury was made a station by the Salisbury Conference, and Rev. John Adams was appointed to carry on the work of the ministry there.

During that year land was purchased and a meeting-house erected in a field on the northwesterly side of Marlborough street, midway between that street and South street, now Bromfield street, Newburyport. The building was completed, and dedicated to the worship of God October 5, 1825.* A few years later Adelphi street, now a continuation of Purchase street, was laid out, in order to give a convenient and unobstructed way to the meeting-house.

Rev. Mr. Adams remained pastor of the church until 1826, when he was succeeded by Rev. Bartholomew Otheman. The ministers who have been stationed there since that date are as follows: —

* The Life of "Reformation" John Adams, published in 1853, vol. i., p. 198.

Rev. John Foster in 1827.
Rev. Jotham Horton in 1828.
Rev. Davis Barker in 1829.
Rev. A. B. Kinsman for a part of the year 1830, and
Rev. R. D. Easterbrook for the remainder of that year.
Rev. La Roy Sunderland in 1831.
Rev. William R. Stone in 1832.
Rev. Newell S. Spaulding in 1833.
Rev. J. E. Risley and
Rev. William Radman in 1834–35.
Rev. Fred P. Tracy in 1836–37.
Rev. B. F. Lombard in 1838–39.
Rev. Thomas G. Brown in 1840–41.
Rev. Amos Walton in 1842–43.
Rev. Horace Moulton in 1844.
Rev. Willard Smith in 1845–46.

During Rev. Mr. Smith's pastorate the meeting-house was raised, remodelled, painted, and a new vestry built in the basement. It was subsequently moved back ten or fifteen feet from the street, the stairway and vestibule enlarged, and other needed improvements made.

Rev. John M. Merrill was pastor of the church in 1847–48, Rev. William R. Stone in 1849, Rev. Nathaniel J. Merrill in 1850, and Rev. William Gordon in 1851.

March 5, 1827, John Adams, Cutting Pettingell, Josiah P. Noyes, Joseph L. Thurlow, of Newbury, Elias French and Caleb Pike, of Salisbury, and Benjamin Brown, of Newburyport, were incorporated "Trustees of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Newbury and Newburyport." The meeting-house was built in that part of Newbury which was annexed to Newburyport in 1851. The legal name and title of the church was subsequently changed to "The People's Methodist Episcopal Church of Newburyport." It is still flourishing and prosperous under the pastoral care of Rev. Henry G. Alley; but the details of its growth and influence since 1851 are not given in this sketch, as they do not properly belong to the history of Newbury.

SOCIETY OF FRIENDS.

Members of the religious society, or sect, commonly called Quakers visited Newbury at a very early date, on their way to other towns in Maine and New Hampshire. In 1663, Lydia Wardwell, of Hampton, N.H., was sentenced by the court at Salem to be severely whipped "for coming naked into Newbury meeting house," and at the same court John Emery was indicted "for entertaining Quakers" at his house in Newbury.*

The Society of Friends held "quarterly meetings" in Hampton as early as 1697, and "monthly meetings" in 1699.†

In 1701, they built a meeting-house in that town, and members of the society residing in Salisbury, Amesbury, and Newbury, as well as Hampton, assembled there on the first day of the week for public worship.‡

Judge Sewall wrote in his diary, May 23, 1704, "Went early to Salem, convers'd with M^r^ Noyes told him of the Quaker meeting at Sam Sawyers a week ago, profaneness of the young Hoags professing that heresy." §

Samuel Sawyer was a son of William Sawyer, one of the early settlers of Newbury; and "the young Hoags" were sons of John Hoag, who married April 21, 1669, in Newbury, a daughter of John Emery.

In 1705, a meeting-house was erected in Salisbury, new town, now Amesbury, for the better accommodation of the Quakers residing there and in the neighboring towns.‖

At the "Friends Monthly Meeting" held at Amesbury in the year 1714 the members of that association were granted liberty to meet in Newbury "every 3^d^ first day y^e^ week in every month." ¶ After that date, meetings of the society were frequently held in Newbury in private houses. In 1743, a meeting-house was erected on the southwesterly side of the

* See *ante*, chap. III, pages 124, 150.

† History of Hampton (Dow), vol. i., p. 393.

‡ History of Amesbury (Merrill), p. 150.

§ Samuel Sewall's Diary, vol. ii., p. 102 (Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, Fifth Series, vol. vi.).

‖ History of Amesbury (Merrill), p. 156. ¶ Ibid., p. 166.

country road, now High street, Newburyport, between Moody's lane, now Woodland street, and Pillsbury's lane, now Ashland street. June 6, 1743, Stephen Sawyer, "In consideration of that good will & affection which I bear to my well respected Friends Robert Rogers, Daniel Sawyer, Stephen Sawyer, Jun., yeomen & Samuel Fowler, Richard Collins, Hezekiah Collins & Samuel Coker, shipwrights & Humphrey Sawyer & Hathorn Coker, Jun., Blacksmiths, all of Newbury," conveyed to the persons above named the land on which the meeting-house was built.*

Stephen Sawyer was a brother of Samuel Sawyer, at whose house the Quaker meeting was held in 1704. He was born in Newbury, April 25, 1663, and married Ann, daughter of William Titcomb, March 10, 1687. By his will dated February 20, 1753, and proved July 23, 1753, he gave his dwelling-house "on the country road," with about forty acres of land adjoining the same, to his sons Daniel and Enoch Sawyer.†

Samuel Coker, shipwright, and Hathorn Coker, jr., blacksmith, named in the deed of conveyance from Stephen Sawyer, were owners or part owners of about three square rods of land, now known as the Quaker burying-ground, on Washington street, Newburyport, which was originally a part of the bequest made by Richard Bartlett in his will, dated April 19, 1695, to his daughter, Tirzah Bartlett, who subsequently married Hathorn Coker.‡

On the land owned by Stephen Sawyer, on the south-

* Essex Deeds, book lxxxvii, leaf 263.

† Probate Records, book cccxxxi., leaf 429.

‡ William Titcomb was appointed guardian of Tirzah Bartlett in 1698. He was discharged from the care of her estate February 8, 1708–9, "she having become of age, and married Hathorn Coker" (Essex Probate Records, book cccx., leaf 114). After her death, suit was brought in the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County by Hathorn Coker, Samuel Coker, and others, to recover possession of about four acres of land on the southerly side of Merrimack street, extending nearly to High street. The writ was returnable at the court held in Newburyport the last Tuesday in September, 1767. An agreement was then made "to dock the entail"; and March 23, 1768, an indenture for the division of the Coker field, so called, was duly executed.

"It was then Covenanted and agreed that nine rods of the premises being three rods Square at the north west Corner thereof shall be and enure to the use of the Several Persons to whose use the Residue of the premises as before mentioned is to be recovered for a Burying Place for them and their heirs forever, for themselves and their Families who shall have Liberty to pass and repass thereto forever" (Essex Deeds, book cxxv., leaf 91).

April 9, 1800, Washington street, extending from Winter to Boardman streets, was laid out by the selectmen of Newburyport, and accepted by the inhabitants of that town at a meeting held

westerly side of High street, several members of the Sawyer family were buried previous to 1743. On the crest of the hill, in the rear of the meeting-house lot, a few worn and dilapidated gravestones are still standing. The only inscription now legible reads as follows: —

HERE LYES Ye
BODY OF ELIJAH
SAWYER SON OF
DANIEL & SARAH
SAWYER WHO
DIED NOVEMBER
4, 1720 AGED
12 WEEKS.

Daniel Sawyer was also a son of Stephen Sawyer. He was born January 28, 1689, and married Sarah Moody, April 2, 1714. He was one of the grantees named in the deed of conveyance from Stephen Sawyer to the Society of Friends in 1743. In the division of his father's estate he came into possession of about twenty-five or thirty acres of land adjoining to and including the family burying-ground.*

The meeting-house erected by the Society of Friends was a plain, unpretentious structure, about thirty feet wide, forty feet long, and two stories high. Religious services were held in the lower story, and occasionally the upper story was utilized for the same purpose.

In the month of June, 1825, Paul Adams, of Newbury, and Stephen Sawyer and Robert Brown, of West Newbury, "being a committee of the Society of Friends in Newbury," duly authorized to sell the Friends' meeting-house and ground under

May 12, 1800. The entrance to the burying-ground is from the southwesterly side of Washington street. A low granite monument, that marks the enclosure, bears the following inscription: —

THE FAMILY CEMETERY
OF HARTHORN COKER
WHO WITH MANY OF HIS DESCENDANTS
LIE BURIED HERE
JUNE 5, 1865.

*Subsequently, Orlando B. Merrill, guardian of Elijah Sawyer, sold a part of this land to Moses L. Atkinson (Essex Deeds, book ccxxv., leaf 244); and March 31, 1821, Enoch Plumer sold to the said Moses L. Atkinson about six acres additional land, "from which is to be deducted the quantity now improved as a burying ground, being about twenty rods" (Essex Deeds, book ccxxxvi., leaf 80). November 6, 1855, John M. Atkinson sold to Eben Griffin about ten acres of land on North Atkinson street in Newburyport, "Reserving the Sawyer Burial Ground, so called, upon said lot" (Essex Deeds, book dxxi., leaf 269).

and adjoining the same, "the said Paul Adams also being an overseer of said society, chosen by the Seabrook Monthly Meeting," gave to Josiah Little, of Newbury, a quitclaim deed "of the lot of ground on High street in said town on which the Friends meeting house now stands," with the building thereon, "being the same land which the Society of Friends have occupied for a meeting house lot for eighty years past." *

At or soon after that date a meeting-house was built just beyond the limits of Newbury, in the neighborhood of Turkey hill, for the use of the Society of Friends. March 4, 1829, Robert Brown, of West Newbury, "in consideration of that good will & affection I bear to my well respected friends Edward Gove, Jun. and Ezekiel Jones, overseers of the Society of Friends in Seabrook Monthly Meeting" conveyed to the said overseers, and their successors in office, land in West Newbury on which a meeting-house was then standing, "so long as the said society shall improve it for a meeting house and hold a meeting for the worship of God." †

May 21, 1855, Josiah Little, of Newburyport, sold to "David Sawyer and Robert L. Brown, overseers of the Society of Friends in West Newbury," about one acre of land "on the road leading from Newburyport to West Newbury by Turkey Hill," which has been since that date used by the members of the society as a burying-ground. ‡

A private school was kept by Miss Upham for several years in the meeting-house on High street after it came into the possession of Josiah Little, Esq. The second quarter of the school was advertised in the Newburyport Herald "to commence August 31, 1825."

Miss Upham was a sister of Thomas C. Upham, Professor of Mental and Moral Philosophy in Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Me. In 1827, she announced that "The French and Italian languages, Painting and other branches of Education usual in Female Seminaries" § would be taught in her school at Belleville.

Some years later the old meeting-house was used as a ves-

* Essex Deeds, vol. ccxxxviii., leaf 141. † Ibid., vol. cclii., leaf 239. ‡ Ibid., vol. dlxiv., leaf 281.

§ See advertisement in Newburyport Herald, April 3, 1827.

try for the Fourth Parish church in Newbury, now the Belleville Congregational church of Newburyport. In 1857, it was removed to a lot of land on the northeasterly side of the ferry road, a few rods in a southeasterly direction from Meeting-house lane, now Noble street, Newburyport, and converted into a dwelling house to take the place of one — owned and occupied by Mr. Charles Bartlett — destroyed by fire February 24, 1857. It is still standing, and is now the property of Mr. George A. Menut, Newburyport.

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH IN BYFIELD.

In 1827, Rev. William French, of Sandown, N.H., visited Newbury, and induced some of the people living near the "Great Rock" to form a class for the study of the Bible, with special reference to the doctrines and principles of the Christian religion as taught by the Methodist church. For several years he came at regular stated intervals to aid and assist in the work, and encourage the weak-hearted and despondent.

In 1830, a small chapel was built near the "Great Rock," and services were held there on Sundays by Methodist preachers from the neighboring towns. In 1831, Rev. Philo Bronson was appointed to the work of the ministry there by the New England Conference. In 1832, Rev. Joseph Brown supplied the pulpit for three or four months, and Rev. Thomas W. Gile for the remainder of the year. The church as well as the parish was organized during the pastorate of Rev. Mr. Gile, under the name of "The First Parish of the Methodist Episcopal Church for the towns of West Newbury and Newbury," and Micajah Poor was chosen clerk.

Rev. Samuel W. Coggshall was appointed pastor of the church in 1833. He was succeeded by Rev. Hezekiah Thatcher, who remained in charge of the parish until 1838. After that date, services were conducted by occasional preachers from Ipswich, Rowley, Salisbury, and other towns in the neighborhood until 1846, when the church was placed in charge of the officers and members of the Methodist so-

ciety in Newburyport, and a vigorous effort was made to increase and strengthen its work and influence.

In 1855, during the pastorate of Rev. John L. Trefren, the chapel was removed to its present location, near the Boston & Maine Railroad station, in Byfield parish, Newbury, and subsequently remodelled and enlarged.* Most of the ministers appointed to carry on the work in the new chapel, following the rule or custom of the Methodist church, remained only one year. Several, however, were retained for a longer term of service. Rev. O. S. Butler occupied the pulpit from 1858 to 1861 and again from 1863 to 1866. In 1868, during the pastorate of Rev. Garret Beckman, the church was again remodelled and enlarged.

Rev. William W. Bowers was appointed pastor of the church April 14, 1900, and still retains that office. In the month of September, 1901, the meeting house was removed and a new one erected on the same site. It was dedicated to the worship of God, Sunday, June 15, 1902.

*Land was purchased July 24, 1855, and March 21, 1859. (See Essex Deeds, book dxvii., leaf 88; book dlxxxiv., leaves 299, 300.)

CHAPTER VII.

SCHOOLS AND SCHOOLMASTERS.

ANTHONY SOMERBY came to New England in 1639 in the ship "Jonathan." * He was probably the first school-teacher employed by the town of Newbury.

There was granted unto Anthony Somerby in the year 1639 for his encouragement to keepe schoole for one yeare foure Akers of upland over the great river in the necke, also sixe Akers of salt marsh next to Abraham Toppan's twenty akers, the which twenty Akers lyes on the south side of it.†

Soon after the removal of the inhabitants of Newbury from Parker river to the new settlement on Merrimack river, Anthony Somerby was chosen town clerk, which office he held for more than thirty-eight years. The new meeting-house erected "upon a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppan's barne" was used as a school-house until a more suitable building was provided. Taxes were assessed for the maintenance and support of the school, which was established by vote of the town, and placed under the supervision of the committee named in the following certificate: —

At a town meeting Nov. 29 1652 There was voted by the major part of the towne that there should be a convenient house built for a schoole. There was also voted that there should be twenty pounds a yeare allowed for to maintaine a schoolmaster out of the Towne rate. There was also voted that Mr Woodman, Richard Kent, Junr, Lieut: Pike & Nicholas Noyes should be a committee for manageing of the business of the the schoole &c

At a generall meeting of the town May 14, 1653 (?) there was ordered & voted that the towne should by an equall proportion according to mens estates by way of rates pay foure and twenty pounds by the yeare

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xxxii., p. 411.
† Town of Newbury Records, p. 34; also, Proprietors' Records, p. 47.

to maintain a free schoole to be kept at the meeting house & the master to teach all such inhabitants children as shall be sent to him so soon as they know their letters & begin to read.

A true coppy taken out of the Towne Book

pr ANTHONY SOMERBY.*

The General Court, in order to encourage and promote the dissemination of knowledge, ordered, November 11, 1647, every town having fifty householders to appoint a suitable person to teach reading and writing in that town, and further ordered

. . . yt where any towne shall increase to ye numbr of 100 families or householdrs they shall set up a gramer schoole, ye mr thereof being able to instruct youth so farr as they may be fited for ye University, prvided yt if any towne neglect ye pformance hereof above one yeare, yt every such towne shall pay 5£ to ye next schoole till they shall pforme this order.†

For non-compliance with this law the inhabitants of Newbury were compelled to answer at the court held at Ipswich May 6, 1658.

Newbury upon their presentment for want of a latin scoole is to pay five pounds to Ipswich lattin scool, unless they by the nexte court provyde a lattin scoole master according to law.‡

Whether the fine imposed by the court was paid or a "lattin scoole master" employed within the time named is uncertain, as the town records for several years subsequent to that date have been lost or destroyed.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held October 5, 1675, "it was voted to have a schoolmaster got to teach to write & read & cypher & teach a gramer schoole"; § and, November 10, 1675, the selectmen voted "That whereas the Law requires that our Towne should maintaine a Grammer schoole & a schoole master to teach to recite & read, the Selectmen agreed with Henry Short to be the schoolmaster and to have for this first halfe yeare five pounds to be paid out of the Towne Rate and to have sixpence a week for every scholar."§

* Ipswich Court Files, vol. iv., leaf 21.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 203. ‡ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., leaf 68.

§ Town of Newbury Records.

June 21, 1676 the selectmen agreed with Henry Short to keep schoole for this yeare from the first Day of May last past (which time untill now he hath taught children) & he is to teach untill the first day of May next & the selectmen Do engage to pay him ten pounds out of the next Towne Rate and if the number be about twenty scholars & upwards he is to teach them at the watch house.*

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the town held September 21, 1677, Daniel Pierce, jr., and Nicholas Noyes were chosen "to get a schoolmaster and agree with him to teach children, and the Towne voted for incouragement to give twenty pounds for a yeare besides what they shal agree upon for the children that shall come to schoole to him." *

November 22, 1678, the town again voted to give twenty pounds a year to maintain the schoolmaster, and April 13, 1680, voted to pay twenty pounds out of the town rate "to M^r^ Emerson for to keep school."

In answer to the petition of several of the inhabitants of Newbury the General Court authorized the selectmen of the town, June 11, 1680, to raise the sum of sixty pounds annually "for the encouragement of learning & Maintenance of the schole master there." † Taking advantage of this order of the court, Mr. Emerson demanded an increase of salary; but the town answered that it had no further use for his services, and dismissed him. On the fourteenth day of September following, a committee was appointed to see if he would accept twenty pounds a year for keeping the school. He declined the offer, and claimed that the notice of dismissal was illegal.‡

October 13, 1680, the General Court ordered that Mr. Emerson should continue to be schoolmaster at Newbury until the next session of the court, and that threescore pounds should be paid him for his services.§ The town, however, voted to employ Mr. Baily to keep a school in the watch-house, and appointed a committee to settle with Mr. Emerson, if possible. The question of salary could not be satisfactorily adjusted, although repeated attempts were made to accomplish

* Town of Newbury Records. † Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 272.
‡ Town of Newbury Records: see also "Ould Newbury," p. 105.
§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 299.

that result. At a town meeting held May 4, 1681, the subject was again considered.

Sergeant Tristram Coffin and Joseph Pike were desired by the Towne to treat with Mr John Emerson about his wages for keeping schoole this lást yeare past from May in the yeare 1680 untill this present May: whereupon the said Mr Emerson did promise and engage to us above mentioned that in case the Towne pay or give security for the payment (to the said Mr Emerson) of twenty pounds in merchantable corne or mault by the twentieth of this Instant May, and by the last of October next forty pounds more in the like merchantable corne & mault that the said Mr Emerson do engage to desist from keeping schoole in Newbury forthwith upon such engagement.

This proposal or agreement was accepted without further delay, and the following order was then adopted: —

The Towne having heard & received Mr Emersons answer to the said Sergeant Coffin & Joseph Pike do consent thereunto and do hereby grant the same and do hereby order and empower the Selectmen to make a rate of sixty pounds for the settlement [with] Mr Emerson according to the said agreement, to be levied on the Towne in part, and the rest on the schollars that have been Instructed by the said Mr Emerson this last yeare, according to theire discretion.*

The following petition was presented to the General Court for the repeal of the order requiring the town of Newbury to raise the sum of sixty pounds annually for the support of a schoolmaster.

To the Honoured Generall Court now assembled at Boston May 11, 1681.

The Humble petition of the Selectmen of Newbury in the behalf of the Towne Humbly Sheweth

That whereas this Honoured Court was pleased to order our Town to pay sixty pounds pr Annum to a schoolmaster this may certify this Honoured Court that according to their order wee have taken a course for the paying of the said sixty pounds unto Mr Emerson who was then in the place to his satisfaction. And the Towne hath agreed with a schoolmaster and taken order for his maintenance, who is an able orthodox man. Therefore wee humbly desire this Honoured Court that they wil bee pleased to repeale the order for the payment of the said three score pounds pr Annum and leave our Towne to the same Liberty to make a bargaine for a school as the rest of the Townes in the Country

* Town of Newbury Records.

are, we are all now agreed and if that order should stand we feare it may make a breach amongst us, not doubting but that you will be pleased to consider and grant our humble request we humbly pray

	NICHOLAS NOYES SAMUEL PLUMER	
Granted by the deputies	JOSEPH PIKE	*Selectmen**
Consented to by the magistrates	GEORGE MARCH	
EDWARD RAWSON *Secretary*	MOSES GERRISH	

In ansr to the petition of Nicholas Noyes, Samuel Plumer &c selectmen of Newbury, humbly desiring that, being agreed, the late order for the payment of sixty pounds p anna to their then schoole master, may be repealled, the Court judgeth it meet to grant the peticon.†

A statement of Mr. Emerson's account, with the following voucher, was recorded, with other transactions of the town, a few months later:—

Received of Joseph Pike constable of Newbury according to *according to* the severall sums above mentioned, the full and just summe of an hundred & ten pounds in satisfaction in full for whatsoever is due to me from the towne of Newbury for keeping schoole in the said towne of Newbury, and I do hereby acquit & discharge the said Constable & Towne from all debts & demands on that account from the begining of the world to this present day dated February 22, 1681–2 As witness my hand JNO EMERSON.‡

On the ninteenth day of October, 1681, the town of Newbury voted "that the selectmen shall make a rate of twenty pounds for the Towne payt for Mr Baily. And that the yeare begine for Mr Baily schooling this day October 19, 1681." §

Mr. Baily was probably employed as schoolmaster until his successor, Mr. Edward Tomson, was appointed. In 1684, there was due from the town of Newbury "To Mr Edward Tomson for keeping school this year £30." §

March 28, 1687 The Towne voted that ye selectmen should agree wth Mr Tompson to keepe scoole for the Towne one quarter of a year from this time, provided he will be pleased to keepe ye schoole ye sd

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. lviii., p. 107.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 316.

‡ Town of Newbury Records. Mr. Emerson subsequently taught school in Salem from 1699 to 1712. (See Felt's Annals of Salem, p. 354.)

§ Town of Newbury Records (1680–92).

quarter of a yeare for seven pounds & ten shillings. Ye scholars to pay pr week as formerly.*

September 6, 1687, The Towne considering the great advantage & benefit that have been & may be to ye Towne by promoting of Learning among us do desire ye Revnd Mr Richardson and ye selectmen to procure an able schoolmaster for us for ye Teaching of children to Read write & cipher and to ffit them for the Colledg and for ye [maintenance] of a schoolmaster we do promise to give twenty pounds for ye first yeare in good country pay, besides what the schollers shall give, and also five pounds for this yeare to each end of ye Towne to be disposed of by ye selectmen according to yr discretion to such schoolmasters as shall be improved for ye teaching of children to Read, write & cipher. But if ye ends of the Towne shall neglect to procure a schoolmaster to teach to reade, write & cypher as aforesd that then ye whole thirty pounds shall go to ye Latin schoolmaster.*

On the eighteenth day of October following, the committee, consisting of Rev. Mr. Richardson and the selectmen, reported as follows: —

Whereas ye Towne of Newbury at a meeting of theyrs Sept. 6 last past did imploy us ye subscribers a committee for ye procuring of a schoolmaster as in the said vote may appear: We have accordingly now agreed wth Mr Seth Shove to be ye lattin schoolmaster for ye Towne for this present year & to performe sd worke of a Lattin schoolmaster for reading, writing and cyphering according to sd vote.

Jno Richardson
Daniel Pearce
Tristram Coffin
Nathl Clarke
Richard Bartlet
Joseph Bayley.†

December 25, 1689 voted that Mr Seth Shove should have twenty pounds for this last yr for keeping schoole & after yt proportion if he hath kept schoole above a yre since the first year.‡

April 22, 1690 the Towne voted to give Mr Seth Shove twenty five pounds in Townes pay for this present year & the pay of the schollers according to custom, provided he keeps a Lattin schoole amongst us according to Law and a schoole for teaching to rede, wright & cypher.‡

In May, 1691, the town voted to pay Mr. Seth Shove thirty pounds upon the following conditions, namely, that for

* Town of Newbury Records (1680–92), vol. ii., p. 71.
† Town of Newbury Records; "Ould Newbury," p. 107.
‡ Town of Newbury Records.

one year he would teach "readers free, Latin scholars six-pence per week, writers and cypherers four pence per week, to keep the school one third part of the year at the middle of the new towne, one third part at the school house, and the other third part about middle way between the meeting house and old town ferry." *

May 10, 1693 voted that Mr. John Clarke be called to assist Mr Richardson in the work of the ministry at the west end . . . and also to keep a grammar schoole.*

At a meeting of the legal voters of the town held March 26, 1694, a petition presented by "Capt Dan[ll] Peirce, Esq., Capt Thomas Noyes, Lieut Moses Gerrish, Mr Joseph Woodbridge, Mr Nathaniel Coffin & Benjamin Morse in the behalfe of them selves & neighbors for liberty to erect a little house by the Rock between the end of Capt Noyes lane & Mr Woodbridge for the accomodation of a good & sufficient schoole dame" || was granted upon condition that the land should revert to the town if the building was used for any other purpose than a school-house. This land was laid out by the lot-layers July 24, 1704, "upon the little Hill between the end of Lt Col. Noyes his lane & Mr. Woodbridges house according to sd grant as it is bounded wth the comon on every side being about forty foote square." †

June 5, 1695, Mr. Christopher Toppan was invited to assist Rev. Mr. Richardson in the work of the ministry; and the town voted to give him "thirty pounds a year so long as he shall keep a grammar and a writing schoole, the scholars to pay as they did to Mr John Clarke." *

July 29, 1696 for the encouragement of Mr Nicholas Webster for keeping of a Gramer school heer in Newbury the Town voted to give to him the said Mr Nicholas Webster thirty pounds for one year in country pay, provided he demand but four pence per weeke for Lattin schollers and teach all the Towns children that come to him to read write & cipher freely, without pay.*

May 11, 1697 voted that the agreement made with Nicholas Webster July 29, 1696 about keeping school be renewed for the year ensuing.*

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, p. 31.

December 18, 1699 Lieut Coffin, Lieut Noyes & Decn William Noyes were desired to discourse wth Mr Toppan & Mr Richard Browne for Mr Browne to preach a lecture once a month & once every sacramt day and to keepe ye Grammer Schoole and to help Mr Toppan or Mr Belcher in preaching in case of sickness, and if Mr Browne accept of the call, then to give Mr Webster a quarter of a years warning to Leave ye schoole.*

Mr. Richard Brown was employed March 18, 1700–1, "to keep the Grammer Schoole for the year ensuing on the same conditions as last year"; and two years later his salary was fixed at thirty pounds per annum.*

March 7, 1709–10, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to employ Mr. Brown to keep the grammar school for another year, and the selectmen were authorized to expend twenty pounds at their discretion "for ye promoting of writing & cyphering in the remote parts of ye Town." *

March 13, 1710–1, Mr. Brown was again engaged to keep the grammar school; and it was also "voted that he is to have liberty to leave it when he pleases." * The same day he was re-elected town clerk. In the month of October following, having decided to remove to Reading, where he was afterwards ordained as a minister, he wrote on a fly-leaf of one of the town books as follows: —

I have served Newbury as schoolmaster eleven years and an half and as town clerk about five years and have been repaid with abuse, contempt and ingratitude. I have sent nigh as many to college as all the masters before me since the reverend and learned Parker. Those I have bred think themselves better than their master (God make them better still) and yet they may remember ye foundation of all their growing greatness was laid in the sweat of my brows.

I pray that poor unacknowledging Newbury may get them that may serve them better and find thanks when they have done.

If to find a house for ye school two years, when ye town had none, gratis, if to take the scholars to my own fire when there was no wood at school as frequently, if to give records to the poor, and record their births and deaths gratis deserves acknowledgements, then it is my due, but hard to come by.

Est aliqua ingrato meritum exprobare voluptas
Hoc fruar, haec de te gaudia sola feram.

R. Brown.†

* Town of Newbury Records.

† See Record of Births, Marriages, and Deaths in the town of Newbury for the years 1635–1735.

October 9, 1711 Mr. Joshua Moody was chosen to keep ye Gramar School ye remainder of ye present year . . . also voted that ye gramar school be removed to Greenleafs Lane or near there abouts provided a convenient place be forthwith provided by ye selectmen and the master be willing to keep it there until the town meeting in March next.*

March 11, 1711–12 voted that a house for ye keeping ye Gramer school in, shall be bilt and set up near ye middle waye, between ye old school house & ye little old house now standing by ye way near frog Pond and that the Gramer schoole master shall have fifteen pounds in money and fifteen pounds as money for keeping the Schollers to learn Lattin & to write & cypher for the year ensuing.*

March 10, 1712–3, John Woodbridge, son of Rev. John Woodbridge, was chosen to keep the grammar school at a salary of twenty-five pounds.* He was elected annually for eighteen years. In 1718, his salary was raised to forty pounds per annum, and in 1719 sixty pounds additional was raised "for maintaining schools in the remote parts of the town." * March 9, 1730–1, the town voted that Mr. John Woodbridge "shall have forty five pounds for his service and shall have none but Latin scholars." *

Reading and writing schools for the instruction of children living in the Second parish in Newbury were established February 12, 1716–7; and the assessors were authorized "to agree with four schoolmasters to teach to write and cypher, and to keep schoole in four places in the precinct, viz: one below Artechoak River and one neere the meeting house, one neere Joseph Hills and one neere Capt Hugh Marches, each schoole to have an equal share of the ten pounds which is allotted by the Town for ye schools." †

After the organization of the Third parish in 1725, the town voted March 11, 1728–9, to raise for the maintenance of schools in the First parish thirty pounds, for the Second parish thirty pounds; and for the Third parish, the same amount; "also fifteen pounds for Newbury's part of the Falls parish." *

At that date schools were kept in private houses, or in other buildings conveniently located, as well as in the school-

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 53.

house then standing near the First Parish meeting-house. In 1691 Mr. Seth Shove was employed to teach "at the new town" one-third of the year, "at the school house" one-third of the year, and at a place, to be agreed upon, "between the meeting house and old town ferry," for the remainder of the year. Subsequently the amount appropriated annually by the town for the support of schools was divided among the parishes, and they were authorized and instructed to provide convenient school-rooms and suitable teachers.

April 22, 1729, the inhabitants of the Second parish voted "to hire a gramer school master to keep school in y^e^ parish and to keep ye school half ye year at y^e^ easterly end of y^e^ parish as neer y^e^ middle, between indian river and Thomas Bartlets as may be, and y^e^ other half of y^e^ year as neer y^e^ middle of y^e^ West part of y^e^ parish, between indian river and Bradford, as may be." *

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the First parish held March 13, 1729–30, it was voted that the school be kept in the First parish, at the usual place, for nine months, until the last day of November, at the "old town" for the next two months (December and January), and at the "Farms" for the month of February.†

March 17, 1729–30, the inhabitants of the Third parish voted to build a school-house on High street, between Fish, now State street, and Queen, now Market street, Newburyport.‡

Evidently, the arrangements made in some of the parishes were not satisfactory to the legal voters of the town; and the location of the schools was frequently criticised and condemned. It was voted May 12, 1732, "that ye grammer scool shall be kept at y^e^ Towns house by y^e^ meeting House in y^e^ first parish, this year."

Voted March 13, 1732–3 that the school house now standing neer y^e^ meeting House in y^e^ first parish is given to those that live remote in said parish, provided they will repair it & keep it so, for them to keep in on Sabath days.§

* Newbury (Second Parish) Records, p. 65.
† Newbury (First Parish) Records.
‡ "Ould Newbury," p. 433.
§ Town of Newbury Records.

Stephen Sewall was chosen schoolmaster March 13, 1732–3; and the town voted to keep the grammar school "for the ensuing year at or near Chandlers lane." *

March 12, 1733–4 voted to raise forty pounds toward ye support of a gramer scoole master for ye year insuing to be kept on ye west side of Artechoak River & to be a free scoole for lattin scollers & no other use, provided some suitable persons in that part of ye Town do git a suitable person as ye Law directs to keep said scoole for this Towne & take care sd scoole be well & faithfully kept, ect. and if ye people above Artechoak River do not timely provide a man to keep scoole as above said, then ye selectmen are desired to provide a gramer scoole master for ye Towne for ye year insuing.*

March 11, 1734–5, the town voted to pay forty pounds toward the cost of keeping a grammar school at Newbury Falls (Byfield); and March 9, 1735–6, a like sum was voted for the support of a grammar school between Chandler's lane and John Weed, jr.'s, house.† The location selected for the last-named school was evidently unsatisfactory. On the tenth day of May following the town voted to pay forty pounds "to ye inhabitants of ye first parish, provided they get & keep a good & suitable man to keep a free gramer school, in such place or places in said parish as they shall agree, the year ensuing." * The inhabitants of the Third parish were granted forty pounds March 8, 1736–7, "provided they do procure a suitable man for to keep a free scoole for the Towne for ye year insuing." *

For twenty-five or thirty years after that date the grammar school was annually changed from parish to parish, in order that all who desired to attend might have opportunity. June 2, 1742, the town voted that the school "shall be kept in ye scool House near ye meeting House in ye first parish," and on the twenty-second day of September following voted that "it shall be kept in the third parish ye year ensuing at ye charge of this town." *

May 15, 1744 voted that ye gramer school shall be kept this year at such place or places as may best acomodate ye second & fourth parishes. *

*Town of Newbury Records.

†John Weed's house was on the southwesterly side of High street, nearly opposite the head of Lime street, Newburyport. (See "Ould Newbury," pp. 135–138.)

May 14, 1745 voted that the gramer school be kept in the first parish for one year next ensuing.*

May 26, 1746 voted that ye gramer school shall be kept in ye 3d parish ye year insuing.*

May 19, 1747 voted that the Gramer School be kept until March next in that part of Byfield parish as may be most convenient for the inhabitants thereof.*

March 8, 1747–8 voted to employ a suitable person to teach the gramer school in the second & fourth parishes for the year insuing.*

May 14, 1752 voted to continue the town school at Byfield until the inhabitants of that parish, in the judgment of the selectmen, have had their proportion of the money appropriated.*

March 13, 1752–3 voted to provide a school for reading and writing to be kept in the first parish this year, in the second parish next year, and in the third and fourth parishes the years next following; also voted that the grammer school be kept in the most convenient place for the town, and that the selectmen be instructed to provide a good place and a good teacher.*

October 20, 1763 voted to build a house to keep the Gramer School in at or near the head of Fish street.*

March 9, 1779 voted that the unanimous thanks of the town be given to Samuel Moody, Esq. for his generous donation of one hundred pounds at this time, and of twenty pounds some time past for the purpose of a growing fund for a grammar school being in the town for the instruction of youth.*

In 1792 the town was divided into school districts; and a committee, consisting of Ebenezer March, Esq., Stephen Hooper, Esq., Dudley A. Tyng, Esq., Enoch Sawyer, Esq., and Mr. Jeremiah Pearson, with the ministers and selectmen of the town, was appointed to supervise and inspect the schools. At the annual meeting held March 13, 1792, the overseers of the poor were instructed to provide clothing for destitute children, and also for their regular attendance at the public schools.

The school-houses erected in Newbury previous to the Revolutionary war were square wooden buildings, with windows on all four sides. They were well and substantially built, with a low, hip roof, and a door opening from the street into the school-room. The teacher's desk was on a raised platform nearly opposite the door; and the benches

*Town of Newbury Records.

on which the scholars sat were arranged in rows at the right and left of the desk, facing the stove that stood in the centre of the room, between the teacher's desk and the door. Pupils attending school paid sixpence weekly, in addition to the amount appropriated by the town or parish for the support of the schoolmaster. Young beginners were taught to read and spell from hornbooks imported, probably, from England. These books consisted of a single leaf or page, on which the alphabet, the syllables "ab, eb, ib, ob," etc., the benediction, and the Lord's Prayer were printed. To a thin piece of wood, four or five inches long and two inches wide, with a short handle at the lower end, the printed page was securely fastened, and covered with a thin sheet of horn, through which the letters could be seen and read. A narrow strip of brass, nailed to the edges of the wood, held the horn in place.

From these hornbooks children learned the letters of the alphabet at home, and then were sent to school to learn to read and spell. Judge Sewall, in his diary, under the date of April 27, 1691, wrote as follows: —

> This Afternoon had Joseph to school to Capt Townsend's mother's, his Cousin Jane accompanying him, carried his Horn-book.*

The first edition of the New England Primer was published probably in 1695. It rose rapidly in popular favor, and before the middle of the eighteenth century it had practically supplanted the hornbook in the schools of Newbury. Many editions of this favorite text-book were published in Boston, New York, Philadelphia, and elsewhere, including one by John Mycall, of Newburyport, in 1795. It contained, in addition to the alphabet, a table of easy syllables, a morning and evening prayer for children, grace to be said before meat, and the familiar rhymes beginning

> "In Adam's fall
> We sinned all,"

and ending with

> "Zaccheus he
> Did climb a tree
> His Lord to see."

* Samuel Sewall's Diary, vol. i., p. 344.

For more than a century after the settlement of Newbury, the Bible and the Catechism were the only reading-books used in the schools. Penmanship was taught, but proficiency in the art of writing was acquired by practice, and not by study. Pupils imitated to the best of their ability copies set for them by the schoolmaster. Although considerable time and attention was devoted to spelling, the principles of etymology and orthography were unsettled, and the combination of letters used to form words varied, apparently, according to the idiosyncrasies and peculiarities of the teacher. When a word was given out, the pupils were expected to pronounce it and spell it in a loud voice, all speaking together. On warm summer days, when the windows were open, the sound of their voices could be heard a long distance.

Arithmetic was taught without the aid of text-books. Sums in addition, subtraction, multiplication, and division were copied, at the dictation of the teacher, into books consisting of a few blank sheets of paper; and, without assistance, pupils were required to give the correct answer. The first arithmetic published in America was compiled by Nicholas Pike, of Newburyport, in 1786. It contained over three hundred and sixty rules, many of them ambiguous and abstruse; but only a few of the most difficult were carefully and intelligently explained.

Latin grammar was taught advanced scholars, but there was no text-book devoted to the art of writing or speaking the English language. The first English grammar used in the public schools of Newbury was "The Young Lady's Accidence, or a Short and Easy Introduction to English Grammar, designed principally for the use of Young Learners, more especially for those of the Fair Sex, though Proper for Either." It was a small book of fifty-seven pages, about the size of the New England Primer, written by Caleb Bingham, a schoolteacher of Boston, and published in 1789.*

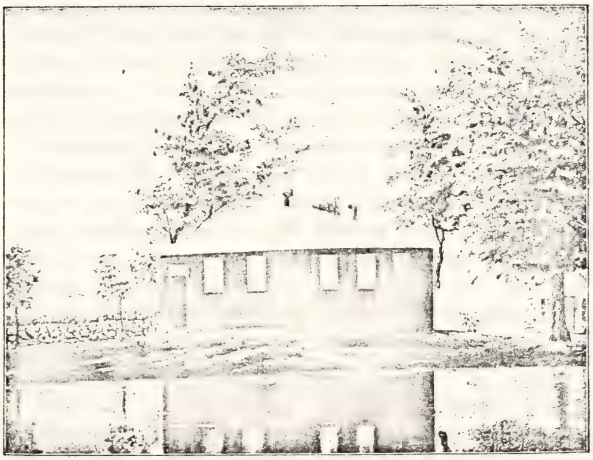
When the old school-house that stood in the First parish in Newbury was removed, a new brick building, similar in

*Caleb Bingham subsequently published several other school-books. Two of them, "The American Preceptor" and "The Columbian Orator," were exceedingly popular, and passed through many editions.

size and shape, was erected to take its place, on "the trayneing green," near the pond.

The half-tone print on this page gives a view of the brick school-house as it was thirty years ago. It is taken from an oil painting now in the possession of Hon. Luther Dame, of Newburyport.*

Moses Atkinson, in his will dated December 7, 1807, and proved July 5, 1814, gave several lots of land and other prop-



SCHOOL-HOUSE ON "TRAYNEING GREEN," 1872.

erty to "School District Number Two in Newbury," where he had lived for many years, "for the support of a school for reading, writing, arithmetic and English grammar." With the income from this fund an evening school was kept two or three months every year in the school-house on Pillsbury's lane, now Ashland street, Newburyport.

April 23, 1849, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to build

* Mr. Dame was for several years a teacher in the school-house described above. He painted the sketch after the building was taken down in 1873.

a school-house on land owned by Rev. Leonard Withington, adjoining the First Parish burying-ground.

This building was erected for the accommodation of the high school, established by order of the General Court. Subsequently the law requiring the town to maintain a high school was amended; and June 23, 1853, the selectmen were authorized to sell one-half the high-school building to the ladies of the First Parish church. June 25, 1853, Daniel Lunt, treasurer of the town of Newbury, conveyed by deed to Mrs. Leonard Withington, Miss Matilda Plumer, Mrs. George Little, Mrs. Nathan N. Withington, and Mrs. John Alter, a committee representing the ladies of the First parish in Newbury, "the Basement half of said school house together with half the attic and half the cellar beneath the same." *

October 19, 1854, the town voted to sell all its right, title, and interest in one undivided half of the land and building; and on the twenty-eighth day of October following, Daniel Lunt, treasurer, conveyed to Edward Dole, David S. Caldwell, George Adams, Isaac Adams, and Luther Noyes all the interest that the inhabitants of Newbury then had "in a certain tract of land bought of Leonard Withington and his wife Caroline November 24, 1849," and also in the high-school building standing thereon.†

After the act establishing the city of Newburyport had been accepted in 1851, a committee, consisting of the mayor, Hon. Caleb Cushing, Alderman Joseph Roberts, and Councilmen Zacheus P. Thurlow, Philip K. Hills, and John Currier, jr., was appointed to adjust and settle the claims to property in "School District Number Two," formerly in the town of Newbury. December 6, 1851, the inhabitants of that district voted "that school district No. 2 formerly a part of the town of Newbury, but now a part of the city of Newburyport, give and convey to the said city of Newburyport the schoolhouses and lands under and adjoining the same, belonging to and owned by the said district to be kept and used by said city for the purposes that they were kept and used by said district, viz: — For schooling purposes, said district re-

* Essex Deeds, book cdlxxix., leaf 199. † Ibid., book dii., leaf 264.

serving the use of the old house for the purpose of keeping the Atkinson fund school in said city agreeing to keep the said property in repair so long as said district belongs to and is a part of the said city of Newburyport."

For the purpose of carrying the above vote into effect, a committee, consisting of Andrew W. Miltimore, George W. Jackman, jr., and Nathaniel Boardman, was appointed to confer with the Board of Mayor and Aldermen, and make such arrangements for the transfer of the property as they considered advisable.

March 11, 1852, Daniel Lunt, treasurer of the town of Newbury, and Caleb Cushing, mayor of the city of Newburyport, signed an indenture, or contract, conveying certain lots of land formerly in the town of Newbury, with the schoolhouses standing thereon, to the inhabitants of the city of Newburyport.*

The General Statutes of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts provided in 1859 for the support and management of public schools, and also granted certain rights and powers to the inhabitants of towns, as follows: —

> A town may, at any time, abolish the school districts therein, and shall there upon, forthwith, take possession of all the school houses, land, apparatus and other property owned and used for school purposes, which such districts might lawfully sell and convey.†

March 24, 1869, school districts were summarily abolished by the General Court; and subsequently the selectmen of towns were authorized to take possession of the property used for school purposes in the towns where they resided.‡ In 1870, however, the school district system was re-established.§ When the Public Statutes were enacted, to take effect February 1, 1882, the law establishing school districts was amended to read as follows: —

> A town in which the school district system exists may abolish the same by vote. No town which has so abolished said system shall thereafter re-establish school districts.‖

* Essex Deeds, book cdlxi., leaf 34; book cdlxvi., leaf 203.
† General Statutes, chap 39, sect. 3.
‡ Acts and Resolves, 1869, chaps. 110 and 423. § Ibid., 1870, chap. 196.
‖ Public Statutes, chap. 45, Sect. 2.

The inhabitants of Newbury voted March 21, 1882, to exercise the authority conferred upon them by the Public Statutes, and on the thirteenth day of April following appointed a committee of three disinterested persons, one from Georgetown, one from Rowley, and one from West Newbury, to appraise the property owned by the several school districts, and determine the amount that should be paid for the same by the town. The valuation agreed upon by the committee was accepted, and the transfer of the property was legally completed during the summer of 1882. Since that date public schools, maintained by the town, have taken the place of district schools in Newbury.

CHAPTER VIII.

HIGHWAYS.

For several years after the incorporation of Newbury the roads leading from the settlement at Parker river were only narrow, winding paths through the primeval forest. As early as September 5, 1635, the General Court ordered the inhabitants of Ipswich and Newbury to mend the highways between the two towns. April 19, 1638, John Baker and Nicholas Holt were chosen "Surveyors of the highways" in Newbury, but were evidently unable or unwilling to make the repairs needed; and therefore complaint was made to the quarterly court held at Cambridge June 5, 1638, and "The towne of Newbury was fined 6^{s} 8^{d} & enjoyned to repaire y^{ir} defects [in highways] before the Court in September." *

A similar fine was imposed upon the town of Ipswich at the same court. November 5, 1639, a more comprehensive act in relation to the laying out of highways was passed by the General Court, which reads as follows: —

> Whereas the highwayes in this jurisdiction have not bene layd out wth such conveniency for travellers as were fit, nor was intended by this Court, but that in some places they are felt too straite, & in other places travellers are forced to go farr about, it is therefore ordered that all high wayes shall bee layd out before next Generall Court, so as may bee wth most ease and safety of travellers; & for this end, every towne shall choose 2 or 3 men who shall joyne wth 2 or 3 of the next towne, & these shall have power to lay out the high wayes in each towne where they may bee most convenient &c.†

Under the provisions of this act the way between Newbury and Rowley was relocated and graded, then the way between Rowley and Ipswich, and afterwards between Ipswich, Salem, and Boston.

At a very early date, probably previous to the year 1640, the inhabitants of Newbury voted

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 233. † Ibid., p. 280.

. . . that the lott layers shall have the power and authority to lay out all convenient highwayes about the Towne Provided the Towne make satisfaction for any lands wch shall be out of any of the Inhabitants Proprietys taken and used for a generall high waye for the Towne, but if any land shall be taken out of any p'rticular persons propriety ffor others p'ticular benefit & advantage then the p'sons reaping benefitt & advantage shall find p'sent satisfaccõn to him or them from whom such land shall be taken.*

At a meeeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held April 19, 1649, the way wardens were instructed to impose a fine,



ON THE WAY FROM PARKER RIVER TO "TRAYNEING GREEN."

not exceeding ten shillings, upon any person who failed to comply with the requirements of the law or declined to work upon the highways a certain number of days annually. At that date the laying out and grading of streets in the new town on the Merrimack river required much time and attention. The country road, now High street, was then a narrow path or way leading to the ferry at Carr's island. Under the direction of the way wardens, or surveyors of highways, it was laid out, four rods wide, for a distance of six miles from

*Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.

the north bank of the Parker river. Recently the road-bed has been greatly improved by reducing the grade in some places, and laying a firm and solid foundation of broken rock, covered with a finer coating of the same material, nearly the whole length of the road. When the work is completed, this ancient thoroughfare will be under the care and control of the Board of Highway Commissioners appointed by the state.

On the westerly side of this ancient highway, between "Little," or "Gravel," hill and "trayneing green," is a wall of earth and stone, built more than two centuries ago, that separates the travelled way from the cultivated fields beyond. The outlines of this interesting memorial of the seventeenth century, now overgrown with grass and moss, can be seen in the photographic view on the opposite page.

The grist-mill built at Little river in 1646, or possibly a year or two later, near what is now known as Four Rock bridge, was conveniently located; and the town provided, at a very early date, for laying out a way to the mill, and also to the farming district afterwards known as the Byfield parish.

At the meeting May 19, 1650 Mr Woodman, Henry Short, Nicholas Noyes & Richard Knight was chosen to lay out a fitt highway to the mill from all parts of the Towne & also to the farms.*

Edmund Moores, in consideration of "his yealding up into the Towns hands a parcell of land being four rods broad thru his lot for a way going towards the mill," was granted six acres of salt marsh.†

John Knight, sr., and John Knight, jr., in consideration of "their yealding up into the Townes hands a parceil of land which was formerly Mr Spencers of four rod broad for the country way to the Mill as it is laid out" were granted eight acres of salt marsh,‡ and also two additional acres in consideration of "theyr yeilding up a parcell of upland Joyning to the way going to the Mill on the West side and Joyning to Richard Petengalls land on the north to lye for comon." ‡

In consideration of Richard Pettingell yielding up into the towns hands a part of his land for a way in the most convenient place ap-

* Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, p. 5. † Ibid., p. 54. ‡ Ibid., p. 22.

pointed by Henry Shorte, Nicholas Noyes & Richard Knight, which he doth by these presents acknowledge, there was granted to the said Richard Pettingell fourteene akers bee it more or less, to him & his heires forever.*

To the court held at Ipswich, March 28, 1648, the grand jury reported the following indictment: —

Wee doe present the town of Newbury for the want of a bridge over the falls river: in the way betwixt Newbury and Andiver. Witnesses John Osgwood Richard Barker of Andyver.†

On the eighteenth day of October following, the General Court appointed commissioners to lay out the highways from Andover to Newbury, Rowley, and Ipswich.

Upon the request of the inhabitants of Andover, Nath: Boyse of Rowley, [Henry] Shorte of Newberry, Ensigne Howlet of Ipswich & John Osgood of Andover, these, or any three of them [are] to set out the highwayes from Andover to Newberry, from Andover to Rowley, & from Andover to Ipswich.‡

Four years later, the subject was again brought to the attention of the General Court, and the following order was passed: —

Whereas the common highwayes betwixt Andover & Ipswich, Andover & Newberry, Andover & Rowley, are not yet layd out, by reason whereof passengers doe suffer great p'judice & inconvenience & the wayes vncapable of being mended, because vnknown where they wilbe layd forth, it is therefore ordered that a committee consisting of one or two persons from each town shall lay out said highways under penalty of five pounds in case of neglect.§

May 18, 1653, the committee appointed to lay out the way from Andover to Newbury, and to the other towns named above, reported that they had attended to the duty assigned them. The closing paragraph of the report reads as follows: —

. . . the way from Andevour to Newbery goes on the old cart way leaving Rowley way at the begining of a playne by a little swampe called Berbery Swampe & so on the old way to the Falls River & from thence straight vpon the north side of Richard Thorlyes feild, as it is

* Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., p. 52.
† Salem Court Files, vol. i., p. 97.
‡ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 258. § Ibid., vol. iii., p. 283.

now fenced & so to John Hulls bridge & so over the end of John Hulls playne unto Mr Woodmans bridge, neere the Mill at Newberry.*

At the county court held at Ipswich in March, 1654, the town of Newbury was presented for defects in the highway "near goodman Adams farm." †

September 21, 1654 John Emery Senior was chosen to answer at the next court at Ipswich concerninge the p'sentment about the waye to Andover.‡

September 26, 1654 The Towne of Newbury being p'sented the last court for defect in the highwayes the Court ordered if it be not mended by next court to pay 40s.§

July 5, 1673, Robert Adams claimed damages "for land taken for the country highway through his farme"; and September 6, 1673, the selectmen appointed "Samuel Moody and the lot-layers to go to goodman Adams' farm and settle with him for the land taken." ‡

Subsequently a more direct way to Andover was needed. A committee appointed to make the necessary changes reported as follows: —

Wee whose names are hereto subscribed being A Committee chosen by the townes of Newbury and Andover for the setling of a highway beetween the said townes in the bounds of Newbury aforesaid, have mutually agreed that the Rode shall go along by James Smiths & so by Georg March his farme on the southerly of the said farme and from thence to the said Georges high field and from thence by marked trees to falls River, upon as straight a lyne as can bee made and in wittness that this is our mutuall agreement wee have hereto set our hands the 20th of June 1682. Our meaneing is that it shall be as straight as the ground will admit, by making bridges & causewayes, but not to be put to the inconvenience of making such, only, wayes passable as may be in a direct lyne.

Newbury	Andover
NATHANIEL CLARKE	DUDLEY BRADSTREET
FFRANCIS BROWN	JOHN OSGOOD

Given in to be Recorded June 20th by two of the selectmen.

NATHANIEL CLARKE.
JAMES ORDWAY.‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p 305. † Salem Court Files, vol. ii., leaf 130.
‡ Town of Newbury Records. § Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 47.

February 15, 1654 at a meeting of the Townsmen select It is ordered that Richard Knight & John Pike shall stake out a convenient way & passage for the Towns Cattell to make use of the Spring of water by Henry Shorts wch is reserved for the publique use of the Towne.*

This spring is about thirty rods in a southwesterly direction from the way, now known as Low street, extending from Hay street to Plummer street in Newbury.

September 21, 1654, the inhabitants of the "old towne" were granted liberty "to make a fence and hang a gate across the way about Anthony Shorts or John Knights provided they hinder not the cattell from going into the commons there." †

November 19, 1654, Richard Knight, John Cheney, and John Pike were appointed to "lay out the way from Merrimacke Street to the necke on the east side of the old town & through the said necke to the marshes there." ‡ On the twenty-ninth day of November following, the way was laid out. It is still in use, and extends from the easterly end of the Lower Green, so called, to a sandy cove or beach on the Parker river, where the first settlers of Newbury landed.§

May 26, 1647, Tristram Coffin was authorized by the General Court to keep the ferry over Merrimack river from the Newbury side, and George Carr was granted "liberty to keep his boate going on Salsberry side." At that date probably the way to the ferry had not been definitely decided upon or laid out. March 28, 1648, the grand jury presented to the court held at Ipswich "the towne of Newbery for the want of a convenient safe way from the new towne to the fferry side. Witnesses Tristram Coffin of Newbury, John Stevens of Salisbury." ‖

Poore's lane previous to 1655 extended from the country road, now High street, Newburyport, to the Merrimack river, and was the way to the old ferry between Newbury and Salisbury, first granted to George Carr in 1641. A portion of this lane, running in an easterly direction from the country road, is now Woodland street, Newburyport; while another detached portion, near the river side, is known as Merrimack court.

* Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, p. 5. † Ibid., p. 62.
‡ Coffin's copy of Newbury Records. § "Ould Newbury." pp. 18–20.
‖ Salem Court Files, vol. i., p. 97.

February 10, 1655–6 there was granted unto Lionell Worth In Consideration of his resigning up to the towne five akers of land for a highway to Salisbury ferry by his house where hee dwelleth which land he formerly purchased of Mr [Tristram] Coffin [Sen.] which was Mr Rawsons land, there was laid out to Lionell Worth eight akers of upland beyond the new towne &c.*

Land was also taken from John Kent, jr., for the new highway, now Jefferson street, Newburyport, extending from the ferry landing opposite Carr's island to the country road, now High street.

March 20 1665 uppon John Kent Junr his summoning of the Towne for to give him satisfaction for the land the Towne hath taken from him for the Country highway to Mr Carr's fferry The Towne voted that the Selectmen should give him satisfaction and accordingly the selectmen and John Kent agreed that the said John Kent should have yt parcell of land by the old ferry place which was the old way and taken out of his ffather's land, so long as the Country makes use of the way that now is, Provided that John Kent allow free egress & Regress for his neighbors for carting or sledding up of Wood, hay &c and to fetch water or to water theyre cattell so they do him no damage by theyr cattells feeding on his land or by leaving Downe his ffences.

per ANTHONY SOMERBY.†

As early as 1649 "Isaac Buswell and George Carr were chosen to call on Newbury to lay out the country roade from the Island to Mr. Clarks farme." ‡

December 1, 1651, "John Clark of Boston Chirurgeon" sold his farm in Newbury to Matthew Chaffey; and the same day the land with the buildings thereon was conveyed to Richard Thorlay.§ Previous to May 3, 1654, Richard Thorlay had built a bridge over the Parker river, near this farm. Soon after that date, the inhabitants of the towns of Hampton, N.H., and Rowley, Mass., petitioned the General Court "for a highway from Mr Carrs ffery to Mr Clarkes farme." May 23, 1655, this petition was referred to the next session of the court; and the deputy from Newbury was "ordered to give notice to that town that they may have liberty to speake in the case." ‖

* Coffin's copy of Town of Newbury Records.
† Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., p. 9.
‡ History of Amesbury (Merrill), p. 41. § See note, chap. ii., *ante*, p. 67.
‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 389.

The road was probably built soon after that date. James Carr, in a petition to Sir Edmund Andros, Knight, governor of New England, in regard to his claims to the ferry between Newbury and Salisbury, granted his father, George Carr, in 1655, makes the following suggestion: —

That for the ease, speed & Convenience of Travellers if yor Excellency shall thinke fit that the highway may be laid From the Bridge by Thomas Thurrells in Newbury to George Marches and from thence to Mr Woodmans which will save neer three miles Riding of what it is in the usual Road & be much better way and effected with a very inconsiderable charge to a publique benefit and advantage: Sept. 27, 1687.*

In 1647, the town of Newbury granted Richard Kent, jr., one hundred and seventy acres of upland and marsh land on the island over Little river, now known as Kent's island. A way over the marsh to the island was laid out by order of the court held at Ipswich March 25, 1656, as follows: —

Richard Kent plt agst John Cheny in an action of the case for fencing a p'sell of the Towns comons wch is pt of a highway. By consent of ptyes referred to the lotlayers to laye out a convenient highway according to ye originall grant.†

At a meeting of the selectmen of Newbury held January 26, 1656–7, Henry Short and Nicholas Noyes stated that there was a way "through Richard Kents Island from the way that is laid out thru' John Chenys land to the way that is laid out over the marshes." ‡

The bounds and limits of this way through land belonging to John Cheney were somewhat vague and indefinite, and led to a legal contest that was referred for settlement to Nicholas Noyes and Henry Short at the court held at Ipswich September 29, 1657.

Richard Kent plt agst John Cheny in an [action] of the case for denyeing him a way where it is Layd out & interrupting & opossing him in the sayd waye. Both ptyes agreed that John Chenye should make the way layd out by the Towne Sufisient as Mr Nicolas Noyse & Henry Short should judge sufisient & to beare the action between them. §

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., p. 163. † Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 54.

‡ Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., p. 16; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 48.

§ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 63.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Newbury held November 10, 1663, "It was voted that the country way by Richard Thorlays Bridg should be by the Mill Bridg." *

It was also ordered that Daniell Pierce, senr, Thomas Hale, Senr, & archelaus Woodman are chosen to be a committee to make the country way (according to court order) from mill bridge to the utmost extent of our bounds to Rowley &c.†

March 14, 1663–4 It was also agreed betweene the Towne & Daniell Peirce Senr & Thomas Hale Senr

In consideration of their making a sufficient country way to answer the countrys ends for cart and horse, over the marsh from the Bridg towards Rowley with stone and earth & to maintaine it so long as they live, the Towne engaged to pay to them, in a towne Rate, thirty pounds, one halfe between this & the last day of October in wheat and barly, and the other halfe in March next in good merchantable pay, corne or cattle, and five shillings a peice yearly as long as they live, and if they trespass upon Mr Sewalls land the Towne shall beare the damag & they engaged to maintaine it, if they can get moveable stone within sixty Rods of any part of the Marsh.†

December 21, 1668 In answer to the petition of Rowley village men for a way from this town to Rowley, Ensign John Knight & Abell Somerby chosen to lay out the way; also to lay out a way from Goodwins ferry [at the mouth of Powow river] to [Aymsbery] mill with Amesbury men.†

March 6, 1672–3 It was agreed that Mr Peirce & Tho: Hale Senr should be released of their bargaine of maintaining the causy provided that the said Mr Peirce attend the making vp of the said causy sufficient that the towne may not suffer damag & bestow his owne labour freely & bring in a particular account to the Towne.†

March 8, 1665–6, the lot-layers, with Archelaus Woodman and John Merrill, were chosen "to lay out a way & to give satisfaction for a way to Salisbury new towne." ‡

This way was laid out December 21, 1668, and extends from the ferry landing, opposite the mouth of Powow river, to High street at its junction with the Bradford road, now Storey avenue, Newburyport.

According to our commission from the town, March 8th 1665, we have laid out a country way unto Salisbury new towne of four Rod broad, begining at Merrimack River side, running through Christopher

* Town of Newbury Records; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 63, 68.
† Town of Newbury Records. ‡ Coffin's copy of Town of Newbury Records.

Bartletts land sixty rods and likewise through Archelaus Woodmans land, sixteen Rod at the North end of Caleb Moodys land and through Robert Cokers land about 17 or 18 Rods. RICHARD KNIGHT
JOHN KNIGHT
RICHARD DOLE
being selectmen did give order to have this recorded
per ANTHONY SOMERBY.*

September 21, 1677 Henry Jaques and Abraham Merrill chosen . . . to make the way passable to Emsbury ferry upon Munday next.*

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held October 21, 1686, Capt. Daniel Pierce, Lieut. Stephen Greenleaf, Lieut. Tristram Coffin, Ensign Nathaniel Clark, Sergt. John Emery, Joseph Pike, and Henry Short were appointed a committee to lay out and divide, among the freeholders of the town, six thousand acres of land in the "upper woods," so called. This committee was also authorized to lay out a highway through this undivided land to Bradford; and on the twenty-sixth day of November they reported in favor of taking "the whole breadth of land between the stakes of the second division of freehold lotts & Emerys land," from Artichoke river to Lowell's brook, for the highway, but recommended that for the remainder of the distance from Lowell's brook to the Bradford line the highway should be "four Rods wide & no more." †

It is evident, however, that the proposed way was not completed until several years later.

March 27, 1704 Coll Thomas Noyes, Esq. Joseph Woodbrig Esq. & Henry Short [were] chosten to be a comitte to lay out the High way to Bradford and also take notice of incroachmts on the highways & lay out any other highwayes especially in the upper woods in Newbury.‡

A wooden bridge, built soon after that date on the Bradford road where it crosses the Artichoke river, was subsequently removed, and replaced by the stone bridge shown in the half-tone print on the opposite page.

At a legal meeting of the inhabitants of the town of New-

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i.
† Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. ii., p. 22.
‡ Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., p. 107.

bury held December 13, 1686, a committee was appointed "to lay out a convenient highway of such breadth as they shall see meet thro' the plaines to Sergeant Emereys Mill." * This way, now known as the Curzon Mill road, extends from the Bradford road, now Storey avenue, Newburyport, to the mill at the mouth of the Artichoke river.

After the division of the "upper Commons," on the westerly side of Artichoke river, in 1686, and the laying out of the Bradford road, it became necessary to erect gates across



BRIDGE OVER ARTICHOKE RIVER ON THE BRADFORD ROAD.

the highways to prevent horses and cattle from straying "from the upper to the lower commons."

March 20, 1690–1 The proprietors of the new feild above Hartichoak River desired of the Towne that they might have Liberty to keepe up the fence across the highway that runs from Bradford Rode to Merrimack River for this prsent year. [] it was granted by a voate.†

March 7, 1692–3 Granted Liberty to ye proprietrs of ye field above Artichoake To fence all cross ye highway at the upr end of sd way for This prsent year provided they hinder no prson in carting on sd way.†

At the Court of General Sessions held at Ipswich March 29, 1709, liberty to place gates "on ye road from Newbury

* Town of Newbury Records, vol. i. † Town of Newbury Records.

to Bradford near Pilsburys, one, att Mr Atkinsons Corner, one, at ye Mill Bridge, one, on ye rode to ye ferry near Mr Knights, one," was granted in answer to the petition of Capt. Stephen Greenleaf in behalf of the town of Newbury.*

John Emery, Archelaus Woodman, Stephen Emery, and Benjamin Sawyer petitioned the town "for liberty to set up a fence across the way to Turkey hill that we may keep our sheep from running away before we have sheared them." This petition was granted March 14, 1714–5.†

"Col Noyes, Major James Noyes & Lieut Stephen Jaques" were granted liberty, March 10, 1718–9, to hang a gate at the eastern side of their land on the road leading to Bradford.†

Nathaniel Coffin was granted liberty, March 14, 1731–2, to hang gates across South street, near the residence of John Coffin; and the same day liberty was granted John Huse and others to hang gates across the way near Brown's Gardens, so called.†

Samuel Bartlet and John Bartlet agreed, March 19, 1686–7, to lay out a way through their own land, in order to facilitate the landing and carting of hay, wood, or bark from the northwest side of Bartlett's cove to the "Bark House," used for storing bark needed for the tanning of leather.‡

This way from the ferry road, now High street, to Bartlet's cove, was not laid out until 1698. It is now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, and is known by the name of Spring lane. The order adopted by the selectmen laying out this road or way reads as follows:—

NEWBURY, June 3, 1698.

We the Subscribers Selectmen of the Towne of Newbury, having received a petition signed by twenty one persons Inhabitants of the West end of the Towne of Newbury in which petition said Inhabitants Do request & desire the selectmen to lay out a High way for to be and remaine for the use & Benefitt of the Towne from Merremack River Running from Bartletts Cove between said Bartletts lands & the land of John Ordway up to Almsbury Highway. And we have laid it out six Rods wide by the River side from John Bartletts lime kill six Rods

*Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. ii., p. 126.

†Town of Newbury Records.

‡This agreement was recorded in the Town of Newbury Records in the month of May, 1694.

easterly to a stake & a stone in the Ground and so running up the Hill to a stake & a stone in the ground the way at that place is three Rods & a half wide & from thence as it is bounded w^th^ stakes & stones three Rods wide up to Samuell Bartletts way by John Bartletts fence & from the northeast corner of John Bartletts fence the way is laid out all a long by John Bartletts fence five Rods wide up to Almsbury high way as witness our hand the day & year above said.

HENRY SHORT *T. Clerk.*

Given to be record^d^ p^r^ y^e^ selectmens order June 4^th^ 1698.*

On the westerly side of the Artichoke river a way extending from the Bradford road to the mill at the mouth of that river was laid out in 1695 by a committee appointed by the town of Newbury for that purpose.

Whereas John Emery Sen^r^ did agree that the Towne should have a way through his land from the comon to the mouth of Artichoak River in the most convenient place for passing and repassing, And according to the power comitted to us, the subscribers, by the Towne to go uppon the spott for to determine where the way shall be through said land, and we did this day, the 31^st^ day of January 1694–5, take a view of it and do judg the most convenient way is uppon the high land running from Bradford Rode up by the east end of John Emerys Barne & so running by the fence, that is now standing, down to the dwelling house where John Emery Sen^r^ did live and so by the house downe the Hill to the pasture land and from thence to the poynt at the River as the way goeth which was formerly made use of, as witness our hands this 31^st^ Day of January 1694–5.

DANIEL PEIRCE
TRISTRAM COFFIN
RICHARD BARTLET.†

This way is now within the territorial limits of the town of West Newbury. It was probably left ungraded for many years, and it may possibly have been closed to public travel during a portion of that time.

May 1, 1787, the inhabitants of Newbury "voted to open the way to Stephen Hooper's mill through the land of Stephen Emery, Esq."; and October 11, 1787, they "voted to accept the report of the committee chosen to open the way from Bradford Road to Stephen Hooper's mill dam." †

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Town of Newbury Records; also, Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 27. The mill at the mouth of Artichoke river was built by John Emery previous to 1686, and was purchased by Stephen Hooper June 2, 1786. See "Ould Newbury," pp. 271–273.

The way between Brown's gardens, so called, and Brown's farm was relocated, March 11, 1739–40, upon condition that Thomas Brown, the petitioner, "do accept y^e^ old way in full satisfaction for the new way that is laid out upon said Thomas Browns land." *

Mr. Brown accepted the terms named, and signed an agreement to that effect, which was duly recorded by the town clerk.

April 4, 1710, voted to give eight pounds towards y^e^ procuring of a way proposed for thru' y^e^ Little field provided y^t^ s^d^ way be laid out two rods wide the whole length from Ezra Cottles house to y^e^ way by Henry Clarks next Merrimack River according to a vote of y^e^ Town Decemb^r^ 18th, 1695.†

This way, called Cottle's lane, now Bromfield street, Newburyport, was laid out, March 6, 1718–9, from High street, by Ezra Cottle's dwelling-house, to the dwelling-house of Joseph Knight, jr., on the highway near Merrimack river.†

March 7, 1709–10, a committee was chosen by the inhabitants of Newbury "to discourse with Benjamin Rolfe about purchasing the lane called Rolfe's lane, in order to make it a highway for the town's use." † This lane extended from "trayneing green" to Merrimack river, and is now known as Ocean avenue. It was not legally laid out and accepted by the town of Newbury until December 24, 1735.‡

A highway two rods wide was laid out March 11, 1714–5, from Kent's lane, now Kent street, Newburyport, along the river side to James Ordway's malt-house, and thence to the landing-place at the foot of Ordway's lane, now Market street, Newburyport.†

September 20, 1763, the selectmen laid out "a way at ye end of Woodmans lane [now Kent street, Newburyport], Begining thirty feet above y^e^ lane, in land formerly belonging to John & Richard Kent, Exchanged for the Better accomdating the landing there," six rods wide, extending to the river.†

* Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), p. 45.
† Town of Newbury Records. ‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 795–9.

May 11, 1725, the town of Newbury was divided into seven highway districts, in conformity to a law enacted by the General Court the previous year; and way wardens, or surveyors, were chosen for each district, and instructed to keep the highways in good repair.*

March 11, 1739–40, Thomas Pike, John Brown, and Joseph Titcomb, selectmen, laid out the way "near Merrimack river from peirces farm up to Ordways Lane formerly so caled"; † and the same day they laid out a two-rod way on the southwesterly side of the meeting-house, then standing in Market square.

The way from Water street, near the foot of Greenleaf's lane, now State street, Newburyport, to the lower ferry landing-place was probably laid out May 12, 1719, "bounded on the northwest by Nathaniel Clarks grant, now in y^e^ possession of Hugh Pike, and y^e^ southeast side is bounded at y^e^ Roade by John Calefs dwelling house & from the North corner thereof running straight with the west corner of y^e^ Road twenty foot and at Lowater mark thirty foot." *

July 5, 1763, a landing-place for the use of the public was laid out by the selectmen at the lower end of King street, now Federal street, Newburyport, from Water street to the Merrimac river; and the same day "The way known by the name of Elbow lane in Newbury Running Between the Dwelling house of Samuel Sweasy & the House of Joshua Norton & so Northwesterly to the house of Moses Todd & y^e^ house owned by the heirs of Jonathan Dole late of Newbury Dec^d^ & South Westerly to the New Lane" was laid out.

The selectmen in their report state that "the said Lane is not accepted of the town, nor Recorded as a publick highway, tho' it has been used as such for near thirty years." * This lane is now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, and extends from Market square to Liberty street. In 1763 it probably continued through what is now Centre street to New lane, now Middle street.

September 23, 1715, a way "from the country road through M^r^ Thirrills [Thorlay's] farme to M^r^ William Moodys

* Town of Newbury Records. † Town of Newbury (Highway) Records.

land," in the Falls village, and from thence to the parsonage of Byfield parish, was laid out; and May 10, 1727, the selectmen were authorized to lay out another way, two rods wide, from the country road near Lieut. Gov. Dummer's house to the parsonage in Byfield.* October 24, 1739, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to raise the sum of thirty pounds "to help pay for a stone bridge sufficient for carting over ye falls River" between Deacon Samuel Moody's mill and his mill dam.*

May 12, 1719, Lieut. Col. Henry Somerby, Capt. Thomas Hale, and Major James Noyes were chosen to settle and determine the bounds and measurements of the highways in the town of Newbury. On the twenty-eighth day of May the committee reported the result of their investigations, and recommended some changes that were subsequently adopted. The country road from Parker river, along the ridge, to "trayneing green," four to six rods wide, was called "Merrimack street"; from "trayneing green" to Queen street, now Market street, Newburyport, it was called "Norfolk street"; and from Queen street to the Amesbury ferry landing, "High street."

From High street to Artichoke river, the way now known as Storey avenue, Newburyport, was called "Church street." It probably received its name from the fact that Queen Anne's chapel, the first Episcopal church in Newbury, was erected on land adjoining this street early in the summer of 1712.

The continuation of Church street from Artichoke river, over Lowell's brook, at or near the place now known as Brown's springs, West Newbury, to the Bradford line was called by the committee "the Bradford Road." †

In 1726, several streets and ways in the upper parish, now West Newbury, were laid out by a vote of the town; and during the same year the following streets in the first and third parishes were relocated and renamed: —

Marlborough street, two rods broad, from Norfolk street "down by Joseph Muzzies into Merrimack street" (now Water street), Newburyport.

* Town of Newbury Records. † Town of Newbury (Highway) Records.

King street, now Federal street, Newburyport, four rods broad, from Norfolk street "down by the Prison into Merrimack street" (now Water street).

Fish street, now State street, Newburyport, four rods broad, from Norfolk street "down by the house formerly Capt Greenleafs into Merrimack street" (now Market square).

Queen street, now Market street, Newburyport, four rods broad, from Norfolk street "down by Joseph Morses into Merrimack street."

Low street, now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, "four rods broad running from Norfolk street by William Titcombs and Peter Godfreys and so along to the Plains."

Union street, now Toppan street, Newburyport, "a way as it is now improved, running by Abraham Toppans, from High street to Low street."

Sandy street, now North Atkinson street, Newburyport, "a way as it is now improved, running by Stephen Sawyers from High street to Low street."

A landing-place, or driftway, at the foot of what is now Ashland street, Newburyport, was laid out, May 11, 1733, by Joseph Gerrish, Joshua Moody, and Charles Peirce, "beginning near the corner of Josiah Pilsburys garden fence & from thence on a straight line ranging with the south west corner of M^r^ Morgradges dwelling house to the Brook and down by said Brook to Merrimack River, and in breadth on the bank of said River Six Rods." *

At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held March 12, 1750–1, a petition relating to the alteration and relocation of several highways and landing-places was opposed by a committee of the proprietors, who claimed that the said ways and landing-places were the property of the proprietors, and had never been conveyed to the town.*

Boardman street, now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, was laid out "from ye Country Road [now High street] Down to the two rod way by Merrimack river" as stated in the following letter from Mr. Offin Boardman: —

* Town of Newbury Records.

To the inhabitants of the town of Newbury, Gentlemen: —

As I have laid open a high way through my land from ye Country Road Down to the two rod way by Merrimack river I hereby Give that way to the Town for their use as a town way & Desire they would accept it. The way is one Rod & three Quarters in Breadth

Newbury March 12, 1754. OFFIN BOARDMAN.*

The above way was accepted at our annual meeting held March ye 12, 1754 & ordered to be recorded & called by the name of Boardman's lane.†

March 9, 1774–5, a way was laid out through the land of Joseph Pilsbury and George Burroughs to the land of John Poore, "which way opens into a highway leading to Newburyport."

April 7, 1783 voted to accept the road or highway leading from Joseph Pilsburys to a Barn that belongs to the heirs of John Poor as exhibited on the plan upon the following page.†

From the plan made and recorded at that date, it appears that this way extended from the foot of Pilsbury's lane, now Ashland street, Newburyport, to the barn, owned by the heirs of John Poor, then standing between the foot of Poor's lane, now Woodland street, Newburyport, and the way leading to Merrimack river, now known as Merrimack court, Newburyport. It was laid out four rods wide in answer to the petition of Josiah Little, John Atkinson, Jacob Merrill, Joshua Little, Joshua Ordway, Samuel Moody, George Burroughs, and others, and now forms a part of Merrimack street which extends from Market square to the Essex Merrimack bridge, Newburyport. The last and longest section of this street or way, extending from the foot of Ashland street to the bridge, was laid out and graded in compliance with an order adopted by the inhabitants of Newbury at a meeting held December 13, 1802.

*Town of Newbury (Highway) Records. † Town of Newbury Records.

CHAPTER IX.

FERRIES.

As early as 1643, John Russe had charge of the ferry, established and maintained for more than a century at or near the place where the Parker River bridge now stands. He was living in Newbury in 1637,* and his name appears in the list of freeholders who were entitled to share in the common and undivided lands belonging to the town on the seventh day of December, 1642.† Two years later he presented the following petition: —

To the honored Courte now assembled at Boston.

The humble peticon of John Russe ferryman of Newbury, Humbly Sheweth:

That for upwards of two years in obedience to an order of ye generall Courte he has transported several members of ye generall Courte with their horses, as some of ye honored magistrats going to the Courte at Dover & severall Deputies of Hampton, Strawberry bank, Dover & Salisbury, whch comes to fourteen shillings whch yr poor peticoner humbly desires, by some order from this Courte to ye treasurer, he may be satisfied and whch will encourage yr peticoner to all farther readines to serve you & pray for yr prosperity & remain at yr service.

JOHN RUSSE.‡

May 14, 1645, the General Court passed the following order: —

In answr to John Russe his peticon for 14s for fferrage for ys magistrs & deputs to Dover & Boston itts granted yt ye Treasurer shall pay it to ye said John Russe & call for ye one halfe thereof againe from ye inhabitants of Dover.§

The next year, however, the law regulating the transportation of passengers was modified; and all ferrymen within the

* Proprietors' Records, vol. i., p. 35. Edward Woodman and John Russe testified in regard to the sale of a house lot March 12, 1637.

† *Ante*, p. 84. ‡ Massachusetts Archives, vol. xlviii., leaf 6.

§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 15.

limits of the colony were required to take deputies on their way to and from the General Court, with all necessary attendants, including horses, etc., free of charge.*

John Russe, soon after the enactment of this law, removed to Andover, where he died in 1692. Samuel Plummer probably succeeded him in the management of the ferry. October 17, 1649, the General Court granted "the petition of Samu: Plum^r, ferryman of Newbury, for to ha' 2^d p passing^r, for their transportation." † May 18, 1664, Samuel Plummer was granted liberty "to take one penny more than formerly for the passage of each person & each beast that he shall transport over that ferry," in order to compensate him for the loss of travel occasioned by the building of Thorlay's bridge over Parker river.‡

When soldiers were needed, during King Philip's war, for the expedition against the Indian fort at Narragansett, many Newbury men were pressed into the service; but the General Court, October 17, 1676, "In ans^r to the petiċon of Samuel Plumer ferryman at Newbury . . . ordered that himself & his son Ephraim be freed from the press"; § and in compliance with this order he was allowed to pursue his vocation undisturbed.

March 13, 1693–4, the town of Newbury "voted y^t y^e selectmen shall demand y^e fferry of Samuel Plumer y^t he now keeps for y^e use of y^e Towne & bring report of what they do in this matter to y^e Towne."‖

Notwithstanding this peremptory vote, no change was made in the management of the ferry; but Mr. Plummer was instructed by the selectmen to provide larger and more substantial boats for the better accommodation of passengers.

The river over which this ferry was maintained for more than fifty years was called by various names until August, 1697, when the selectmen voted

. . . that the river called by the Indians Quasacuncon, and since called by divers names, as Newbury River, Oldtown River, etc. Be from

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 154. † Ibid., vol. ii., p. 283. ‡ Ibid., vol. iv., part ii., p. 103. § Ibid., vol. v., p. 127. ‖ Town of Newbury Records.

this time called by the name of the River Parker in remembrance of the worhty, learned & Reverend minister, Mr Thomas Parker, who was a first planter & Pastor of ye church of Newbury & learned Schoolmaster.*

August 21, 1700, Samuel Plummer was granted the use and profit of the ferry during his natural life, upon condition that he carry free of ferriage all persons having occasion to use the ferry on public business, including jurymen coming from or going to the court at Ipswich or Salem, and that he provide good boats with good attendants for the accommodation of the public.†

Mr. Plummer died in 1702; and on the sixteenth day of September of that year "corpll Richard Jackman proposed to keep ye ferry over Old-Towne River alias ye River Parker." †

March 9, 1703 voted to let the ferry over the river Parker for four years at four pounds a year to corporal Richard Jackman who is to carry all the court officers, going and returning from court, all town officers when employed by the town, and all rams belonging to the town, ferry free.†

November 28, 1707, the General Court passed a resolve, "allowing and paying three pounds out of the Province Treasury to Richard Jackman in full for ferrying done for the Province to date." ‡

March 9, 1707–8, the selectmen were authorized to lease the old town ferry to some suitable person; and March 11, 1711–2, they were ordered to make up the account with Richard Jackman about the ferry over the river Parker and "lease the ferry for the year ensuing on such terms as they think best." †

March 9, 1713–14 It was voated that Capt Thomas Hale & Daniel Thirston, Jonathan poore & Jonathan Plummer & their families shall be carried over ye river parker ferriedge free on Sabath days, lecter days & training days.†

May 11, 1714, the town voted to lease the ferry over Parker river for three years to William Dole, on condition that he carry the inhabitants of the town of Newbury and

* Records of the Selectmen of Newbury. † Town of Newbury Records.
‡ Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 252.

their horses free, and give a bond to keep and tend the ferry as the law directs, "the said Dole or his heirs to have the refusal of the ferry after the expiration of his lease provided he pay as much as any one else." *

March 12, 1716–7, William Dole was granted liberty to keep the ferry over the river Parker, "provided he pay five pounds per year for the same and carry ferry free the inhabitants of Newbury residing on the neck." *

September 18, 1722, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to grant Richard Dole the ferry for three years at six pounds per year, "he to carry the neck men ferry free"; and September 21, 1725, he was granted liberty to keep the ferry three years longer on substantially the same terms.*

May 19, 1729, Benjamin Plummer agreed to pay the selectmen of Newbury forty shillings for the use of the Parker river ferry for one year from that date.*

In 1734, the town of Newbury gave its consent to the erection of a bridge over the river, at or near the place where this ferry was kept, upon certain specified conditions; but it was found impossible to raise the money necessary to defray the cost of the proposed structure, and the plan was temporarily abandoned. The ferry was not discontinued until 1758, when the bridge was built, under the supervision of Mr. Ralph Cross, with funds raised by a lottery authorized by the General Court.†

FERRY AT CARR'S ISLAND.

Communication with Colchester (Salisbury), Winnacunnett (Hampton), Piscataqua (Portsmouth), and other settlements farther to the eastward was maintained by means of a ferry from Newbury over the Merrimack river, through the narrow passage between Carr's island and Ram island, to the Salisbury shore. This ferry was probably conducted as a private enterprise for several years before it was legally established by the General Court. The following order was adopted May 13, 1640:—

* Town of Newbury Records. † "Ould Newbury," pp. 530–532.

Mr. Edward Woodman, Mr Christo: Batt, & John Crosse are appointed (when the way is settled) to settle the fferry where they thinke meete.*

July 3, 1640, the freemen of Salisbury granted George Carr "the Island where he now dwells . . . it being the greatest Island wthin the Towne bounds in the river Merrimack." In the note-book of Thomas Lechford, a prominent lawyer in Boston at that date, is the following memorandum: —

George Carre of Salisbury in N. E. Shipwright, releaseth Thomas [coccrey] his apprentice of the remaining time of his service &c.

Thomas [coccrey] is to be bound unto G. C. in 40£ condiconed that T. C. shall not intermedle in the ferry on Merrimacke river wthout the consent of G. C. &c.†

This memorandum indicates that George Carr had charge of the ferry over Merrimack river at that time, and had taken legal advice in regard to the best method of restraining an active competitor in the business. The date is uncertain; but it must have been previous to August 3, 1641, when Lechford, having become dissatisfied with the condition of affairs in Boston, sold his books and household effects, and sailed for England.

George Carr was evidently appointed ferryman early in the year 1641.

At a court holden at Ipswich the 28th of [the first?] month [March?] 1641.

Geo. Carr is appointed to keep the Ferry at Salisbury at the Island where he now dwelleth for the space of three years, p'vided that he finde a sufficient horse boat and gives diligent attendance. The ferries are as followeth.

viz: For a man present pay	2d	Calves & yearlings each	2d
For a horse	6d	Goats each	1d
For great cattle each	6d	hogs each	2d

If present pay be not made that he must book any ferries then a penny apiece more. If any be found to swim over their Horses for want of a great boat they shall pay nothing.‡

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i. p. 292. The first person named on this committee was from Newbury, the second from Salisbury, and the third from Hampton.

† Lechford's Note Book, p. 393. ‡ Ipswich Town Records, vol. i.

Among the presentments made to the grand jury at the court held in Ipswich, 1641, is the following

Item, We present George Carr for not keeping the ferry but suffering people to stand wayting at the water side three houres to the prejudice of their health and for taking 4d a head for cattell swyming over the ferry, he not affording them his help. Jo: Sanders, Grand jury man, witness.*

At the Court holden at Ipswich 29th day of the first month 1642.

George Carr, presented last Court for defect in keeping the ferry at Salisbury is fined Vs.*

On the nineteenth day of April, 1641, the town of Hampton, then under the jurisdiction of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, appointed Christopher Hussey and John Moulton "to goe wth Mr. Dalton & John Crosse on this day fortnight to confer of ye fferie place."†

At the Quarterly Court held at Salem, January 11, 1641–2, "George Carr of Salisbury" brought a suit against William Harper for interfering with the ferry. The suit was decided in favor of the plaintiff: —

His servant to pay according to agreement 10s for defalt of his service & Losse of his tyme & 10s costs & to be restrained from ffollowing ye fferry as his calling & that the Indentures be made according to ye custom of ould England.‡

September 24, 1644, George Carr was "appointed to keepe ye ferrie att Salisbury att the Iland where hee now dwelleth for ye space of three years" § This appointment probably gave him control of the ferry on both sides of the Merrimack river. May 26, 1647, the General Court authorized Tristram Coffin to keep the ferry on the Newbury side, and George Carr was granted "liberty to keepe his boate going on Salsbury side."

This arrangement was not satisfactory to Mr. Carr; and two years later, in order to secure exclusive control of the ferry, he offered to build a floating bridge to connect the island where he resided with the Salisbury shore. April 9, 1650, the "Courte at Salisbury" settled and disposed of "ye whole

* Ipswich Town Records, vol. i. † History of Hampton (Dow), vol. i., p. 26.
‡ Court Files (Salem), vol. ii., p. 100. § Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxi., p. 1.

ferry on both sides ye River to y^e^ s^d^ George Carr, his heirs & assigns from such time as y^e^ said Bridge shall be Built & Finished & so long as it is sufficiently maintained & repaired & no longer."

The bridge was not completed until June, 1655. Meanwhile the inhabitants of Newbury, at a meeting held March 21, 1652–3, ordered

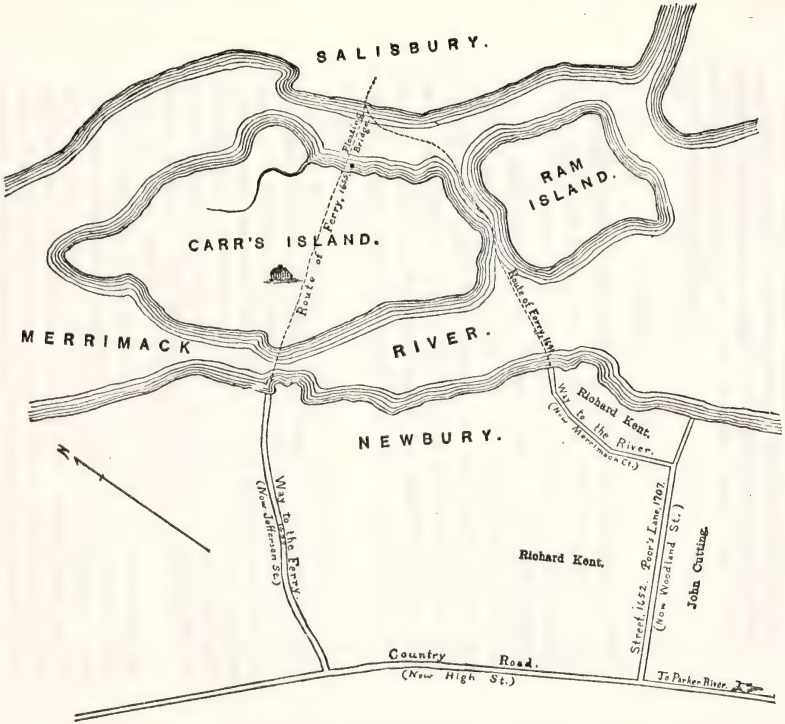
> . . . that the ferry over Merrimack should be kept in the old place thru the Gutt and that the way for driving Cattell should suddenly be layd out and that Mr Coffin should still continue fferry man conditionally he keep sufficient men & Boates and to carry the passengers of our Towne for two pence a person out and two pence Back and four pence a beast, and he shall have it so long as the Towne shall see cause.*
>
> At a meeting of the Townsmen (December 27, 1653) It was agreed & ordered that Samuel Poor should keep the fferry over Merrimack during the time he doth carefully & faithfully attend it and Keep sufficient Boates provided that the Inhabitants of the Towne shall pass over for half ferriage & that he keep the fferry thru' the Gutt when it may be, if not, yet to use all means possible to convey passengers over.*

In 1641, when George Carr was first appointed ferryman, travellers on their way to Salisbury, Hampton, Portsmouth, and Dover followed the country road, from Parker river to Poore's, afterward Moody's, lane, now Woodland street, Newburyport, and thence through what is now Merrimack court, to a point of rocks, subsequently known as Moggaridge's point, where they found boatmen to convey them through the narrow channel, between Carr's island and Ram island, to the Salisbury shore.

When the floating bridge was completed, connecting Carr's island with Salisbury, Hon. Samuel Symonds, one of the judges of the county court, announced that "the ferry on either side doth of right henceforth belong unto him [George Carr], and, therefore, the other ferryman is hereby required to cease his ferriage usually unless he be employed by the said George Carr and for his use." †

A new way, now known as Jefferson street, leading from the country road, now High street, Newburyport, to the ferry landing opposite Carr's island, was laid out soon after the

* Proprietors' Book, vol. i., p. 5. † "Ould Newbury," p. 61.



FERRY ROUTES, CARR'S ISLAND, 1641, 1655.

bridge was built in 1655. This highway was taken in part from the farm owned by Lionel Worth, "formerly granted by the town of Newbury unto Mr Edward Rawson."

February 10, 1654–5, there was granted lyonel Worth, in consideration of his resigning to the Towne five acres of land for a High way to Salisbury ferry by his house where he now dwelleth wch land he formerly purchased of Mr Coffin, next to Mr Rawson's land . . . eight acres of upland beyond the new Towne.*

AMESBURY FERRY.

The plantation on the northerly side of the Merrimack river, first called Colchester and afterwards Salisbury, was settled in 1639. It covered a large extent of territory, and included land on both sides of the Powow river. The first settlers located on the easterly side of that river; but, previous to 1654, a few families had removed to the westerly side, and made preparations to organize a new town there. Early in the year 1668 an effort was made to establish a ferry over the Merrimack river, to connect the new settlement with the town of Newbury.

May 27, 1668. In ansr to the petition of the inhabitants of Salisbury, new towne, humbly desiring the favor of this Court that their towne may be named Emesbury, the Court grants their request.

In a further answer to their request to have liberty granted them to keepe a ferry ouer Merremack Riuer, about Mr Goodwin's house, the Court judgeth it meet to grant that there shall be a ferry kept as is desired & leaue it to the next Court of that county to appoint both the person that is to keepe it & also to appoint the price.†

The County Court held at Hampton ye 13th of ye 8th mo 1668, Mr Edward Goodwin being presented by ye Selectmen of ye town of Amesbury to ye Court to keep ye ferry over Merrimack river above ye mouth of ye Powous river where ye sd Goodwin now dwelleth this Court do allow & approve of ye sd person for one year next following and until ye Court shall take further orders there in and for ye prices to be as followeth so for every single passenger two pence, for a horse and man six pence, and for all great cattle four pence per head & for sheep and other small cattle under two years old two pence pr head.‡

* Town of Newbury (Proprietors' Records), vol. i., p. 60. For a more extended account of the ferry at Carr's island see "Ould Newbury," pp. 55–80.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 376.

‡ History of Amesbury (Merrill), p. 92.

A few days later, George Carr appealed to the General Court to abolish, or place under his care and control, the new ferry that had been established without his knowledge or consent.

November 7, 1668 In ansr to the peticõn of George Carr the Court on pervsell of the same together wth severall court orders referring



AMESBURY FERRY LANDING PLACE, NEWBURY SIDE.
OPPOSITE POWOW RIVER.

thereunto & also such allegations as the peticõner presents of what charges he hath been at in erecting of a bridge: Vnderstanding, also, that the sajd peticoner hath convenient accommodation of land at or neere the place where the new ferry is to be kept, the Court judgeth it meete to advise the Court of that County, to whom it was referred, that, in regard it is not disposed of for longer than one yeare, that the sajd fferry may be vpon the sajd Carr, he keeping of it vpon as equal termes as any other will doe.*

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 413.

December 21, 1668, the selectmen of Newbury laid out a way to this ferry, beginning at the landing-place on the Merrimack river, and running southeasterly through land of Christopher Bartlett and others to the Bradford road.*

In the month of May, 1669, George Carr again petitioned the General Court to grant him exclusive control of the ferries over the Merrimack river. The deputies and magistrates, after careful investigation, adopted the following order:—

In ans^r to the petition of George Carr, the Court, having heard his allegations & pervsed seuerall Court orders referring to the case, doe declare that the peticōner ought to haue his couenant made good according to the order of Salisbury Court, 9^mo, 1650, to haue the whole dispose of the said ferry on both sides of the river there being no Complaint of deficiency of the bridge or of Carrs attendance by boat or otherwise but, contrary wise, desires from *from* seuerall selectmen of the Continuance thereof in his hands & therefore can see no ground to allow of the setting vp of another fferry there, but judge liberty may be granted to sett a ferry or ferryes in other places on that riuer vsefull for the country, the said George Carr having the refusall of keeping the fferry at or about Powwaws Riuer, he keeping & attending on it for the ease of the country & on the same termes that it was granted to him that now keeps it, by order of the County Court at Hampton or Salisbury, liberty of magistrates & deputies to passe free, as it was by law settled before the agreement the sajd carr made about the sajd fferry, which he excepted not then against.†

In compliance with this order of the General Court, the ferry was placed under the care of George Carr. He retained possession of it until his death, April 4, 1682. It was afterwards kept and maintained by his heirs until February 8, 1695–6. At that date, Richard Carr sold to Capt. John March, of Newbury, "The Ferry commonly known by ye name of Almesbury ferry together with all ye privileges to ye same belonging which s^d Ferry was by ye Town of Almesbury Granted to my Honoured Father, Mr. George Carr, late of Salisbury, deceased, and confirmed by ye General Court, allsoe ye ferry boates, allsoe a freehold commonage or common right in ye Township of Almesbury, as my said Father, M^r

* "Ould Newbury," p. 394. † Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 429.

George Carr, was a free Commoner in s^d^ Towne as y^e^ Towne Booke will make appeer." *

At the Court of General Sessions held at Newbury September 25, 1711, "Richard Goodwin of Almsbury was licensed to keep a ferry over Merrimack river nigh ye mouth of Powow river to continue two years." †

At the court held September 27, 1715, Capt. Humphrey Hook was licensed to keep the ferry for five years.† He was a son-in-law of Capt. John March, and served as ferryman until his death in 1754. During his life, and for many years after his death, the ferry was called "Hook's ferry."

May 19, 1766, the town of Amesbury objected to the granting of certain privileges to the ferryman, and appointed a committee to inquire into the town's right to the ferry.‡ On the thirtieth day of September following, at the Court of General Sessions held at Newburyport, Humphrey Currier, grandson of Humphrey Hook, was licensed to keep the ferry.§ Two months later, a committee was chosen in the town of Amesbury "to recover the town's right in the Ferry and prosecute the same in law." ‖ After a prolonged legal controversy the suit was withdrawn; and Mr. Currier and other members of his family remained in charge of the ferry until 1792, when the Essex Merrimack bridge was built, and the ferry was discontinued.

MARCH'S FERRY.

January 21, 1679–80, Hugh March, for many years an innkeeper in Newbury, conveyed all his real estate and personal property to his son, John March, who was subsequently licensed to keep an ordinary at the place known as the Blue Anchor Tavern.¶ Two or three years later, owing to some disagreement with his father, John March removed to a house then standing near the lower end of Greenleaf's lane, now

* Essex Deeds, Ipswich Series, book ii., leaf 160. † Court Records (Salem), 1696–1718.
‡ Town of Amesbury Records, vol. i., p. 341.
§ Court of General Sessions Records, 1764–1777, p. 107.
‖ Town of Amesbury Records, vol. i., p. 342. ¶ "Ould Newbury," pp. 175–188.

State street, Newburyport, nearly opposite Ring's island, where he was licensed by the court held at Ipswich in September, 1682, "to keep an ordinary and draw wine and liquors."

Soon after the appointment of Sir Edmund Andros as governor of the provinces in New England, John March applied for permission to keep a ferry over the Merrimack river, from warehouse point, so called, in Newbury, to Ring's island in Salisbury. At a meeting of the council held September 23, 1687, the following petition was read: —

To his Excellence Sr Edmund Androsse Knt: Captaine Generall & Governour in Cheife in & over the Territory & Dominion of New Engd

The Humble petiõn of John March Sheweth. That yor petitioner is an inhabitant of the Towne of Newberry, in ye County of Essex within this Territory, and keeps the Ordinary there. That yo:r petitioner liveing Conveniently near ye water side hath beene frequently sollicited & is dayly by Gentlemen travelling that way & also by the inhabitants of ye Said Towne & the Townes adjacent to Obteine yo:r Excellencys Grant for the keeping of a fferry from ye sd Towne of Newberry to ye Towne of Salisbury which will be a Cõmon Convenience to all such Travellers as shall passe that way & likewise a considerable advantage to the sd Townes Of which yo:r petitioner hopes yo:r Excellence will be more pticulerly informed by severall Gentlemen who have lately rode that way & Experienced the Convenience such a fferry will be, Therefore

May it please yo:r Excellence to Grant unto yo:r petitioner Liberty to keep such a fferry from ye sd Towne of Newberry to the sd Towne of Salisbury which yo:r petitioner Pposes to Doe for halfe the Charge of the old fferry and yo:r petitioner shall ever pray &c

JOHN MARCH.*

A copy of the above petition was sent to James Carr, who controlled the ferry established by his father, George Carr, in 1640. He was notified to appear and show cause why the prayer of the petitioner should not be granted. On the day appointed for the hearing he presented a brief statement of his case, in which he claimed that the new ferry would seriously interfere with his rights and privileges, and prove impassable at certain seasons of the year. Notwithstanding his objections, however, the following order was passed: —

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., p. 157; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 404.

Att a Councill held att the Councill Chamber in Boston on Wednesday the 28th day of September 1687,

Present

His Excellencye Sr Edmund Andros Knt &c.

Joseph Dudley		Peter Bulkley		Nath Clerke	
Wm Stoughton	Esqrs	John Usher	Esqrs	Edw Randolph	Esqrs
Robert Mason		John Hincks		Fran: Nicholson	

Upon reading this day in Councill the Peticon of John March of Newbury about a new Ferry from Newbury to Salisbury to be kept by him neere his dwelling. As alsoe the Peticon of James Carr of Salisbury about his right to the swing bridge and old Ferry there.

Referred to the Justices of the Peace in the County of Essex to examine the offers and allegacons of both the Petitioners and forthwith to report to this Board what they conceive therein to be most suitable and convenient for Travellers and the publique service of the country.*

William Browne, jr., John Hathorne, Jo: Woodbridge, and Philip Nelson, justices of the peace, reported October 6, 1687, that the proposed ferry would be convenient and of great advantage to the public, "provided the sd John March (or whom yr Excellency shall please to grant the keep of sd ferry unto) be obliged to make a good causeway on Salisbury side to the Place where they take Boat and that at the Particular Charge of the sd undertaker of the ferry." † This report was read and approved, and the following order passed: —

At a Council held at the Council Chamber in Boston on Tuesday ye 25th day of October 1687,

Present His Excellency Sr Edmund Andross, Knt &c.

Joseph Dudley		Nathl Clarke	
Wm Stoughton		Walter Newbury	
Robert Mason	Esqrs	Edward Randolph	Esqrs
Jno Usher		Francis Nicholson	
Jona Tyng			

Upon Reading this Day In Council ye Report made by ye Justices of ye County of Essex about a new ferry from Newbury To Salisbury ye same was approv'd off — And Ordered That it be kept & maintained by John March of Newbury accordingly, provided That James Carr of Salisbury Do on notice given him by ye said Justices refuse to undertake & keep ye same and yt ye said Justices do & are hereby authoriz'd to Lay out ye ways & causeway & Regulate ye said ferry and take such

* Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 405; Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., p. 157.
† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., p. 212.

security or caution as to y^m^ shall seem meet for y^e^ making thereof & keeping and maintaining y^e^ same in Good order and repair.

By order in Council &c.

JOHN WEST *Depty Secry.**

On the fourteenth day of November, John Appleton, Richard Dummer, and Philip Nelson, three of the justices of the peace for Essex county, made a tender of the new ferry to James Carr, as required by the order of the governor and council. The offer was declined; and the franchise was then assigned to Mr. John March, who gave bonds, in the sum of one hundred pounds, to provide boats and keep the ferry according to law.

Know all men by these presents that John March of Newbury, Taverne Keeper, living in the County of Essex in New England doth owe unto our soveraigne Lord the King the full and just somme of one hundred pounds of good and lawful money of New England, to be levied upon his house, lands and chattells and to the true payment thereof he doth bind himself, his heirs exequitors administrators and assignes unto our saide Soveraigne Lord the King his heirs and successors, in witnes whereof the saide John March hath hereunto set his hand and seale this fourteenth day of November, and in the third year of his majesties raigne. *Annoque Domini* 1687.

The condition of this obligation is such that if the above bounden John March doth provide a good and sufficient boate for the carriage over of horses and men over the ferry granted to him by his Excellency and Counsell at or before the sixteenth day of this Instant November and doth also dewly attend the ferry granted to him by carriinge over horse and man for six pence, a single person for two pence, and doth allwayes while he doth hold the saide ferry keepe his boate or boates in good repaire fit for the service of the Country, then this obligation is to be voide and of no effect, or else to remaine in full force and vertue, and the time of Keepinge this ferry and standinge bound as aforesaid is as long as the ferry shall be confirmed to him by an authoritie.

Signed Sealed and delivered JOHN MARCH
in the presence of us
CALEB MOODY
D. DAVISON.†

In order to make the way to the ferry, on the Salisbury side of the river, convenient and serviceable, it became necessary

* Essex Deeds, vol. xv., leaf 214; Suffolk County Court Files, No. 2471; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 406.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxxvii., p. 231; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 406.

to build a substantial road over the low, marshy land that connected Ring's island with the upland beyond. The work was begun and probably completed under the following agreement made by John March with the town of Salisbury: —

The Proposition of John March to ye town of Salisbury now mett ye 22d day of Novembr 1687 To ye town of Salisbury, Gentlemen you have been Informed yt there is a new way from Merrimack river to your town Laid out by authority for ye use of ye country & is Insufficient for persons to pass & there is a ferry granted to me by Authority Therefore my Request is yt you would be pleased to make ye way Sufficient for ye use of ye Country for wch it is Laid out, But I John March do Engage for Quietness Sake to make ye way from Merrimack river to ye South Side of ye creek & half ye Bridge over ye Said Creek. This proposition of John Marches with his condition annexed so far as it Refers to ye town is voted on ye affirmative & sd Marches hand signed & owned to ye performance of what he hath engaged himself In Reference to ye above Country way as above manifested

JOHN MARCH

As attest ROBERT PIKE, *Modr*

George Carr & William Carr enter their contra Decents
Left William Buswell enters his Contra Decent

A true copy taken out of the town Book

As attest WILLM BRADBURY *T. Clerk* *

During the winter of 1687–8, complaints were made that the boats used by John March for the transportation of passengers were not able to withstand the rough weather of that season, and that in the month of January they were prevented for ten consecutive days from crossing the river on account of the ice. Taking advantage of the dissatisfaction that existed on account of these interruptions and delays, James Carr again petitioned the governor and council, under the date of June 13, 1688, "to order the Ferry to be stated & settled as formerly, and the late Ferry set up by John March, which is of so little benefit to the publique & very detrimental to yo:r Petr to be laid down." With this petition Mr. Carr filed the following certificate: —

These are to Certify whom it may or shall concerne that wee ye subscribers hereof Beeing at Newbury; and our occations vrgently requiring vs to goe for Salisbury: therevpon wee have repaired ourselfes for

* Essex Deeds, book xv., leaf 214; also, Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 407.

passages over the ferry wch Jno March vndr tooke to keepe for passages but could [not] get any notwithstanding wee stay'd about 4 or 5 houres and at that tim Mr Mercer that now Lives at Bescataqa came over but could not bring his horse for there was noe Boat but a hay Boat and that nobody would venture there Lives at such weather as then was: and then after or Long and tedious staying at mr Marches wee came to mrs Carr and got over without any difficulty at all ye same day beeing ye 2 of December 1687 as witnese or hand

THOMAS JACKSON of Redding
HENRY WILLIAMS of Boston
cum multis alis
——— MERCER, A Jersy man
of Bescatahqua *

The prayer of the petitioner was not granted; but, after the seizure of Governor Andros in Boston, and his return to England in 1689, Mr. Carr petitioned the provisional government of the colony of Massachusetts bay, still asserting his claim to the management and control of the ferries between Newbury and Salisbury, and complaining of the illegality of the grant made to John March and the injurious competition resulting therefrom. The General Court, having carefully considered the whole subject, passed the following order: —

May 20, 1691 In Answer to the Petition of James Carr of Salisbury, complaining of wrong and Injury done him by Capt John March of Newberry, in keeping up a ferry upon Merrimack river betwixt Newberry and Salisbury, in prejudice of a grant formerly made by the General Court unto Mr George Carr Father of the Said petitioner, and his Heirs &c The petitioner is referred to seek his remedy by Course of Comon Law.†

At that date John March was captain of a company enlisted to serve in an expedition to Canada. He evidently made arrangements with Capt. Edward Sargent to take charge of the newly established ferry and of the tavern where he was licensed to sell wine and beer.

August 29, 1693, James and Richard Carr commenced a suit to recover damages from Capt. Edward Sargent for taking passengers over Merrimack river without legal authority.

* Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 408.
† Council Records, vol. vi., p. 183; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 408.

In the writ of attachment, they made the following declaration: —

. . . ye sd Sargent for near two yeares last past hath Exercised and practised ye Comon Carrying and Transporting of men horses and goods over ye River Merrimack in ye County aforesaid between ye Towns of Newbury and Salisbury upon Hire and for Reward to ye Great Disturbance nusance and Damage of ye sd James Carr and Richard Carrs ferry over ye sd River.*

At an Inferior Court of Pleas held in Newbury, September 26, 1693, Capt. Sargent asked for a continuance of the case on the ground that "Capt March ye proper owner of ye ffery" was engaged in the king's service on the eastern frontier. By the consent of both plaintiff and defendant, the case was continued to the next court to be held in Salem, in the month of December following. Meanwhile, December 5, 1693, the General Court passed the following order: —

That all suits and actions now depending between any persons and the said Capt John March, referring to any matter or controversy about the ferry or ferries over the river of Merrymack between Newbury and Salisbury, be suspended; and that the Court of Salem be directed to continue any action or actions so depending there until the general assembly have determined and resolved upon the settlement of the said ferry or ferries; and that the heirs of George Carr be notified that they may appear on the sixth day after the begining of the next sessions of the general assembly, and there offer what plea and objections they have to make against the confirmation of the said ferry to the said Capt. John March.†

No record of the hearing appointed for the sixth day of the session, beginning February 14, 1693–4, has been found; and probably no definite action was taken in regard to the settlement of the claim of James and Richard Carr at that time. Edward Sargent continued to serve as ferryman; but in 1701 the way leading to the ferry on the Salisbury side was so defective that on the thirtieth of September of that year the Court of Sessions ordered the parties interested to repair

* Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 408.

Capt. Edward Sargent came from Saco to Portsmouth, and thence to Newbury, previous to 1693. His first wife died in December, 1718; and he married June 9, 1719, Sarah, widow of Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet. His will, dated February 12, 1735–6, was proved September 6, 1742.

† Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 35. For further details of this controversy see "Ould Newbury," pp. 65–75.

it according to their contract. This order was evidently unheeded; and, in consequence, the ferry was neglected, and at length temporarily abandoned.

March 9, 1702–3, Major Daniel Davison was authorized and instructed by the inhabitants of Newbury to present a petition to the Court of General Sessions, in behalf of the town, "in relation to the lower ferry over Merrimack river." * March 30, 1703, the court at Ipswich appointed Major Francis Wainwright, Capt. John Whipple, and Capt. Joseph Boynton a committee to examine the causeway in Salisbury, and report upon the expediency of laying it out anew, and at the same session passed the following order re-establishing the ferry: —

There having been for Several Years last past Many complaints Made to this Court for want of a ferry duely stated over Merrimack River Nigh Capt. Edward Sarjeants betwixt Newbury & Salisbury & Sundry motions made from time to time Referring to the Same & now renewed applications Made by Newbury & Salisbury that a ferry be kept at y^e^ place afores^d^ and y^t^ the keeping & profit thereof might be stated & Settled upon the said Townes & a Boat to be constantly kept on each side duely to attend y^e^ said ferry viz: One by Newbury & y^e^ other by Salisbury. This Court having Considered y^e^ necessity & Conveniency of the premises do approve of the same in manner following.

1. That there be a ferry kept over Merrimack River hence forward from Newbury to Salisbury Nigh where Capt. Serjeant now dwells.

2. That there be Two Sufficient & Suitable ferry Boats for the Transporting of Men and horses y^e^ one kept at Newbury & the other at Salisbury side provided & Maintained respectively by said Townes & Sufficient skillful Men Constantly to ply in the same and y^t^ each Town do on their Shoars respectively make Convenient Causeways or other Commodious places for y^e^ Safe & easy boarding & landing horses & men & y^t^ each Town do give Two hundred pounds for Two sufficient men for y^e^ performance of this Court order according to y^e^ true intent & meaning thereof that the publick may be faithfully Serv^d^.

3. That the profits of the said ferry shall redound to the s^d^ Townes as their own particular boats shall Earn.

4. That the fare of said ferry be four pence for a horse & Two pence for a man & proportionable for other things.

5. That inasmuch as Newbury Comon Land or high way comes to y^e^ ferry afores^d^ so y^t^ they have no Occasion to purchase a way thro any proprieties & it being otherwise on Salisbury side wherefore in regard Newbury hath halfe the benefit of y^e^ ferry. Therefore they shall pay

* Town of Newbury Records.

ye one halfe of ye first purchase of ye high Way on Salisbury side as it shall be laid out from said ferry to ye Comon Road in Salisbury where it may lay thro any particular proprieties as it shall be apprised according to Law but shall not be obliged to pay any part of making or repairing ye said way passable either now or hereafter.*

April 12, 1703, the town of Newbury appointed the board of selectmen, with Major Daniel Davison and Mr. Thomas Moody committee, to provide a ferry boat and let out the ferry to some responsible person.† April 19, "the committee having charge of the ferry, near Capt. Sargents, lately granted to Newbury and Salisbury," were authorized to prosecute any person or persons transporting man or beast over said ferry contrary to law.†

When Lieut. Col. John March, who was engaged, with the troops under his command, in repelling the attacks of the French and Indian forces at Casco bay, was informed of what had occurred in his absence, he applied to the Court of Sessions for a new order or decree, restoring his rights and privileges, and placing the ferry under his care and control. His petition was granted March 28, 1704, upon condition that he keep in repair the way and bridge on the Salisbury side, and pay to the towns of Newbury and Salisbury such sum or sums as they advanced while the ferry remained in their possession.*

There seems to have been some disagreement between Lieut. Col. John March and the selectmen of the towns named in regard to the transfer of the ferry and the amount of money to be paid. May 15, 1704, the inhabitants of Newbury authorized the selectmen, with Major Daniel Davison and Mr. Thomas Moody, "to provide for the keeping of the ferry over Merrimack River near Capt Sargents and to let out said ferry at their discretion." †

September 26, 1704, the Court of General Sessions appointed a committee to confer with the selectmen of Newbury and Salisbury, examine the accounts submitted by them showing the expenses incurred and the tolls received from the ferry, and report the result of their investigations in the month of November following.‡

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 634. ‡ Ibid., p. 635.
† Town of Newbury Records.

December 6, 1704, the town of Newbury authorized Lieut. Col. Thomas Noyes, Major Daniel Davison, and the selectmen "to make a settlement with Lieut. Col. John March in regard to the ferry over Merrimack river." *

March 26, 1705: Voted that Majr Daniel Davison Esq. and Mr William Titcomb are chosen attorneys for the Towne of Newbury to answer in behalf of sd Towne to a notification from ye sessions of ye peace dated March 2, 1704–5 with respect to a ferry over the river Merrimack near Capt Sargents House as also that they shall have full power to appoynt attorney or attornyes under them to ye end afore sd as also they shall have full power to make a final agreemt with Lieut March or his attorneyes about said ferry in the Towns behalf according to their best discretion as they shall se cause.*

July 11, 1705, Lieut. Col. Thomas Noyes, Major Daniel Davison, Mr. William Titcomb, and Lieut. Joseph Little were appointed a committee to make final agreement with Col. John March; and on the twenty-third day of July he conveyed "for & in consideration of ye sum of Two Hundred & forty Pounds . . . to ye afores[d] committee for ye said Town of Newbury" all his right, title, and interest "in or to the ferry Comonly Called Marches ferry over Merrimack River near the place where Capt Edward Serjeant Now Dwells, . . . Excepting ye ferridges of my self & my perticular family & Horses & Cattle," which were to be free for a term of twenty-two years.†

With the consent of all the parties interested, the report of the committee appointed by the Court of Sessions September 26, 1704, was not taken into consideration until the twenty-fifth day of September, 1705, when the court ordered that Col. March, having sold all his right and interest in the ferry to the town of Newbury, the inhabitants of said town or their agents "have ye use and income of said Ferry by virtue of said Purchase until by further Order it be more fully and amply settled at ye next sessions of ye Peace." ‡

September 30, 1705, the town authorized the committee

* Town of Newbury Records. ‡ Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 636.

† Essex Registry of Deeds, book xix., leaf 48; "Ould Newbury," p. 185. A copy of this deed of conveyance from Lieut. Col. John March will be found in the Court Files for Suffolk County, No. 6552.

appointed to settle with Col. John March to offer one-half the ferry to the town of Salisbury for the sum of one hundred and twenty pounds, that being one-half the purchase money agreed upon.

At or about this time, Richard Carr presented another petition to the General Court, setting forth his claim to the ferries over Merrimack river. A hearing was appointed and held June 5, 1706, before the whole court; but no definite action resulted.*

There was evidently some reluctance on the part of the town of Salisbury to accept the offer of one-half the ferry on the terms and conditions named. Possibly the friends and supporters of Richard Carr were opposed to the purchase, and were numerous enough to delay and, perhaps, defeat the project altogether. At all events, Edward Sargent, who had formerly kept the ferry under a lease from Lieut. Col. March, proposed, February 19, 1705–6, to take the inhabitants of Salisbury, with their horses and cattle, over the Merrimack river free of charge forever, and keep the highway and bridge leading to the ferry in good order and condition, provided the town would agree to pay one hundred pounds in four payments, "that is to say twenty five pounds per year for four years," and surrender all its right, title, and interest in or to the ferry.† This proposition was accepted, and a committee was appointed to complete the agreement and receive the bond that Captain Sargent was required to furnish.

March 5, 1705–6, the town of Newbury appointed Lieut. Col. Thomas Noyes, Major Daniel Davison, and Capt. Henry Somerby a committee to see what arrangements could be made with the town of Salisbury in regard to the purchase of one-half the ferry for one hundred and twenty pounds, and also to lease that part of the ferry belonging to Newbury.‡

March 27, 1706 Lieut Col Thomas Noyes, Major Daniel Davison and Capt Henry Somerby, all of Newbury, being a committee chosen and appointed by the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town of Newbury

* Province Laws, vol. viii., pp. 146 and 538. † Ibid., p. 637.
‡ Town of Newbury Records.

at a legal meeting held March 5th, current, to make an agreement with the town of Salisbury about the ferry over Merrimack river, between Newbury and Salisbury, near by Capt Serjeants, in consideration of one hundred and twenty pounds, sold and conveyed to Capt Edward Serjeant and Mr Thomas Moody, both of Newbury, one half of the right, title and interest which the freeholders or inhabitants of the town of Newbury may or ought to have in or to the ferry commonly called Marches ferry over Merrimack river, near the place where the aforesaid Capt Edward Serjeant now dwells, which ferry was granted by Sir Edmund Andros and his Council unto Col. John March, October 25, 1687, confirmed and settled by the justices of the County of Essex November 14, 1687 and again confirmed unto him at a General Session of the Peace held at Ipswich, March 28, 1704.*

Having thus acquired one-half of the ferry by purchase from the town of Newbury, and settled with the inhabitants of Salisbury for whatever claim they might have in or to the franchise granted by the Court of Sessions, March 30, 1703, Edward Sargent resumed his occupation as ferryman, and evidently carried on the business in his own name, although Thomas Moody was for many years part owner of the property with him.

The ferry was conveniently located, and on many important occasions was employed by the provincial authorities for the transportation of troops and special post riders. September 3, 1703, the governor and council passed an order allowing Edward Sargent thirty-five shillings and two pence "For Ferriage of Souldiers and Posts in the year 1702 and for the refreshment of Posts." †

On the sixth day of November, 1706, the General Court passed a "Resolve for allowing and paying five pounds out of the Province Treasury to Edward Sargent for transporting Soldiers and Horses over Merrimack river at Newbury" in the years 1703, 1704, 1705, and 1706.‡

November 28, 1707, another "Resolve for allowing and paying three pounds four shillings and ten pence out of the Province Treasury to Edward Sargent in full for ferrying done, etc., for the Province to date," was passed by the General Court and paid by the treasurer of the province.§

* Essex Registry of Deeds, book xxix., leaf 231. A copy of this deed will be found in the Court Files for Suffolk County in Pemberton Square, Boston, No. 6716.

† Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 633. ‡ Ibid., p. 201. § Ibid., p. 252.

The town of Newbury, having sold only one-half the ferry to Edward Sargent and Thomas Moody, retained possession of the other half, and June 18, 1708, authorized the selectmen to lease it for three years on the best terms possible.*

Meanwhile the highway leading from the ferry to the common road on the Salisbury side of the river was laid out anew and rebuilt. A small lot of land belonging to Mary Dole and John Dole was taken at its appraised value; and April 22, 1709, John March received from the selectmen of Newbury



MARCH'S FERRY LANDING PLACE, SALISBURY SIDE.

"five pounds ten shillings in full for w^t w^s allowed by ye Court for Newburys part of y^e highway on Salisburys side to the ferry & for y^e Landing places, I say in full for my own part, Mrs. Doles part & Mr. John Doles part." *

June 26, 1711, a suit was brought against Edward Sargent "for lack of suitable attendance at the lower ferry." The Court of General Sessions held at Salem, on that day, ordered that two boats should be kept, one on the Salisbury side and one on the Newbury side, as required by the order issued March 30, 1703;† and September twenty-fifth the court at Newbury

*Town of Newbury Records.

†Records of the Court of General Sessions (1696–1718).

licensed Capt. Edward Sargent to keep the boat on the Newbury side and Capt. Humphrey Hook on the Salisbury side.

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Newbury, held May 3, 1715, objections were made to the reappointment of Capt. Sargent.

It was voated that ye ferre caled Serjeants ferry viz: Newburys halfe thereof: should be rented to Mr Benjamin Woodbridge, provided he will give as much as any man for sd halfe of sd ferry for ye term of one year next after Capt Hooks term is out in sd ferry.*

September 27, 1715, the Court of General Sessions, held at Newbury, licensed Benjamin Woodbridge to keep the ferry on the Newbury side and John Dole on the Salisbury side for one year from that date. December twenty-seventh Capt. Edward Sargent asked to be reinstated as ferryman, but his petition was dismissed by the court.

September 12, 1716, the town of Newbury authorized the selectmen "to let the Newbury halfe of Serjeants ferry for one year to any person whom the court will allow";* and September twenty-fifth the court licensed Benjamin Woodbridge to keep the ferry on the Newbury side and Capt. Edward Sargent on the Salisbury side for five years.†

June 18, 1717, It was voted that whereas Capt Serjant is sewed in an action of trespass by James Carr & Richard Carr of Salisbury for carrying passingers (and taking pay for it,) over ye River Merrimack at ye ferre neer Capt Serjants. Sd ferre being owned ye one halfe by ye Town of Newbury & ye other halfe by sd Serjant & Thomas Moodey: that ye Town of Newbury shall & will pay to sd Edward Serjant one halfe of ye necessary charges which ye sd Serjant shall be at in defending against the sd Carrs in the above sd action.*

September 18, 1722, Voted that Mr Benjamin Woodbridge shall have ye ferre (near his house) for ye tearm of three years, he giving bond to ye selectmen of ye Towne to pay as rent for sd ferre nine pounds a year yearly during sd tearm.*

Five years later, Capt. Sargent, who had charge of the ferry on the Salisbury side, asked to be released from his obligation to keep the causeway in repair. The town of

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Records of the Court of General Sessions (1696–1718), p. 323.

Salisbury granted his request upon the following terms and conditions: —

Agreement made December 19, 1727 between Mr. William Bradbury, esq., Mr. Isaac Morrill, Capt. Jeremiah Stevens, Lt. John Morrill, Mr. William Smith, Mr. Jarvis Ring and Mr. Joseph French, all of Salisbury, as a committee and agents of Salisbury, and Capt. Edward Sargent, esq., of Newbury: Witnesseth that whereas the town of Salisbury did formerly grant to said Sargent all their right and interest in ye lower ferry between Newbury and Salisbury then commonly called March's or Sargent's ferry with ye wharf, boat and £100 in money towards his purchasing the one-half of Col. John March's pretended right in said ferry upon condition that said Sargent his heirs and successors in said ferry should from time to time and at all times forever carry ye inhabitants of said Salisbury over said ferry as their occasions require ferry free and also make and maintain the highway, causeway and bridges from ye old burying place in said Salisbury down to said ferry as is more fully set forth in said grant bearing date Feb. 19, 1705–6, and in the £1000 bond or conditions of it formerly given by said Sargent to Salisbury under the hand of said Edward Sargent and Thomas Moody as security for ye faithful performance of the said conditions bearing date March 11, 1706, both on record in said Salisbury town book; and said Sargent after so long experience of ye ferry complaining of it as too hard a bargain and too burdensome for him to be at ye charge of the causeways, bridges, &c., desiring ye town to take that upon themselves that so he may be ye better enabled and encouraged cheerfully and faithfully to fulfill and perform ye other conditions of said grant, therefore said committee on behalf of Salisbury agree that in case said Sargent and his heirs and successors performs the conditions to carry over the inhabitants of Salisbury their persons and families, their horses, cattle and other necessaries usually transported over ferries ferry-free at all times as their occasion may require, they will acquitt and discharge ye sd Edward Sargent his heirs and assigns of and from the whole care and charge of making, repairing and maintaining ye highway, causeway and bridge from ye old burying place in sd Salisbury Down to ye ferry and that the town of Salisbury shall and will take the sole care thereof upon themselves.*

On the same day, Edward Sargent conveyed to the town of Salisbury all his interest "in ye lower ferry over Merrimack river," provided, however, that, if the said Sargent faithfully complies with the conditions of the agreement made with the committee named above, then the deed of conveyance

* Essex Registry of Deeds, vol. lxvii., leaf 9.

"is to be void and of none effect or else to stand and abide in full force and vertue forever." *

May 8, 1729, the inhabitants of the town of Newbury "Voted to grant Edward Serjant Newburys part of the lower ferry over Merrimack river, for the term of three years, upon condition that he carry all the inhabitants of Newbury, ferry free, and give a bond to the selectmen that he will keep the ferry according to law." †

Evidently this offer was not accepted by Capt. Sargent; for, on the eighteenth day of June following, the town "voted that John Lunt shall have the lower ferre, over Merrimack river, that is to say, Newburys part of it, until next October, paying down five pounds and five pounds more next October. He to keep one good & suitable boat for Newburys part of said ferre and give a bond for the faithful discharge of his duties as ferry man." †

September 10, 1729, the town leased the ferry to Joseph Greenleaf, for ten pounds per annum, for the term of seven years,

He having agreed to give a bond to make & maintain a good & suitable waye downe to the River at ye Easterly end of his now dwelling house at his owne cost & charge during said tearm & that this Town shall have ye use of said way to take in & put on shore such persons & things as shall want to be carried over said ferre (after said seven years is ended) for so long a time as said ferre is kept at said place.†

September 18, 1734, Col. Richard Kent and Henry Rolfe, Esq., were appointed a committee to attend the Court of General Sessions "to be held at Newbury on the last Tuesday in September," to look after the town's interest at a hearing to be held on a petition relating to the care and management of "Sargents ferry." †

September 24, 1734, the court licensed Joseph Greenleaf to keep the ferry on the Newbury side of the river, and Elias Pike and Jarvis Ring on the Salisbury side, "during the pleasure of the court." ‡

September 21, 1736, the inhabitants of the town of Newbury agreed to lease the ferry for seven years.

* Essex Registry of Deeds, vol. lxvii, leaf 10. † Town of Newbury Records.
‡ Records of the Court of General Sessions (1696–1718), p. 346.

Mr Benjamin Woodbridge, Junr, for & in consideration of the sum of thirty and six pounds a year, & so yearly, shall have Newburys part of ye lower ferre, comonly caled Sergeants ferre, for ye tearm of seven years time next after Mr Joseph Greenleafs lease is out. The said Woodbridge to give a bond to the Selectmen of the town to provide good & suitable attendance.*

September 28, 1736, the Court of General Sessions, in answer to a petition from the inhabitants of Newbury, decided that the wharf owned by Benjamin Woodbridge, jr., should be "for seven years" the landing-place for the ferry on the Newbury side of the river.†

At a town meeting held June 2, 1742, Joseph Maeres (?) presented a petition

. . . Concerning a ferry boat which he said was carried a way by ye ice & to help make up said Maeres (?) his loss & damage it was voted ye Town wold give twenty pounds in ye olde tenor, which twenty pounds shall be abated out of ye rent which is due from Mr Benjamin Woodbridge for ye ferre.*

March 13, 1743–4, the selectmen were authorized to lease "Sargent's ferry" for a few years on such terms as they shall judge best for the good of the town and convenience of travellers.*

May 19, 1747, a committee was appointed to take charge of the ferry, provide suitable boats and attendants, and petition the Court of General Sessions for liberty to raise the rates of ferriage.*

When Newburyport was set off and incorporated as a separate town in 1764, all the right, title, and interest that Newbury had in "March's or Sargent's ferry" was transferred to the new town. It remained under the care and control of the selectmen of Newburyport for many years.

After the bridge over the Merrimack river, connecting Newburyport with the town of Salisbury, was built and opened to the public in 1827, the boats used for the transportation of cattle, horses, and carriages, were withdrawn and replaced with smaller ones, suitable for foot passengers only. In this modified form, the ferry was maintained for more than fifty years.

* Town of Newbury Records.
† Records of the Court of General Sessions (1726–44), p. 460.

In 1880, Mr. Joshua M. Pike was appointed ferryman. He continued to serve in that capacity until the close of the year 1885, when, owing to the lack of patronage, he decided to give up the unprofitable business, and devote his time to other industrial pursuits. Since that date, there has been no attempt to keep the ferry established by Capt. John March in 1687.

SWETT'S FERRY, NEAR HOLT'S ROCKS.

At a meeting of the freeholders and inhabitants of Newbury, held March 26, 1694, John Kelly, sr., presented a petition for liberty to keep a "ffery over the river Merrimack in the place where he now dwells," provided the neighboring towns and the authorities of the province give their consent "for s^d^ fferry to be granted to the Towne of Newbury."

June 5, 1695, Capt Thomas Noyes, Corn^t^ George March, Abraham Merrill & Henry Short [were] appoynted by the Towne to vew a convenient place for a ferry over Merrimack River neer the now dwelling house of John Kelly, Sen^r^, together w^th^ a Rode theretoo and bring report to y^e^ Towne at y^e^ next meeting.*

Two weeks later, the selectmen of Newbury were authorized to petition the next General Sessions of the Peace to be held at Salem for liberty to establish a ferry over the Merrimack river near the dwelling-house of John Kelly, sr., and to appoint the said John Kelly, sr., keeper of it "until the towne see cause to other wise dispose of it." * The selectmen were also instructed to ask "for the continuation of the fferry so long as the Towne shall judg it beneficiall, the price of s^d^ fferry to be sixpence money for horse and man and twopence for a single man, and for our owne Towne Inhabitants sixpence in pay for horse and man & twopence in pay for a single person." †

The petition presented to the Court of General Sessions, June 25, 1695, was by agreement referred to the next term of the court.

On the twenty fourth day of September following the court ordered that the town of Newbury have liberty to keep a ferry over Merrimack

*Town of Newbury Records.
†Town of Newbury (Proprietors') Records, vol. i., pp. 22, 23.

river near ye house of John Kelley where they are to keep a suitable boat a float with a hand ready to transport passengers, horses and cattle as need may require and ye fare of said ferry is hereby appointed to be a penny for a man and five pence for a horse and so proportionable for other creatures allwaies provided that ye town of Newbury do at their own cost and charge make and maintain a sufficient highway from ye river up to ye country road way, and ye town of Almesbury do ye like on their side of ye river.*

At a meeting of the inhabitants of the town of Newbury held October 18, 1700, the selectmen were authorized to lay out a highway near the residence of John Kelly, sr.

It was also voted yt in order to a Convenient way to the fferry cõmonly known by the name of Kellys fferry the Towne voted yt a Bridg should be made over the swamp leading to sd ferry to be made and maintained by the Towne so long as the Towne see cause.†

April 12, 1703 upon the request of John Kelly, Senr John Kelly Junr, Abiel Kelly, Jonathan Kelly & John Swett, Junr, to make & maintain a good & sufficient bridg or way over the swamp at the end of John Kelly, Senr, his field for the space of four years & thereby be aquitted from making or maintaining any other of the Highways of Newbury, the Towne grants theyr propqsition on the conditions aforesd provided yt It be used so long for a public highway to ye ferry now Kept by sd John Kelly, Senr.‡

At the Court of General Sessions held in Newbury September 25, 1711, John Swett, jr., of Newbury was licensed to keep the ferry over Merrimack river, near Holt's rocks, for the term of seven years.§ September 3, 1712, the inhabitants of the town of Newbury again ordered the selectmen "to lay out the way from the Bradford road to Swett's ferry";‖ and, on the thirtieth day of December following, the Court of General Sessions appointed a committee "to view the way leading to the Ferry under the care of John Sweat junior of Newbury." § Twelve months later, the selectmen of Newbury applied to the General Court for liberty to keep the ferry and pay over annually to the treasurer of the town the amount received for ferriage.

In answer to the Petition of the Select Men of Newbury Praying that the Profits of the Ferry lately granted, by the Genll Sessions of the

*Court Records (Salem), 1692–1709.
†Town of Newbury Records, vol. iii., p. 65. ‡Ibid. (1693–1757), p. 99.
§Court Records (Salem), 1696–1718. ‖Town of Newbury Records.

Peace, to be kept over Merrimack River above Holts Rocks between Newbury and Haverhill may be settled upon the Town of Newbury.

Ordered [June 10, 1714] that there be a Ferry stated over Merrimack River in the Place mentioned in the Petition, the Profits of the said Ferry to be to the Towns of Newbury & Haverhill in equall Proportion: this Grant being limited for ye Space of forty Years next coming.*

March 4, 1718–9, the following petition was presented to the inhabitants of the town of Haverhill: —

John Sweet petitioning to the Towne as followeth,—

To the inhabitants of Haverhill this day convened at the meeting house in Haverhill; The petition of John Sweet of Newbury humbly showeth,

Whereas there has been a Ferry granted by the Court to the Towns of Haverhill and Newbury for the term of Forty years where I now keep it.

I humbly now request that I may have this Towns interest therein during the whole term, and I will carry over the inhabitants of this Town one single person for a penny per time, and a horse & man for four pence & oblige myself to keep good conveniences for the transport of passengers, for which liberality & kindness your petitioner as in duty bound shall always pray JOHN SWEET.

This petition granted in the terms imposed therein.†

February 22, 1730–31 Deacon Caleb Moody, Mr Ezekil Hale & Mr Joshua Bailey were chosen to let out ye Towne of Newburys part of ye Ferry caled Swets Ferre for foure years next insuing ye date hereof.‡

March 9, 1730–1, the selectmen of Newbury received from Mr. John Swett of Haverhill the sum of four pounds for the use of the ferry for the two preceding years.§ March 5, 1732–3, they received from Mr. Joshua Bailey three pounds for the use of the ferry for the year 1731, and subsequently received from him three pounds annually for the years 1732, 1733, and 1734.§

March 11, 1734–5, the inhabitants of the town of Newbury passed the following order: —

Our Townes part of ye ferre called Swetts ferre is granted to Joshua Bailey upon his giveing to ye selectmen a bond to se said ferre be well tended & also to pay four pound a year, yearly, for three years insuing for ye use of ye Towne of Newbury.‖

* Province Laws, vol. ix., chap. xxiv., p. 356; General Court Records, vol. ix., p. 334.
† Town of Haverhill Records. ‡ Town of Newbury Records.
§ Records of the Selectmen of Newbury. ‖ Town of Newbury Records (1731–35), p. 21.

The settlement on the north shore of the river, now known as Rock's village or East Haverhill, was at that time quite a busy and prosperous place. Salmon and other fish were caught in large numbers in that locality, and an extensive trade with the West India islands was established and maintained for many years.

March 9, 1755–6 David Chase was granted liberty to build a wharf at his own cost at Swetts ferry.*

March 12, 1782, the selectmen of Newbury were authorized "to let that part of Sweats ferry belonging to Newbury and defend the same against the claim made by the town of Haverhill." †

When the "Merrimack bridge," afterwards known as the "Rock's bridge," was built in 1795, the ferry established by John Kelly, sr., near Holt's rocks, in 1695, was discontinued.

FERRY AT SAVAGE'S ROCK.

July 24, 1735, Mr Samuel March & Lieut John Emery were chosen for to joyne with those that are chosen by ye Town of Almsbury in using proper means to have a ferre granted & settled over Merrimack River near Savages Rock, so called, between Almsbury ferre & Swetts ferre.‡

Savage's rock is on the southerly side of Merrimack river, between Rock's bridge and the mouth of Indian river, West Newbury. On the opposite shore is that part of Amesbury now known as Merrimackport.

October 16, 1735, the Court of General Sessions held at Newbury," in answer to the petition of Newbury & Almsbury praying that a ferry be established over Merrimack river at or near a place called Savages Rock," granted the prayer of the petitioners, and appointed Thomas Stephens, of Amesbury, to keep the ferry "so as not to interfere with or prejudice the right of Humphrey Hook of Almesbury his heirs or assigns to the right of Ferriage if any he has," — the said Stephens to keep a good ferry boat and provide two able and experienced ferrymen to attend upon the same.§

* Town of Newbury Records (1731–85), p. 103. ‡ Ibid., p. 24.
† Town of Newbury Records. § Court of General Sessions (1696–1718), p. 409.

Humphrey Hook, who had the management and control of the ferry at the mouth of Powow river, was in litigation at that time with the town of Amesbury in regard to the rights and privileges that he claimed in the transportation of men, horses, and carriages from the Newbury shore. The case was warmly contested, and finally settled by compromise several years later.

March 8, 1736–7, the selectmen of Newbury were desired "to agree with M^r^ Thomas Stephens relating to y^e^ ferre at Savages Rock";* and, in 1743, the town of Amesbury leased the ferry "to Deacon Stevens for five years at forty shillings, old tenor." †

March 26, 1764 It was also voted to remove y^e^ Ferry that is kept near Savages' Rock to Sargent's Creek so Called and Capt Robert Sargent was appointed ferryman.‡

The ferry was probably discontinued soon after the bridges at Holt's rocks and Deer island were built.

FERRY AT BARTLETT'S COVE.

March 10, 1761, the town of Newbury granted a petition for a ferry from the middle of Bartlett's cove to Salisbury, on condition that the petitioners "obtain a license for the same from the Court of General Sessions." * This grant was not confirmed by the court.

Subsequently, several attempts were made to secure a license; but no definite action was taken until September, 1789, when the court ordered "that Joseph Swasey and John Webster be licensed to keep a ferry over Merrimack River at or near Jonathan Moulton's dwelling house in Newbury in said County, and from thence to the opposite side of said river in Salisbury."

It is said that Washington was taken over this new ferry in a barge specially prepared for the occasion, on his way from Newburyport to Portsmouth, October 30, 1789.§ In his diary, published in 1858, he wrote:

* Town of Newbury Records. † History of Amesbury, p. 206.

‡ Town of Amesbury Records, p. 334. The entrance to Sargent's creek, from Merrimack river, was at Merrimackport.

§ Putnam's Historical Magazine for March, 1895, p. 77.

Left Newburyport a little after 8 o'clock (first breakfasting with Mr Dalton) and to avoid a wider ferry, more inconvenient boats, and a piece of heavy sand, we crossed the River at Salisbury.

It is possible, however, that the older ferry, known as Amesbury ferry, was the one used on that occasion, and that Washington landed at the mouth of the Powow river in Amesbury, as some local historians assert, and then proceeded along the river road through Salisbury point to the Rocky Hill meeting-house, where several companies of soldiers were drawn up to receive him.*

The new or middle ferry, as it was sometimes called, under the management of Joseph Swasey, of Newburyport, and John Webster, of Salisbury, was successfully maintained until 1792, when the Essex Merrimack bridge was built across the Merrimack river at Deer island, and the ferry was discontinued for lack of patronage.†

* History of Amesbury (Merrill), p. 304.

† For a more extended account of this ferry see "Ould Newbury," pp. 239–246.

CHAPTER X.

POSTAL SERVICE.

NOVEMBER 5, 1639, the General Court of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay passed the following order: —

For preventing the miscarriage of letters,— It is ordered that notice bee given that Richard Fairbanks, his house, in Boston is the place appointed for all letters which are brought from beyond the seas, or are to be sent thither: — are to bee brought unto him and he is to take care that they bee delivered or sent according to their directions, and hee is allowed for every such letter 1d and must answer all miscarriages through his own neglect in this kind; provided that no man shall bee compelled to bring his letters thither except hee please.*

Some years later, it was customary to leave letters at the exchange or the town hall, "so that who will may take them up" and forward them; but "letters of great moment were frequently lost."

Francis Lovelace, governor of New York, established postal communication between that state and New England early in the year 1673. In a letter dated "Fort James 27th December 1672," he wrote to John Winthrop, governor of Connecticut, that the postman would set out from New York on the first Monday of each month,

. . . and is to return within the month from Boston to us again. The mail has divers bags, according to the towns the letters are designed to, which are all sealed up, till their arrivement, with the seal of the Secretary's office, whose care it is on Saturday night to seal them up; only by-letters are in an open bag to disperse by the ways. Thus you see the scheme I have drawn to promote a happy correspondence. I shall only beg of you your furtherance to so universal a good work: that is, to afford him directions where and to whom to make his application to upon his arrival at Boston, as likewise to afford him what letters you can to establish him in that employment there. It would be much advantageous to our design if in the interval you discourse with some of

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 281.

the most able woodmen to make out the best and most facile way for a post, which in process of time would be the King's best highway, as likewise passengers and accommodation at rivers, fords, or other necessary places.*

The General Court of Massachusetts bay ordered, January 6, 1673–4, that every messenger or post-rider carrying official despatches should be paid threepence a mile for his services, including the use of his horse; and innholders were prohibited from charging such messengers more than two shillings a bushel for oats and fourpence for the hay required to keep a horse one day and one night.†

May 23, 1677, a petition was presented to the General Court, requesting the appointment of a suitable person "to take in and convey Lett^rs according to direction." ‡ On the first day of June following, the court "made choyce of M^r John Hayward, the scrivener, to be the person for that service." §

June 11, 1680, In ans^r to the peticon of John Hayward, it is ordered, that he be continued for postmaster to receive in letters & take care for the sending of them to the owne^s, according to superscription, till this Court take other order; and that all masters of ships or other vessells doe, vpon their arrivall, send their letters that come in the bagg to the said post office except as they shall particularly take care to deliver w^th their oune hands: that the said Hayward, or postmaster, be allowed for euery single letter one penny in money, & for euery packet of two or more two pence in money.‖

These orders and regulations were evidently intended to apply to the collection and delivery of foreign letters only. Other written communications, relating to business or domestic affairs, were conveyed from town to town by the hand of friends or occasional travellers.

Strictly speaking, there was no postal service in New England until after the repeal of the colonial charter and the establishment of the province of Massachusetts bay. Gov. Andros wrote, under date of November 23, 1687, to the secretary of the Connecticut colony that he proposed to send

* Massachusetts Historical Society Collections, vol. ix., Fifth Series, p. 84.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 574.
‡ Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 430.
§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 147. ‖ Ibid., vol. v., p. 273.

letters once a month from Boston to Hartford during the winter. The secretary replied, December 5, 1687:

I believe Perry will undertake once a month to pass from Fairfield to Boston in the winter, and once in three weeks in the summer, or oftener if your Excellency desire it, and the charge of it upon the whole will be no great matter. Should it be put upon letters at first, I believe it will not answer the charge to satisfy the post. But if it were tried one year by a salary the better guess may be given for a future settlement of it.*

After the overthrow of Sir Edmund Andros, King William and Queen Mary issued, February 17, 1691–2, letters patent to Thomas Neale, Esq., granting him full power and authority to establish offices in the colonies of North America "for the receiving and dispatching of letters and pacquets." Andrew Hamilton was appointed deputy postmaster-general "to govern and manage the said general post office for and throughout all their majesties' plantations and colonies on the mainland or continent of America, and the islands adjacent thereunto, pursuant to the directions of the said letters patent." †

John Usher, deputy governor of the province of New Hampshire, wrote from Boston, March 25, 1693, to the members of his council:

Gentlⁿ: — The Poste Master General being here in Boston & giving account yᵗ he has settled a poste from Virginia to Boston once a week, he is very desirous to know whatt you will be pleased to allow either as a yearly sallary, or how much a letter for postage of a single Letter from Piscataqua to Boston . . . Itts desired you would likewise signifye whether you would have a poste once a week or once in two weeks.‡

June 9, 1693, the province of Massachusetts bay passed an act establishing a general letter office in Boston for receiving and despatching letters "from their majesties dominions beyond the seas" to any colony or province in New England.§

*Connecticut Colony Records, vol. iii, p. 398; and Palfrey's History of New England, note on p. 548.

† Province Laws, vol. vii., note p. 431.

‡ Papers relating to the Province of New Hampshire, vol. ii., p. 100.

Samuel Allen, a London merchant, having purchased all the land, within the limits of the province of New Hampshire, belonging to the heirs of Capt. John Mason, obtained permission to organize and maintain a permanent government there. He appointed his son-in-law, John Usher, deputy governor, August 13, 1692. Although frequently called to New Hampshire on official business, Mr. Usher continued to reside in Boston until his death, September 5, 1726.

§ Province Laws, vol. i., p. 115.

The second section of this act provided that the postage on a single letter from New York to Boston should be twelvepence, from Salem to Boston threepence, from Ipswich, Newbury, and other places eastward of Salem, within the province of Massachusetts bay, fourpence, and from Piscataqua (Portsmouth) to Boston sixpence.

This act was declared to be inconsistent with the letters patent granted Thomas Neale by King William and Queen Mary; and, November 5, 1696, it was disallowed by the privy council. While it remained in force, however, Duncan Campbell was appointed deputy postmaster of Boston, by and with the consent of Andrew Hamilton, deputy postmaster-general. On the twenty-third day of November, 1693, Campbell applied to the General Court for compensation for his services; and, June 20, 1694, he was granted an annual allowance of twenty-five pounds for two years.

On the twenty-fifth day of October following, "an Act for Regulating Ferries" was passed. This act expressly provided "that the general post that is settled for their majesties and the countrys service be readily dispatched and set over by all ferry men where they shall come, without delay." *

The following year, Campbell appealed to the governor and council of the province of New Hampshire "for such assistance as in their wisdom shall be judged reasonable."

May 21, 1695, in answer to the petition of Duncan Campbell for allowing a salary for encouragement of the Post, a bill past both Houses for allowing £12 for this year, provided the Post be kept.†

Duncan Campbell died in 1702; and John Campbell, who succeeded him as postmaster in Boston, petitioned the General Court of Massachusetts, May 26, 1703, for compensation for his services, stating that, since the disapproval of the act passed for the encouragement of the post-office in 1696, "there has been no action on the part of the province of Massachusetts Bay to regulate and control the postal service."

On the second day of June, this petition, with the memorial accompanying it, was referred to a committee who subse-

* Province Laws, vol. i., p. 183. † New Hampshire Provincial Papers, vol. ii., p. 156.

quently submitted a report which was accepted, allowing Mr. John Campbell the sum of "£20 for all time past and £40 for y^e^ year ensuing" for his encouragement and support in the transmission of public letters, and providing "that the said Campbell be freed from Impresses, Trainings & watches dureing his employment of Post Master." This report was amended by making the compensation ten pounds instead of twenty, and twenty pounds in place of forty, and as amended was agreed to by the governor and council July 22, 1703.*

On the ninth day of September, the following order, passed by the governor and council, was concurred in by the House of Representatives: —

Every Master of any ship or vessell arriving from any Foreign parts shall deliver in all his Letters to the Post Office at the Port of discharge, or shall deliver them at any other place where he happens first to arrive: The Post Master demanding the Same: In which case they shall be forthwith expressed to y^e^ Post office in Boston. And all masters shall be paid by the Post Master a half penny a Letter for Every & so many Letters as he shall put into the office: and the Post Master shall be paid & receive the accustomed Rates & Prices now paid for Letters by him delivered out: The Collector and Naval Officer, respectively, to Give Notice of this order to all masters.†

Newbury, at that date, was a town of considerable commercial importance, having an extensive trade with the West India islands and also with the continent of Europe. The collection and transmission of letters from foreign lands required constant care and attention. Post-riders from Boston passed through Newbury on their way to Portsmouth, and were often delayed, especially in the winter season, by bad travelling and severe snow-storms. The Boston News Letter, published by John Campbell, postmaster, makes the following announcements: —

The Eastern and Piscataqua Post sets out from Boston every Monday night at seven of the clock and all Persons are desired to bring their Letters to the Post Office before six a clock.‡

The Eastern Post came in on Saturday and sets out on Monday night, who says, There is no Travailing with Horses, especially beyond Newbury, but with snow shoes which our People do much use now that

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 285. † Ibid., vol. i., p. 420. ‡ November 13 to 20, 1704.

never did before. The Western Post came then also in, and sets out on Tuesday morning, who likewise says 'Tis very bad Travailing.*

March 25, 1716–7, the snow was five feet deep in the woods, and in some exposed places the roads were covered to the depth of fifteen or twenty feet. The "post boy," travelling on snow-shoes, was nine days in making his trip from Salem, Mass., to Portsmouth, N.H., and eight days in returning, the distance between the two towns being about forty miles.†

Lord Cornbury, in a letter dated New York, July 1, 1708, to the commissioners for trade and plantations, in England, says:

. . . We have but two safe ways of sending into England, which are the Virginia Fleet and the Mast Fleet from New England. . . . From Boston there is a Post by which we can hear once a week in summer time, and once a fortnight in winter, so that we have a sure conveyance by the Mast Fleet. The conveyances by the West Indies have proved very uncertain for several of our vessels have been taken Every Year during the War, besides that several of the Packet Boats from England have been likewise taken. ‡

"A new and Exact map of the Dominions of the King of Great Britain on y^e^ continent of North America, By Herman Moll, Geographer," was published in 1715. On the margin of this map is a notice of the arrival and departure of the mails, from which the following paragraph is taken: —

. . . the Post from Boston to Piscataway, being 70 miles, leaves Letters at Ipswich, Salem, Marblehead and Newbury. . . . There are offices kept at Burlington and Perth Amboy in New Jersey, New London and Stonington in Connecticut, at Rhode Island, Bristol, Ipswich, Salem, Marblehead and Newbury, and y^e^ 3 Great offices are at Boston, New York & Philadelphia.

It is evident that the postal service between Boston and Portsmouth was well established when the above announcement was made; and Jonathan Plummer, in a deed dated April 16, 1716, is described as "Postmaste^r^ in y^e^ township of

* January 29 to February 5, 1704–5. † "Historic Storms" (Sidney Perley), p. 55.
‡ New York Colony Manuscripts, vol. v., p. 55.

Newbury." * There are no records to show who was postmaster in Newbury previous to that date, but Joseph Lunt probably "rode post" as early as 1708.†

"The Boston Weekly Post Boy," a newspaper published from October, 1734, to December, 1754, has the picture of a ship under full sail, on the left hand side of the title, at the top of the first page; and the following appropriate device, on the right hand side, representing a postman, on horseback, sounding his horn.‡



POST-RIDER — 1734.

The following items relating to newspapers and post-riders were recorded by Rev. Matthias Plant.

July 1, 1735, I received y^e^ news letter from y^e^ Postman.

January 26, 1741–2 Then Paid to M^r^ Gerrish, Postman, for 2 years & a quarter for news Paper carrying & for taking my horse from Salem to Mr. Watts at Winnisimet w^h^ horse I hired there 1.9.6.

June 18, 1742 then p^d^ Mr. Fleet for news paper 1.4.0.

May 30, 1746 I p^d^ Mr. Fleet att Boston for y^e^ News Paper for y^e^ year 1745. 1.8.0.

* Essex Deeds, book liv., leaf 67; also, book xxxvi., leaf 49.

† Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 173.

‡ Reproduced from an original copy of "The Boston Weekly Post Boy" in the Boston Public Library.

June 13, 1748 I paid Mr Fleet for 2 years News Papers 3.0.0.

March 23, 1749–50 then I paid to post Gerrish for bringing News Papers 9. years 4.9.0.

Then pd by post Gerrish to Mr. Fleet for News Papers 2. years 3.0.0.

In 1753, Benjamin Franklin, residing in Philadelphia, and William Hunter, of Virginia, were commissioned by the government of England to take charge of the postal service in America. During the summer of that year, Franklin set out on a tour of inspection, and visited almost every post-office in the country.* In November, 1754, he was in Newbury, and undoubtedly improved the opportunity to examine the books and accounts of the postmaster, and confer with the post-riders in regard to the safe and speedy transportation of letters intrusted to them. Newspapers were not considered mailable matter at that time, and it was only by rewarding the post-riders that a place was made for them in the mail bag.

In 1756, packet boats were first employed to carry the mail between Falmouth, now Portland, Me., and New York, "the postage of each single letter to be four penny weights of silver." It was not until about the year 1760 that regular weekly communication was established between Portsmouth and Portland. Before that time, letters were not sent until a sufficient number were collected to pay the cost of transportation.

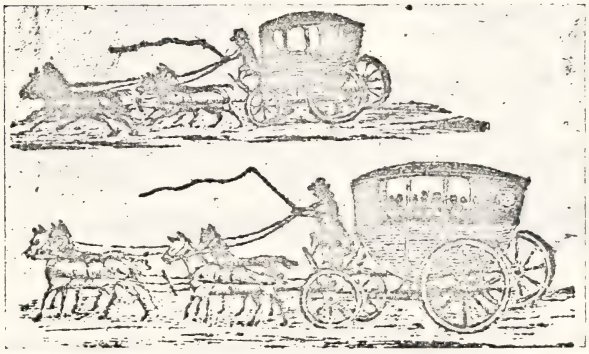
In 1761, "the first stage, or passenger chair in America" was started from the stables connected with the tavern kept by John Stavers in Portsmouth, and under his management and that of his brother Bartholomew Stavers continued to make weekly trips through Newbury, Ipswich, and Salem to Boston, carrying the mail as well as passengers for many years.

Bulkeley Emerson was probably postmaster at Newbury when this stage was first used in the postal service. He was a bookseller and stationer; and as early as March 14, 1754, he and his brother Samuel bought a house with a small lot of

* Parton's Life of Franklin, vol. i., p. 330.

land "on the main street in Newbury," where he probably sold books and received and distributed the letters transmitted by mail.* The stage made only one trip weekly between Portsmouth and Boston; but the mail was sent on other days by post-riders, as heretofore. January 17, 1763, the following advertisement was published in the Boston Evening Post: —

Giles Alexander, Eastern Post Rider, Hereby informs the Public that when he is in town, he puts up at the Sign of Admiral Vernon, in King Street, from whence he sets out, for the future, on Monday Evening at 6 o'clock.



STAGE-COACHES — 1793.†

December 4, 1770, Benjamin Hart announced in the Essex Gazette, a newspaper published in Salem, "that he has left riding the single horse post between Boston and Portsmouth and now conveys passengers from Boston to any town between it and Portsmouth and back again, in the same Post Stage lately improved by John Noble." ‡

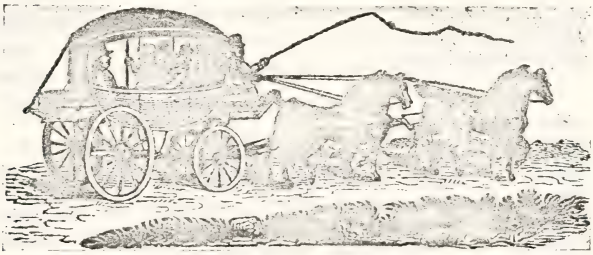
Bulkeley Emerson retained, under the provincial government, his office as postmaster at Newbury and Newburyport until May 13, 1775, when he was appointed to the same

* Essex Registry of Deeds, book cxv., leaf 195. ‡ Annals of Salem (Felt), 1827, p. 479.

† From an advertisement now in the possession of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., announcing the arrival and departure of stages.

office by the provisional government organized in Massachusetts at the beginning of the Revolutionary war. This appointment was confirmed by the Continental Congress in the month of December following. Mr. Emerson died April 19, 1801. His son Joseph Emerson succeeded him as postmaster.

In 1818 the mail was taken daily to and from Boston by the Eastern Stage Company. This arrangement was continued from year to year until June 26, 1838, when the charter of the company expired by limitation. Two months later,



STAGE-COACH — 1820.*

the Eastern railroad was completed from East Boston to Salem; and from the last-named town the mail was forwarded by stage to Portsmouth, and thence to other towns in Maine and New Hampshire. In June, 1840, the road was extended from Salem to Newburyport. Since that date letters sent to or from Newbury have reached their destination through the Newburyport office.

*From an advertisement now in the possession of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., announcing the arrival and departure of stages.

CHAPTER XI.

COMMERCIAL AFFAIRS AND SHIP-BUILDING.

A SHIP of three hundred tons burthen, built by Richard Hollingsworth in Salem, was launched in the month of June, 1641. This was probably the first ship built in Essex county. At Medford and other towns in the colony, however, the building of small sloops and shallops had been carried on to some extent for several years. For the protection of ship owners and builders the General Court passed the following order, October 7, 1641: —

When any ship is to bee built wthin this jurisdiction, it shalbee lawful for the owners to appoint & put in some able man to survey the worke & workemen, from time to time, as is usual in England . . . and upon complaint to the Governor, or Deputy, or any 2 magistrats, they shall appoint 2 of the most sufficient ship carpenters of this jurisdiction & shall give them authority from time to time; (as needs shall require) to take view of every such ship & all worke thereto belonging & see that it bee pformed & carried on according to the rules of their arte . . . & these viewers shall have power to cause any bad timbers, or other insufficient worke, or materialls to bee taken out & amended & all that they shall judge to bee amisse to bee reformed at the charge of them through whose default it growes.*

As early as 1650 small vessels were built and owned in Newbury; and April 25, 1655, the town granted "captain Paul White a parcell of land not exceeding half an acre, about Watts his cellar, for to make a dock, a wharf and a warehouse, provided he do build a dock and warehouse as aforesaid." †

George Carr and his son Richard Carr were early engaged in ship-building on Carr's island; and in 1675 Jonathan Woodman had a building-yard at the foot of Woodman's lane, now Kent street, Newburyport.‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 336.
† "Ould Newbury," p. 151. ‡ Ibid., pp. 273–285.

The ship "Salamander" was built by Mr. Woodman previous to March 23, 1675–6; for on that day he brought a suit, in the Court of Admiralty at Boston, to recover the amount due him for labor and materials used in its construction. Capt. Bartholomew Stratton and other owners of the ship protested against the payment of the sum claimed, and insisted that the law of the colony providing for the inspection of vessels had not been complied with. The court decided in favor of the defendants, and fined Mr. Woodman ten pounds. In a petition to the General Court, asking to be released from the payment of this fine, Mr. Woodman stated that the master and owners had compelled him to pay twenty pounds for not launching the ship at the time agreed upon, although two carpenters employed by him were taken for the country's service, and he was unable to find men to fill their places in Rowley, Ipswich, Salem, or Boston. He also claimed that the ship was surveyed by a carpenter, "as the custom is with us," before she was planked, and asserted that the owners had forced him to take up the deck when partially laid, and raise it four feet higher.*

October 17, 1676, In answer to the petition of Jonathan Woodman, humbly desiring the remittment of the fine of tenn pounds imposed on him for not surveying the ship Salamander &c the Court judgeth it meet to grant his request & his fine is remitted accordingly.†

In order to regulate and control the importation of merchandise, ports of entry were established by the General Court.

February 9, 1682–3: . . . the port of Boston to which Charlestown is annexed, and the port of Salem to which Marblehead, Beverly, Glocester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbery and Salisbury are annexed as members, are and shall be lawfull ports in this colony where all ships & other vessells shall lade or unlade.‡

This arrangement was not satisfactory to the ship-owners and merchants of Newbury; and in the month of May, 1683, they prepared and signed the following petition: —

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. lix., p. 132.
†Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 127. ‡Ibid., vol. v., p. 383.

To the honored general court now sitting in Boston, the humble petition of some of Newbury:

Wee humbly crave the favour that your Honors would be pleased to consider our litle Zebulun* and to ease us of that charge wch at present we are forced unto by our going to Salem to enter our vessels and thereby are forced to stay at least two days before we can unloade besides other charges in going & coming. That some meet person might be appointed to receive the entryes of all vessels coming in here and to act and do according as the law directs in that case, and we shall be bound ever to pray for yor Honrs &c

CALEB MOODY
THOMAS NOYES
JOHN KENT
JOSEPH DOLE
BENAIAH TITCOMB
WILLIAM NOYES
WILLIAM TITCOMB
PENUEL TITCOMB
HENRY JAQUES
HENRY WHEELER
D. DAVISON

Referred to the next general court.†

In May, 1684, when the subject was again under consideration, the following petition was presented to the General Court: —

. . . it being very inconvenient for vesels that arive at the towne of Newbury to make entry at Salem it often is greatly predudiall & chargable to persons concerned: it is humbly ofered to this Courts consideration & desired that this Court would pleas to apoint som person in Newbury where they may make their entry & not be put upon such great inconvenience as to go as far as Salem.

ofered by mee RICHARD BARTLET

in behalf of the town of Newbury the 7th of May 1684.‡

At the same session, some of the inhabitants of Salisbury petitioned as follows: —

To The Honored Generall Court Now Sitting In Boston May the 7th 1684 The Humble Request of Severall in Habitants of Salisbury whose names are hearto subscribed: —

That wheras by the prvidenc of god wee have some smalle trade whereby vessells are sent A Brode out of Merrimack River Who Accord-

* "Zebulun shall dwell at the haven of the sea; and he shall be for a haven of ships, and his border shall be unto Zidon." Gen. xlix: 13.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. lxi., p. 254. ‡ Ibid., p. 262.

ing to Law Ar bound to Duty at going forth & Returning home which by Reson of ye Remoteness from the place of entry grows extreme prejudisial & by ye Loss of A day or two many times by Reson of Ill wether proves to our Great damage: our humble Request therefore to this Honored Court Is That thay would bee pleased to Impower som one p'son att Newbury or Salisbury to take entrys & to give clearing And your suplyants thankfully Acknowledging the same shall Ever pray

THOMAS MUDGETT
JOHN ALLIN
JACOB MERILL
RICHARD HUBBARD
HENRY WHEELER *

May 15, 1684, the deputies and magistrates granted the prayer of the petitioners, and "ordered that Nathaniel Clarke be the naval officer for Newbury and Salisbury ports." †

During the excitement and confusion that resulted from the revolutionary proceedings in Boston, April 18, 1689, and the imprisonment of Sir Edmund Andros, governor of the colonies in New England, vessels employed in the coasting trade were exposed not only to the danger of the sea, but were liable to capture by bold and lawless buccaneers.

In a deposition made by Thomas Pound, who, with Thomas Hawkins and others, was executed for piracy in 1689, is the following statement: —

. . . about the Eighth or Tenth day of August last past, in the present year, 1689, this Examinant together with twelve men more . . . went off from Boston in Thomas Hawkins his Boat, tooke water at the South End of the Town neer the Signe of the Bull, haveing agreed and combined together to take the first vessell they should come up with and go away to the West Indies to make a voyage against the ffrench. . . .
wee then sayled to Martyn's Vineyard Sound, and on or about the twentyeth day of August met with a Briganteen belonging to Newbury, John Kent, master, from New Yorke, and sent the Boat with ffour or ffive hands on board said Briganteen, and brought her neer to o' sloop's side, out of which Briganteen wee tooke Eighteen halfe barrells of Flower, two hogsheads of Sugar and one hogshead of Rhum, and three small arms, and so dismist the Briganteen. . . .
From thence wee removed to Tarpolin Cove, there lay about fforty Eight houres intending for Corazo, and upon ffriday the ffourth day of

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xli., p. 261.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 439.

October, instant, Capne Samuel Pease, Comander of a Sloop from Boston, came up towards us, and wee came to Saile and stood away, but Capne Pease out sayled us and fired severall shot towards us but did not strike our vessell, wee descried their king's Jack before they fired: after wee had received severall shot from the sd Sloop there was a red fflag put up at the head of our mast, and our men fired at them, and we continued fireing one at another about the space of an hour: this Examinant received two shot one under his Ribs and another in the Arme, ffour of our men were slain and nine wounded.*

June 27, 1692, the General Court passed an act providing for the appointment of a naval officer at Boston, Salem, Ipswich, Newbury, and other ports, to enter and clear vessels arriving or sailing from the ports named and collect the fees due from them. This act, however, was disallowed by the privy council; but the governor, under the new charter of the province of Massachusetts Bay, was authorized to take such steps as might be necessary to protect and encourage trade, and prevent the illegal importation of merchandise.

Many favorable locations along the river side, owned in common by the proprietors or freeholders of Newbury, were taken by ship-builders, and used without permission.

December 13, 1692, the town ordered that whosoever shall build any vessels on the towne common shall pay to the town three pence per ton for the use of the building yard that they shall improve.†

Mr. Thomas Johnson, ship-wright, having built a house & sett up a ship or ships uppon the Towns Comons next adjoining to the River Merrimack between sd River & Mr Peirces land, the sd Johnson doth by way of Rent for the improving of the Towns land as above sd acknowledg himself indebted to the selectmen of Newbury the sum of two shillings money whereunto the sd Johnson hath sett to his hand this 30th of Sept, 1695. THOMAS JOHNSON.

TRISTRAM COFFIN,
GEORGE MARCH,
HENRY SHORT,
} *Witnesses.*†

Ezra, son of William Cottle, was born in Newbury May 5, 1662. He married Mary Woodbridge July 6, 1695. In the town records, under the date of 1698, is the following memorandum: —

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, July, 1891, pp. 216, 217.
† Town of Newbury Records.

This year Ezra Cottle commenced ship building at or near the foot of Chandler's lane [now Federal street, Newburyport] where Mr. William Johnson built.*

March 18, 1700–1701 John Stickney desir'ng liberty of the Town to build a vessel uppon the Bank by Merrimack River, near the place where Mr Johnson built a vessel, at the lower end of Chandlers Lane. The town grants his proposition with this proviso, yt he damnify not the highway there and that he pay one shilling to the town as a rent by way of acknowledgement if demanded of him.*

July 11, 1705 Granted liberty to Mr William Johnson to build a vessel neer the end of Chandlers Lane at or neer the place wher Mr Johnson formerly built a shipp.*

Among the vessels registered, "according to directions of the Act of Parliament passed in the seventh and eighth year (1696–1697) of the Reign of King William the Third," was "The Briganteen Endeavour of Boston, Edward Ashley, Master; a square sterned vessel of about 20 tons, built at Newbury, in 1681." †

From November 23, 1697, to October 5, 1714, one hundred sloops, ketches, brigantines, and ships built in Newbury, "whereof Proof hath been made upon oath," were granted registers, and allowed to engage in the coasting trade or take lumber and merchandise to foreign ports.‡

In 1697 the town of Andover

Granted libertie to Maj. John March of Newbury to take what timber is convenient for ye building of two vessels not exceeding fifty tons apiece, provided he build such vessels in Andover and to use noe timber that is fitt for ye building of houses or making of posts, . . . what timber is to be felled and carted for sd vessels, Andover men shall have ye benefit of, provided they will work with themselves & teems as reasonably as in other places they doe.§

Probably the vessels were not built at that time, and in 1711 the town of Andover passed the following order: —

. . . that Coll John March shall have libertie of trying the experiment of building a sloop in some convenient place for launching into Merrimack River and to have the benefit of what timber can be found already

*Town of Newbury Records.

†Massachusetts Archives, vol. vii., p. 125; also, History of Ship-building on Merrimack River, by John J. Currier, 1877, p. 46.

‡Massachusetts Archives, vol. vii., pp. 85–523. §History of Andover (Bailey), p. 58.

felled, and also if need be to supply him with the liberty of cutting half-a dozen sticks for some choyse use for the vessel if Timber for such use cannot be found already felled.*

Col. March was unable to make the contemplated "experiment" on account of ill-health. He died previous to August 25, 1712. Subsequently, Lieut. John Aslebe was granted "liberty to make use of the timber which was voted for Coll. John March to build a sloop in Andover of about 40 tons." *

March 11, 1711–2, the inhabitants of Newbury voted "that Major Henry Somerby, Cap^{t} Sergant & Lieu^{t} Titcomb shall have power to let y^{e} building yard near Watts cellar (so called) unto Col Patridge and M^{r} Fawn Clement and M^{r} Hodge on such terms as they agree for." †

This yard was known as the Middle Ship-yard. It was sold March 5, 1768, to Samuel Gerrish by the proprietors of the town of Newbury.‡

The ship-owners and merchants of Newbury had established a profitable trade with Barbadoes and other islands of the West Indies previous to the beginning of the eighteenth century. June 28, 1714, the town clerk recorded the marks and description of twelve horses, "to be shiped on board a Brigantine belonging to Cap^{t} Pits of Boston, whereof Cap^{t} Elsee is master, bound to Barbadoes." ‖

Subsequently, similar items were recorded, apparently without order, possibly in compliance with some rule or regulation adopted by the town. A memorandum, dated June 30, 1716, states that six horses "are to be shipt for Antega § on board y^{e} sloop Ann, whereof M^{r} Benajah Titcomb sen^{r} is master." ‖

August 4, 1716 eight horses shipped on the brigantine now lying in the harbor of Newbury, bound for Antega, Michael Hodge, master.‖

August 14, 1716 shipped six horses on y^{e} ship Pegge, whereof Mr. John Davis is present master & now riding at anchor in the harbor of Newbury & bound for Barbadus.‖

May 30, 1724 shipped two horses on board y^{e} sloop dove bound to y^{e} Leeward Islands, Mr. Michael Hodge master.‖

* History of Andover (Bailey), p. 58.
† Town of Newbury Records. ‡ "Ould Newbury," p. 281.
‖ Recorded on a fly-leaf of the Town of Newbury Records.
§ Antigua, one of the Leeward Islands, included in the group known as the Lesser Antilles.

February 4, 1724–5 shipped two horses by the sloop Dove now at anchor in the Merrimack bound for the West Indies, Michael Hodge, master.*

September 1728 Shipped four horses on board ye sloop called the Friends Adventure, bound for the West Indies.*

March 4, 1730–1 shipped two horses on board a ship now riding at anchor in ye River Merrimack caled the Falmouth bound to Antega, William King, master.*

October 25, 1736 shiped on board ye good sloope Elizabeth, now riding at anchor in ye River Merrimack & by ye grace of God bound for Antega, Mr. Thomas Johnson, master, twelve horses from four to eight years old.*

Liberty to build a wharf and dock "about Watts his cellar" was granted Capt. Paul White in 1655; and similar grants were made to Richard Dole, Nathaniel Clark, Stephen Greenleaf, Daniel Davison, and others previous to January 1, 1700.†

March 9, 1730–1 the town granted liberty to William Johnson and nine others to build a wharf at the foot of Chandlers lane [now Federal street, Newburyport] on condition it be built within four years and that the inhabitants of Newbury may fasten their hay boats or gondolas to said wharf without paying for it.‡

On the same day, Abiel Somerby and others were granted liberty to build a wharf at the foot of Queen street, now Market street, Newburyport, on similar conditions. The wharf at the foot of Chandler's lane was probably built within the time named in the grant; but Abiel Somerby and the men associated with him failed to comply with the conditions imposed upon them, and May 18, 1738, Joseph Atkins, Joseph Titcomb, John Ordway, and many others were granted liberty to build the wharf "at the lower end of Queen street." ‡

At that date there was a ship-yard near the foot of Muzzey's lane, now Marlboro street, Newburyport, occupied by Gideon Woodwell and afterwards by his son and grandson. Ralph Cross had a yard between Muzzey's lane and Chandler's lane, at or near the lumber yard now owned and occupied by Edward Perkins & Co., Newburyport; and Samuel Moggaridge was engaged in ship-building nearly opposite the southeasterly

* Recorded on a fly-leaf of the town of Newbury Records.
† "Ould Newbury," pp. 151–163. ‡ Town of Newbury Records.

end of Carr's island, at the foot of what was then Poore's, afterwards Moody's, lane, now Merrimack court, Newburyport.

Robert Barrett bought of Thomas Bartlett, in 1732, about an acre of land in the vicinity of Bartlett's cove, where he subsequently built several small vessels.* In the inventory of his estate, dated September 30, 1742, his dwelling-house, workshop, "and Timber, Plank and other stuff in His Building Yard," were appraised at £300, and carpenter tools at £23.†

Samuel Moggaridge agreed, November 30, 1741, to build a vessel for Witter Cummings and Benjamin Harris,‡ to be paid for on the following terms and conditions: —

> Three hundred pounds in Cash, three hundred pounds on good ships in Boston, two-thirds money; four hundred pounds by orders up the river for timber and plank, ten barrels of flour, fifty pounds weight of loaf sugar, one Bagg of cotton wool, one hundred bushels of corn in the spring; one hhd. of Rum, one hundred weight of cheese; the remaining part to be drawn out of the said Cummings & Harris' shop. . . . Three thousand pounds lawful money of New England to be paid by the defective party.§

For more than twenty years, Samuel Moggaridge was a prominent ship-builder in Newbury. He owned several negro slaves, and was evidently interested in agricultural pursuits. He had farms in Salisbury, Dracut, and Pelham, and was also the owner of a large tract of land in Narragansett township. In his will, dated October 30, 1753, and proved April 8, 1754, he gave to his wife the use of the dwelling-house where he then lived, with one-quarter part of the income of his real estate in Newbury and Salisbury. To his son Samuel he gave the farm in Dracut and a silver punch-bowl, "to be kept in the family from generation to generation." Silver teaspoons, silver tongs, and other silver utensils were divided among the children, "son Stephen excepted." ‖

* Essex Deeds, book lxi., leaf 263. † Probate Records, book cccxxv., p. 71.

‡ Messrs. Cummings and Harris resided in Newbury, and were large importers of foreign merchandise. They were prominent members of St. Paul's church at its organization in 1738, and were elected wardens or vestrymen of the church for many years. ("Ould Newbury," pp. 398–400.)

§ History of Newburyport (Mrs. E. Vale Smith), p. 72.

‖ Essex Probate Records, vol. cccxxxii., p. 183.

Oak and pine timber, suitable for ship-building, was sent from Newbury to England in the form of rafts, skilfully constructed and equipped with masts and sails, and manned by a crew of courageous seamen. The following notice, published in an English paper in 1770, announced the arrival of one of these rafts at London: —

> The Newbury, Capt Rose, from Newbury, in New England, lies at the Orchard House Blackwall. The above is a raft of timber, in the form of a ship, which came from Newbury to soundings in twenty-six days, and is worthy the attention of the curious.*

Ship-building on the Merrimack river was very active at that date, and several new ship-yards were established in that part of Newbury known as "Belleville."

Benjamin Coffin bought of Moses Coffin, June 6, 1763, about eight acres of land "on y^e^ Lane commonly called Coffins Lane," now Jefferson street, Newburyport, and built several vessels there.†

April 17, 1770, Isaac Freese sold to Stephen Coffin land in Newbury "joyning to Benjamin Coffins Building yard, so called, by Merrimack River"; and April 8, 1774, Elizabeth Freeze sold "to the said Stephen Coffin, land on a way leading to Carrs ferry, so called," bounded northwesterly "on Benjamin Coffins Building yard." ‡

The statement that Stephen Coffin built two gunboats for the United States government in 1813 is probably incorrect, as he became financially embarrassed in 1807, and was obliged to dispose of his real estate and personal property.§

At the close of the Revolutionary war, Jacob Coffin was engaged in ship-building at or near Moggaridge's point. April 5, 1781, he bought of Joseph and Samuel Poor land

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 236.

† Essex Deeds, book cxii., leaf 192. ‡ Ibid., book cxxviii., leaf 153; and book cxliii., leaf 178.

§ Essex Deeds, book clxxxi., leaf 226; also, book clxxxv., leaf 113. The gunboats were probably built in the vicinity of Boston. The Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette, published October 15, 1813, makes the following announcement: —

"Arrived Thursday [Oct. 14, 1813], and anchored abreast of the sloop of War Wasp at Horton's wharf, Gun Boat No. 81, Capt Cushman, from Boston via Portsmouth . . . also arrived below, Gun Boat No. 83 Capt Brown. She will come up and anchor alongside her consort next tide. Each of them carry a long 24 pounder and a 12 pound Carronade and 15 men. We understand they are to be stationed here until next spring."

that he retained in his possession for many years, "it being part of the Morgarage building yard, so called, adjoining the Towns landing, being one third of what John Morgarage, John Poor 3rd & Joshua Pilsbery, Jun, purchased of Joseph Ramack." *

Ten years later, Orlando B. Merrill bought about an acre of land, "with dwelling house and other buildings thereon," on the northwesterly side of the ship-yard owned and occupied by Jacob Coffin. He built there, in company with his brothers Nathan and Jonathan Merrill, several ships, brigs, and schooners.† He was the inventor of the water-line model, from which working plans were then, and are now, taken and used in the construction of vessels. A model made by Mr. Merrill in 1794 was presented to the New York Historical Society in 1853.

In the Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette, published July 27, 1798, is the following notice: —

U. S. Brig. Pickering commanded by Jonathan Chapman, sailed for Boston to take in her guns and complement of men. She will carry 14 guns and 70 men, and was built by the Messrs Merrill, who deserve credit for the punctual manner in which the work was executed.

The builders gave bonds, in the sum of ten thousand dollars, to construct the vessel in ninety days; and before the time expired she was ready for sea.

Owing to the disturbed political condition of Europe and the military successes of Napoleon in Austria and in Italy, American vessels engaged in the foreign trade were liable to capture by French privateers. They were frequently seized and confiscated for carrying merchandise considered "contraband in time of war."

In order to protect the crews and cargoes of the ships built in Newbury near the close of the eighteenth century, they were armed and equipped with guns and ammunition. The Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette announced Friday, August 23, 1799, the launch of the ship "Massachusetts" on Tuesday preceding the date of publication, as follows: —

* Essex Deeds, book cxl., leaf 2.

† Nathan and Jonathan Merrill bought land near Moggaridge's point August 16, 1798. (See Essex Deeds, book clxiii., leaf 196.)

The ship is six hundred tons, designed for the East India trade and fitted to carry twenty four guns. She was built by Capt O. B. Merrill whose skill as a naval architect is generally acknowledged.

Ship-yards occupied almost every available site between Muzzey's lane and Bartlett's cove at that date, and they were frequently overcrowded with work.

Old inhabitants of the town can remember when there have been a hundred vessels building at one time along the bank of the river on the Newbury side below the [Essex Merrimack] Bridge.*

The shape of these vessels, and the number of masts and sails with which they were provided, varied according to circumstances. Ships, barks, brigs, schooners, sloops, and ketches were built to meet the demand of the trade in which they were to be employed. The style of rig prevalent at that time is shown in the photographic engraving, reproduced on the next page, from the second edition of "The Practical Navigator," published by Edmund M. Blunt, of Newburyport, in the year 1800.†

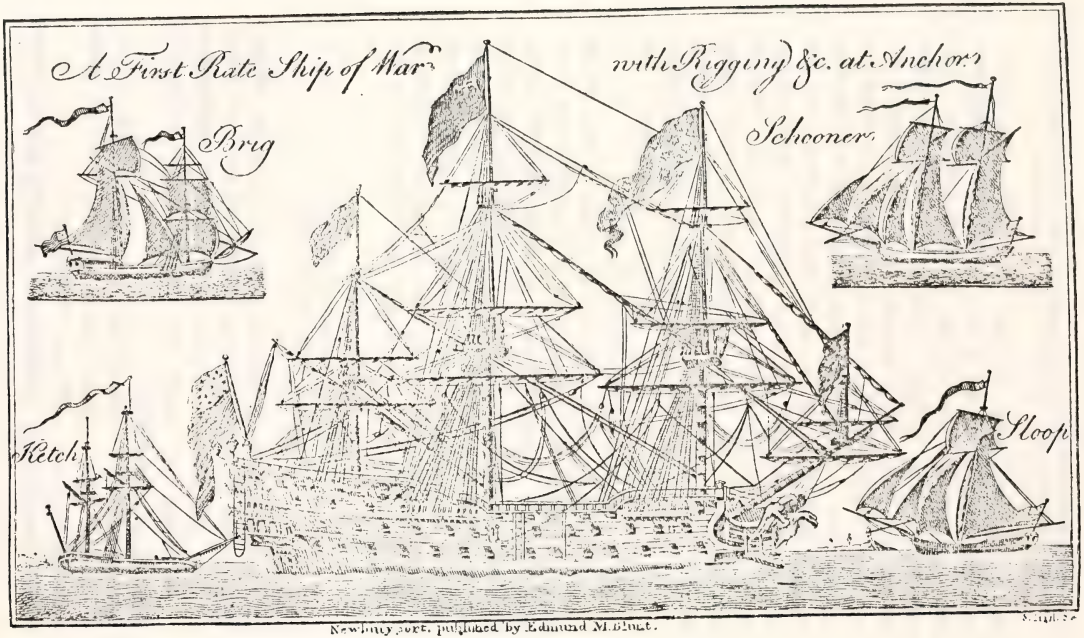
In 1807, a portion of the Moggaridge yard was leased to Mr. Elisha Briggs, a native of Pembroke, who had been engaged in ship-building in Medford, Mass. In 1809, Mr. Briggs purchased land and erected a house at the foot of Pillsbury's lane, now Ashland street, Newburyport, where he resided until he purchased of the heirs of Isaac Green Pearson, in 1821, "a certain river lot of land in Newbury, in the county of Essex, with a wharf, dwelling house and other buildings thereon at the bottom of Pilsbury street so called." ‡ After that date, he occupied the dwelling-house, and used the land adjoining for a ship-yard. During the twenty-five or

* History of Newburyport, by Caleb Cushing (published in 1826), p. 82.

† A copy of "The Practical Navigator" can be seen at the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass.

‡ Essex Deeds, book ccxxix., leaf 153. June 4, 1766, Joseph Pilsbury conveyed to Edmund Sawyer, apothecary, the above-described land, "the same being all the land that belonged to the Estate of my late Father, Josiah Pilsbury, on the north side of said Driftway & landing." (Essex Deeds, book cxxiv., leaf 244.) Edmund Sawyer was evidentiy a bookseller as well as apothecary. The second edition of a sermon entitled "The Nature of Saving Conversion" was printed in Boston in 1770, "and sold by Edmund Sawyer at his house in Newbury." A sermon preached in the Presbyterian meeting-house, Newburyport, "by Abraham Keteltas, A.M.," was printed by John Mycall, in 1777, "for Edmund Sawyer and to be sold at his shop in Newbury."

The land conveyed by Joseph Pilsbury in 1766 to Edmund Sawyer was sold March 5 and April 9, 1802, by Enoch Sawyer and others, to Isaac Green Pearson. (Essex Deeds, book clxxvi., leaf 164.)



SHAPE AND RIG OF VESSELS — 1800

thirty years that Mr. Briggs lived in Newbury, he built seventeen ships, thirteen brigs, and ten schooners.

In 1812, Elias Jackman had a ship-yard near the Essex Merrimack bridge, where he carried on the business of ship-building for several years.

September 18, 1813, the United States sloop-of-war "Wasp" was launched from the ship-yard near Moggaridge's point.* As she entered the water, a bottle of wine was broken over her bow, and the workmen cheered, while her captain shouted,—

> "From the rocks and the sands,
> From the enemies' hands,
> God save the Wasp."

She was 117 feet, 11 inches long on the gun deck, 97 feet, 6 inches on the keel, and measured 509$\frac{3}{95}$ tons, carpenter's measure. Orlando B. Merrill, of Newbury, and William Cross, of Newburyport, were the builders and contractors. They received fifty dollars per ton for the vessel completed and ready for sea, including masts and spars, rigging, joiner's work, blacksmith work, painting, etc., according to the terms of the "contract made with Amos Binney, Agent for the United States Navy Department, at Boston."

Friday evening, February 18, 1814, the officers of the sloop-of-war "Wasp" gave a ball on board the vessel while she was lying at one of the wharves in Newburyport, nearly ready for sea.† She sailed February 22, 1814, for Portsmouth, and arrived there the same day, where she received guns, ammunition, and other naval supplies.‡ Early in the month of May following, she sailed from Portsmouth for the English coast. During the summer, she captured thirteen merchant vessels, destroying twelve of them at sea and sending one into port. In September, 1814, after a severe engagement with an English frigate, it is supposed that she sank, with all her crew, off the island of Teneriffe. Two years later, an agent of the United States government was sent to Newbury with $50,000 prize money and twelve

* Newburyport Herald, September 21, 1813. † Ibid., February 22, 1814.

‡ She was commanded by Capt. Johnston Blakeley, and most, if not all, of her crew were from Newbury and Newburyport.

months' wages, to be distributed among the heirs of the officers and men who were on board the "Wasp" when she was lost.

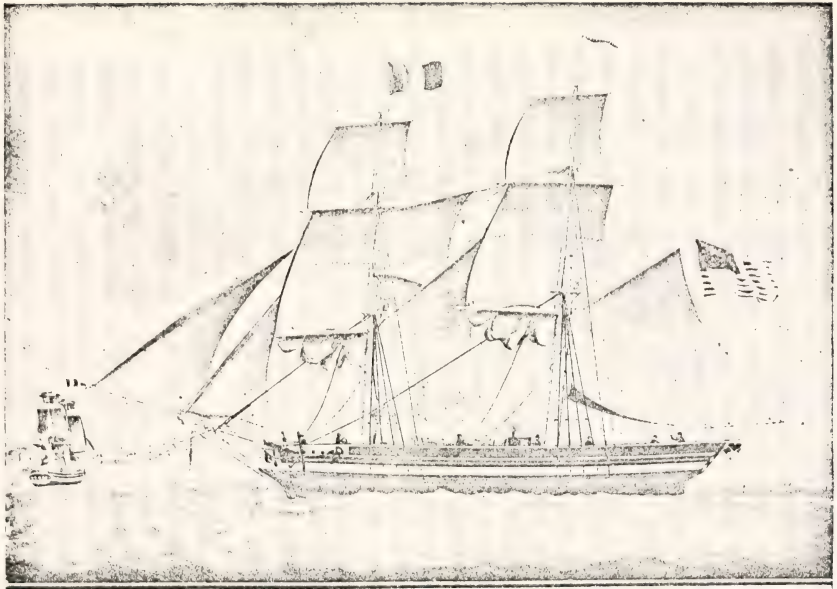
In the "Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette," published Friday, November 5, 1813, "a vessel, about 115 tons burthen, now on the stocks in John B. Coffin's yard" was advertised for sale. At the same date, Stephen Dutton was engaged in ship-building at or near Moggaridge's point. The brig "Calisto," "one of the best built vessels that ever sailed from this [Merrimack] river," and the ship "Jacob Jones," "545 tons register and pierced for 20 guns," both built by Mr. Dutton, were reported as having arrived at Boston, December 7, 1813.*

The brig "Olive," built for Capt. Micajah Lunt and others in Newbury during the summer of 1815, was engaged for many years in the foreign carrying trade. She made many long voyages without meeting with serious disaster, although she was only 157 tons burthen. In the half-tone print on the next page, taken from a water color sketch painted in 1819, the shape of her bow, the cut of her sails, and the style of her rig can be seen and conveniently studied by those who are interested in the history and development of ship-building on the Merrimack river.

February 16, 1814, Elias Cook sold to Joseph Coffin several acres of land in Newbury, "extending to a great rock in Merrimack river"; † and October 16, 1821, Thomas Cook sold "to the said Joseph Coffin" land on Coffin's lane "with a dwelling house thereon."‡ Subsequently, Joseph Coffin bought of Thomas Merrill † and Moses Brown § additional land on Coffin's lane, now Jefferson street, Newburyport, and built several vessels there. A part of this old building-yard was afterwards owned and occupied by Joseph Coffin, jr., who purchased, December 1, 1845, from the estate of Moses Brown, merchant, "one equal and undivided third part of Coffin's ship yard, so called, at or near the foot of Coffin's lane formerly so called." ‖

* Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette.

† Essex Deeds, book ccxxxix., leaf 123. ‡ Ibid., leaf 124. § Ibid., book ccliii., leaf 275. ‖ Ibid., book cclxxiii., leaf 126.



Brig Clara of Newburyport Haagah Saint pilot master entering Sapheira Shoals February 18th 1819

Stephen Jackman, jr., built from 1830 to 1848, in the ship-yard adjoining the Moggaridge yard, twenty-five or thirty vessels, including thirteen brigs for Capt. John N. Cushing, of Newburyport, and two steamers for the coastwise trade,—the "Decatur" and the "Ohio." * June 5, 1840, he bought of Mary J. Hale, wife of Jacob Hale, several acres of land in Belleville, the said estate being at that time "occupied by the said Stephen Jackman, esq., as a ship yard." †

In 1831, John Currier, jr., built, in the yard previously occupied by Capt. Orlando B. Merrill and others, the ship "Brenda," 375 tons register. He afterwards built in the same yard ship "Republic" and bark "Oberlin." In 1833, he purchased five or six acres of land on the easterly side of Poore's lane, now Merrimack court, Newburyport, where he carried on the business of ship-building for fifty years. In April, 1883, he launched the ship "Mary L. Cushing," the last merchant ship built in the state of Massachusetts. ‡

William Currier, previous to 1840, was associated with Mr. Elisha Briggs in ship-building at the foot of Pillsbury's lane, now Ashland street, Newburyport. Subsequently, he formed a partnership with Donald Mackay, who had been employed by John Currier, jr., to superintend the building of the ship "Huntress" in 1839. Messrs. William Currier and Donald Mackay built in 1842, in the ship-yard owned by Mr. Elisha Briggs, the ship "Courier," 380 tons, and the ship "Ashburton," 449 tons register.

In the following year, William Pickett and Donald Mackay built in the Moggaridge yard the ship "St. George," 845 tons register, and in the year 1844 the ship "John R. Skiddy," 980 tons, and the ship "Joshua Bates," 620 tons register. Mr. Mackay removed to East Boston in 1845, and built there many clipper ships. He died September 10, 1880, and was buried in Oak Hill cemetery, Newburyport.

* The steam propeller "Decatur," owned by Albert Wood, John Porter, and John Wood was enrolled at the custom-house, April 16, 1845 and sailed for Boston on the twenty-first. She was advertised in the Newburyport Herald, May 6, 1845, to make regular trips between Newburyport and Boston, "Joseph Bartlett, master." The side-wheel steamboat "Ohio" was built the next year, and was advertised May 20, 1846 to make two trips to Boston weekly, "Jeremiah Lunt, commander."

† Essex Deeds, book cccxix., leaf 173. ‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 282–285.

William Currier and James L. Townsend built in the Elisha Briggs yard the bark "Talisman" in 1843, and the ship "St. Patrick" in 1844. They were engaged in active business until 1856, and during that time launched many famous ships, among them in 1853 the "Highflyer" (1,195 tons) and the "Dreadnaught" (1,414 tons).

December 6, 1849, George W. Jackman, jr., bought of Mary W. and Eleanor Moggaridge land with the buildings thereon, "called the Moggaridge estate." * He also purchased the adjoining ship-yard, previously owned by his brother Stephen Jackman, jr., and in 1850 built his first vessel, the bark "Hollander," 525 tons register. He afterwards built in the same yard several large clipper ships, the United States gunboat "Marblehead," the United States steamer "Ascutney," and the merchant steamships "Ontario" and "Erie."

In 1851, when the ship-yards at Belleville and Joppa † were set off and annexed to Newburyport, ship-building ceased to be one of the industries of Newbury. The business, however, was continued for many years after that date in Newburyport.

* Essex Deeds, book ccccxx., leaf 235.

† Soon after the incorporation of Newburyport in 1764, that part of Newbury between North, now Oakland, street, Newburyport, and the Artichoke river was called Belleville. The name was frequently mentioned in deeds and advertisements early in the nineteenth century. A sermon by Rev. James Miltimore, printed in 1807, has upon the title-page "preached in Belleville in the Fourth Parish of Newbury, at the Dedication of the New Meeting House in that place."

Near the river side between Rolfe's lane, now Ocean avenue, and Cottle's lane, now Bromfield street, the inhabitants of Newbury were mainly occupied in catching and curing fish, and that part of the town was called Joppa, and is still known by that name.

CHAPTER XII.

MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS AND INDIAN WARS.

DECEMBER 13, 1636, all the able-bodied men in the colony of Massachusetts Bay, capable of bearing arms, were divided into three regiments: the first composed of men from Boston, Roxbury, Dorchester, Weymouth, and Hingham; the second, from Charlestown, Newtowne (Cambridge), Watertown, Concord, and Dedham; the third, from Saugus (Lynn), Salem, Ipswich, and Newbury. John Endicott was appointed colonel of the third regiment, and John Winthrop, jr., lieutenant colonel.*

March 9, 1636–7, a watch, or guard, was established for the protection of the inhabitants of Newbury from the attacks of hostile Indians. John Spencer was chosen captain of the company organized at that date.† He was discharged May 17, 1637; and John Woodbridge was appointed "surveyor of armes," and Edward Woodman, "leiftenant." ‡

Captain Spencer was evidently a friend and zealous supporter of Rev. John Wheelwright and Mrs. Anne Hutchinson, and sympathized with them in their religious views and opinions. He became involved in the bitter controversy that prevailed during the summer of 1637; and, on the twentieth day of November following, he was accused of disloyalty to the government, and was ordered by the General Court to be disarmed.§

November 9, 1639, "Edward Grenliff" was appointed ensign of the company.‖ "October 7, 1640, Mr. Woodman of Neweberry [was] released from being leiftenant there." ¶

May 14, 1645 Mr Symon Bradstreete, Capt Dani: Dennison, Leift Edmund Greenleife, Ensigne John Whittingham, Srgent John Remington, wth divrs othr gentlemn of Ipswich, Neweberry, Rowley, Salsberry & Hampton, out of yir care for ye safety of ye publike weale having

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 187. † Ibid., vol. i., pp. 190, 191. ‡ Ibid., vol. i., p. 195. § Ibid., vol. i., p. 212. ‖ Ibid., vol. i., p. 279. ¶ Ibid., vol. i., p. 302.

desired of ye cort to joyn ymselves in one company & to have liberty to exercise ymselves at such times as yir occasions will best p'mit & yt such othr librties & priviledges might be granted ym as ye Cort should think meete, for yir better incuragemt & furtherance in so usefull implimt wch request of theirs being considred of is granted as followeth,

1. Inp. Wee do ordr yt Mr Symon Bradstreete, Capt Denison, Leift Greenleife & ye above named gent & such othrs as they shall from time to time take into ye company, shalbe called ye Millitary Company of Ipswich, Neweberry & Rowley.*

On the eleventh day of November, 1647, the General Court adopted the following order: —

It is conceived meete yt ye towne of Newberry should p'sent anothr cheife military offic^r^ in ye roome of Leift Greenleafe wm they dischargd accords to his request.†

The religious controversy between Rev. Thomas Parker and the members of his church in regard to his rights and duties as minister was at that date so fierce and acrimonious that it divided the inhabitants of the town into two nearly equal parties, and rendered it impossible to agree upon a suitable person to serve as captain. May 10, 1648, "upon the petition of the townes men of Newberry," the General Court passed the following resolution: —

Whereas there is a [controversy] in the towne about the choyce of their captaine, for p'venting of further debate in corte (wch will occasion expence of much p'cious time) & to help on a reconciliation between the now different parties of the towne, they are willing to consent to a new election as aforesaid, so as the towne shall elect two, of wch this Corte may alow one, when they shall thinke fit.‡

May 10, 1648 In answer to the petn of the inhabitants of Newberry about the choyce of a Capt it was ordered, that they should p'cede to a new election & make choyse of two men & p'sent their names, of which the Court might alow one, whom they should thinke fitt: and Major Denison is hereby desired to be p'sent at the election to se it orderly caryed on.§

May 2, 1649 Upon the petition of Newberry Men, it is answered, the petitionrs not haveing observed the Corts ordr in the election of their

*Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 111. In "The Wonder Working Providence of Sions Saviour," the author states that, when the military organization of Essex and Norfolk counties were united in one regiment, "the Band of Nuberry [was] led by Capt Gerrish, with his antient and experienced Lieutenant Greenlife. . . . the major of the regiment [was] Daniel Denison of Ipswich." (Massachusetts Historical Collections, Second Series, vol. viii., p. 55.)

†Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 215. ‡Ibid., vol. ii., p. 238. §Ibid., vol. ii., p. 122.

officers, the Co^rte cannot alow of their Choyce. but the said petition^rs have liberty to p'ceed to a newe election according to ord^r of Co^rte, & to p'sent y^e names of those whom they shall so elect to the County Co^rte at Salem or Ipswich to be confirmed.*

May 23, 1651, the General Court passed the following order: —

In ans^r to the request of the towne of Newberry itt is ordered that M^r W^m Gerrish shall be their Captaine, and John Pike their leftennant and that the said towne shall goe to a new elecc̃on for an ensigne when they see meete.†

October 14, 1651 Whereas it was ordred, the last session of this Court, that the towne of Newbery should goe to a new election for theire ensigne, in respect the last choyce was not cleare, which accordingly they haue done & haue legally made choyce of Benjamin Sweate, which, uppon theire request, this Court doth aproue of for y^t place & hereby confirms him therin.‡

Mr. William Gerrish, having been elected "lieutenant of the Troop of horse for Essex," was confirmed in that office by the county court held at Ipswich, March 27, 1649.§ Some question having arisen in regard to the validity of the election, the subject was brought to the attention of the General Court May 26, 1658.

In ans^r to the petition of the inhabitants of Newbury &c humbly craving that they might haue the bennefitt of the law that no man should haue com̃and of the horse & ffoote both, that Capt Gerrish may be required to desert the horse & wholly attend the ffoote, or attend the horse & medle no more w^th the ffoote, that so they may be exer̃ by him vpon whom they must depend in time of neede, i.e. theire left^nnt allowed & approved of by the Court. The Courte Judgeth it meete to graunt their request.‖

On the same day, John Emery, John Webster, and several other inhabitants of Newbury were ordered "to appeare before the General Court in October next, to answer w^t is laid ag^t them"; and Henry Short, Richard Kent, Richard Knight, Nicholas Noyes, and Anthony Somerby were ordered to attend as witnesses.

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 274. † Ibid., vol. iv., part i., p. 47. ‡ Ibid., vol. iii., p. 254.

§ Ipswich Court Records, vol. i., p. 14 c.

‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 341.

October 19, 1658 the Court having heard the case relating to the military company petiĉon of Newbury, preferred by Jno Emory, Senr who, wth his sonnes, John Emery, Junr & Jno Webster & Solomon Keyes, haue binn so busy & forward to disturbe the peace of the place by their actings in seuerall respects & occationed much trouble to this court in refference thereto, Judg it meete to order that the said John Emory, Senr, Jno Emery, Junr, Jno Webster & Solomon Keyes be seuerally admonished to beware of the like sinfull practizes for time to come, wch this court will not beare: and that they pay the seuerall chardges of theire neighbors at the last Court and this, in coming for releife from such under courses. Costs allowed in all, was fower pounds, eight shillings & ffees.*

Notwithstanding this order of the General Court, military discipline and efficiency was seriously impaired by the dissensions and disagreements that continued to disturb the peace and harmony of the church; and May 19, 1669, the subject was again brought to the attention of the deputies, assembled in Boston, and the following vote was then passed: —

In consideration of the distracĉons of the military company in Newbury for the better composure & prevention of the increase thereof Major Generall Leueret & Major Dennison are hereby desired & impowered to inquire into the grounds thereof vpon the place & to doe what to them shall seeme meet & necessary for a peaceable settlement, till next session of this court.†

After many unsuccessful attempts to harmonize the conflicting views and opinions that distracted the church, a temporary reconciliation was effected and military officers elected, who were confirmed by the following vote: —

May 31, 1670 This court hauing left it to the care of [John Leverett and Daniel Dennison], Major generalls, to make temporary prouission for military officers at Newbury, who did appoint Archelaus Woodman to be left & Stephen Greenleafe ensigne to the sajd company, which sajd appointment being satisfactory to this court they are hereby confirmed & allowed and are to haue comissions accordingly.‡

Daniel Pierce, jr., was chosen sergeant, and Joseph Pike, corporal, at a meeting of the company, held December 14, 1674;§ and October 7, 1678, the General Court appointed

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 362. † Ibid., vol. iv., part ii., p. 425.
‡ Ibid., vol. iv., part ii., p. 454. § Town of Newbury Records.

"Daniel Pearse Captaine to the ffoote Company in Newberry." *

In 1680, an effort was made to divide the soldiers of Newbury into two companies, and form them, with other companies from Rowley, Bradford, Andover, Topsfield, Salisbury, Amesbury, and Haverhill, into a regiment under the command of Major-general Dennison.† In order to facilitate the organization of these two military companies in Newbury, the General Court ordered, May 16, 1683,

> . . . that Thomas Noyce be captaine of the second company, Trystram Coffyne, leiftenn^{t} & Jacob Tappin, ensigne & that comissions goe out accordingly.‡

The subject was again considered by the deputies February 13, 1683–4, when the following vote was passed: —

> It is ordered that Major Saltonstall, wth the deputy of Newbery, take care forthwith to make division of the souldjers of Newbery into two companjes in as aequall a manner as they can. and that Cap^{t} Peirce & his comission officers shall haue the first choyce.§

The cavalry, or mounted dragoons, in Essex county were also reorganized.

> February 13, 1683–4 The Court, considering that the troope belonging to Newbury & Rowley is not yet compleated with comission officers doe, therefore, appoint, M^{r} Richard Dumer captaine, Thomas Lambert, left, & Henry Short cornet of sd troope.‖

At that date the conflict between King Charles II. and the General Court, in regard to the rights and duties of the freemen of the colony of Massachusetts Bay was serious and alarming. It was considered advisable to restore the cross that John Endicott had cut from the flag in 1634. May 31, 1684, Capt. Thomas Noyes, of Newbury, was ordered by Maj. Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, "to provide a flight of colours for the foot company, y^{e} ground field or flight whereof is to be green, with a red cross with a white field in y^{e} angle, according to the antient custome of our own English nation, and the English plantations in America and our own

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 212. † Ibid., vol. v., p. 295. ‡ Ibid., vol. v., p. 409. § Ibid., vol. v., p. 431. ‖ Ibid., vol. v., p. 432.

practice in our ships and other vessels. The number or bullets to be put into the colours for distinction, may be left out at present without damage in the making of them." *

October 23, 1684, the High Court of Chancery in England entered a decree vacating and annulling the charter of the colony. May 29, 1685, Archelaus Woodman asked to be discharged from the office of lieutenant in "Capt Daniel Pierces company." Stephen Greenleaf was chosen lieutenant; and Nathaniel Clark, "the oldest sergent in the company," was elected ensign.†

After the appointment of Sir Edmund Andros governor of New England, the military companies of Newbury were in a disorganized condition. Meetings for the election of officers were discontinued, and military drills were abolished, by order of the governor and council. April 18, 1689, Governor Andros was seized and imprisoned in Boston. A few months later, he was sent to England for trial.

July 1, 1689, the inhabitants of Newbury voted "that all our Milletery officers that were in comission upon May 12, 1686 do take ye care and conduct of us in peace and war . . . until we shall have time and opportunity for a farther choyce." ‡ Vacancies were filled with commendable promptness, and the following notices were sent to Hon. Simon Bradstreet, who had, in the mean while, been elected chief magistrate of the provisional government organized in Boston.

To the honoured Governour and Counsell of the Massachusetts Colony for Newengland

These are to signifie that the troop belonging to Newbury and Rowly being duly Convened for that end; they did by theyre votes then given in nominate Liftenant Steaven Greenleafe Junr to be Captin of sd troop And quartermaster Daniel Wicom for a lieutenant & Corporall Jonathan Moores to be Cornett; And John Peirson Junr to be ye quartermaster; desiring that these persons by them nominated may be allowed and

* Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 141. Judge Sewall was evidently in sympathy with the ministers and magistrates who objected to the use of the cross, as savoring of idolatry or popery. In his diary, under the date of August 20, 1686, he wrote, "I was and am in great exercise about the Cross to be put into the Colours, and afraid if I should have a hand in 't whether it may not hinder my Entrance into the Holy Land."

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. lxx., p. 138. ‡ *Ante*, p. 209.

Confirmed In the respective places to have the conduct of this troop July y^e^ 8^th^ 1689

Attest JOSEPH PIKE *Clerk of y^e^ troop.**

The 2^d^ December 1690 the foot company under my command met and for as much as, by the providence of god, Lieutenant Stephen Greenleaf & Ensign Nathaniel Clark are deceased, they chose M^r^ Cutting Noyse Lieutenant and Mr. Joseph Knight Ensign desiring the Honourable Court to allow them DANIEL PIERCE, *Cap^t^*

consented to by the deputies and Governour.*

The 2^nd^ december 1690 The troop In Newbury under y^e^ command of Cap^t^ Stephen greenleaf being met together by order of s^d^ Cap^t^ they did Nominate Corporal Daniel Lunt to be quartermaster of y^e^ troop.

Attest JOSEPH PIKE *Clerk of ye troop.*

consented to.*

When the new charter was granted, and the province of Massachusetts Bay was established, in 1692, the General Court, by a special act, provided for the reorganization of the militia. All the male inhabitants of Newbury between sixteen and sixty years of age, except ministers, justices of the peace, schoolmasters, and a few other persons, who were exempt by law, were required to do military duty, and, unless legally excused, were compelled to attend annual musters, armed and equipped with muskets, powder, and shot.

After the adoption of the Federal constitution, Congress provided for the enrolment of the militia in the several states. For more than fifty years the law remained in force; but it gradually fell into disuse, and was finally repealed.

At the present time, the military organizations of the state of Massachusetts are composed of volunteers who serve without compulsion, not gratuitously, but for wages that can hardly be considered remunerative. The old-fashioned militia companies have passed away, and none of the new organizations have been formed within the present limits of the town of Newbury.

THE PEQUOT WAR.

At a special session of the General Court held April 18, 1637, it was ordered that "the warr against the Pecoits . . . should bee seriously p'secuted"; and one hundred and sixty

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxvi., p. 238.

men were chosen out of the several towns, and enrolled for this service.

The Pequot country extended from the Mystic to the Connecticut river, a distance of about thirty-five miles, and from Long Island sound inland about sixty miles.

The colony of Connecticut organized a company of ninety men, under the command of Capt. John Mason, and called upon the colonies of Massachusetts and Plymouth for aid. Arms and ammunition were provided as speedily as possible; and, May 17, 1637, Israel Stoughton was elected captain of the Massachusetts company. Eight men were armed and equipped in the town of Newbury for this service.

On the twenty-sixth day of May following, the Connecticut troops attacked and burned a fortification of the Pequots on the Mystic river. More than six hundred Indians perished in the fire or by the sword. Those who escaped were subsequently overtaken near New Haven; and all but about seventy of the bravest — who, protected by the darkness, managed to steal away unobserved — surrendered to Capt. Stoughton.

PASSACONNAWAY.

In September, 1642, the inhabitants of the colony of Massachusetts Bay were greatly disturbed by the report that the Indians from the Hudson to the Penobscot rivers had combined to make war upon them. Gov. Winthrop hastily summoned the magistrates and deputies to a special session of the General Court, and ordered that all Indians within the limits of the colony should be disarmed. A warrant was accordingly sent to Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury "to disarm Passaconnaway who lived by Merrimack." *

The Pennacooks occupied territory beyond Pentucket (Haverhill), and were the most powerful tribe in that region. Passaconnaway was their leader and chieftain, "the great Sachem of all the tribes that dwelt in the valley of the Merrimack."

Forty armed men attempted to execute the order, but the

* Winthrop's History (edition, 1853), vol. ii., p. 96.

autumn rains and other difficulties prevented. "They could not go to his wigwam, but they came to his son's and took him, which they had warrant for, and a squaw and her child which they had no warrant for." * On their way to Newbury, they led Passaconnaway's son "in a line, but he taking an opportunity, slipped his line and escaped from them."

Fearing that the Indians would be exasperated by these proceedings, the General Court considered it advisable to surrender the captives.

[September 8, 1642] an order was sent to Leift Greenleafe, or in his absence to Mr Woodman, for sending home the Indian woman & child from Newberry & to send to Passoconnaway for satisfaction.†

"Sergent John Leveret & Sergent Edwd Hutchinson" were instructed to go with guides and interpreters to the Indians living in the vicinity of the Mystic river, and explain to them why the order to disarm Passaconnaway and others had been issued.

You are to informe them of or true intent in disarming the Indians neare us & that wee meane to render them their armes againe when wee are satisfied of their innocensy & that what was done to Passaconnaway his sonne, etc., was through his owne p'vocation & not by any order from us (for wee intended only to speake wth him) & that wee have given order to have his squa & papoose to bee sent whom to him againe.‡

September 27, 1642, the General Court ordered that all Indian arms should be restored to their former owners, and that Passaconnaway should be satisfied. What means were taken to soothe his anger and regain his confidence is uncertain, but he evidently became a steadfast friend.

May 29, 1644 Passaconnaway & his sonnes offering & desiring to come under this government, according to such articles as Cutshamache & others have formerly bene accepted, they were accepted & he & one of his sonnes subscribed the articles, & he undertooke for the other.§

* Winthrop's History (edition, 1853), vol. ii., p. 96.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 23. ‡ Ibid., p. 24. § Ibid., p. 73.

KING PHILIP'S WAR.

At the beginning of King Philip's war, the Essex county regiment was composed of organized military companies from the following named towns, under the command of Major Daniel Denison: —

Ipswich	Capt Daniel Denison
	Lieut Samuel Appleton
Salem (First company)	Capt Joseph Gardner
	Lieut John Price
Salem (Second company)	Capt John Corwin
	Lieut Richard Leach
Newbury	Capt William Gerrish
	Lieut John Pike
Rowley	Capt Samuel Brocklebank
	Lieut Philip Nelson
Marblehead	Lieut Francis Johnson
Andover	Capt Dudley Bradstreet
Lynn	Ensign John Fuller
Beverly	Capt Thomas Lathrop

Mounted horsemen from Salem and Lynn, under the command of George Corwin, captain, Thomas Putnam, lieutenant, and Walter Price, cornet, constituted the first squadron; and a similar number from Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury, under the command of John Appleton, captain, and John Whipple, cornet, were organized as the second squadron of Essex county troopers.*

From the Suffolk, Middlesex, and Essex county regiments, men were drawn for special service against the Narragansett Indians. They were formed into companies, and officers chosen subject to the approval of the General Court. In the first campaign, the soldiers were mostly from Boston and the towns in that vicinity. They received marching orders June 26, 1675; and the twenty-ninth day of that month was appointed by the governor a day of fasting, humiliation, and prayer, for the confession of sins, and for the humble supplication of Divine Providence for help to overcome and subdue the hostile Indians.

* "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), p. 471.

August 5, 1675 There were prest for the Countreys Service to go against the Indians,

Steven Greenleaf	Thomas Smith
John Toppan	Caleb Richardson
Daniel Rolf	John Hobbs
Daniel Button	John Wheeler

and Henry Bodwell, nine men and fourteen days provisions, and 23 horses with sadles & bridles.*

August 6, 1675 There were prest

Jacob Adams,	Edmund Moores
William Sawyer,	Augustine John
Zachary Davis,	Samuel Stevens

Edward Ordway and fourteen days provisions.*

These men were drawn from the enrolled militia of Newbury for service in the second campaign in Connecticut. They formed, with other men from Essex county, the company commanded by Capt. Thomas Lathrop, of Beverly, in the engagement fought with the Indians, August 25, 1675, "at Sugar Loaf Hill, about ten miles above Hatfield." In that engagement, several members of the company were slain; and among them was John Plummer, of Newbury.†

August 27, 1675 There was prest again:

John Whittier	Richard Breyer
Thomas Chase	Joseph Poore
Thomas Harris	Joseph Richardson

Mathew Grove and fourteen days provision.*

It is probable that all, or nearly all, the men drawn from Newbury, on the fifth, sixth, and twenty-seventh of August, whose names are given above, were engaged in the disastrous conflict at Muddy Brook bridge September 18, 1675.

A considerable quantity of wheat being preserved in stacks at Deerfield, it was deemed expedient to have it threshed and brought down to Hadley. Capt. Lathrop and his company volunteered to proceed to Deerfield and protect the convoy. . . . The company, consisting of eighty men, arrived safely at Deerfield, threshed the wheat, placed it in eighteen wagons, and while on their return through South Deerfield, as they were stopping to gather grapes, which hung in clusters in the

* Town of Newbury Records.

† "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), p. 130.

forest that lined the narrow road, they were surprised by an ambuscade of Indians who poured upon them a murderous fire. Hubbard states that not above seven or eight of Captain Lathrop's company escaped.*

Sergt. Thomas Smith, Samuel Stevens, John Hobbs, and Daniel Button, of Newbury, were among the slain. John Toppan was wounded in the shoulder, but concealed himself in the bed of a brook, nearly dry, by pulling grass and weeds over his body, and thus escaped capture; though several times the Indians are said to have stepped over him. Henry Bodwell had his left arm broken; but with his right hand he siezed his musket, and, swinging it above his head, forced his way to a place of safety, although nearly overpowered by the Indians. Several other men from Newbury were probably killed or seriously injured in this conflict, but their names are not known.†

September 30, 1835, many of the prominent citizens of the state assembled at Deerfield to commemorate this tragic event. Hon. Edward Everett delivered an interesting and eloquent address, describing in detail the memorable incidents of that disastrous conflict. Three years later, a monument was erected near the centre of the village of Muddy Brook, about thirty rods, in a southerly direction, from the meeting-house in that place, bearing the following inscription: —

ERECTED AUGUST 1838

ON THIS GROUND CAPT THOMAS LATHROP AND EIGHTY MEN UNDER HIS COMMAND, INCLUDING EIGHTEEN TEAMSTERS FROM DEERFIELD, CONVEYING STORES FROM THAT TOWN TO HADLEY, WERE AMBUSHED BY ABOUT 700 INDIANS, AND THE CAPTAIN AND SEVENTY SIX MEN SLAIN SEPT. 18TH 1675.‡

Capt. Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, was appointed, September 24, 1675, to take command of a company of one hundred men to protect the colony against the depredations of the Indians. Newbury was required to furnish men and provisions for this service.

Sept 23, 1675 there was prest againe Edmund Young and John Nash and two days provisions.§

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 388.

†"Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), pp. 136–139. ‡Ibid., p. 140.

§Town of Newbury Records.

Sept 27, 1675 there was prest againe Isaac Ilsly, Joseph Mooreing Joseph Musgrove, Hugh Pike Samuell Brabrooke and ten days provision.*

Sept 29, 1675 Capt John Wayts gave in a Receit that Richard Kents man of Newbury was prest for the countryes service & 23 horses & sadles more was prest for the countrys service by virtue of a warrant from the Major Generall.*

Capt. Appleton, with the company under his command, was ordered to report to Major John Pynchon, commander-in-chief in the county of Hampshire. The Indians were gathered in great numbers on the west side of the Connecticut river; and the inhabitants of Hadley, Hatfield, Northampton, and Springfield, were in constant fear of an attack. October 5, 1675, Major Pynchon, with Capts. Appleton and Sill, and a force of one hundred and ninety men, marched from Hadley to Springfield, in order to prevent, if possible, the threatened destruction of the last-named town. Upon their arrival at Springfield, they found that the Indians had set fire to more than fifty dwelling-houses and barns, and were then concealed in the swamps and thickets of the neighborhood. It was impossible to pursue and destroy them, and the troops were ordered to remain on guard for several days near the centre of the town.

The inhabitants of Newbury were greatly alarmed by the reports that reached them of depredations committed by the Indians during this war. On the fifth day of October, 1675, an unsuccessful attempt was made to secure an appropriation, to be used in fortifying the meeting-house.

It was also voted whether the Towne are willing to be at the charg to buy a couple of field peices about 700 or 800 weight apeice & it past on the affirmative.*

Major Pynchon, having resigned his position as commander-in-chief of the military forces in the county of Hampshire, Captain Appleton was promoted to the rank of major, and placed in charge of the troops assembled there. He assumed command October 12, 1675, and on that day marched at the head of his troops from Springfield to Hadley. A day or two

*Town of Newbury Records.

later, he crossed the Connecticut river to Hatfield, and on the nineteenth day of October defeated with great slaughter a large number of Indians, who had gathered there for the purpose of capturing or burning the town.

When the expedition against the Indian fort at Narragansett was decided upon, Major Samuel Appleton was appointed to the command of the Massachusetts forces. The town of Newbury was called upon to furnish its proportion of the men needed. December 6, 1675, the following persons were impressed for service in that expedition: —

Jonathon Clarke	Christop Cole
Daniel Somerby	Henry Poore
Samuell Poore	William Sawyer
Cornelius Davis	John Harvy
Nicholas Rawlins	John Sheepard
Christop: Bartlet	Samuel Lowle
Daniel Rolfe	Christop[r] Tenison
Thomas Rogers	Steven Sweet
George Mooyer	Edward Ordway
John Stratton	Isaac Ilsly
Edmund Browne	John Wheeler
Jonathon Emery	Morgan Jones.*

On the ninth day of December, 1675, the troops were mustered on Dedham plain; and the next day took up their line of march for Rhode Island, arriving at Smith's garrison, Wickford, on the evening of the twelfth. After several days spent in scouting and skirmishing, they marched on the eighteenth to Pettisquamscott, where they met the Connecticut forces, under the command of Major Treat.

. . . they were forced to bivouac in the open air in a driving snow storm during the night; Bull's Garrison-house at that place having been burned by the Indians but a few days before. At day break next morning they took up their march over the rough country through the deepening snow, each man carrying his own arms, rations, etc. In this march the Massachusetts division led; Plymouth held the centre and Connecticut the rear. This army, the largest and best organized that had ever been in the field in the American Colonies, arrived about one o'clock, P.M. at the borders of the great swamp where the Indians had

* Town of Newbury Records.

gathered in great numbers and had built a strong fortification and now awaited the attack.*

After a severe battle of three hours, the fort was captured and burned. Many of the Indians escaped into the woods, but a large number were consumed in the flames. In Major Samuel Appleton's division, four men were killed, among them Daniel Rolfe, of Newbury, and eighteen men were wounded, five of them from Newbury; namely, Isaac Ilsley, William Standley, Daniel Somerby, Jonathan Emery, and John Harvey.†

The Indians were greatly disheartened by this disaster, and soon divided up into small bands, making raids from time to time on the defenceless inhabitants of Hadley, Hatfield, and other frontier towns. January 2, 1676, Newbury was called upon to furnish an additional number of men to assist the authorities of Massachusetts in putting a stop to these outrages. The following persons were evidently drawn by lot for this service; but it is somewhat uncertain whether they were sent, with other Massachusetts troops, to protect the towns on the Connecticut river: —

Stephen Greenleaf
John Whittier
Henry Bodwell
Richard Bryer
Thomas Rawlison
James Mirrick
Moses Little.‡
Samuell Hills
Thomas Stevens
William Randall
Thomas Silver
Edward Young
Joseph Richardson

In a skirmish at the "Upper Falls" of the Connecticut river, Capt. William Turner, in command of a company of one hundred and fifty men, was shot while attempting to cross the Green river not far from the town of Hatfield. The grant of a township of land, as near as might be to the scene of the "Falls Fight," was made to all the officers and soldiers who were engaged therein. Among the persons named in the list of claimants was John Chase, of Newbury,§ who filed a certificate that he was in the expedition with Capt.

* "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), pp. 153 and 154.
† Ibid., p. 156. ‡ Town of Newbury Records.
§ Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxiv., p. 610; also, "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (second edition), p. 252.

Turner, and helped to bury him, and that Samuel Coleby, late of Amesbury, deceased, was with him.*

King Philip, with a few of his faithful followers, was surprised by a scouting party, under the command of Benjamin Church, and shot through the breast, August 12, 1676. He was instantly killed; but the war was continued for several months in a desultory way by hostile Indians in the vicinity of the Connecticut river, and for a year or more by the eastern tribes, under the command of their skilful chieftain, Mugg, otherwise known as Mogg Megone, on the banks of the Kennebec and Penobscot rivers.

The half-tone print on the opposite page is reproduced from an engraving by Paul Revere, published in the second edition of the History of King Philip's War, by Thomas, son of Col. Benjamin Church.†

From the books and accounts kept by John Hull, treasurer of the colony of Massachusetts bay, it appears that the wages due the soldiers enlisted during King Philip's war were paid to their families by the authorities of the town where they resided. The amount so paid was credited to the town in the colonial "rates" or taxes. Under the date of August 24, 1676, is the following entry: —

Newbury-Towne Cr. By Sundry Rcepts viz. . . .	21. 05. 02
Jonathan Emery pd as per assignment	05. 09. 00
Edmund Browne	03. 01. 08
Henry Sparkes	03. 12. 00
John Wilcott	04. 10. 00
Richard Browne	03. 03. 04
Edward Ordway ‡	01. 09. 02

November 24, 1676, the several amounts due the following named persons were credited to the town of Newbury: —

Samuel Lowell	03. 00. 00
George Moyer	02. 14. 00
Moses Little	01. 10. 10
John Mitchell	01. 10. 10

* "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), p. 249.

† A copy of Church's History containing the engraving by Paul Revere is in the library of the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass.

‡ "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), p. 371.



PHILIP. *KING* of Mount Hope.

Thomas Silver	01. 10. 10
Joshua Richardson	01. 00. 00
Timothy Noyce	01. 04. 00
Peter Uter	01. 04. 00
Jeremiah Davis	01. 04. 00
Joseph Little	01. 18. 00
Joseph Poore	01. 04. 00
Robert Cham	04. 04. 00
Henry Lucus *	04. 04. 00
Dec 24, 1676 John Wheeler	04. 04. 00
Feb 24, 1676–7 Matthew La Greve *	08. 07. 00

It is possible that some of the persons named in the above list were not inhabitants of the town of Newbury, but were enlisted and counted as a part of its quota, and so credited by the treasurer of the colony in making up his accounts.

From August 5, 1675, to January 2, 1676, sixty-eight men and forty-six horses were impressed for military service in Newbury,— an unusually large number, when it is considered that the ratable polls of the town at that time were not over one hundred and sixty. Only a few persons holding official positions were exempt by law from the drafts ordered by the colonial authorities; but occasionally a petitioner to the General Court, engaged in some useful and important occupation, was allowed to remain at home and attend to his daily duties undisturbed. One of the orders passed by the General Court October 17, 1676, is as follows: —

> In ans^r to the petic̃on of Samuel Plum̃er, ferryman at Newbury, it is ordered that himself & his son Ephraim be freed from the presse.†

Early in the month of May, 1677, the governor and council of the colony of Massachusetts Bay decided to send a force of two or three hundred men to strengthen the garrison at Winter Harbor, York Harbor, and Wells, Me. On the twenty-second day of June, Benjamin Swett was appointed captain, and placed in charge of the expedition. He landed at Blackpoint garrison house July twenty-eighth; and the next morning, with all the troops under his command, he made an attack

* "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), p. 450.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. v., p. 127.

upon the Indians, who had gathered in large numbers in that vicinity, but was defeated and obliged to order a hasty retreat. "Having received many wounds, he was at last surrounded and overpowered by the foe, and fell, not far from the garrison-house, still fighting."

Capt. Swett was a son of John Swett, one of the early settlers of Newbury. He came with his father from England previous to 1642; and in November, 1647, he married Hester, daughter of Peter Weare. From 1655 to 1662, in company with his brother-in-law, Nathaniel Weare, he carried on the farm of Rev. John Woodbridge, near "the trayneing green" in Newbury. He removed to Hampton about the year 1663; and his family lived there when he was killed at Blackpoint, July 29, 1677.*

In January, 1701–2, a petition, signed by

Joshua Richardson	Sam^{ll} Hill
Samuel Poor	Joseph Richardson
Thomas Chace	Caleb Richardson
Hugh Pike	Penuel Titcomb
Thomas Thurlo	Jonathan Emery
and John Chace	

was presented to the inhabitants of the town of Newbury, humbly praying that a thousand acres of land might be granted and laid out to the soldiers who served in the Indian wars of 1675, 1676, and 1677.†

It will be remembered that when, on December 10th, 1675, the forces of Massachusetts Colony were mustered on Dedham Plain, to march against the Narraganset fort, a proclamation was made to the soldiers, in the name of the Governor, that, "if they played the man, took the fort, and drove the enemy out of the Narraganset country, which is their great seat, they should have a gratuity of land, besides their wages."‡

No decisive action seems to have been taken in regard to the settlement of these claims for many years; although the General Court appointed a committee in 1727 to survey and lay out a tract of land, eight miles square, to be granted the

* "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge, second edition), pp. 43 and 342.
† Town of Newbury Records. ‡ Ibid., p. 406.

officers and soldiers who served in the Narragansett war, and in 1729 appointed another committee to examine and decide upon the validity of the claims presented.

January 19, 1731, the House of Representatives sent to the governor and council an earnest and eloquent message, advocating the grant of a tract of land, six miles square, to every one hundred and twenty persons who helped to capture the fort and drive the enemy out of the Narragansett country. This message was favorably considered by both branches of the provincial government, and definite action taken June 9, 1732. The classification and adjustment of the claims of the soldiers was accomplished with great difficulty and labor. The grantees were divided into companies or societies, according to their residences, if alive, or according to the residences of their legal representatives, if dead.

The soldiers interested in the tract of land on Saco river, subsequently known as township No. 1, now Buxton, Me., "mett at the House of Cap^{t} Joseph Hale in Newbury falls on the first Day of august on the year Annoque Domini 1733."* Joseph Gerrish, esq., was chosen moderator; and a committee was appointed, consisting of Joseph Gerrish, John Hobson, and John Gains, "to vew Som of the unapropreated Lands of this Province in order to Pitch a place for one Township for Said Soldiers."*

February 11, 1733–4, plans were presented to the General Court for the laying out of two townships between the Saco and Pesumpscot rivers, one of these townships to be assigned to the "Ipswich Society," so called, which was made up of claimants residing in Ipswich, Newbury, Rowley, Haverhill, Salisbury, Amesbury, Methuen, Hampton, Greenland, and Berwick.† These plans were approved and consented to by Governor Belcher February 22, 1733–4.

The settlement of the township, owing to its exposed and defenceless condition, was greatly delayed during the French and English wars; but, after the capture of Quebec in 1759, the population slowly, yet steadily, increased. A meeting-

*Proprietors' Records, Narragansett Township No. 1, by Capt. W. F. Goodwin, p. 91.

†The names of these claimants will be found on pp. 413 to 416, inclusive, of the second edition of "Soldiers in King Philip's War" (Bodge).

house was erected in 1761; and, in November of that year, Rev. Paul Coffin, son of Col. Joseph Coffin, of Newbury, was called to the ministry there. He accepted the invitation, and was ordained March 16, 1763.

Mr., afterwards Rev., Silas Moody, born in Newbury May 9, 1742, was the first schoolmaster employed by the inhabitants of "Narragansett Township No. 1." He went there in company with Rev. Paul Coffin August 20, 1761, and soon after opened a school for children, which was well patronized during the fall and winter months of that year. He remained until April or May, 1762, when he returned to Newbury in order to continue his studies for the ministry.

CHAPTER XIII.

FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS.

After the overthrow of the government and the seizure of Sir Edmund Andros, in Boston, April 18, 1689, the Indians, instigated by the French settlers at Quebec, were active in plundering houses and destroying property in all the frontier towns between the Saco and Penobscot rivers. During the following summer, Sir William Phips was appointed by King William and Queen Mary commander-in-chief of all their majesties' forces in New England. He determined to put a stop to the depredations, if possible; and on the twenty-eighth day of April, 1690, he sailed, with a fleet of eight small vessels and seven or eight hundred men, for Port Royal, now Annapolis, N.S., where he attacked and captured, "with little or no resistance," the fort that had been erected there by the French government. He returned to Boston on the thirtieth day of May, and immediately began to make preparations for the acquisition of Canada.

Meanwhile the Indians continued to be troublesome in the neighborhood of Newbury, and the following order was issued August 7, 1690: —

These are in his majesty's name to require all the soldiers belonging to this towne to bring their arms and ammunition to ye meeting house every saboth day and at all other publick meetings, and also they ar required to carry their arms and ammunition with them into meadows and places where they worke, and if any man doe refuse or neglect his dewty as above expressed he shal pay five shillings for every such neglect.

Daniel Pierce *Captain*	Jona Moores *Lieutenant*
Thomas Noyes *Captain*	Jacob Toppan *Ensign*
Steph Greenleaf *Captain*	Henry Somerby *

The expedition under Sir William Phips, consisting of thirty or forty vessels, carrying about two thousand men, sailed from Nantasket on the ninth day of August, 1690, but did not

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 154.

arrive at Quebec until the fifth day of October. Several attempts were made to capture the town, without success; and, tempestuous weather having nearly disabled the vessels and driven some of them ashore, it was considered advisable to re-embark the troops and abandon the enterprise. On their way back to Boston, they encountered head winds and violent storms. Some vessels were blown off the coast, and ultimately arrived in the West Indies. One was lost upon the island of Anticosti, and several were never heard from.

Capt. John March, Capt. Stephen Greenleaf,* Lieut. James Smith,* Ensign William Longfellow,* and Ensign Lawrence Hart, of Newbury, Capt. Philip Nelson, of Rowley, and Capt. Daniel King, of Salem, were among the officers commissioned for service in the expedition to Canada, under the command of Sir William Phips.† A complete list of the men who enlisted in Newbury cannot be given. The muster roll of one company in the Essex county regiment is as follows: —

Capt. John March, Newbury
Lt Stephen Johnson, Andover
Enseigne Lawrence Hart.

John Vie (Ivie ?)	Thomas Barnard
John Browne	Ralph Blagdon
John Davis	John Poor
Edward Bele (Bailey ?)	John Huse
Edward Goodwin	Benjamin Poor
Benjamin Goodrige	Samuel George
Henry Dowe	John Wallingford
John Badger	John Taylor
Thomas Heirs (Ayers ?)	George Everson
Percival Chubb	Samuel Smith
Samuel Austin	Henry Lunt
Richard Kent	John Sweat
Benjamin Kimbal	Thomas Cotton
Joseph Gold	Joseph Andrews
Ephraim Hoit	Nathaniel Crosbey
John Prowse	John Ring.‡

* "Twas Tuesday the 18th of November [1690] that I heard of the death of Capt Stephen Greenleaf, Lieut James Smith, and Ensign Wm Longfellow, Sergt Increase Pilsbury, who with Will Mitchell, Jabez Musgro, and four more were drowned at Cape Britoon on Friday night the last of October." Diary of Samuel Sewall, vol. i., p. 335.

† Society of Colonial Wars' Year Book for 1898, pp. 136 and 137.

‡ Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxx., p. 155; Society of Colonial Wars' Year Book, 1898, p. 173.

In 1739, a township on the westerly side of Merrimack river, "and northerly of and adjoyning to Contoocook," was granted and laid out to the "Soldiers in the expedition to Canada Anno 1690 under the Command of Capt John March, Capt Stephen Greenleaf and Capt Philip Nelson." This township now includes within its limits Bakerstown, Stevenstown, and Salisbury, N.H. The first meeting of the proprietors was held "February 12th 1739 at the House of Mr Tristram Greenleaf in Newbury at ten of the Clock before noon." The following persons, inhabitants of Newbury and Rowley, were granted and allowed a share in the division of this township: —

Capt Stephen Greenleaf	Deacon Joshua Moody	Joseph Gould
Joseph Sage Jnr	Elisha Sweat	John Kent
Caleb Moody	Nathll Clark	John Thurlo
Joseph osgood	Samuel George	Hannah Bolton
Capt John Sargeant	Benja Hoeg	John Badger
Saml Smith Jnr	Jonathan Marsh	Joseph Ilsley
Gideon Lowel	Stephen Chase	Joseph Short
Thomas Huse	John Lunt	Abraham Titcomb
Joseph Pike	James Brown	Stephen Longfellow
Stephen Longfellow	Samuel Bartlet 3rd	Nathaniel Bernard
Capt Thomas Hale	Jeremiah Gutteridge	Capt Thos. Wallingford
John March	Revd William Johnson	Wm Huse
Joseph Davis	Henry Dow	Saml Sargeant
Saml Silver	Robert Savory	Tristram Greenleaf
Eleazer Hudson	Dr. Joseph Hills	Thomas Challis
Jonathan Blaisdell	James Toppon	Danll Bradley
David Bartlet	Peter Ayers	Eleazer Johnson
Lazarus Goodwin	James Anderton	John Littlehale
Edward Emerson	Zachariah Beal	Capt John Sergent
Percival Clark	Ebenezer Stuart	Joseph Holland*

Early in the summer of 1691, a small force under the command of Capt. John March, of Newbury, and Capt. Daniel King, of Salem, was sent to look after the Indians, who had become troublesome in the vicinity of York and Wells. Previous to the departure of these troops, the governor and council of the provisional government of the colony of Massachusetts Bay issued the following order: —

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxiv., pp. 178, 179; Society of Colonial Wars' Year Book, 1898, pp. 174, 175.

Instructions for Captain John March and Capt Daniel King (the like for Capt King & Capt March)

Whereas yourselfs are commissioned to take the conduct of the Soldiers now raised out of the Militia of the Massachusetts Colony for their Majties service against the French and Indian Enemy, to be disposed at yor place of Generall Rendevous into two companys of equal number.

In pursuance of your sd commissions you are to take effectual care that the soldiers under yor conduct be kept under good order and discipline. That the worship of God be daily attended among them in publick prayer morning and evening and reading of Gods holy word as you have opportunity, and to keep an holy rest on the Sabath, so far as the necessity of your service will give leave.

That all disorders, mutinies cursing, swearing, drunkenness, stealing and all manner of Prophaness and wickedness be suppressed and duly punished according to the Rules and discipline of war.

Yor Soldiers being mustered and furnished with Armes and amunition fit for service you are forthwith to advance in search of the Enemy ffrench or Indians, first ranging the Woods about the ffrontiers on the north of Merrimack to clear off any sculking Parties of them and then march further East in pursuit and prosecution of the sd Enemy according as you may receive Intelligence of their Motions, or the most likely places where to find them, and make what spoils you can upon them: also give necessary release and succour as you have opportunity to any Towns Plantations or persons of the English that may be endangered or distressed by the Enemy.

In all yor marchings and encampings be sure to keep out Good Scouts and watches that you be not ambuscaded, surprised or overpowered by the Enemy.

If any of yor Soldiers happen to fall lame or be disabled for Travel you may apply to the next garrisons to have them exchanged. When yor Company happen at any time to be joyned in any Expedition, Let there be no contending for Superiority but let each one be ambitious who shall do the most service for God, their King and Country and as you have opportunity advise with Majr Vaughan, Majr Frost and other Gentlemen of the Provinces of the best Methods to be taken to effect the same and let your diligence and industry appear in action as much as may be.

You are to advise the Governor from time to time of yor proceedings and what success it shall please God to give you

Past and agreed to by the Governor and Council

ISA ADDINGTON, *Secry*.

BOSTON, June 29th, 1691.*

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxvii., leaf 67.

In October, 1691, a small band of Indians appeared in the vicinity of Amesbury, and soon after made an attack upon Haverhill, killing several persons there. The inhabitants of Newbury, Rowley, and Ipswich, were greatly alarmed by this unexpected display of hostility, and presented the following petition November 6, 1691, to the governor and council: —

Whereas by reason of the approach of the common enemy several places are in great & present danger to be daily weakened by their getting over Merrimack river and destroying inhabitants, we humbly petition that there be thirty men kept upon the river from such places as we shall appoint in the town of Newbury up the river to Bradford, and also request that other towns in the county keep a guard from Bradford to Andover.

SAML APPLETON HENRY SOMERBY.
DANIEL EPPS THOMAS NOYES
THOMAS WADE STEPHEN GREENLEAF
and many others.*

November 22, 1691 granted, by the governor & assistants, as many men as needed not exceeding thirty to be selected out of the towns by the superior officers.*

February 5, 1691–2, a party of Indians attacked and burned the town of York. Rev. Shubael Dummer, pastor of the church there, while in the act of mounting a horse at the door of his house, was shot and instantly killed, and his wife and family were taken prisoners. He was the son of Richard Dummer, and was born in Newbury, February 17, 1636.

The new charter, establishing the province of Massachusetts Bay, was granted by King William, October 7, 1691; and Sir William Phips, who was then in England, was appointed governor. He arrived in Boston, May 14, 1692, bringing the charter with him; and during the following summer "he rebuilt and greatly strengthened the fort which Andros had erected at Pemaquid," now Bristol, Me.

The Indians continued to harass and annoy the defenceless towns on the eastern frontier, and in the month of September surprised and killed several persons at Berwick, Exeter, and Dover. On the twenty-third day of October, 1692, a small

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxvii., leaf 207.

number of these hostile savages succeeded in crossing the Merrimack river, and, following a well-trodden path through the woods, appeared suddenly in that part of Rowley now included within the limits of Georgetown, where they made an attack upon a small and unprotected dwelling-house, killing Mr. Benjamin Goodrich (the owner of the house), his wife, and two children.*

Capt. John March, of Newbury, with a company of sixty men, was placed in command of the fort at Pemaquid; and Rev. John Pike, grandson of John Pike, who came from England and settled in Newbury in 1635, was appointed chaplain.† In the summer of 1693, the Indians between the Piscataqua and Kennebec rivers were anxious to conclude a treaty of peace.

July 7, 1693 His Excy acquainted the Council that he had received a Letter from Capn March, Commander of their Majties fort at Pemequid that Edgeremet an Indian Sachem had lately come thither with a flag of Truce, and proposed there might be a Cessation of Armes, and promised to return in a weeks time, with some other Sachems to discourse that matter.‡

At a conference held at Pemaquid on the eleventh day of August, articles of agreement were drawn up and signed by the Indian chieftains assembled there, and by the commissioners appointed by the province of Massachusetts Bay. Hostilities ceased, and peace was maintained for more than a year.

In the month of September, 1695, Capt. Pascho Chubb was appointed commander of the fort in place of Capt. March, who was relieved at his own request.§

October 7, 1695, a party of Indians made an attack on the house of John Brown at Turkey hill in Newbury and carried away nine captives, all women and children.‖ On the fifteenth of March, 1696–7, they burned nine houses in the town of Haverhill, killed several persons, and took away a

* Goodridge Memorial (Sidney Perley), p. 14.
† History of Bristol, Bremen, and Pemaquid (Johnston, 1873), p. 191.
‡ Council Records, vol. vi., p. 293; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 377.
§ History of Bristol, Bremen, and Pemaquid (Johnston), p. 199.
‖ "Ould Newbury," pp. 288, 289.

number of prisoners, among them Mrs. Hannah Dustin, whose remarkable escape from captivity has been frequently described by local historians.

In the summer of 1697, Capt. John March, having been promoted to the rank of "Major," was placed in charge of an expedition to the coast of Maine. He sailed from Newbury in the month of June or July, with five companies of militia, and was afterwards joined by fifty men from Connecticut under the command of Capt. William Whiting. He arrived at York, and sent out scouts to reconnoitre the woods in that vicinity; but, finding no trace of hostile Indians, he re-embarked his troops and sailed for Casco bay, and thence to the mouth of the Damariscotta river, where on the ninth day of September he was fired upon by a small party of Indians lying in ambush. After a brief but severe skirmish, he succeeded in driving the enemy from the field, with the loss of several men on both sides.* Returning to York with his troops, he sent to the lieutenant governor in Boston a letter, informing him of his arrival there and asking for further instructions.

Sept. 14, 1697, His Honour the Lieut Govr laid before the Board a letter which he received by express from Major March the last night from Yorke, advising of his return thither with the Forces under his command from their expedition Eastward with an account of their engagement with the Enemy, French and Indians, supposed to be two hundred in number, and a List of the names of the Officers and Souldiers Slain and wounded in the said engagement, supposing the loss of the side of the Enemy to be as great (if not more) who were beaten off the ground & fled into the Woods, making their escape in their Canoes.

Upon reading whereof his Honour proposed that another expedition might be forthwith formed for further prosecution of the Enemy, and that Colo Gedney, Colo Phillips and Captn Byfield be desired and instructed forthwith to undertake a Journey to Yorke, to visit the army, and to confer and consult with Major March and other Commanders of the wayes and methods for prosecuting the Enemy, and to animate and encourage the same, and that the Government of Connecticut be written to for the continuance of their part of these Forces for some longer time. All which was advised accordingly.†

The term for which the Connecticut soldiers enlisted ex-

* Mather's "Magnalia," vol. ii., book vii., art. xxvi., p. 637.

† Executive Records of the Council, vol. ii., p. 497; Province Laws, vol. vii., p. 571.

pired the last of September; and the commissioners, after consultation with Major March and other commanders of the forces at York, considered it advisable to allow them to return home, and the expedition was abandoned.

On the eleventh day of September, a treaty of peace was signed by representatives of the French and English governments at Ryswick, a village in the Netherlands, a few miles from the Hague, in the province of South Holland; but the fact was not officially made known in Boston until December 10, 1697. By this treaty, a nominal peace between the French and English settlers in this country was established, and maintained for four or five years.

Major John March was probably in command of the fort at Casco bay, May 4, 1702, when another war, called Queen Anne's war, or the war of the Spanish succession, was declared between France and England. Col. Joseph Dudley, who had been appointed governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, assumed the duties of his office in the month of June following. In order to secure the friendship and good will of the Indians on the eastern frontier, Gov. Dudley left Boston on the ninth day of June, 1703, "to go to the Eastward . . . to speak with the Indian Sachems & to endeavor to steady them in the English Interests." *

A treaty of peace was concluded at Casco bay. Presents were distributed, and the conference closed with "dancing, singing and loud acclamations of joy." The Indians declared that nothing could seduce them from their allegiance to the crown of England; for "they were as firm as the mountains, and should continue so, as long as the sun and moon endured." In less than six weeks, however, they attacked the inhabitants of the town of Wells, capturing and killing thirty-nine persons in all, mostly women and children. They destroyed the huts of the fishermen at Cape Porpoise, and surprised the settlers about the stone fort near the falls of the Saco, killing eleven persons and capturing twenty-four.

July 9, 1703, Gov. Dudley sent to the council several letters received "from Casco Bay, Saco and Piscataqua," an-

* Province Laws, vol. viii., pp. 285–288.

nouncing the arrival of a French ship at Mount Desert, for the purpose, evidently, of inducing the Indians in that neighborhood to join with the French forces in making an attack on the English settlements between the Saco and Merrimack rivers. On the eighteenth day of August, the Penacook and Eastern Indians, by and with the advice of the council, were declared to be "Rebels and Enemys against Her Majesty Her Crown and Dignity," and all good subjects were enjoined to treat them as such, "and to do and execute all acts of hostility upon them."

At this time, the French troops with their Indian allies were active in their efforts to drive the English from the territory they inhabited east of the Piscataqua river.

The fort at Casco, or Falmouth,* was held by Major March, with thirty-six men. He had no thought of danger, when three well-known chiefs from Norridgewock appeared with a white flag, and asked for an interview. As they seemed to be alone and unarmed, he went to meet them, followed by two or three soldiers and accompanied by two old men named Phippeny and Kent, inhabitants of the place. They had hardly reached the spot when the three chiefs drew hatchets from under a kind of mantle which they wore and sprang upon them, while other Indians, ambushed near by, leaped up and joined in the attack. The two old men were killed at once; but March, who was noted for strength and agility, wrenched a hatchet from one of his assailants, and kept them all at bay till Sergeant Hook came to his aid with a file of men and drove them off.

They soon reappeared, burned the deserted cabins in the neighborhood, and beset the garrison in numbers that continually increased, till in a few days the entire force that had been busied in ravaging the scattered settlements was gathered around the place. It consisted of about five hundred Indians of several tribes, and a few Frenchmen under an officer named Beaubassin. Being elated with past successes, they laid siege to the fort, sheltering themselves under a steep bank by the water-side and burrowing their way towards the rampart. March could not dislodge them, and they continued their approaches till the third day, when Captain Southack, with the Massachusetts armed vessel known as the "Province Galley," sailed into the harbor, recaptured three small vessels that the Indians had taken along the coast, and destroyed a great number of their canoes, on which they gave up their enterprise and disappeared.†

*Now Portland, Me.

†"A Half-century of Conflict," vol. i., p. 43; also, Penhallow's "Indian Wars" (edition, 4726), pp. 6, 7.

Soon after this encounter with the Indians, Major John March was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel; and at the next session of the General Court he presented the following petition: —

To His Excellency Joseph Dudley, Esq^r.

Captain Generall and Commander in chief of Her Majesty's Province of Massachusetts Bay and the Honorable the Councill, and Representatives in Generall Court Assembled.

The Petition of John March Humbly sheweth

That your Petitioner, in the time of the late Peace with the Indians was constituted the Commander of Her Majesty's Fort at Casco Bay, and manager of the Trade for the Publick with the Indians there, and in order to attend that service forsook his own Habitation in Newbury and Removed his ffamily stock of Cattle and other Estate to the said ffort, by which means, upon the perfidious Breach lately made by that barbarous People, your Petitioner was in utmost Hazard of Losing his life, and by a wonderfull Preservation Escaped the bloody hands of those Infidels, and did actually lose a very Considerable Part of his Estate. to the value of more than Five Hundred Pounds. as is set forth, in an account thereof herewith Presented, which had not been so Exposed, if your Petitioner had not Removed into the way of that Danger to serve the Publick in the said Post.

Your Petitioner therefore humbly Pray's your Excellency and Honours, to Take the Premisses into your consideration and Grant your Petitioner such Compensation & allowance as in your Wisdom shall be Thought meet for one who has sustained so great a losse by means of his being Imploied in a public service, and your Petitioner will be further obliged to your service, and ever to Pray as in Duty bound &c.

John March.

Boston, Nov. 10th, 1703.*

The account presented includes claims for eight oxen, fourteen cows, ten calves, thirty-six swine, twenty-five sheep, five acres of wheat, six acres of peas, fifty bushels of oats, and various articles of furniture and clothing.*

On the twentieth day of November, "A Resolve for allowing and paying fifty pounds out of the Province Treasury to Lieutenant-Colonel John March in consideration of his brave conduct and the wounds he received in the defence of the fort at Casco Bay during the attack by the French and Indian

*Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 312; Massachusetts Archives, vol. lxx., p. 654.

enemy" was passed by the General Court and approved by the governor.*

In the month of October, 1704, Lieut. Col. March presented a petition for compensation for the services of himself and others in repairing and rebuilding the fort at Casco; and "A Resolve for paying one hundred forty-four pounds nineteen shillings and tenpence out of the Province Treasury to the several persons to whom it is due, as set forth in Lieutenant-Colonel John March's account of labor and disbursements on the fort at Casco," † was, after some delay, consented to by Gov. Dudley, February 28, 1704–5.‡

For the encouragement of volunteers, "who being commissioned by his Excellency, set forth and maintain themselves free from the Province charge," the General Court voted, December 2, 1703, that the sum of "fforty Pounds be Allowed, out of the Treasury of this Province for each Scalp of the Indian Enemy, above ten Years of age, which shall be Taken, and brought in as the law Directs"; § and efforts were made to induce the inhabitants of New Hampshire and Massachusetts to volunteer for service, under this law, during the winter months. Military officers were requested to assist in organizing companies and providing snow-shoes and moccasins for the men enlisting for the winter campaign.

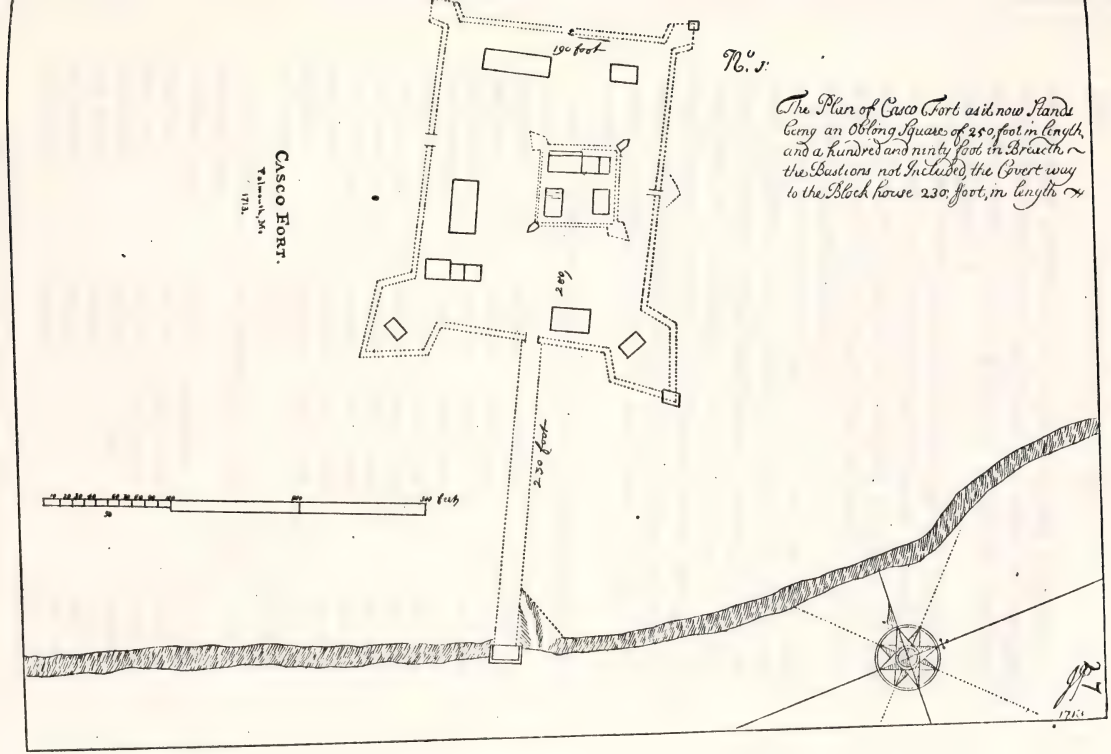
January, 1703–4 Captain Winthrop volunteered his services, but had not had sufficient notice to enable him to enlist volunteers. Colonel John March came in from Hampton to advise the Governor and Council that Lieutenant Joseph Swett had "beat up for volunteers" at Hampton and had the promise of thirty nine or forty men provided with snow shoes and ready to march with the others, if supplied with provisions.‖

November 17, 1704, the General Court passed an "order for increasing to five shillings each, the allowance to persons furnishing themselves with snow shoes and moccasins"; ¶ and on the twenty-second day of June, 1705, the commissary general reported to the governor and council the names of

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 32. † Ibid., vol. viii., p. 108.

‡ "A Plan of Casco Fort as it now stands [1713] being an oblong square of 250 feet in length and a hundred and ninety foot in Breadth — the Bastions not Included — the Covert way to the Block house 230 ffoot in Length," is on file, with other maps and plans, in the Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxxv., p. 27. A reduced copy of the plan is printed on the opposite page.

§ Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 38. ‖ Ibid., vol. viii., p. 318. ¶ Ibid., vol. viii., p. 92.


No. 1.
The Plan of Casco Fort as it now Stands
Being an Oblong Square of 250 foot in Length,
and a Hundred and ninty Foot in Breadth ~
the Bastions not Included the Covert way
to the Block house 230 foot, in Length ~
CASCO FORT.
190 foot
230 foot
1713.

twenty-eight soldiers in the "Foot Company in Newbury" with a certificate from Hugh March, captain of the company, that they were "furnished with good serviceable snow shoes and mogginsons." *

The treasurer of the province was authorized to pay, "by the Constable or Constables of the s^d^ Town of Newbury, unto each of the s^d^ Twenty eight Souldiers named in the List thereof transmitted to him, the sum of five shillings out of the Poll Tax now collecting." *

For the protection of towns on or near the Merrimack river, block-houses were erected, by order of the General Court, in exposed places from Newbury to Bradford and Billerica, and men were employed to garrison them for several months during the year. The following named persons were probably paid the sums set against their names for personal service, or supplies furnished, at one or more of these block-houses: —

Acc^t^: of Allowance for p'sonal Service at Newbury Blockhouses in 1704.†

Benj^a^ Hill	£02.11.05	Jn^o^ Ordway, Jr	£04.06.05
Jos: Scot	06.01.05	Jacob Ivees	00.15.00
Jn^o^ Smith, Jr	01.00.00	Jn^o^ Barker	01.00.00
Ben. Savorie	06.01.05	Peter Cheney	00.16.05
Antho: Crosbie	02.10.00	Benj: Lowle Jr.	02.08.06
Tobi. Coleman	06.01.05	Joseph Lowle	02.16.05
Jn^o^ French	06.01.05	Wm. Pilsbury, Jr	00.18.06
Jno Gutteridge	06.01.05	Tho: Crocket	02.04.03
Sam. Poore, Jr	00.18.06	James Sinkler	02.18.06
Jn^o^ Swett	05.02.10	Benj: Lowle, Sen^r^	06.01.05
Jo: Bayley	06.01.05		£72.16.08

Acc't of allowance for the subsistence of Newbury men at y^e^ Blockhouses in 1704.†

Nicholas Noyes	£10.18.06	Jn^o^ Barker	£00.12.00
John Kelly	10.18.06	Benj: Lowle, Jr.	05.02.00
Sam: Poore	00.11.01	Dan^l^ Cheney	00.09.10
Jn^o^ Swett	03.01.08	Jos: Pike	05.06.08
Josh Bayley	03.12.10		43.13.11
Jn^o^ Ordway	02.11.10		72.16.08
Jacob Freez	00.09.00		£116.10.07

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 430.

† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, October, 1865, p. 312.

In the month of January, 1704–5, "at which time the country appeared like a frozen lake, the snow four feet deep," two companies, consisting of about one hundred and fifty men, under the command of Capt. Benjamin Stevens and Capt. William Tyng, marched through the woods to Norridgewock, but found, on arrival there, that the Indians had deserted the place, leaving a palisaded fort, enclosing twelve or more wigwams, and a few household utensils of little value. The officers and soldiers engaged in this expedition appear to have suffered extremely from the hardships and privations of the march. Nathaniel Rolfe, of Newbury, who was wounded in the arm on his way home from Norridgewock, applied to the General Court for a gratuity or pension to compensate him for loss of time, and reimburse him for money expended for medical attendance and advice. With his petition the following bill and certificates were filed: —

To Nathaniel Roff, visits, balsams, Injections, Emplasters, unguents and dressing his arme from y^e 11^th^ of March to the begining: of August following to the perfecting of the Cure: of a large Gun shot wound: In his arme with a Laceration of Narues and ffociles 06=6=0

It to him speciphyeks and medicans proper for him in an actue and daingerous feuer which Ran 14 day before a crisis which fever was within the time afore s^d^ 02=0=0

HUMPHREY BRADSTREET.

ANDOUER, Sept. y^e^ 5^th^ 1705

These may sertifie whome It may concern that Nath^l^ Rolf of Newbery was under my command at noridgewok In her Majesties service and was wownded in his arme as witnes my hand

BENJAMIN STEVENS

I the Subscriber being then present doe also attest to y^e^ same with Respect to s^d^ Roffe Receiving his wound in the s^d^ seruice to Neridgwork as witness my hand WM TYNG.*

October 26, 1705, the General Court, with the consent of the governor and council, passed an order "For allowing and paying twenty pounds and six shillings to Nathaniel Rolfe of Newbury, a soldier wounded while in the Queen's Service, under the Command of Capt. Benjamin Stevens in the expedition to Norridgewock." †

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. lxxi., pp. 164, 165; Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 524.
† Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 139.

Two or three months later, Lieut. Col. Thomas Noyes was ordered to report the number of men provided with snow-shoes, in Newbury, that could be depended upon to march against the Indian enemy if needed.

Sr. By His Excellencies direction & Comand I requir you, on sight hereof to call together & have forthwith a strict muster of all your Snow shoe men, appointed by Law: to know how they are fitted and capable if called for, which I must have a speedy account of, and shall wait for: That I may know what return to make to His Excellency, as I am enjoyned to do: I am your Servant

N. SALTONSTALL

HAVERHILL, Jan: 9 1705-6*

How many Newbury men were equipped with snow-shoes and prepared for a winter campaign is somewhat uncertain; but among the papers and manuscripts of the late Robert Adams, now in the possession of the New England Historic and Genealogical Society, Boston, will be found the following undated memorandum: —

A list of the names [] that are [] apointed to keep snow shous & moggensons for [] ties service.

Richard Brown Senr	Corpll Smith	James Coffin
William Salmon	Joshua Moody	Edward Richardson
Anthony Somerby	Nathaniel Coffin	John Woodbridg
Benjamin Woodbridge	Banajh []	Daniell Merrill
Abraham Lunt	Archelaus Woodman	Corpll Chess
John Weed	Robert Rogers	Daniel pilsbury
Henry Halle	Samuel Sawyer	Caleb pilsbury
Thomas Moody	Enoch Litle	John Sewell
Edward Sergant	Corpll Brown	Abraham Toppan
William no []	Nathan Merrill	A [] ams
	[]†	

Early in the month of December, 1706, Gov. Dudley, considering it advisable to send another expedition to Norridgewock, wrote "To the Hon. Lt Col Hilton" as follows: —

BOSTON, December 9th 1706

Dear Sir,

I have determined to visit Noridgwock the 10th of January next, and accordingly am raising in this Province two hundred men to be Commanded by Col. Martch, if his health will permit, whom alone I have

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. l., p. 340. † Ibid., p. 339.

acquainted besides yourself of my intention — therefore desire it to be secret,— and must expect forty men to be commanded by some very good officer; and if Col March fail me, I must expect your service to command the whole party.

The men must be well fixed, Cloathed and Shod with snow shoes in good order. Communicate this order to the gentlemen of her majesty's council as soon as may be. Attend them yourself to concert the matter, that they may provide victuals and blankets if need be. Our last departure will be from Casco Bay. Desire the Gentlemen of the Council to keep it secret, lest the noise of it get into the woods.

I am yr. affectionate uncle,

J. DUDLEY.*

January 15, 1706–7, Lieut. Col. John March having declined to serve as commander of the expedition, Lieut. Col. Winthrop Hilton was placed in charge of the forces assembled at Casco, and soon after began his march to Norridgewock; but, owing to the mildness of the season, the ice on the river was not of sufficient thickness to allow him to proceed with safety, and, after marching several days, he was obliged to turn back. At an interview with Gov. Dudley in Boston on the thirteenth day of February, he offered to go to the Kennebec river with the men under his command, and make an attempt to capture or disperse the Indians gathered there.

FEBRUARY 19, 1706–7

His Excellency acquainted the Council, that upon further information of the state of the Enemy at Kennebeck River &c he had ordered an addition to the forces under Col° Hilton intended on an expedition thither, and another sloop & more Whaleboats to attend them, the Briganteen Hope, three open Sloops and fourteen Whaleboats being taken up & equipped on that service.†

"To Lieut. Col. John March, in conjunction with Lieutenant-Colonel Hilton," the command of this expedition was intrusted. A company of seventy or eighty men under Col. March sailed from Newbury, probably, while the rest of the troops, under Col. Hilton, sailed from Piscataqua, now Portsmouth, N.H.

The expedition proceeded as far east as the Kennebec river, where they fell upon a party of Indians, and killed or

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 673; Farmer and Moore's Collection, vol. i., p. 248.

† Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 675; Executive Records of the Council, vol. iv., p. 379.

seriously wounded eighteen of them. After searching the woods in that neighborhood, and finding no traces of Indians concealed there, they decided to return to Piscataqua, where they arrived on the twenty-eighth day of March. May 6, 1707, the governor and council ordered

> . . . that the Souldiers that served under Colo March in the Months of February and March past, on an Expedition to the Eastward other than such as are enlisted in the present Expedition to Nova Scotia be discharged on the day of their return back to Newbury.*

Meanwhile, the General Court had passed a resolve (March 21, 1706–7) providing for the raising of a naval and land force for an expedition against the French at Nova Scotia and for an attack on the fort at Port Royal. On the twenty-ninth day of March, Gov. Dudley appointed Lieut. Col. John March commander-in-chief of the expedition. The land force was divided into two regiments, one under the command of Col. Winthrop Hilton and the other under Col. Francis Wainwright. The fleet, in addition to the "Deptford" of the royal navy, carrying fifty guns, and the sloop "Dove," her tender, the "Province Galley," carrying twenty-four guns, and the brigantine "Hope," which was to be put in commission as a cruiser along the coast, "consisted of ten transports, comprising two ships, four brigantines and four sloops, besides forty whale-boats, twenty eight of which were to be impressed at Barnstable and twelve at Plymouth." †

Two of the companies in the first regiment organized for this expedition were commanded by Capt. James March and Capt. Richard Kent, of Newbury. Other officers in the same regiment were James March, jr., lieutenant, Hugh Pike, ensign, John March, jr., lieutenant, and Benjamin Smith, ensign, —all from Newbury. Among the vessels that comprised the fleet was the sloop "Richard and Sarah," Richard Carr, of Salisbury, master; the sloop "Success," Stephen Poor, of Newbury, master; the sloop "Endeavor," Gideon Lowell, of Newbury, master.

A grand parade of the land forces at Hull, on the nineteenth

* Province Laws, vol. viii., note, p. 675. † Ibid., vol. viii., p. 687.

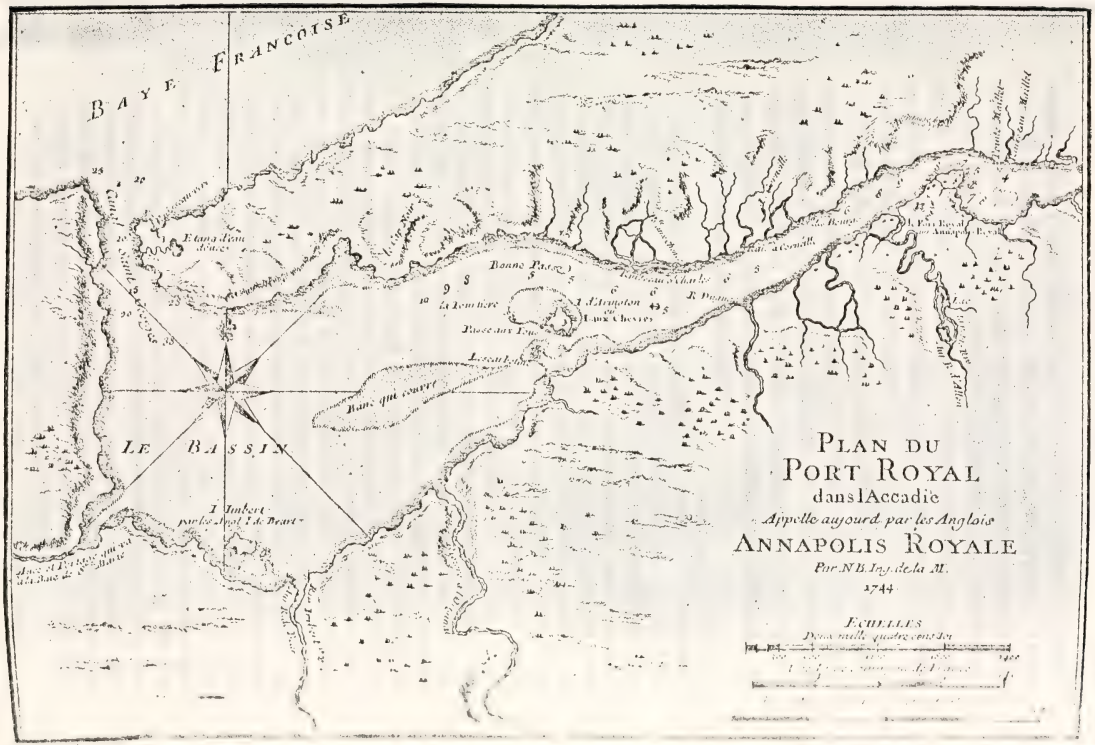
of April, was ordered by the governor and council; and the vessels engaged for service in the expedition were directed to assemble at Nantasket. The final preparations for the transportation of troops and the shipment of arms, ammunition, and commissary stores, were made as speedily as possible; and, everything being ready, the fleet sailed at sunrise, on the thirteenth day of May, for the harbor of Port Royal.*

They arrived on the twenty-sixth; and, late in the afternoon, Col. Samuel Appleton, with about three hundred and twenty men, was landed on the north side of the harbor, and Col. March, with the rest of the forces numbering about seven hundred and fifty men, was landed on the south side. Early the next day both sections of the army moved forward. Col. March and the men under his command were attacked by the French troops under Subercase, the military governor of Acadia, and were thrown into confusion, but soon rallied, and, "with trumpets sounding, drums beating and colors flying," made a successful charge upon the enemy, and drove them over a high, steep hill into the fort that had been re-enforced and strengthened for the protection of the village of Port Royal, now Annapolis, N.S. After marching and skirmishing for five days over rough roads and through dense forests, the rank and file of the army became discouraged and demoralized. A council of war was held on the thirty-first day of May, and a majority of the officers, whose authority was final, agreed "that the enemy's well disciplined garrison in a strong fort, was more than a match for our raw, undisciplined army"; † and further attempts to capture or demolish the fort were abandoned. Col. Appleton went to Boston for orders; and Col. March, with the land and naval forces under his command, sailed for Casco bay.

The unsatisfactory result of this expedition was exceedingly annoying to the inhabitants of Boston and other towns in the province, and the conduct of the officers in command was severely criticised and condemned. For the mistakes and mismanagement of others, Col. March was held responsible; and

* For roster of the army and fleet, see Province Laws, vol. viii., pp. 690–692.

† History of Massachusetts (Hutchinson, edition, 1795), p. 152.



PLAN DU PORT ROYAL dans l'Accadie

Appellé aujourd. par les Anglois

ANNAPOLIS ROYALE

Par N.B. Ingr. de la M.

1744

ECHELLES

Deux mille quatre cents Toises

strong efforts were made to induce Gov. Dudley to recall him and appoint another commander in his place. These efforts, however, were unsuccessful; and on the twentieth day of June the governor and council appointed Col. Elisha Hutchinson, Col. Penn Townsend, and John Leverett, esq., commissioners to supervise and direct the movements of the land and naval forces in Nova Scotia.

Col. March was at Casco bay, with the fleet under his command, at that date; and, when the news of his subjection to the commissioners was communicated to him, he wrote the following letter to Gov. Dudley, regretting that he had not been released from service, but expressing his willingness to serve in a subordinate capacity: —

CASCO BAY, June 28th, 1707

May it plese yore Excelency yesterday I Receued: yore Commands: of the 21 Curant: by Mr Lowle: and god willing will indevor to follow Them: and doe what saruis I can: Sir I Immediately: Informed; Capt Sovthack: and the other maters what yore Commands: ware: who said the coold not goe to see before that they Had more provistion: and Capt Stoolly soore * his provistion was quite dun: whare: upon I: Immediately ordered the Commisarys: to goe one bord Euery uessell in the fleet and see: sartingly: what prouistion and stor: theare wass: which account I Have now sent Mr Commisary generall.

Sir I am Hartyly sorry that I haue offended yor Excelency in any thing: and am sure it was no way designed in me: and have not bine Justly delt with by: those that Have informed yore Excelency: but sinc it is yore Excelencys pleasure to dismis mee from those Commands you were formerly plesed to put me in: I will patiently bare it: and doe you what saruis lys in my power: and sinc it is so: woold haue bine glad if you wovld haue bine plesed to haue Relesed me: for I sartingly know: that if theare be any thing well: and Honnorably dun: I shall haue no share in that: but if any thing fall out other wise: that will fall to my share: Sir our men are generall: cherly and brisk: and are most of them willing to goe Againe: I shall Induor To keep them clene and In good temper: According to yore Commands: Sir the Indians that Ran from us: I haue taken them all Againe: and they doe so hartyly bagg pardon: for theair offenc that I haue Respited theair punnishment tell yore Excelency's plesure is known what I shall doe to them: may it plese yore Excelency Mr Jefferise haue bine uery Industerous: in doeing of mischef: As hee hath here Confesed: As yore Excelency and honnors will see under his owne hand: here Inclosed: with my most Humble duty: I Am Yore Excelencys most Humble and obedient sarvnt

JOHN MARCH †

* *Sic*, swore. † Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 732.

The fleet sailed from Casco bay on or about the twenty-seventh of July, and arrived at Passamaquoddy on the thirtieth, where the troops were engaged for a week or more in a hostile encounter with the inhabitants of that place, some of whom they made prisoners. On Sunday, the tenth of August, the ship, loaded with men, warlike stores, and provisions, came to anchor in the harbor of Port Royal, early in the afternoon; and the next day the soldiers were landed more than two miles below the fort on the opposite side of the river, and marched to a point less than a mile above, where they took possession of some unoccupied houses.

Hutchinson, in his history of Massachusetts, says that Col. March at this time was broken in spirit "and his health affected, so that, when the disposition was making for landing the army, he declared himself incapable of acting and the command was given to Wainwright the next officer." *

On the thirteenth day of August, the troops, under the command of Col. Francis Wainwright, had a fierce battle with the French and Indian forces, and were driven back into camp. On the fifteenth, the commissioners ordered Col. Wainwright to burn or tear down the houses in the neighborhood of the fort, cut the dykes protecting the marshes, and destroy the dams that supplied two or three small mills with water power. The French commander, Subercase, however, kept up such a severe and continuous cannonading with heavy guns and mortars that it was found impossible to execute the order with any prospect of success. On the twentieth, Col. Wainwright, protected by the guns of the fleet, landed a portion of his troops on the opposite shore for the purpose of making an attack upon the fort. A desperate conflict ensued; and they were driven back in confusion, leaving a number of killed and wounded on the field. The next day, the officers and men embarked on the vessels at anchor in the harbor; and on the twenty-fourth day of August they sailed for home.

Although Col. March was received with insults and derision on his arrival in Boston, he seems to have retained the confidence and esteem of Gov. Dudley, who announced, Sep-

* History of Massachusetts (edition, 1795), vol. ii., p. 153.

tember 24, 1707, that he had ordered him "with his company on board the Briganteen Hope w^th^ a further enforcem^t^ of men to sayle to Winter harbour & likewise Her Maj^tys^ ship the Province Galley to cruise along the North Shoar and to visit all the harbours from Saco to Casco Bay, and further East, to intercept the Enemy," who had made an attack on the towns of York and Wells.* How long he was absent on this expedition is uncertain, but probably until the middle of October. From the muster-roll of the brigantine "Hope," it appears that the wages of her officers and crew were paid from April 3 to October 18, 1707.†

Another expedition, under the command of Col. Francis Nicholson sailed, from Nantasket, September 18, 1710, to renew the attack upon Port Royal. The troops landed in good order, and immediately began to throw up intrenchments and lay siege to the fortress that protected the town. After a few days' delay, Subercase, the commander of the French forces, through timidity or collusion, surrendered to Col. Nicholson "all the effects belonging to the King: as guns, mortars, bombs, ball, powder, and all other small arms."‡ Thursday, the sixteenth day of November, 1710, was appointed a day of general thanksgiving throughout the provinces of Massachusetts Bay and New Hampshire, for the important victory gained by Her Majesty's forces in Nova Scotia.

Meanwhile, the French troops, with their Indian allies, had burned and destroyed much valuable property between the Penobscot and Merrimack rivers. The inhabitants of many of the frontier towns were compelled to flee to block-houses for shelter and protection. Scouting parties were organized and ordered to search the woods on the northerly side of the Merrimack river. Several Newbury men were impressed for that service by order of the governor and council.

These are in Her majesties Name to requier you to impress theses men under specified to apperr compleat in arms and Ām̄unition and all

* Province Laws, vol. viii., p. 759.

† Col. March was evidently obliged, on account of ill-health, to retire to private life soon after the close of the year 1707. In the Boston News Letter for the week beginning July 28 and ending August 4, 1712, is the following notice: "New York July 18, Last week dyed Col. John March of Newbury at Woodbridge in New Jersey." (New Jersey Archives, First Series, vol. xi., p. 35.)

‡ History of Massachusetts (Hutchinson, edition, 1795), vol. ii., p. 166.

furniture as the law directs fit for a march, at my House on wensday next at eight of the clock in the fore noone which will be ye 14th of this Instant Aprill 1708: of this faile not and make return to me of your doings herein, given under my hand this 8th day of Aprill 1708:

To Ser William Titcomb. THOMAS NOYES, *Capt*

Stephen greenleafe tirsius
James Ordway the Son of Jams ordway
John Haskins

[Endorsed]

Aprill ye 12th, 1708

prSuant to the within warrant I have imprest Stephen Greenleaf Senr, John Haskins & James Ordway the third according to the tenner of the within warrant pr WILLIAM TITCOMB.*

In the month of August following, a company of Newbury men, under the command of Lieut. Caleb Moody, was equipped for service in the woods between Amesbury and "Jamaco," now Merrimac.

A MUSTER ROLL OF THE COMPANY IN HER MAJESTIES SERVICE UNDER THE COMMAND OF CAPTAIN VIZ.

MENS NAMES	Quality	Time of Entrance on the Service		Tell what Time in the Service		Whole Term of Service		The whole of Wages Due to Each man.		
		Months	*Days*	*Months*	*Days*	*Weeks*	*Days*	£	*s*	*d*
Caleb Moodey	Leut	Augst	11	Augst	31	3	0	2	5	0
Joseph Pike	Sarjt	Augst	11	Ditto	31	3	0	1	7	0
Jacob Tappin	Sarjt	Augst	11	Ditto	31	3	0	1	7	0
James Carr	Corpll	Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	1	7	0
Abram Merrill	Corpll	Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	1	7	0
James Brown	Corpll	Ditto	11	Ditto	31	2	6	1	7	0
Richard Bartlett	Corpll	Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	1	7	0
Abram Annis		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
John Emery		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Isaac Annis		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
John Swett		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Joshua Baily		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Danll Cheny		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Tho. Chase		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Joseph Hills		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Solomon Holman		Ditto	11	Ditto	31	3	0	0	18	0
Joseph Richardson	Serjt	Ditto	11	October	2	7	4	3	08	2
Henry March		Ditto	11	Ditto	2	7	4	2	5	5
Samll Bartlett		Ditto	11	Augst	26	2	2	0	13	8
Joseph Lowll		Ditto	11	Ditto	26	2	2	0	13	8
Joseph Morss		Ditto	11	Ditto	26	2	2	0	13	8
Joseph Kelly		Ditto	11	Novemb	16	14	0	4	04	0
Benj Hills		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
John Chase		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Jonathan Hoag		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Daniell Gale		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Ambros Berrie		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Danll Morison		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Moses Chase		Ditto	11	Ditto	16	14	0	4	4	0
Joseph Pilsberry	Clark	Ditto	11	Augst	31	3	0	1	7	0

To subsistance 184 weeks & 6 days att 3/6 p. week		32.	7. 0
Substracted pd. in Majr Turner accº subsistance 14 men 3 days at Lt Whites at Haveill at 3/6 p week	1 1 0		
	31.	6. 0	
The whole wages	59. 17. 7		
	91.	3. 7	

*New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. l., p. 341.

AUGUST ye 11th 1708

I and my company marcht over to Amsbery. And from thence to Jemaco. And so wee marcht daily from Jemaco to Amsbury And from Amsbury to Jemaco & schouted in ye woods Agust ye 26th by order from Capt Turner I released all my men but ten but were comanded to return again on ye first allarm on August ye 29 wee were allarmed & marcht to Haverill and so marcht into ye woods after ye enemy. on Sept ye 2d a little before night wee were dismis

CALEB MOODY, *Lieut*

AGUST ye 11th 1708

wee marcht over to Amsbery town and from thence to Jemaco. And so wee marcht from Jemaco to Amsbery And from Amsbery to Jemaco and schouted in ye woods Agust 17th by Colol Noyces order I posted six men Att Garison two, att Hadley's two, att Kimbals & two at Quimbes Agust ye 27th by order from Capt Turner I dismis all my men but ten but wer comanded to return to their post again on ye first Allarm. on Agust ye 29th wee were Allarmed & went to Haverill & Marcht after ye Enemy into ye woods, on Sept ye 2d a little before night we were dismis

[The following letter is addressed: "To Capt Thomas Harvy or Commander of the forces now in Pay at Amesbury For Her Majesty's Service."]

HAVRILL August 16th 1708

Sir

I received a Letter from His Excelency Where in he orders me to take the Cheife comand of the forces at Haverill, Amesbury & Kings atowne & uppon Notice of ny towne oppreſsed I am to march wth the forces to Releive them & Expect you be in Readyneſs to March at a minutes Notice — I hope you keep out a Good Scout and give me acc of any Occurrent that Shall Happen His Excelency is fearfull they will fall on Portsmouth If so hasten away & I will joyne you at grenne Land wth the Troops, give me an acct of the Number of your men & How you are fitted for a march If there be occation I am

Your Humble Servt

JNO TURNER

[The following letter is addressed: "To Leut Moody Comander of the forces at Amesbery For Her Majestys Service"]

HAVRILL, Aug. 17, 1708.

Sir

I sent down to Amsbery yesterday to the Comander of the forces there to send me word how he was fitted for a march If occation be & a List of his men I received an answer from Capt Harvy that you were there Comander. Send me an acct how you are provvided & with the List wch I Expect from you forth with I am

Your friend & Servt

JNO TURNER.

An Account of Billating ye Souldiers att Amsbery under Comand of Caleb Moody Lieut Beginning Agust ye 11th 1708.

12th Capt Harvies 15 Meals Att foots 5
13th Att Capt Harvies from Agust 11th to Agust ye 19th 74 meals
Att Leut foots 41 meals
Att Tho Coalbees 6 meals
Att Valintine Rowls 6 meals
Att Deaē Tho Stephenses 18 meals
Att Roger Stephenses 6 meals
Att Wido Rachel Serjant 4 meals
Att Tho fergant 8 meals
Att Bennoni Tuckers 6 meals
Att Joseph Brown's 90 meals
Att Samll Colebees 120 meals
Att Ens Baglies 8 meals
Att Lieut Barnets 65 meals
Att Sergt Richd Currier 65 meals

August 19th 1708.
To Capt Harvis 6 meals
to Leiut ffoots 2 meals
to valintine Rouil 2 meals
to Tho. Colebe 2 meals
to Deaē Stephens 6 meals
to Rodger Stephens 4 meals
to Wido Rachel Serjant 6 meals
to Benoni Tucker 4 meals
to Tho. Serjant 4 meals
to Samll Colebe 20 meals
to Ens Bagli 8 meals
to Lieut Barnet 10 meals
to serjt Rich Curier 10 meals

Agust ye 17 1708

Accompt of what powder and bullets Those Souldiers Listed under the command of Lieutenant Calib Moodey Received of the Country Stock — four pound of Powder & Ten pound Bullets Divided among Twenty four soldiers.

Agust ye 26, 1708.

Serjt Joseph Pike
Corpll James Carr.
Corpll James Brown
Joshua Baily
Joseph Lowl
Samll Bartlet
Serjt Joseph Richardson
Henry March
Moses Chafs
Daniell Morrison were lef at Amesbery.

The governor and council of the province of Massachusetts Bay, at a meeting held February 26, 1708-9, advised and consented to the payment of the wages due Lieut. Moody and the men under his command.

A muster Roll of the Foot Company in Her Majesty's pay under the command of Caleb Moodey as Lieutenant containing an accot of wages for their service and subsistance from the 11th of August to the 16th of Novr 1708 amounting in the whole to the sum of ninety one pounds three shillgs and seven pence; examin'd by Mr. Commissary General was presented,— And

Advised and Consented That a Warrant be made out thereupon to the

Treasurer to pay the above sum of ninety one pounds three shillings and seven pence to the s'd Lieut Moodey for and on behalfe of himself and Company Accordingly *

MAR ye 15th 1708-9

Wee ye subscibers do hereby own & acknowledg ye receipt of what money was alowed to us for subsistance of Souldiers under comand of Lt Moody from Agust ye 11th 1708 til Octo ye 2d folowing as wittneſs our hands: Samuel Collby, Orlando Bagly j, Joseph Brown, Thomas Stevens, Roger Stevens, Richard Currier, John ffoote, s10 Thomas Sargent, Thomas Colbey, John Larnard, Ephraim Wood, Bennoni Tucker, Jonathan hill, Tho harvay, volintan Rouels money payed to philip Rouil and Philip Rouils is paid

MARCH ye 14th 1708-9

We ye subscribers do hereby own & acknowledge the receipt of what mony is alowed to us in ye within written Muster Roll as witness our hands. Joshua Bailey, Josaph Kelly, Joseph Richardson, Daniel Gale, Joseph Lowel, James Browne, John Swett, Jacob Tappin, Daniel Morison, Henry March, beniamen hills, Joseph hills, Abraham Merril, Richard Bartlett, Joseph Pike, Joseph Morſs, Joseph Pilsberry, Jonathan hoeg, Abraham Annis, Joseph Chase to Hill fowler, Samuel Bartlet, Stephen Emery, Thomas Chase jr, James Carr, Jonathan Emery, Isaac Annis, Daniel Cheny, Soloman Holmans money paid to Woodman, Moses Chasses money paid to Ens Chase.†

In an attack made by a party of Indians on Haverhill, August 29, 1708, Joseph Bartlett, of Newbury, was taken prisoner and carried to Canada, where he was held in captivity until October 5, 1712. After his release, the General Court passed the following resolution, November 8, 1712: —

Resolved that the sum of twenty pounds and fifteen shillings be allowed and paid to Joseph Bartlett in full of his petition of charges and expences to obtain his liberty from the Indians being taken Prisoner by the Indians at Haverhill when in her Majesties service in the year 1708 & for his support during four years captivity & the loss of his arms.‡

In the month of November, in 1709, the provincial authorities determined to commence a vigorous campaign against the Indians on the northerly side of the Merrimack river, and

* Massachusetts Archives (Council Records), vol. v., p. 31.

† The muster-roll, letters and other documents relating to the company under the command of Lieut. Caleb Moody were copied by Rev. Rufus Emery from the original papers now in the possession of descendants of the late Moses Moody Ridgeway, of West Newbury.

‡ Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. ix., p. 246. The prominent incidents connected with the long captivity of Mr. Bartlett were published in pamphlet form in 1807, and reprinted in 1845 in the Appendix to Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 331-334.

orders were issued to Capt. Thomas Noyes, of Newbury, to furnish six or eight men for that service.

In obedience to comand from His Excelency: These are In Her majesties Name to Requier you to Impress these men under specified to appear compleat in Armes & amunition and all firniture as the law directs with two dayes provition [] order them to appear at the House of Capt Edw [] sargent His House in Newbury on Monday by twelve of the Clocke at noon which will be ye 28th of this Instant of this fail not & make return to me of your doings heer in given under my hand this 25 of November 1709 from your servant

THOMAS NOYES *Capt*

Stephen poore Tristram x Coffin [] greenleafe Stephen greenleafe malachi Edwards Thom [] Browne John Sawyer Josiah x pilsbury Timothy putnam Zachary Davis John [] us

To Benjamin More, Ju
To Stephen Webster
or John Stickny.

On the back of the warrant was the following endorsement: —

November 25, 1709. A Cording to the Within riten worant I have imprest theis men under named

Thomas Brown	Daniell Greenleafe
John Scodes	Stephen Greenleafe
Malachi Edwards	John Stickney

Stephen Webster *

The men who provided themselves with snow-shoes and moccasins for service in a winter campaign were allowed five shillings each, under the law of the province enacted November 17, 1704. Col. Thomas Noyes, of Newbury, was allowed five pounds and nineteen shillings by the General Court, June 17, 1710, in settlement for snow-shoes and moccasins furnished seventeen men in his regiment, and £42 for the service of four hundred and twenty men previously equipped and reported to the provincial authorities. The regiment was composed of men from Newbury, Haverhill, Salisbury, Amesbury, and other towns in Essex county.

In the Massachusetts Archives is "a list of the names of the men belonging to the North Regiment in Essex apoint[d]

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. 1., pp. 343, 344.

to keep snow-shoes and mogginsons"; * and in this list are the names of many well-known Newbury men.

Major Henry Summersby snow shoo men are as foloeth,

Richard Knight	John Hale
Stephen Sayer	Joseph gerish
Edmund greenleaf	Richard Jackman
William Dole	Richard Bartlet
John March	Samuel Bartlet
John pike	John Merrill
Richard Dumer	John Kely
Geo. Thurlo	Fran. Clemons
Collin Fraizer	peter Coffin
Henry Short	Thomas Hale.*

"My particular Company"†

Richard Brown	James Freez
William Salmon, Jr	Jacob Toppan
Anthony Sumerby	Joshua Bayly
James Smith	Isaack Bayly
Joshua Moody	John Bartlet
Nathaniell Coffin	John Ordway
James Coffin	Richard Bartlet
Edward Richardson	William molton
John Woodbridge	Thomas Chess
Benjamin woodbridge	Joshua Browne, Jr
Abraham Lunt	Archelause Woodman
John weed	Robert Rogers
Henry Hale	Samuel Sawyer
Thomas Moody	Enoch Litle
Edward Sergant	John Brown
William Noyes	Nathan merrill
Benayah Titcomb	Daniel merrill
Joseph greenleafe	Aquilla chees
penuell Titcomb	Daniel pilsbury
Joseph seuell	Caleb pilsbury
James Ordway	John Sewell
Abraham Rowell	Abraham Toppan
John Kent	Archelaus Addams
Edward poore	peter goodfrey
Jonathan Woodman	Abial Sumarby
Cutting Moody	william Titcomb
Samuel poore	Benjamin Mors, Jr.
Joseph poore	

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. lxxi., pp. 495–498; also, Society of Colonial Wars' Year Book, 1897, pp. 117–123.

† Probably commanded by Capt. Thomas Noyes.

The men opointed in the room of those that are ded or removed which wants their alouance:

Icobod woodman	John Ordway
John worth	Timothy merrick
John Stickney	The end of my Company

Capt. Hugh March his Snow shoo men

Liunt Caleb moody	Thomas williams
Ensign moses Chase	Daniell Chayny
Joseph pike	Abraham merrill Jr.
Tristram greenleafe	James Browne
Joseph Richardson	John Kelly, Jr.
Thomas Huse	Samuell sayer
Joseph Browne	Daniell morrison
John Emary, Jr.	Nathaniell Hill
Abell Huse	Abial Kelly
Stephen Emary	Isaac Annis
Abell merrill	Ezrah Rolf
Richard Bartlet, Jr.	Daniell Chase
Hananiah Ordway	Thomas ffolingsby.

Capt. Noyes His Company of snowshoo men

Joseph Woodbridge	Joshua Boyenton, Jr.
Joseph []	John Smith, Jr.
Daniell thurston	John pettingall
James Jackman	moses stickny
Samuel moody	Stephen Sweet, Jr.
Thomas Clarke	Robart Adams
Cutting Noyes, Jr	James Noyes, Jr.
Moses Coker	Joseph Downer, Jr.
Richard Kelly	John Cheyny
John Calfe	Beniamin person
Jonathan poore	Nathaniell Adkinson
James Knight	Nathaniell Rolf
Jonathan Emary Jr	Samuell Toppan
Joseph goodridg Jr	Joseph Hale
Joseph Mayo	Tristram Litle
John Dole	Thomas pike
mathew pettingal Jr	Joseph Noyes
Joshua peirce	Joseph Chayni
Ensi. Joseph Knight	Jonathan plumar
John Noyes Jr	Nathan wheeler
John Rolf	Henry Rolf
Daniel Noyes	Nathaniell Badger
John Dumar	Joseph Knight
Henry Jaquis	

New snow shoo men wants their alouance

Thomas Hale	John Noyes Jr
Richard Kent	Josiah Smith
Anthony mors	Stephen Dole
Abner Dole	

NEWBURY Sept y^e^ 22^d^ 1712

A List of the names of the New Raisd forcis to be put under Capt. Joseph Eaton.

Henry Dresser Servant to Decon Nathanil Coffin
Tristram Coffin Son to M^r^ James Coffin
Elias Titcomb Son to William Titcomb
Samuel Wood Servant to Joshua Moode
Thomas Adkinson Son to John Adkinson
Benjamin Mors Ju^r^
Thomas Chase Jn^r^
James Brickit
Ebenezer Barton
Mosis Richardson
Israel Adams
James Jackman
John Pettinggall
Richard Hale
Daniel Roberson Servant to John Noyes, Ju^r^
Lawrance Hart Servant to M^r^ John Calef
Ebenezer Burbank
William Herdy
Jacob Herdy
Joseph Moulton Servant to Cutting Noyes Ju^r^
(this last named is erased)

THOMAS NOYES *Coll*

To Capt Joseph Eaton.*

The treaty of peace concluded at Utrecht, April 11, 1713, closed the war of the Spanish succession that had disturbed the peace and quiet of Europe for eleven years; but the questions relating to the bounds and limits of the English and French colonies in America were left unsettled, and remained a subject of dispute until Canada, Acadia, Cape Breton, and the islands adjacent thereto were ceded to England at the close of the seven years' war, in 1763.

The Indians, however, instigated by the governor of Quebec and a few missionary priests to whom they were strongly

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. I., pp. 344 and 345.

attached, continued their depredations in the vicinity of Berwick, Brunswick, and Dover. Sebastien Rallé, who had been sent by the Society of Jesuits to the Indian settlement at Norridgewock, was a firm and active supporter of the Indian sachems and the warlike policy they had adopted in self-defence. In a communication addressed to the governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, he vigorously asserted their right to the undisturbed possession of the fields and forests they had inherited from their ancestors, and protested against the efforts that were being made to oppress and drive them from their homes.

His influence with the Indians, combined with his courage and sagacity, rendered him obnoxious to the authorities of Massachusetts, and, in 1721, the troops under the command of Col. Thomas Westbrook attempted to seize him, but he escaped into the woods. On the eighth day of August, 1724, two hundred men, in four companies, under Capt. Johnson Harmon, Capt. Jeremiah Moulton, Capt. [] Bourn (or Brown), and Lieut. [] Bean, were ordered by Col. Westbrook to proceed in whaleboats up the Kennebec river to Taconic falls, and thence, by forced marches through the forest, endeavor to surprise the Indians at Norridgewock, and burn or otherwise destroy their houses and wigwams. They proceeded cautiously, and arrived at the little village, "no longer enclosed with a stockade, but open and unprotected." In the desperate contest that ensued, Father Rallé was shot, on the twenty-third day of August, 1724, and instantly killed. After the English troops had departed was buried by his Indian friends near the place wh altar stood in the church that was burned du conflict.*

In the New England Courant for August 24, 1724, the following notice: —

On Saturday last arrived Capt Johnson Harmon from his Expedition against the Indians at Norridgewock, and brought with him 28 Scalps, one of which is Father Ralle's their Priest.†

* Massachusetts Historical Collection, Second Series, vol. viii., pp. 250–257.
† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xlvi., p. 137.

William Dummer, of Newbury, who was acting governor of the province at that time, during the absence of His Excellency Governor Shute in England, wrote to the lords of trade in London as follows: —

In the Action at Norridgewock, within this Province, wch was in Augt last, our Forces destroy'd a great number of the Indians & broke up that Settlement, among whome was Sebastian Ralle a Jesuit & Missionary to that Tribe, and the great Incendiary of this War, who was slain in Fight, making actual Resistance to the Forces, at the same time attempting to kill an English Captive in his Hand and refusing to give or take Quarter, To which Acct of ye Death of the sd Ralle Coll. Harman the Commander of the Forces at Norridgewock made solemn Oath before me in Council.*

Hutchinson, in his History of Massachusetts, gives substantially the same account of the killing of Father Rallé.

Moulton had given orders not to kill the Jesuit, but, by his firing from the wigwam, one of our men being wounded, a lieutenant Jaques stove open the door and shot him through the head. Jaques excused himself to his commanding officer, alleging that Ralle was loading his gun, when he entered the wigwam, and declared that he would neither give nor take quarter.†

The statement that the missionary priest was killed by Lieut. Richard Jaques, of Newbury, is probably incorrect.‡ In the muster-roll of Capt. Johnson Harmon's company, the name of Richard Jaques appears as corporal and also as sergeant from February 28, 1721–2, to November 20, 1722.§ But there is no evidence that he was a lieutenant in Capt. Moulton's company when the attack on the village of Norridgewock was made August 23, 1824. The Indians, in their attempt to escape, ran for the river. Capt. Moulton, with the men under his command, followed closely, shooting the fugitives in the water or as they climbed the farther bank.

When they returned to the village they found Rale in one of the houses, firing upon some of their comrades who had not joined in the

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xlviii., p. 187.
† History of Massachusetts (edition, 1795), vol. ii., p. 282.
‡ Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 194.
§ New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xlviii., p. 283.

pursuit. He presently wounded one of them on which a lieutenant named Benjamin Jaques burst open the door of the house, and, as he declared, found the priest loading his gun for another shot. The lieutenant said further that he called on him to surrender, and that Rale replied that he would neither give quarter nor take it; on which Jaques shot him through the head.*

Benjamin Jaques was a native of Harpswell, Me.; and his great-grandson has furnished for publication some facts in relation to his service in the expedition to Norridgewock, and a brief account of the incidents that led to the killing of Father Rallé.†

* "A Half-century of Conflict," Parkman, vol. i., p. 237.
† Historical Magazine, vol. viii., p. 177.

CHAPTER XIV.

LOUISBOURG, CROWN POINT, AND QUEBEC.

THE treaty of Utrecht, concluded in 1713, gave to England Hudson bay, Newfoundland, and Acadia. The island of Cape Breton, which lies to the eastward of Acadia, and is separated from it only by the narrow strait of Canseau, was left to France. This island, from its position, commands the entrance to the gulf and river of St. Lawrence. A fortress was erected on the island near a deep and capacious harbor, and a few French families were induced to settle there. The place was named Louisbourg in honor of Louis XIV.

In time it grew into a compact fishing town of about four thousand inhabitants, with a strong garrison and a circuit of formidable ramparts and batteries. It became by far the strongest fortress on the Atlantic coast, and so famous as a resort of privateers that it was known as the Dunquerque of America.*

The right of Maria Theresa to the throne made vacant by the death of her father, Charles VI., emperor of Austria, was stoutly contested by the leading powers on the continent of Europe. England favored the claims of the Austrian princess, and France vigorously opposed them. The questions involved in the controversy were of momentous importance, and conflicting interests rendered a satisfactory settlement of them impossible. Realizing that an appeal to arms could not be averted, France, with unexpected zeal and promptness, declared war against England on the fifteenth day of March, 1743–4.

During the following summer, the fishermen of Marblehead and other towns along the New England coast were attacked and plundered by vessels of war and privateers that found shelter and protection in the harbor of Louisbourg.

* "A Half-century of Conflict," Parkman, vol. i., p. 181.


MAP
of the ISLAND of
CAPE BRETON
as laid down by
the Sieur BELLIN
1746.
Ile St Paul
Cape St Lawrence
St Lawrence Road
North Cape
Dafpè Harbour
Sea Pike Islands
Salmon River
Niganiche Ile
Niganiche Bay
Port Dauphin
Large Entrance of Labrador
Small Entrance of Labrador
Coal Road
Spanish Bay
Wafteoat Islands
Bay of Spirits
Round I.
O Flat Island
Seatari Ile
Tramblade Ile
LABRADOR
Bidenaibech
Lake of Hurons
Patenouve
Labrador Bay
Gabarous Bay
Island of Gypsy
Forked Harbour
Ile Heron Islands
Big and Harbour
Ile St Pierre
Ile Mackarel Island
Port Toulouse
Port St Peter's Ile
Port Shoy
Port Head
Green Head
Green Ile
Mulford Haven
Fox Island
Salmon River
Port of Canso
Great Ile of Canso
The Admiral
Cape Canso
PART of CADIA
Bullings Bridge
La Bonlaye Road
SCALE
of 20 Leagues at 2853 Fathoms to a League.
5
10
15
20
47
46
62
61

A plan for the capture of the fort at that place was devised by William Shirley, governor of Massachusetts; and January 26, 1744–5, the plan was adopted by the General Court, in secret session, by a majority of one vote. Sir William Pepperell was appointed "Lieutenant General and Commander-in-Chief of all the Forces by Sea and Land enlisted for the Expedition against the French Settlement on Cape Breton"; and, February 7, 1744–5, Moses Titcomb, of Newbury, was commissioned major and captain of the third company in the Fifth Massachusetts regiment, Robert Hale, colonel.*

The Muster Roll of the Company Inlisted for his Majesties Service in the Intended Expedition against Cape Breton under the Command of Capt moses Titcomb of Newbury February 26th 1744.†

Moses Titcomb	Captain	——— Knight	Sergeant
Samll Greenough	Lieut	Stephen Swett	Corporal
Beamsly Glover [Glazier?]	"	Rowland Stockman	"
Jacob Titcomb.	Second "		

SOLDIERS, APPRENTICES AND SERVANTS

	age		*age*
Stephen Atkinson	24	Joseph Cheney	39
Joseph Knight	22	Enoch Sweett	23
Jacob True	19	Martin Ayers	24
John Horbard	22	John March, 3d	20
Benja Titcomb, Jun	20	Nathll March	21
Nathll Little	22	Joseph Rowell	20
Samll Lowell	19	William Perkins	19
Daniel Plumer	45	Thomas Boardman	19
Joseph Eaton	32	Samll Todd	21
Richd Hale Jun	24	John Stanwood	22
Philip March	17	Matthew Pettengell	21
Moses Hoyte	28	David Duston	23
Joseph Stevens, Jun	28	James Beverly	22
John Colby	18	Benjamin Prefer	22
Richard Carr	20	John Harris	19
Johnson Lunt Jun	19	Benjamin Swett	18
Oliver Goodridge	22	Josiah Merrill	24
Enoch Stickney	22	Joseph Hobson	19
Daniel Lunt, Jun	21	John Couch	17

* Society of Colonial Wars' Year Book for 1895, Appendix, p. 8.

† Essex Institute Historical Collections, vol. xxxv., p. 150.

	age		age
Ebenezer Beal	18	Eliphalet Noyes	21
John Flood	50	Giles Harris	20
Andrew Peirce	29	John Dole Jun	36
Jonathan Shatswell	35	Benjamin Woodman Jun	28

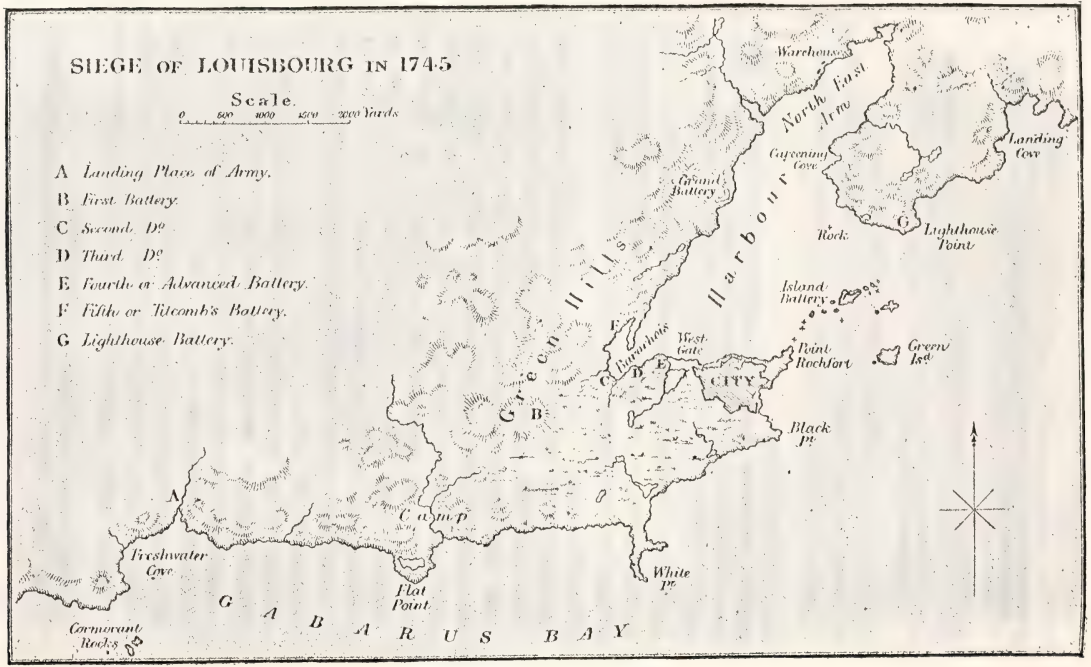
All the officers and men in Capt. Moses Titcomb's company resided in Newbury at the date of their enlistment, except James Beverly, who was from Haverhill, and John Flood, from Hampton, N.H.

The troops, embarked on ninety transports and sixteen armed vessels, sailed from Nantasket on the twenty-fourth day of March, and arrived at Canseau on the fourth day of April. They were detained there, by head winds and floating ice, until April twenty-third, when Commodore Warren, with several English ships of war, entered the harbor, having been ordered to join the expedition there. On the first day of May, the troops landed at Gabarus bay, a short distance from the town of Louisbourg. A reconnoitring force, under Colonel Vaughan, burned a quantity of stores and buildings, and took possession of the grand battery, which they found abandoned. With great difficulty they dragged cannon over the swampy ground in the neighborhood of the fortress, and erected temporary batteries that enabled them to bombard the town with shot and shell.

A constant fire was kept from the grand battery upon the town with the forty two pounders. This greatly damaged the houses, but caused so great an expense of powder that it was thought advisable to stop and reserve it for the fascine batteries. Five of these were erected, the last the 20th of May, called Titcomb's battery, with five forty two pounders, which did as great execution as any.*

On the side of the Barachois [a salt pond formed by a projecting spit of sand], farthest from the town, was a hillock on which stood the house of an habitant named Martissan. Here, on the 20th of May, a fifth battery was planted, consisting of two of the French forty-two pounders taken in the Grand Battery, to which three others were afterwards added. Each of these heavy pieces was dragged to its destination by a team of three hundred men over rough and rocky ground swept

* Hutchinson's History of Massachusetts (edition, 1795), vol. ii., p. 374.



FROM BROWN'S CAPE BRETON.

by the French artillery. This fifth battery, called the Northwest, or Titcomb's, proved most destructive to the fortress.*

After a siege of forty-nine days, articles of capitulation were signed, and the town and fort of Louisbourg were surrendered to Sir William Pepperell, commander of the English forces, on the seventeenth day of June, 1745.

Major Titcomb remained on duty at Louisbourg for several months after the capture of the town, and subsequently was appointed to the command of the troops stationed at Falmouth (now Portland), Me.†

Among the soldiers who applied to the General Court for assistance on account of wounds received or extra service rendered at the siege of Louisbourg was Thomas Pike, of Newbury. He petitioned, July 19, 1746, for an allowance, stating "that on the 20th of June 1745 he received a commission from Governor Shirley to be adjutant in Choate's regiment; that he was before and after that lieutenant, and performed the duty of both." ‡ His petition was not granted at that date, but it may have been subsequently accepted and approved.

July 24, 1746, Moses Hoyt, of Newbury, applied to the General Court for an allowance, in consideration of wounds received "in the late Expedition against Cape Breton."

In the House of Representves Read and Ordered that the sum of Twelve Pounds ten shillings be allowed the Petitioner for his present relief, by the Commtee of War. In Council Read and Concured — Consented to by the Governr §

January 30, 1746–7, John March, of Salisbury, was allowed six pounds by the General Court "for his hardships and sufferings in the late Expedition against Cape Breton." ‖

*"A Half-century of Conflict," vol. ii., p. 124. In the same volume, pp. 112 and 113, will be found a map showing the position of the Fifth, or Col. Titcomb's, battery at the siege of Louisbourg. The map reproduced on the preceding page is from Richard Brown's History of the Island of Cape Breton, published in London in 1869.

†"Ould Newbury," pp. 464–473.

‡ Journal of House of Representatives.

§ Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xvii., p. 530. In a petition to the town of Newbury, September 19, 1763, Moses Hoyt stated that he was severely wounded in the attack upon the Island battery at Louisbourg, and had been obliged to have his leg amputated. (Town of Newbury Records.)

‖ Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xvii., part v., p. 746.

April 1, 1747, Richard Carr, of Newbury, "a soldier in the late expedition," was granted five pounds by the General Court "in consideration of his being wounded by the enemy & disabled thereby from Labour." *

March 27, 1747, Jacob March, of Newbury, presented a petition to the General Court stating that "he enlisted in the late expedition as Chirurgeon's Mate in Col. Willards Regiment, but the Chief Chirurgeon being dismissed July 1745, the whole Business of a Chief Chirurgeon was devolved upon him for some Time; as also the care of Brigadier Waldos Regiment for a considerable Time: and being allowed Mates Pay he prays a farther consideration."

This petition was referred to a committee who reported on the thirty-first day of March "that the Committee on War be directed to allow the Petitioner, on due Proof of the Facts asserted, such sum as with that already paid him will make his Wages equal to that of a chief surgeon from July 11, 1745 to his Dismission." †

Louisbourg was restored to France by the treaty of peace signed, October 18, 1748, by the plenipotentiaries of France, England, and Holland at Aix-la-Chapelle.

May 22, 1755, Col. John Winslow sailed from Boston with two thousand men to assist Lieutenant-colonel Monckton in an attack upon Beauséjour and other dependent forts in Acadia. More than half of the peninsula now called Nova Scotia was claimed by France, although England had held possession of it for more than forty years. The Acadians were accused of disloyalty, and suspected of instigating and aiding the Indians in their efforts to harass and annoy the English farmers and fishermen who had been induced to settle there. They were promised forgiveness and protection if they would take an oath of allegiance to his Majesty George II., king of England. They declined to accept this conciliatory offer; and after a brief delay they were taken from their homes — men women, and children, to the number

* Massachusetts Archives (Court Records), vol. xvii., part v., p. 833.
† Ibid., vol. xviii., pp. 109, 110.

of six thousand, or more,—and distributed among the English colonies from Massachusetts Bay to Georgia.

The selectmen, or overseers of the poor, in the several towns in Massachusetts, were ordered to keep a strict account of the money expended for the support of these exiles, and send a copy thereof to the treasurer of the province, for payment, once in six months. The town of Newbury charged £49, 1*s.* 1*d.* for maintaining twenty-three of these expatriated Acadians from January fifth to June 1, 1756.*

Affixed to a bill rendered January 12, 1757, by John Brown, Henry Rolfe, and Cutting Moody, overseers of the poor, is the following statement:—

. . . the number of the french in Newbury is twenty-three.
4 of which are very old and unable to work.

James Brown
Peter Dorsett
Peter Dorsett Jun
Amicable Dorsett
Francis Le Blong

} Five men able to labor and doo work att all oppertunity when they have it offered and can find anything to do.

The Remaining 14 are three women and Eleven Children Unable to work, att Least to very Little advantage.†

After the incorporation of Newburyport, in 1764, these unfortunate exiles were provided for by the overseers of the poor of that town and subsequently supplied with money, food, and clothing to enable them to go to friends and relatives in Canada.

In May, 1756, England again declared war against Louis XV., and during the following summer made an ineffectual attempt to capture the French forts that had been erected, in the vicinity of the great lakes, on the boundary line between the English and French colonies in America. In 1757, an attack on Louisbourg was planned; but for various reasons it was delayed until the following spring.

Col. Jeffrey Amherst was appointed commander-in-chief of the expedition. Under him were three brigadier-generals,

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxiii., p. 138. † Ibid., p. 300.

Whitmore, Lawrence, and Wolfe : the latter was afterwards mortally wounded at the capture of Quebec. Eleven thousand soldiers were sent from England to Halifax, in twenty-three ships of the line, eighteen frigates, and a fleet of transports, under the command of Admiral Boscawen. There they were joined by a force of five or eight hundred men from the seacoast towns of New England.

Among the volunteers who served in this expedition was Nathaniel Knap, of Newbury. He sailed from Portsmouth, N.H., on Monday, the third day of April, and arrived at Halifax April 10, 1758, at about nine o'clock P.M. He was occupied in cutting timber and building bridges and block houses, until Admiral Boscawen, with his fleet of transports, after a long and tedious passage, came to anchor in the harbor on the ninth day of May.*

On Sunday, the twenty-eighth day of May, the fleet, with all the troops on board, sailed from Halifax, and arrived at Gabarus bay on the second of June. General Wolfe, with about twelve hundred men, made a landing at Freshwater cove, four miles from the town of Louisbourg, on the morning of June eighth, and succeeded in capturing an outpost near the shore, defended by a regiment of French soldiers, who, after a fierce contest, abandoned all their cannon and fled into the woods.

Strong batteries were erected at favorable points on the low wooded hills in that neighborhood, and heavy guns and mortars soon opened fire on the French ships and on the island battery that guarded the entrance to the harbor. After a long and desperate fight, the island guns were dismounted and silenced. The attack on the fort was then commenced in good earnest, and a heavy cannonade directed against the town. The roar of mortars and cannons continued night and day for more than a month longer. Breaches were made in the walls of the fort, and the town itself was almost completely destroyed. July 26, 1758, the garrison surrendered,

*Some of the most important events connected with the movement of troops and the surrender of Louisbourg were recorded by Nathaniel Knap in a diary, published by the Society of Colonial Wars in 1895. A brief biographical sketch of Nathaniel Knap, with some extracts from the diary, may be found in "Ould Newbury," pp. 484-491.

and the officers and men were sent to England, prisoners of war, in British ships. Subsequently, the merchants and other inhabitants of the town were taken to France, and all that remained of the fortifications at Louisbourg was demolished.

Now a few scattered dwellings dot the rough hills, bristled with stunted firs, that gird the quiet basin; while close at hand, within the precinct of the vanished fortress, stand two small farmhouses. All else is a solitude of ocean, rock, marsh and forest. . . .

Here stood Louisbourg: and not all the efforts of its conquerors, nor all the havoc of succeeding times, have availed to efface it. Men in hundreds toiled for months with lever, spade, and gunpowder in the work of destruction, and for more than a century it has served as a stone quarry; but the remains of its vast defences still tell their tale of human valor and human woe.*

EXPEDITIONS TO CROWN POINT.

Although France retained possession of Canada and Acadia by the terms of the treaty concluded at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748, the boundary line of the English colonies in America, from the Ohio river to the gulf of St. Lawrence, was left unsettled, and led to a renewal of hostilities in 1754, although war was not actually declared until 1756.

William Shirley, governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, sent an armed force under the command of Major-general John Winslow, of Marshfield, in 1754, to build a fort on the Kennebec river. Jacob March, of Newbury, served as surgeon of the expedition from June third to September twenty-first. The fort was completed on the third day of September, and called Fort Halifax.†

Early in the spring of 1755, preparations were made for an attack on Crown Point by an armed force of nearly thirty-five hundred men, under the command of Gen. William Johnson.

Moses Titcomb, of Newbury, who had served with honor in the campaign of 1745 at Louisbourg, was appointed colonel of an Essex county regiment, and ordered to march with his troops in the expedition to Lake George and Crown Point.‡

* "Montcalm and Wolfe," Parkman, vol. ii., p. 53.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciii., p. 107.

‡ See Massachusetts Archives (Muster Rolls), vol. xcv., part i., p. 96, for the names of the officers of this regiment and their terms of service.

The regiment attended service in the meeting-house of the Third parish in Newbury on the twenty-second day of May, 1755, and listened to a sermon by the Rev. John Lowell, from the text, "For the Lord your God is he that goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies, to save you."

In the battle that began between eleven and twelve o'clock on the eighth day of September, 1755, at Lake George, Colonel Titcomb had command of the extreme right wing of General Johnson's army. The French forces, defeated, fled into the woods, leaving their baggage and military supplies unprotected. At about four o'clock in the afternoon, while the battle was raging furiously, and the noise of musketry was heard all along the line, Colonel Titcomb was shot and instantly killed by a party of Indians, who were concealed in a swamp about eighty rods distant.*

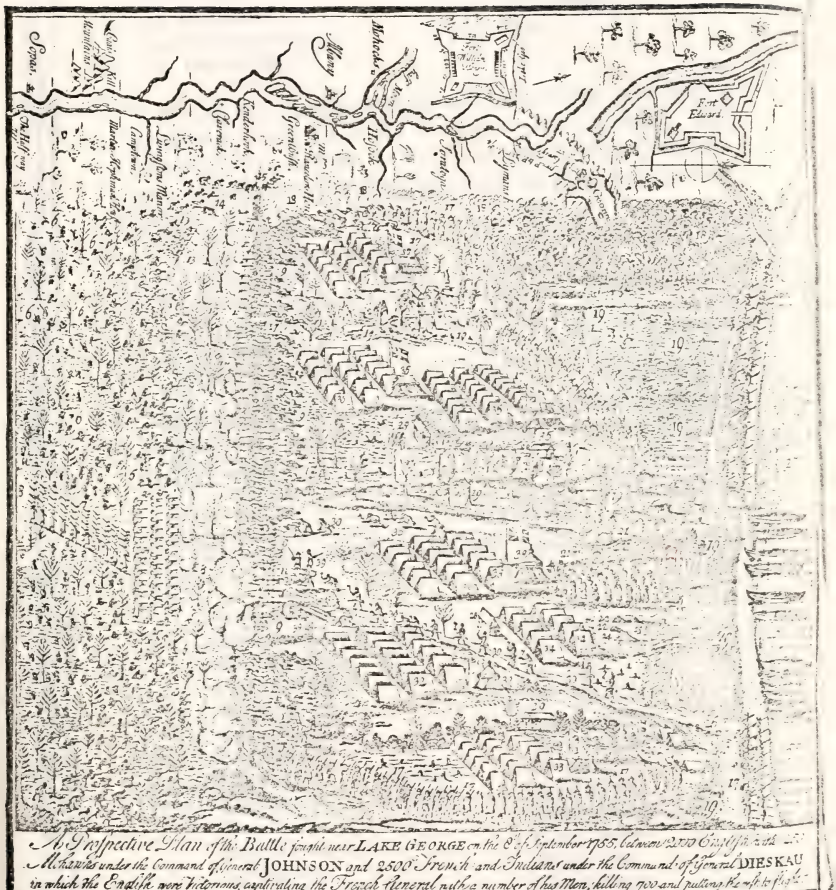
General Johnson, slightly wounded, was borne from the field at the beginning of the battle; and the attack on the fort at Crown Point was, by his order, abandoned until a more convenient season.

Samuel Blodget, a trader in Boston and a sutler in the army, made a plan of the battlefield, which was engraved by Thomas Johnston, and published by Richard Draper in 1755.† The plan is reproduced on the next page. The position of the troops and other points of interest are marked on the plan to correspond with the figures in the following list: —

6. Canadians and Indians
7. French regulars attacking
8. Road
9. Provincials in action
10. Trees felled for breast works
11. Cannon.
12. Cannon posted on an eminence.
13. Place where Dieskau fell.
14 and 15. Canadians
16 The man that shot Dieskau.
17 Reserves
18 Woods and Swamps
19 Morass
20 Cannon defending the flank.
21 Baggage wagons
22, 23 and 24 Stores and Amunition
25 Mortars
26 Road to the lake
27, 28 and 29 Store houses
30 Mowhawks

* "Ould Newbury," pp. 464–473.

† Narrative and Critical History of America, vol. v., note, p. 586. The plan was reproduced in Bancroft's History of the United States (1854), vol. ix., p. 210; also, in the History of Lake George and Lake Champlain, by B. C. Butler (1868).



BLODGET'S MAP OF THE BATTLE OF LAKE GEORGE, 1755.

31 Gen. Johnson's tent
32 Col Lyman's regiment
33 Col Harris' "
34 Col Cockroft's "
35 Col Williams' "
36 Col Ruggles' regiment
37 Col Titcomb's "
38 Col Guttridge's "
39 Officers

During the summer of 1755, additional troops were sent to re-enforce the army in the vicinity of Lake George. One company, composed of the following-named officers and men from Newbury, served from September 8, 1755, to January 6, 1756.*

Samuel Gerrish Jun	Capt.	Jonathan Martin	Private
Joseph Little,	Lieut.	Samuel Hogg	"
Henry Chipman,	Ensign	Benjamin Winter	"
Daniel Chismore	Corporal	Ebenezer Flood	"
Anthony Morse	Private	John Dole	"
Samuel Woodman	"		

At about the same time, Capt. Jonathan Poor organized a company that served a little more than two months at Lake George and Crown Point.

Muster-Roll of the Company in His Majesty's service under the command of Jonathan Poor Capt.

[In the Crown Point expedition from Sept 9, 1755 to Nov. 17, 1755.]†

Jonathan Poor	Capt	PRIVATES.
David Hazeltine	Lieut	Josiah Gutherson
David Parker	2nd "	Benjn Fish
Isaac Chandler	Serjeant	Jno Asten
Jno Peabody	"	George Davis
Samuel Currier	"	Joseph Odell
Daniel Jaquish	"	Andrews Johnson
Seth Petty	Clerk	Daniel Crysey
Daniel Dane	Corporal	Israel Adams
Isaac Abott	"	Thoms Russell
Richard Peabody	"	James Pearson
Asa Swan	"	John Cillam
Daniel Blanchard	"	Thoms Hovey
Uriah Abbott	"	Moses Haggott
Saml Holt	Drummer	Saml Walker

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 107. Other officers and men belonging to this company were from Salisbury, Amesbury, Rowley, and Haverhill.

†Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 14.

PRIVATES (*continued*).

Stephen Carlton	Thom^{s} Emmery
Joseph Marbell	Nathan Merrill
Richard Kimball	Ebenezer Brown
William Kimball	Enoch Johnson
Jn^{o} Presbey	Thom^{s} Mitchell
Asa Giles	Nathaniel Mearill
Tubal Ayers	Enoch Poor
Obediah Belknap	Nathan Austin
Joseph Webster	Andrew Foster
James Eaton	Joseph Parker
Daniel Coffin	Ward Noyes *

At a conference of the governors of Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, Pennsylvania, and Maryland, held December 12, 1755, another expedition to Crown Point was agreed upon; and the General Court of the province of Massachusetts Bay voted to raise thirty-five hundred men to be placed with other provincial troops under the command of Gen. John Winslow, of Marshfield. Owing to the capture of the fort at Oswego, early in the spring of 1756, by the French general, Montcalm, the attack on Crown Point was again deferred, and the troops remained inactive in the vicinity of Lake Champlain until their term of enlistment expired.

The Newbury men who served in this expedition were enrolled in two companies and credited with ten months' service in the regiment commanded by Col. Jonathan Bagley, who was stationed at Fort William Henry on Lake George, and employed during the summer of 1756 in building three sloops and several hundred whale-boats for the transportation of troops and munitions of war to Ticonderoga.†

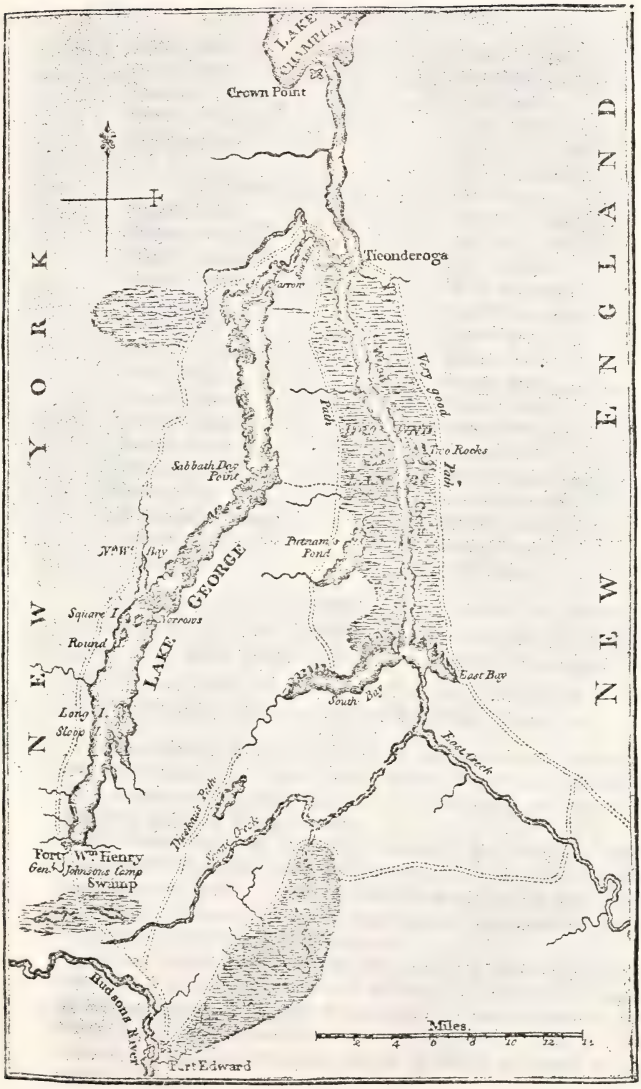
Muster Roll of the company in His Majesty's service under the command of Col. Jonathan Bagley, John Kingsbury Capt. at Crown Point from Feb. 18 to Dec. 17 1756.‡

Gedion Woodwell	1st Lieut.	Joseph Remick	Clerk
Benj. Kingsberry.	2d "	Joseph Rose	Serg.
Timothy Colby	Ensign	Humphrey Atkinson	"

*This company was partly composed of Newbury men, but their places of residence are not given in the muster roll.

†"Montcalm and Wolfe," Parkman, vol. i., p. 388.

‡Massachusetts Archives (Muster Rolls), vol. xcv., p. 92; also, pp. 199 and 424, and vol. xciv., p. 392, and pp. 105, 135, and 358.



LAKE GEORGE, TICONDEROGA, AND CROWN POINT.

James Carr.	Serg.	Richard Kent
John Butler.	corp.	Ebenr Knapp.
Jonathan Noice.	"	Jona Lowell
Isaac Remick.	"	Willm Mitchell
William Coffin.	"	Sam'l Morgaridge
		Wm. Morgaridge
PRIVATES.		Jona Norton
Hezek. Aubin.		Edwd Pettingell
William Brown.		Mathew Pettingell
Silas Burbank.		Jona Roggers
Hezek. Colby.		Willm Sampson
Joshua Colby		Joseph Sampson
Samuel Cresse		Moses Sweet
Nicholas Currier		Samuel Sweet.
John Downing.		Joseph Stockman.
Joseph Inglish.		Ballard Smith.
John Goodrich.		Jona Whitmore
Joseph Gareland.		Daniel Willit.
Joseph Godfree.		Samll Wallingford
Nath. Hunt.		Oliver Worster.
Nehemiah Johnson		Edwd Thompson
Samuel Candrick.		George Mace
Daniel Kent		John Weed

The officers and men named in the above list were from Newbury, except Col. Jonathan Bagley and Ensign Timothy Colby, who were from Amesbury. Gideon Woodwell, lieutenant, was placed in charge of the ship-carpenters at Fort William Henry. His commission reads as follows: —

William Shirley, Esq, Captain General and Governor in Chief in and over his Majesty's Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England and Vice Admiral of the same, General and Commander in Chief of his Majesty's Forces in North America.

To Gideon Woodwell, Gentleman, Greeting. His Majesty's Service requiring that a number of Shipwrights and others skilled in the felling and hewing of Timber should be forthwith sent from this Province for the Building of Battoes &c for Transporting the Forces destined for the Intended Expedition against Crownpoint.

You are hereby authorized and impowered to take upon you the Direction of a Company of Artizans and the Government over them in all Matters relating to the said Business and you are to follow all such Orders as you shall receive from me or any Person or Persons I shall appoint to give you Instructions herein for which this shall be your sufficient Warrant.

Given under my hand and Seal at Arms at Boston the twenty third day of March 1756 In the twenty ninth Year of his Majestys Reign.

By his Excellencys Command W. SHIRLEY
THOS. CLARKE, *Depty Secry*

Muster Roll of Capt. Beniah Youngs' Company on the late Crown Point Expedition from Feb. 18. 1756 to Decem. 22 following. In Col. Bagley's Regm't.*

Beniah Young.	Capt.	Rich. Dole.
Saml. Greenleaf.	Lieut.	Dav[d] Downing
Stephen Ilssly.	Ensign.	Edm[d] Emery
Francis Holladay.	Serg.	Thomas Ford
Stephen Clark.	"	Wm. Ferrick
Wm. Stockman	"	Jon[a] Griffin
Thomas Pearsons.	Clerk.	Enoch Gooding
Dan'l Sampson.	Corp.	Zebediah Hunt
James Hayes	"	John Harshorn
Stephen Haskell	"	Paul Ilsley.
Wyman Bradbury	"	Daniel Knight
Joseph Adams	Drummer	Joseph Low
		Josiah Martin
PRIVATES.		Barnard Mace
Wm. Hudson Ballard.		Nath'l Noice
Abner Bagley.		Ambrose Nelson
Kiah Bagley		Thomas Obrion
Anth. Bell.		Jos. Pettingell
Wm. Colewell		Elisha Pillsbury
Joseph Cooker		Benj. Rogers
Daniel Curtis		Sumner Shackford
Wm. Connor.		Enoch Wells.
John Casserday		Benj. Winter
Philemon Casserday		

Other men enrolled in this company were from Rowley, Haverhill, Amesbury, and Salisbury.

There was also one company from Newbury in the regiment commanded by Col. Ichabod Plaisted, of Salem, engaged in the same service from February eighteenth to December 22, 1756, as follows: — †

Jonathan Pearson,	Capt.	Thomas Stevens,	Serg[t]
Joshua Greenleaf,	Lieut	Andrew Rody,	"
Benjamin Brown,	Ensign	Paul Cammatt,	"

* Massachusetts Archives (Muster Rolls), vol. xcv., p. 134. † Ibid., pp. 136–138.

Joseph Noyes, Clerk	Henry Noyes
Ezekiel Mighill, Private	John Owens
ditto Sergt	George Pattison
William Badger, Corporal	Jonathan Rogers
Tristam Coffin, "	Samuel Swett
Joseph Creesy, Drummer	Samuel Stickney
	James Tenny
PRIVATES	Benjamin Perkins
Samuel Burrell	Benjamin Coffin
John Knowlton	John Dole
Richard Brett	Jeremiah Dalton
Joseph Coffin	Nath[l] Foster
Benjamin Coffin	Daniel Norton *

In addition to the Newbury men who enlisted in Col. Jonathan Bagley's and Col. Ichabod Plaisted's regiments, a large number served during the summer of 1754 or winter of 1754–5 in Col. John Greenleaf's regiment. March 20, 1756, Colonel Greenleaf reported "An exact list of the men who have been employed in his Majesty's Service These two years Past," as follows: — †

Col John Greenleaf	79 men
Col Moses Titcomb	78 "
Major Joseph Gerrish	24 "
Capt John Northend	25 "
Capt Richard Kent	19 "
Capt. Richard Thirston	17 ".
Capt Stephen Emery	29 "
Capt John Pearson	35 "
Capt Caleb Cushing	17 "
Capt Moses Sargeant	46 "
Capt James Smith	25 "
Capt William True	35 "
Capt George Worthen	43 "

The residences of the men are not given in the original list, but the following-named persons in Colonel Greenleaf's company were evidently from Newbury: —

Philip Coombs	Gershom Burbank
James Bayley	Benj[a] Chandler
Jon[a] Boardman	Paul Currier

* The remainder of this company was composed of men from Ipswich, Salisbury, and other towns in the vicinity.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 134.

Moses Cross
Benja Coffin
William Lord
William Coffin
Joseph Coker
John Castro
Joseph Clough
Joseph English
John Gould
James Hill
Samuel Long
Francis Hodgkins
John Hilton
Isaac Jillings
John Lord
John Dole
David Coat
Benja Sweet
Friend Moody
Moses Rolf
Benja Libra
Joseph Cheney
Abel Davis
Hezekiah Colby
John Pike
Stephen Haskell
Saml Aubin
Anthony Stickney
Joseph Little
Benja Rogers
Daniel Tilton
William Moody
Willm Noyes
Nathl Hunt
John Wyatt
Samel Walingford
Ballard Smith
Daniel Willet
David Titcomb
Elipht Griffin
Benja Moody
Samel Holt
George Paterson
Hezikiah Aubin
Francis Whiteher
Patrick Phisgard
Jona Blake
Jona Reynolds
Elimeleek Weed
Benja Simpson
Saml Stickney
Thomas Sweet
Stephen Hunt
Andrew Rody
George Mace
Thomas Eaton
Sergeant Weed
Saml Blackenburg
Edwd Holland
Richd Flood
Jona Pearson
Gideon Woodwell
Henry Chipman
Saml Morgaridge
Skipper Lunt
Daniel Tilton
Stephen Tilton
Samel Moody
Philip White
Joseph Little
Andrew Flood *

In Colonel Titcomb's company all, or nearly all, the following-named persons were from Newbury: —

Coln Moses Titcomb
Edmd Morss
John Kingsbury
Henry Titcomb
Benaiah Young
Daniel Pike
Abner Dole Jun
Daniel Kent

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 131.

Enoch Pilsbury
Edmund Davis
Sherbon Sleeper
John Satchell
John Swett
William Swett
Isaac Remick
Joseph Somerby
Joseph Sampson
John Knowlton
James Buzwell
Josiah Martin
Jona Bradbury
Moses Atkinson
Morrill Witcher
Nathl Lane
Nathl Foster Jr
Nicholas George
Nathan Page
Samuel Aubin Jun
Baker Coffin
Saml Carr
Thomas Bartlett 3d
Willm Weed
Willm Harvey
John Holiday
Nathel Howard
Eleazer Hudson
Joseph Rogers
Saml Burrell
Mathew Pettingall
Josiah Chase
Jeremiah Lull
James Horton
Moses George
Jona Moulton
Seth Bartlet Jun
John Plat
Jona Morrill
Willm Conner
Andrew Rodes
Timothy Rian
James Nickells
Jeffry Titcomb
John Knowlton
Stephen Coffin
Willm Morgaridge
Joseph Leach
James Carr
Hardy Lowell
Willm Brown
Obediah Eaton
Benjamin Sampson
Joshua Titcomb
John Pilsbury
James Hayes
Benja Rogers
Jona Dole Jun
Joseph Garlin
Robert Jones
Thomas Moulton
Willm Mitchell
David Stickney
James Hackett
John Sweet
Daniel Goodin
Thomas Ford
Skipper Lunt *

The following men from Newbury were enrolled in Major Joseph Gerrish's company : —

Nathl Adams
Jona Martin
Willm Stickney
Nathl Gitchell
Joseph Walingford
Saml Dutey
John Pike
Nathll Adams
Willm Stickney
Jona Stickney
Nathll Heth
Thomas Perrin

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 131.

Joseph Spiller	James Smith. Jun,
Charles Casity	Edm^{d} Cheney. Jun
David Woodman	Joseph Walingford
Anthony Bell	Jon^{a} Martin
Nath^{ll} Getchell	Sam^{ll} Hogg
Aaron Nichols	Benjamin Winter *

In the company under the command of Capt. Richard Kent were nineteen men from Newbury, as follows: —

Joseph Ilsley Jun	John Follinsby
Nath^{ll} Clough	James Stickney
Nath^{ll} Clough	Ebenezer Flood
Sam^{ll} Currier	David Knight
Enoch Wells	John Moody
Patrick Sirvant	Will^{m} Moody
Will^{m} Stickney	Thom^{s} Noyes
Thomas Knight	Rich^{d} Little
Thos Ilsley	Sam^{ll} Toppan 3rd *
Thomas Greenleaf	

The following-named men in Capt. Stephen Emery's company were probably from Newbury: —

George Freeze †	Sam^{ll} Emery
John Campbell †	Alexander Mills
John Cooper †	Andrew Downer
Stephen Rogers Jun	Israel Gardner
Stephen Bagley Jun	Daniel Cheney
George Freeze †	Joseph Cooper
John Campbell †	Stephen Richardson
John Cooper †	Thom^{s} Pike Jun
Stephen Lowell	Jacob Bartlet
David Ossillaway	Anthony Morss
Anthony Chase	Sam^{ll} Woodman
Joseph Lowell	Daniel Cheesemore
Barns Short	Thomas Folinsby †

In the company under the command of Capt. Caleb Cushing were seventeen men, probably from Newbury and Salisbury, as follows: —

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 132.

† In the original list, the names of George Freeze, John Campbell, and John Cooper are recorded twice. See Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 132.

Sam[ll] Greeley
Shubael Greely
Henry Moody
Daniel Moody
Benj[a] Buswell
John Stephens
Josiah Hook
Sam[ll] March
David Eaton
James French
Moses Merrill
Will[m] Eaton
Will[m] Townsend
Abell Davis
Nath[ll] Carr
Abell Davis. Jun
Simon Williams *

In Capt. James Smith's company nearly, if not all, the following-named men were from Newbury: —

Will[m] Cooper
John Cooper
James Goss
Francis England
Wells Chase
Hezekiah Hutchins
Johnson Chase
Benj[a] Jaques Jun
Stephen Merrill
Ebenezer Dow
Nath[ll] Plumer
Nath[ll] Plumer. Jun
Eph[m] Boynton
John Chase
Will[m] Harris
John Cooper
James Smith
Benj[a] Pressy
Thomas Chase
Solomon Holeman
Nathan Bayley
Nath[ll] Low
Amos Dole
Doct[r] Jacob March
Capt Sam[ll] Gerrish †

All persons between sixteen and sixty years of age, who were exempt from ordinary military duty, were organized and ordered to hold themselves in readiness to respond to any call for service within the limits of the town. The following-named persons, enrolled in two militia companies, were prominent in the commercial, social, and professional life of Newbury.

The Alarrum List of the foot company in Newbury of which Joseph Coffin is Capt. 1757. July 13.

The Rev. Mr. Bass.
The Rev. Jon[a] Parsons.
Edmund March.
John Brown.
Step[n] Sewall.
Will[m] Atkins. jun.
Nathan Hale. jun.
Abraham Titcomb.
Anthony Stickney Lieut.
Moses Bradstreet.
Capt. Gideon Woodwell.
Lieut. Joshua Greenleaf.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xciv., p. 133 † Ibid., p. 134.

Nathan Brown.	Doct. John Newman
Capt. John Currier.	Doct. Parker Noyes
Capt. Wm Allen.	Isaac Johnson.
Eleazer Johnson.	Capt. Daniel Tilton
Jona Filbrook	Capt. Jona Pearson
Ebenezer Lowell.	Capt. Nicholas Tracy.
Dn Thoms Moody.	Capt. Daniel Emery
Benja Titcomb.	Capt. John Pearson
Saml Smith.	Capt [—] Baren (?)
Josiah Woodbridge.	Capt. Jeremiah Pearson
Mr. Benja Woodbridge	Mr. Eleazer Hudson
Ebenezr Little	Willm Jenkins.
Richd Toppan.	Samll Emerson.
John Alent.	Nathaniel Sawyer.
Moses Pike	Nathan Prince.
Nicolas Pettingll	Capt. Daniel Marquand
Thomas Smith jun	Ebenezer Sergeant
Robert Cole	Ralph Cross
Willm Couch	John Wood
Doctr Parker Clark	Jonathan Beck
Doctr John Sprague.	Samuel Harris *

The Larrum List of the Fifth Company of Militia in the Town of Newbury under the command of Capt. Richard Greenleaf. 1757.

John Kingsbury.	Joshua Titcomb
Theophilus Bradbury.	Phillip White.
Benaiah Young.	Sumersby Moody.
Samuel Greenleaf.	Enoch Plumer.
Joseph Atkings	Henry Friend.
Arcalus Woodman.	Hilton Woodman
William Macheard.	Nathaniel Chase
John Ordway.	William Coffin
Dudley Atkings.	Mahew Greenleaf.
John Berry.	Jonathan Hartshorne
Edmund Moss.	Bolan Stocman
Ebenezar Knap	Seth Bartlett
Daniel Farnam.	John Brown (Lame)
Samuel Somersby.	Icabod Woodman. (Lame)
Abiall Somersby.	Abnah Dole. (Lame)
Joseph Titcomb	Moses Hoyte (one foot.)
Richard Coffin	Jonathan Sampson (one eye)
Abell Merrill.	Alett Greenlife.
Enoch Titcomb jun.	John Friend.

* Massachusetts Archives (Muster Rolls), vol. xcv., p. 421.

John Knight
Charles Hodge
Michael Dalton
Jonathan Dole
Paul Shackford.
Daniel Coffin
William Davenport.
Benjamin Greenleaf.
Richard Greenough.
John Lowell.
John Kent.
Nathanel Foster
Enoch Sawyer.
Edmund Sawyer.
Micajah Sawyer
John Atkinson
Joseph Whitmore
Samuel Nowell
John Britt
Jonathan Thomb (?)
Joshua Lunt
Moses Sawyer.*

A List of the Training Soldiers in the Second Company of Foot in Newbury under the Command of Lieut Coll Josh Gerrish.†

SERGENTS

Richard Dummer
Jereh Poor
Caleb Burbank
Moses Pearson
Henry Adams
John Thorla
Saml Davenport
Jonn Swett
Thomas Lull
Henry Poor

John Adams
Charles Adams
Daniel Adams
Moses Adams
Joseph Adams
Israel Adams
Life Adams
Edmund Adams
Daniel Barker
John Bailey
Micjah Burbank
Moses Chaney
Ezrah Clough
Ebenr Clark
Benja Chaney
Shubeal Dummer
William Dummer
John Daly
John Danfort
Oliver Danfort
Moses Daly
Micjah Dickerson
Saml Danford Jun
Joseph Danford
John Frazier
Enoch Flood
Richard Gutridge
Enoch Gutridge
Josiah Gutridge
Joseph Gerrish
Enoch Gerrish
Jacob Gerrish
Saml Gerrish Jun
Moses Hale
John Jackman
Edward Longfellow
Saml Longfellow
Moses Lull
Joseph Lesley
Elkanah Lunt Jun
Jona Martin
Parker Mores

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcv., p. 424. In addition to the names printed above "[——] Frees, cripple, John Stickney, lame, William Starkey blind" were reported as physically disqualified for military service.

†Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcv., pp. 427, 428.

Abner Mores
John Noyes
Sam[l] Noyes
John Noyes Jun
Daniel Parmer
Moses Poor
Jon[a] Pearson
Paul Pearson
Jereh Pearson
Enoch Pearson
Solomon Pearson
Josh Pearson
Thomas Perrin
Bemsley Plummer
Thomas Pike
Thomas Smith
David Stickney
William Stickney
Paul (?) Stickney
Moses Smith
Joseph Serles
John Serles Jun
David Spofford
Benj[a] Sayer
Nath[l] Tenney
Oliver Tenney
Richard Tenney
John Turner
Will[m] Turner
George Thorla
Moses Thorla
Tristram Thorla
John Thorla Jun
John Urier
Moses Woodman
David Woodman
Moses Wheeler
Jon[a] Wheeler
Will[m] Titcomb
Will[m] Woodman
Noyes Pearson
Eleazer Burbank
Rev. Mr. Moses Parsons
Mr. Dummer Jewett
John Bailey
Sam[l] Worthen
Daniel Noyes
Robert Adams
William Grant
George Thorla
Joshua Noyes
Edmund Gerrish
Moses Gerrish
Sam[l] Adams
John Danford
Elkanah Lunt
David Pearson
David Pearson, Jun.
Jon[a] Pearson
Jon[a] Pearson Jun
Joshua Curriah
Charles Casedy
Joseph Noyes
Stephen Dole
Sam[l] Searle
Benj[a] Willet
Timothy Jackman
Joseph Smith
Will[m] Longfellow
Neheh Noyes
Nath[l] Boynton
Jon[a] Thorlo
Abraham Sayer
Abraham Brown
Israel Adams
Sam[l] Howsley
Moses Wheeler
Will[m] Tenney

Upon the oath I have taken this is a true and Exact List

JOHN DUMMER
Clerk of 3[d] Company

In June, 1758, Gen. Abercrombie had gathered a force of fifteen thousand men at the head of Lake George; and, in the

month of July following, he made an unsuccessful attempt to capture the fort in the possession of the French troops at Ticonderoga. Among the soldiers enlisted for this service was a company of one hundred men, under the command of Capt. Joseph Newhall of Newbury.

Muster Roll of a Company of Foot in His Majestys Service under the Command of Captain Joseph Newhall in a Regiment raised by the Province of the Massachusetts Bay for the Reduction of Canada where of Jonathan Bagley Esq is Colonel, viz:*

Joseph Newhall	Captain	Newbury
Jonathan Pearson	Lieut	"
Joseph Ilsley	"	"
Perley Pike	Ensign	"
Sommerby Moody	Sergeant	"
Skipper Eliott	"	"
John Owens	"	"
Seth Carver	"	Bridgewater
Paul Ilsley	Corporal	Newbury
Daniel Chizemore	"	"
Enoch Gerrish	"	[No residence given.]
Enoch Wells	"	"
Jeremiah Dalton	Drummer	"

PRIVATES.

John Brown	[No residence given]	Aaron Davis	Newbury
Kiah Bailey	"	John Danforth	"
William Burrell	"	John Doty	"
Edmund Bailey	"	Abijah Dickinson	Rowley
Simon Bailey	"	Philemon Dane	Ipswich
Jacob Burrell	"	Joshua Danforth	Newbury
Daniel Brackenbury	"	Samuel Danforth	[No residence given]
Stephen Bailey	"	Moses Davis	"
James Buswell	"	Davis Downing	"
Asa Bass	Halifax	Oliver Dole	"
Peter Bradshaw	Boston	Ebenezer Flood	"
Joseph Bailey	Newbury	Enoch Flood	"
Ezra Clough	Rowley	Ebenezer Hood Jun	"
Nathaniel Clough	"	John Goodridge	"
Joshua Currier	Newbury	Samuel Gibson	"
William Cheeney	Rowley	Josiah Goodridge	"
Joseph Coker	Newbury	Leonard Hermon	"
Benjamin Carter	Plymouth	Carr Huse	"

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcvi., part ii., pp. 515, 517, and 518.

Aquila Hodgkins	[No residence given]	William Plumer	Newbury
Ephraim Hoyt Jun	"	Jeremiah Plumer	"
Ezekiel Jewett Jun	Boxford	Samuel Rogers	Ipswich
David Jaquis	Newbury	Thomas Rogers	Newbury
Stephen Jackman	"	Robert Rogers	"
Micah Leach	Halifax	Ebenezer Rawson	Middlebury
Elkanah Lunt	Newbury	Jeremiah Sachell	Ipswich
Samuel Lunt	[No residence given]	William Sampson	Newbury
Stephen Lunt	"	Joseph Swett Jun	"
Reuben Mace	"	Joseph Swett	"
Reuben Mace Jun	"	Benjamin Sawyer	Rowley
Jonathan Martin	"	Joseph Swasey	Newbury
Joseph Moody	"	Moses Swasey	Gloucester
John Moody	"	Eliphalet Sawyer	Newbury
Abner Mooers	Rowley	Roland Stockman	Boxford
Ebenezer Morrison	Newbury	Leonard Smith	"
James Nelson	[No residence given]	Isaac Sturtevant	Halifax
Henry Noyes	"	John Searl Jun	Rowley
John Noyes *	"	James Thompson	Halifax
Paul Noyes	"	Sargent Weed	Newbury
Ambrose Nelson	"	William Weed	[No residence given]
Nathaniel Noyes	"	Benjamin Woodman	"
Nathaniel Oben	"	William Woodman	"
Thomas Perrin	Rowley	Nathaniel Willett	"
Thomas Pike	"	John Wyatt	"
Simon Page	Newbury	Samuel Wyatt	"
Samuel Plumer	"	Janes Woodbury	"
Samuel Pulsifer	Salisbury	Thomas Follinsby	"

Thomas Pownall, governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, recommended in 1758 the building of a fortification at the mouth of the Penobscot river, in order to prevent the French naval forces from landing there and sending out scouting parties to plunder and destroy the sea-coast towns. March 23, 1759, the General Court authorized the voluntary enlistment of four hundred men, to be divided into four companies and taken in transports to the place where the proposed fort was to be erected.

On the first day of May, one company, consisting of one hundred men from Haverhill, Bradford, and other towns in

* Mr. Eugene Noyes, of Amesbury, Mass., has in his possession a memorandum book in which John Noyes recorded the date of his enlistment and other incidents connected with his service at Lake George. The company evidently came home by the way of Concord, arriving in Newbury November 13, 1758.

the vicinity, under the command of Capt. Israel Herrick, sailed from Newbury; and on the fourth day three companies, enlisted in Suffolk county, sailed from Boston.

Joshua Bailey, of Bradford, was a soldier in Capt. Herrick's company, and carefully noted the following items in his diary of daily events: —

Bradford March the Thirty First day in the year One Thousand Seven Hundred and Fifty Nine. Then I, Joshua Baily, voluntarily enlisted in his Majesty's service for three Months to go to Penobscot under Capt. Israel Herrick. On April 20th at three o'clock in the afternoon we marched to Newbury and arrived there about five of the clock and that night we lodged aboard Capt Bradbury's [sloop] and lay in the harbor of Newbury on Sunday the 29th, and on Monday the 30th at nine o'clock in the morning we were drawn up four deep and marched through the Town and up to Long Wharf and took a lesson till 6 of the clock in the afternoon; And on Tuesday Gov. Thomas Pownal, commander in chief, arrived at Newbury, the first of May. About 3 o'clock in the P.M. on board went to sea. The number of a hundred men.*

Governor Pownall accompanied the expedition, and probable sailed from Boston with the men who had been mustered into the service there. The fort was built at a place called Wassaumkeag Point, with a block-house in the centre, surrounded by a deep ditch and a high palisade. It was completed previous to July 7, 1759, when the main portion of the expedition sailed for home, leaving a small force to garrison the fort. In 1775, Captain Mowatt, in command of the British sloop "Canceau," dismantled the fort; and in 1779 the blockhouses were burned and the earthworks destroyed.

After the capture of Louisbourg in 1758, Gen. Jeffrey Amherst was placed in command of the troops at Lake George. He took possession of Ticonderoga and Crown Point, July 27, 1759, after Bourlamaque, the commander of the French forces, had abandoned and partially destroyed the fortifications.† A large number of Newbury men were in active service under General Amherst during the summer of that eventful year.

* New England Genealogical and Historical Register, vol. xiv., p. 5.
† "Montcalm and Wolfe," vol. ii., p. 239.

Return of the men enlisted or impressed for His Majesty's service of the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in the regiment whereof Joseph Gerrish, Esq[r] is Colonel, to be put under the immediate command of His Excellency Jeffry Amherst, Esq[r], General and Commander-in-Chief of His Majesty's Forces in North America for the invasion of Canada.

Ebenezer Flood
Richard Hale
James Safford, Jr.
Ezekiel Mighill
Rich[d] Flanders
William Noyes, Jr.
Stephen Jackman
Thomas Noyes
Asa Herriman
Ebenezer Flood, Jr.
Joseph Russel
Joseph Pettingell
Kiah Bayley
Sam[l] Currier
Ezra Hale
Moses Hale
Zechary Beel
John Flood
William Samson
Joseph Coker
Ichabod Colby
George Paterson
Nehemiah Johnson
John Pike
Nathaniel Howard
John Gold
John Lakeman
Aaron Davis
Simon Page
Samuel Dean
James Smith
William Hazzen
William Currier, 3d
Sam[l] Colby
Make-Peace Colby
Aaron Cheever
Benjamin Emery
Stephen Noyes, Jr.
Stephen Peirce

Richr[d] Goodwin
Benjamin Stickney
Thomas Jenkins
Nathan Poor
Joseph Stanwood
Henry Pierce
Moses Downing
Jacob Morril
David Jaques
David Perkins
Ezekiel Hardee
Moses Poor
John Hutchins
Stephen Bayley
Benj[a] Pilsbury
Elias Cheney
Gideon Downer
Henry Greenleaf
Thomas Pike, Jr.
Sam[l] Lowel
Sam[l] Gardner
Step[n] Richardson
Sam[l] Bayley
Thomas Williams
Joseph Foster
Parker Cooper
Jonathan Martin
Sam[l] Pike
Sam[l] Danford, Jr.
Sam[l] Gerrish, 2d
William Turner
William Morgaridge
William Stockman
Ebenez[r] Morrison
Benj[a] Woodman
John Morgaridge
Will[m] Plumer
James Buswell
David Downing

Elijah Pilsbery
Saml Carr
Joseph Cresey
Moses Debeck
Jacob Sawyer
Aquila Hodgkins
Caleb Stickney
Joseph Dole
Abel Coffin
Moses Woodman
John Low
John Hewes
John Carr, Jr.
Francis Brown
Joshua Kent
Richard Tucker
Stephen Clark
Ruben Mace
Solomon Aubin
Jonathan Godfrey
Enoch Poor
Francis Cresey
Jarvis Ring
Abel Davis
Oliver Osgood
Theophilus Ring
James French
Moses Wadleigh
Jarvis Flanders
Jacob Thompson
Philip Chandler
Hezekiah Flanders
Benjamin Bagley
John Osgood
Moses French
Bradbury True
Abel Bagley
Josiah Clough
Jesse Turrel
James Easman
Timo Sanders
Israel True
Nehemiah Noyes

Newbury April 10, 1759 *

CAPTURE OF QUEBEC AND CLOSE OF THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR.

In the expedition, under the command of Gen. James Wolfe, that sailed from Louisbourg up the river St. Lawrence to Quebec, in the month of June, 1759, was a company composed of the following-named officers and men from Newbury: —

William Davenport,	Capt.
Thomas Swett,	Lieut.
Gersham Burbank,	"
Jonathan Merrill,	Ensign.
Moses George,	Sergt.
John Moody,	"
Daniel Pike,	"
Matthew Pettingill,	"
Joshua Colby,	Corp.
Thomas Ford,	"
Stephen Morse,	"
Daniel Poor,	Corp.
William Stevens,	Drummer.

PRIVATES.

Luke Sweet.
Joseph Woodman.
Thomas Barnard.
John Brock.
Pall Coffin.
William Matthews.
James Ward.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcvii., pp. 107, 108.



GENERAL JAMES WOLFE.

PRIVATES (*continued*).

John Caswell.	Edmund Baly, Jr.
Daniel Knight.	John Stevens.
Nathaniel Roby.	Andrew Hilton.
Richard Pierce.	Paul Person.
Thomas Moody.	Nathan Pabody.
Stephen Colby.	Samuel Wyatt.
Ezra Cluff.	William Cheney.
Daniel Pilsbury.	Nathaniel Brown.
Joshua Moss.	William Clarke.
Samuel Huse.	Richard Sanborn.
Eleazer Burbank.	Zebediah Hunt.
Enoch Bagley.	Michael Short.
Zachariah Beel.	Sherborn Tilton.
William Griffin.	Jacob Burrill.
Jeremiah Person.	John Currier.*
Enoch Chase.	

Captain Davenport's company was in the battle on the plains of Abraham, when General Wolfe was killed, on the thirteenth day of September, and assisted in digging the trenches near the walls of the town, until the white flag was raised and Quebec surrendered, September 18, 1759.†

News of the great victory was received everywhere in New England with joy and exultation. In Newbury, an ox was broiled on a huge gridiron erected on vacant land, now Market square, Newburyport, at the westerly side of the Third parish meeting-house; and the occasion was enlivened with music and songs of triumph that continued late into the night.

For the re-enforcement of the English troops at Port Royal and Cape Breton, several regiments were enlisted in the province of Massachusetts Bay during the year 1759. One company in Colonel Frye's regiment was composed of the following-named officers and men from Newbury and the surrounding towns: —

A muster roll of the officers and men in Capt. Samuel Gerrish's company in Col. Frye's Regiment, in service in the Province of Nova Scotia after the first of January 1760.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcvii., pp. 325, 326.
† "Ould Newbury," pp. 494–497.

Samuel Gerrish	Capt	Henry Greenleaf	Serjeant
Hezikiah Hutchins	1st Lieut	John Goold	Corporal
Ezra Putnam	2nd "	Thomas Pike	"
Pearly Pike	Ensign	John Lakeman	"
Richard Hale	Serjeant	Jacob Currier	"
Stephen Clark	"	Nathl Noyes	Drummer

PRIVATES

Solomon Aubin	Thos Jenkins
Stephn Bailey	Nehemh Johnson
Saml Bailey	Samuel Lowell
Ichabod Colby	Joseph Martin
Saml Colby	Ezekiel Mighill
Isaac Chase	Thomas Noyes
Joseph Coker	Wm Noyes Jun
Makepeice Colby	Davod Perkins
John Chase	Moses Poor
Parker Cooper	Simon Page
Elias Cheney	Stephen Pierce
Aaron Cheever	Henry Pierce
Moses Downing	Enoch Poor
Saml Dummer	Samuel Pike
Aaron Davis	Parker Pilsbury
Saml Danforth Jun	Nathan Poor
Benjn Emery	George Paterson
Richd Flanders	Stephn Richardson
Ebenr Flood	Joseph Russell
Ebenr Flood Jun	Joseph Stanwood
John Flood	Willm Sampson
Joseph Foster	James Safford
Jonathan Godfrey	Benjn Stickney
Saml Gerrish	Abraham Sweet
Saml Gardner	James Smith
Richd Goodwin	William Turner
Asa Harriman	Enoch Thurston
John Hutchins	Seth Woodward
Ezekl Hardy	Thos. Williams
Nathl Howard	Nathl Martin
Stepn Jackman	Reuben Locke *
David Jaques	

On the twenty-eighth day of April, 1760, the second battle between the French and English troops for the possession of

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcviii., p. 457. The names of the soldiers after "Thos. Jenkins" are not given in the muster roll in the Massachusetts Archives, vol. xcviii., p. 150; and the names "John Pike, Serjeant, Samuel Currier, private, and Gideon Donner, private," are added.

Quebec was fought on the plains of Abraham. The English troops were driven back into the town. An attempt was made to carry the walls and ramparts by assault; but the opportune arrival of some English ships of war led to the withdrawal of the French forces, and Quebec was left to its fate.

When the treaty of peace was signed at Paris, on the tenth day of February, 1763, the seven years' war ended. Canada was ceded to England with other territorial possessions of France on the North American continent.

CHAPTER XV.

REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

In 1765, the Stamp Act was passed by Parliament, and stamp distributors were appointed for Newbury and Newburyport. They were unable to enforce the law, and were exposed to many indignities in their efforts to execute it. The act was repealed, March 18, 1766, to the great joy of the inhabitants of Newbury and of other towns in the province; but the right to levy and collect taxes was still asserted by Parliament. In 1767, heavy duties were imposed upon paper, glass, tea, and other articles of merchandise imported into the province of Massachusetts Bay.

September 22, 1768, Joseph Gerrish, esq., was chosen a delegate to a convention to be held in Faneuil Hall, Boston, for the purpose of devising ways and means to prevent the collection of these duties, and at the same time to avoid, if possible, a conflict with the legal representatives of the king. In the month of March, 1770, a committee, consisting of sixteen persons, was chosen to obtain pledges from the inhabitants of Newbury "not to purchase or use any foreign tea, or buy, directly or indirectly, merchandise of any kind from any merchant known to be an importer of goods from England," until the obnoxious revenue law was amended or repealed.*

December 29, 1772, another committee was chosen to consider the deplorable condition of public affairs, and determine what action should be taken "to protect and preserve the rights and privileges granted and guaranteed by the charter of the Province." The committee was composed of the following-named persons: —

* Town of Newbury Records; also, Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 236, 237.

Capt Joseph Hale	Capt Moses Little	Majr Samuel Gerrish
Majr Joshua Coffin	Samuel Sawyer	Dea Benj Colman
Mr Dudley Colman	Mr Simeon Chase	Capt Samuel Moody
Moses Noyes	Dr. Peter Merrill	Jacob Gerrish
Daniel Chute	Joseph Coffin Esq	John Moody
	Deacon Richard Adams	

January 4, 1773, the committee recommended "that there be a Committee chosen by this Town, annually, or till we shall obtain a Redress of our Grievances, to correspond with the Town of Boston & with such other towns as said committee shall think proper in order that there may be union and co-operation in the assertion and maintenance of our rights." *

The committee also reported a series of resolutions that were adopted by the legal voters of the town and ordered to be entered in full upon the records, "there to stand as a lasting memorial of the sense they have of their invaluable rights and of their determination to defend them in every lawful way as occasion may require." *

Capt. Joseph Hale, Major Samuel Gerrish, Major Joshua Coffin, Capt. Moses Little, and Capt. Samuel Moody were elected members of the committee of correspondence, and ordered to confer with the provincial authorities in regard to the duties imposed by the law regulating trade with England. They were also instructed to co-operate with the committees of other towns in an effort to secure the repeal of the obnoxious law.

December 22, 1773 voted that this town will use their utmost endeavors to hinder the importation of tea in America, so long as the duty shall remain thereon, either by the East India company, or in any other way whatever.*

At a meeting held January 4, 1774, Capt. Joseph Hale, Mr. Jacob Gerrish, Mr. Dudley Colman, Mr. Joshua Noyes, Mr. Richard Adams, jr., Mr. Edward Moody, and Mr. Samuel Noyes, who had previously been appointed for that purpose, presented a series of resolutions, fourteen in number, that were unanimously adopted, with the following patriotic appeal to the inhabitants of neighboring towns: —

* Town of Newbury Records.

Beloved brethren let us stand fast in the liberty, wherewith God and the British constitution in conjunction with our own, have made us free, that neither we, nor our posterity after us (through any fault of ours) be entangled with the yoke of bondage! *

Gén. Thomas Gage, who superseded Thomas Hutchinson as governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, arrived in Boston May 13, 1774, and entered at once upon the discharge of his duties. When the General Court assembled on the twenty-fifth day of May, he announced that in consequence of the excitement and tumult prevailing in Boston, the session would not be permitted to continue after the close of the month. Three days later, fearing his orders would be disregarded, he considered it advisable to declare the General Court "adjourned to meet in Salem on Tuesday the seventh day of June."

The representatives and magistrates reassembled at the time and place appointed. Joseph Gerrish, esq., who represented Newbury, protested with others against the arbitrary adjournment of the General Court. Delegates were elected to the Continental Congress at Philadelphia, and a repeal of the obnoxious laws enacted by Parliament was peremptorily demanded.

The governor, aroused and alarmed by these revolutionary proceedings, issued a proclamation on the seventeenth day of June, dissolving the General Court. The messenger to whom this proclamation was intrusted found it impossible to gain admittance to the upper hall where the representatives were assembled, and was compelled to read it on the stairs leading to the representative chamber.

At a town meeting held in Newbury on the twenty-third day of June, Col. Joseph Gerrish, Dudley Colman, Deacon Silas Pearson, Deacon Edmund Bayley, and Capt. Joseph Brown were added to the committee of correspondence; and, in answer to a letter received from the friends of American liberty in Boston, the town "voted to discontinue all Commerce with Great Britain and with all importers of goods from thence, until the Boston Port Bill is amended or repealed." *

* Town of Newbury Records.

On the ninth day of August, the inhabitants of Newbury appropriated the sum of two hundred pounds "for the purchase of provisions to be sent to the suffering inhabitants of the town of Boston." *

	£ s d
October twenty sixth, Mr. Samuel Moody, principal of Dummer Academy, collected and sent to the inhabitants of Boston the sum of	7. 0.0
The members of the First Parish church Rev. John Tucker, minister, sent February 6, 1775	46. 4.2
The members of the Byfield Parish church Rev. Moses Parsons, minister, sent	10.16.4
The members of the Fifth Parish church Rev. Oliver Noble, minister, sent	9.06.0 †

At a town meeting held September 1, 1774, to consider the unhappy condition of public affairs, the following resolution was unanimously adopted: —

. . . that we are ready at all times to unite with our Brethren, on this Continent, in consulting upon such measures as may be necessary to be carried into execution for recovering our inestimable Rights & Privileges: we do therefore heartily concur with the Town of Marblehead in the Proposal which they have made viz: of having a County Meeting & accordingly we have Chosen the Honble Joseph Gerrish Esq. Capt Moses Little, Major Samuel Gerrish, Mr Richard Adams Jur & Capt Joseph Hale to be a committee on the part of this town to meet the several committees from the other towns in this county in order to agree upon such measures as the exigency of our Publick affairs may require.*

The town clerk was instructed to furnish a copy of this resolution "for publication in the Essex Journal and Merrimack Packet." The convention met at Ipswich on the sixth day of September, and after a brief discussion resolved to resist and oppose in every lawful way the recent appointment of councillors by the king, under the provisions of "An Act for the better regulating the Government of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England."

Writs for a special meeting of the General Court to be held at Salem on the fifth day of October were issued by General

* Town of Newbury Records.
† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xxx., p. 374.

Gage, governor of the province; and the town of Newbury, having elected Hon. Joseph Gerrish representative on the twenty-second day of September, instructed him "not to be qualified for his seat in the house by any of the councillors who have received their commission by mandamus from his Majesty, but by the Council chosen by the house of representatives agreeable to the charter of the province." * It was also considered advisable, in order to secure unanimity of action in the several towns of the province, to appoint Mr. Gerrish delegate to a Provincial Congress to be held in the vicinity of Boston, "to consult and determine upon such measures as will promote the Peace, Welfare and Prosperity of the Province." *

On the twenty-eighth day of September, Governor Gage, irritated and annoyed by the spirit and temper of the people, and confident that further attempts at legislation would be useless, countermanded the order issued for a meeting of the General Court at Salem. Ninety representatives, however, assembled there October fifth; and, after waiting in vain for the governor to appear and administer the oath of office, they proceeded to organize a Provincial Congress. John Hancock was elected chairman, and Benjamin Lincoln clerk. After a brief discussion, they adjourned on the seventh to meet at Concord October eleventh. For three days the delegates were in session at Concord, and then adjourned to meet in Cambridge on the seventeenth.

Early in the month of February, 1775, the town of Newbury was busily engaged in arming and equipping soldiers for the approaching conflict. All persons enlisting in the military service were required to sign the following agreement: —

Pursuant to the Resolve of the Provincial Congress of the Massachusetts Bay, we, the subscribers, do voluntarily Inlist ourselves as minute men & do covenant & Engage that we will hold ourselves in Readiness to March at the shortest notice to such Place or Places as we shall be ordered or directed by our officers chosen by us agreeable to the resolve of the Provincial Congress, or such Superior Officers, as are, or shall be, appointed by said Provincial Congress & further Engage that we will pay due obedience to all officers chosen or appointed as aforesaid.†

* Town of Newbury Records. † Ibid., March 14, 1775.

When the news of the battle at Lexington and Concord reached Newbury, the men who had enlisted and signed this agreement were hastily summoned at midnight, Wednesday, April 19, 1775, and were soon on their way to the field of action.

The names of the officers and men who served on that memorable occasion are as follows: —

The Roll of that part of the Company that marched from Newbury on the nineteenth day of April, 1775, on ye alarm on sd day under ye Command of Capt. Jonathan Poor of said town of Newbury, in ye county of Essex and Colony of ye Massachusetts & in ye second Regiment of Militia in said county whereof Samuel Gerrish, Esq. was Colonel to defend this Contenant from ye invasions of the ministerial troops.

Jonathan Poor	Capt	Benj Todd,	Sergeant
Moses Ilsley,	First Lieut	Paul Plumer.	"
Simeon Hale,	Second "		

PRIVATES

Stephen Dole	John Noyes (3 days)
Henry Dole	William Plumer
David Dole	Mark Plumer (3 days)
Samuel Gerrish	Stephen Poor
John Hale	John Thirston (3 days)
Daniel Hale, Jr.	Benj Thurston
Anthony Ilsley	John Nichols (3 days)

[Mark Plumer and John Thirston are credited with sixty four miles of travel and the rest of the company with eighty six. The officers and men of the company are credited with six days service except John Noyes, Mark Plumer, John Thirston and John Nichols who served only three days]*

A Muster-roll of the Minute Company that marched to Cambridge under the Command of Capt. Moses Little, in the alarm, April 19, 1775

Moses Little, Capt.	Timothy Pillsbury Lieut

PRIVATES

Thomas Brown	Amos Atkinson
Benj Brown	Nathan Merrill
Joshua Little	John Mugridge
Moses Coffin	Joseph Mirick
Moses Hoit	Joshua Merrill
John Atkinson	Jacob Merrill
Matthias Atkinson	Lem[l] Coffin

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xiii., p. 43.

Edmund Chase	Joshua Pillsbury
Jonathan Chase	David Whittemore
Moses Rollins	Josiah Little
Daniel Goodridge	Lemuel Fowler
Joseph Carr.	Jacob Coffin
Benj. Carr.	Matthias P. Sawyer
James Merrill.	Enoch Merrill
Peter Ordway.	

[Sixty miles of travel and five days service.] *

A Muster-roll of Capt. Jacob Gerrish's company that marched to Cambridge in the Alarm, April 19, 1775.

Jacob Gerrish Captain

Silas Adams,	Lieut.	Jedediah Stickney	Sergeant
Benjamin Stickney,	"	Joseph Danforth	"
Paul Moody,	Sergeant	John Noyes 2d	"

PRIVATES

Nathaniel Adams	William Searl
John Currier	Nathan Adams
Jedediah Currier	Jacob Hale
John Cheney	Jacob Low,
Joseph Choat	Enoch Adams
William Flood	John Turner
Oliver Goodridge	David Chute
John Lunt	James Chute
Jacob Low, Jr.	Timothy Dorman
Richard Martin	Daniel Hale
Benj. Poor.	Abner Woodman
Amos Poor.	Enoch Boynton
Eliphalet Poor	Thomas Smith
Stephen Smith	Enoch Adams, Jr.
John Sawyer	Amos Stickney
Abram Thorla	Stephen Lunt
Nathaniel Pearson	Stephen Gerrish

[Eighty miles of travel and six days service.] †

A Muster roll of the Company or party of men under the Command of Gideon Woodwell, Capt, who marched from Newbury on ye alarm on ye 19th of April 1775 to Cambridge & continued till ye 23d of ye same & set off for Newbury with leave.

Gideon Woodwell,	Capt	Pall Gerrish,	Sergt
Henry Somerby,	Sergt	John Dole,	Corpl

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xii., p. 169. † Ibid., p. 104.

PRIVATES

Daniel Knight	James Safford
Andrew Stickney	Parker Knight
Joseph Allen	Peter Stanwood
David Stickney	John Smith
John Bly	William Hale

[Eighty-six miles of travel and six days service.]*

A Minute roll of Capt. William Rogers 3d Company under command of Col. Samuel Gerrish of Newbury.

William Rogers,	Capt	Samuel Pillsbury	Corpl
Samuel Carr,	Lieut	Ezekiel Merrill	"
Wadleigh Noyes,	Sergt	Nathan Emery	"
Joseph Newell,	"	Moses Moody	"
Nathaniel Hills,	"	Daniel Pillsbury	Drummer
Joshua Brown,	"	Ephraim Emery	Fifer

PRIVATES

Joseph Noyes	Benj Pettingell
Joshua Chase	Moody Smith
John Chase	Jonathan Thurston
John Eliot	William White
Thomas Follansbee	Francis Dean
Nehemiah Follansbee	Moses Chase
Aaron Noyes	Mark Woodman
John Flanders	Samuel Sawyer
Joseph Goodridge	John Merril
Obadiah Hill	Parker Smith
Samuel Hills	Asa Bayley
Thomas Hills	John Smith
Samuel Jaquish	Zebulon Engersol
Jacob Merrick	John Emery
Parker Noyes	Abel Woodman

[Forty miles of travel and from three to nine days service from April 19, 1775.]†

A muster roll of the several persons that marched from Newbury to Head Quarters at Cambridge belonging to the Troop on the twentieth day of April A.D. 1775 on ye alarm under the command of John Brickett, Lieut.

John Brickett, Lieutenant

Parker Jaques Corporal Abram Adams. Trumpeter.

* Massachusetts Archives, vol. xiii., p. 196. † Ibid., p. 73.

PRIVATES

Benjamin Adams	Stephen Coffin
Enoch Little	Thomas Thurlow
Joshua Hills	William Greenleaf
Moses March	Moses S. Moody.

[The above named persons are credited with eighty miles travel and four days service.]

Elipha Hill	Joseph Knight
Caleb Kimball	Thomas Davis
Samuel Dole	Enoch Huse
Thomas Williams	Abel Merrill

[The eight men last mentioned in this roll were detained as post riders and received their pay as such.]

[Officers and men rode to Cambridge on horses furnished by themselves.]*

Muster-roll of the several Persons who marched from Newbury to Headquarters at Cambridge on the Twentieth day of April, 1775, under the command of Thomas Noyes, 3d

Thomas Noyes 3d	Capt.	Abner Bayley	Ensign
Enoch Long	Lieut.	Moses Brickett	"

PRIVATES.

Joseph Ames	Joseph Goodridge
Joseph Brown, Jr.	William Hills
Thomas Chase	Benj Hills, Jr.
Abel Chase	Thomas Huse
Joseph Chase, Jr.	Enoch Long, Jr.
John Chase	John March
Parker Chase	Moody Morse
Daniel Cheney	Peter Rogers
Winthrop Colby	Thomas Rogers
Nathan Chase	Silas Rogers
Enoch Davis	John Rowling, Jr.
Robert Davis	Barns Short
Nathaniel Emery	Joshua Sawyer
Wm Foster	Daniel Thurston

[Eighty miles of travel and four days service.]†

On Friday afternoon, April twenty-first, the second day after the Lexington fight, the people of Newburyport held an informal meeting at

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xi., p. 195; see also "Newbury in the Lexington Fight," by Miss Emily A. Getchell, in Putnam's Historical Magazine, January, 1895, pp. 6–15.

†Massachusetts Archives, vol. xiii., p. 19.

the town house, and just as the reverend Thomas Cary was about opening the meeting with prayer a Messenger rushed up stairs, in breathless haste, crying out, "For God's sake, turn out! turn out! or you will all be killed! The regulars are marching this way, and will soon be here. They are now at Ipswich, cutting and slashing all before them!" The messenger proved to be Mr. Ebenezer Todd*, who stated that he had been sent from Rowley, to warn the people of their impending destruction.

The news spread like wildfire, and being generally credited, the consternation became almost universal, and as a large part of the militia had marched to the scene of action, early the next morning after the fight at Lexington, the terror and alarm, among the women and children, was proportionably increased, especially as from all quarters was heard the cry, "The regulars are coming! They are down to Oldtown bridge, cutting and slashing, and killing all before them! They'll soon be here!" It is remarkable that the same story, in substance, was simultaneously told from Ipswich to Coos. In every place the report was that the regulars were but a few miles behind them. In Newbury, newtown, it was said they had advanced as far as Artichoke river, at Newburyport they were at Old-town bridge; there they were said to be at Ipswich, while at the latter place the alarm was the same. Mr. Eliphalet Hale, of Exeter, was at the latter place, and waited to ascertain the correctness of the report. Learning that it was without foundation he made haste to undeceive the people by riding from Ipswich to Newbury in fifty minutes. In the meantime all sorts of ludicrous things were done by men and women to escape impending destruction. All sorts of vehicles, filled with all sorts of people, together with hundreds on foot, were to be seen moving with all possible speed further north, somewhere, to escape the terrible regulars. Their speed was accelerated by persons who rode at full speed, through the streets, crying "Flee for your lives! flee for your lives! the regulars are coming!"

Some crossed the river for safety. Some, in Salisbury, went to Hampton and spent the night in houses vacated by their owners, who had gone on the same errand farther north. The houses at Turkey Hill were filled with women and children who spent the night in great trepidation. One man yoked up his oxen and taking his own family, and some of his neighbor's children, in his cart, drove off to escape the regulars. Another having concealed all his valuable papers, under a great stone, in his field, fastened his doors and windows and, having loaded his musket, resolved to sell his life as dearly as possible. One woman having concealed all her pewter and silver ware in the well, filled a bag

*Mr. Ebenezer Todd was evidently requested by some one in authority to carry the news to Newbury; and, although misinformed in regard to the true condition of affairs at Ipswich, he was, nevertheless, like Paul Revere, a messenger sent to warn and save. He was held in high esteem by his relatives and friends in Rowley. To one of his kinsmen, Mr. William C. Todd, the city of Newburyport is indebted for liberal gifts in aid of the public library, reading-room, and hospital.

with pies and other edibles, and set off with it and her family for a safer place but having travelled some distance and deposited her bag to make some enquiry she found on her return that there had been "cutting and slashing" not, indeed, by the regulars among the people, but by the irregulars among her provisions. Another woman, as I am informed, having run four or five miles, in great trepidation, stopped on the steps of reverend Mr. Noble's meeting house to nurse her child and found, to her great horror, that she had brought off the cat and left her child at home. In another instance, Mr. [] having placed his family on board of a boat, to go to Ram island for safety, was so annoyed with the crying of one of his children that he exclaimed, in a great fright, "Do throw that squalling brat overboard or we shall all be discovered." Mr. J—— L—— seeing Mr. C—— H——, a very corpulent man, standing at his door with his musket loaded inquired of him if he was not going. "Going? no," said he. "I am going to stop and shoot the devils!" Propositions were made by some persons to destroy Thorla's and the river Parker bridges, while many acted a more rational part and resolutely refused to move a step or credit the whole of the flying stories without more evidence. How, or by whom, or with what motives, the report was first started no one can tell. It lasted in Newbury and Newburyport but one night.*

Joseph Gerrish, esq., represented Newbury in the Provincial Congress held at Cambridge two months before the battle at Concord and Lexington. He was subsequently elected representative to the third Provincial Congress held at Watertown May 31, 1775. Early in the month of June following, the committee on military affairs recommended "that Capt Moses Little of Newbury be appointed a Colonel in the Massachusetts Army, he having five hundred and nine men, in eight Companies, ready for immediate service, all of them armed with good effective fire locks, and three hundred and eighty two with good bayonets fitted to their fire locks. Seven companies in camp at Cambridge and one company at Cape Ann." †

*Coffin's History of Newbury, pp. 245–247. In a pamphlet published in 1814, now in the possession of Mr. Eugene Noyes, of Amesbury, entitled "The Life of Col. Jonathan Burnham, now living in Salisbury, Mass.," the author, referring to the "Ipswich fright," says, "The British landed at Marshfield to steal cattle and left the woods afire and the Newbury people heard that Ipswich was burnt and that I and my men were all killed, and that the British were coming to burn Newbury; and the people were afraid and got boats to get over the river to run into the woods, and that news went to Exeter that night, and very soon to Concord, that I and my officers were all killed."

There is some doubt in regard to the accuracy of this statement; but it is certain that Jonathan Burnham had command of a company that marched from Hampton Falls to Ipswich April 20, 1775. (See Brown's History of Hampton Falls, pp. 217–221.)

† Records Third Provincial Congress, p. 338.

To this recommendation the representatives assembled at Watertown unanimously agreed, and Colonel Little received his commission in season to render efficient service, with a portion of his regiment, in the battle of Bunker Hill. One of the companies under his command was from Newbury, Jacob Gerrish, captain, and two from Newburyport, Ezra Lunt and Benjamin Perkins, captains. The other companies composing the regiment were from neighboring towns in Essex county.

June 26, 1775, the inhabitants of Newbury voted "to unite with Newburyport, Salisbury, Amesbury, Bradford and Haverhill in placing obstructions in the Merrimack river to prevent ships of war from entering the harbor and destroying the town." *

Two days later, the Provincial Congress voted to raise ten companies, consisting of fifty men each, including officers, for service on the seacoast in the towns of Lynn, Gloucester, Marblehead, Salem, Ipswich, Newbury, Newburyport, and Salisbury.

After the General Court was dissolved by General Gage, June 17, 1774, it did not meet again until July 19, 1775. On that day, representatives from nearly every town in the province assembled in the meeting-house at Watertown, and after consultation elected twenty-eight councillors, who were authorized to approve or reject all laws enacted by the General Court, and also to exercise executive power in the absence of the governor and deputy governor.

Col. Joseph Gerrish was chosen by the inhabitants of Newbury to represent them at the General Court at Watertown; † but for some reason he was unable to attend, and August 8, 1775, Major Samuel Moody was elected in his place.

On the twenty-first day of August, the councillors and representatives, by a concurrent vote, ratified and confirmed the transactions and resolves of the several Provincial congresses, and provided for the election of representatives.

> . . . the towns of Newbury and Newburyport shall have the full power and right of Chusing and Sending as many persons to represent

* Town of Newbury Records. † Ibid., July 4, 1775.

them, respectively, in the great and general Court or [assembly of] this colony, as each of the said towns would have had a right to have chosen [and sent] to the said general Court by virtue of the act or law entitled "An Act for ascertaining the number and regulating the house of representatives" in case there had not been any restrictions upon the said towns, touching their rights and privileges of chusing and sending persons to represent them, respectively, in the great or general court or assembly, contained or expressed in the said act for the constituting and making that [part of the] former town of Newbury now called Newburyport, a distinct town.*

September 15 and 16, 1775, nearly one thousand soldiers under the command of Col. Benedict Arnold, on their way from Boston to Quebec, arrived in Newbury. Three companies of riflemen encamped on the high land, on the easterly side of "Trayneing Green," at the corner of Rolfe's lane, now Ocean avenue, and the country road, now High street; and the rest of the troops were lodged in the town house and in two unoccupied rope walks in Newburyport. On the nineteenth of September, the whole force embarked on board ten transports, and sailed for the mouth of the Kennebec river.†

October 27, 1775, a committee, consisting of Deacon Silas Pearson, Capt. Stephen Kent, Dudley Colman, William Gerrish, and Capt. Joseph Stanwood, was chosen to erect a battery at Plum Island Point, "and also to procure one or more Carriage Guns & some ammunition to defend the same." ‡

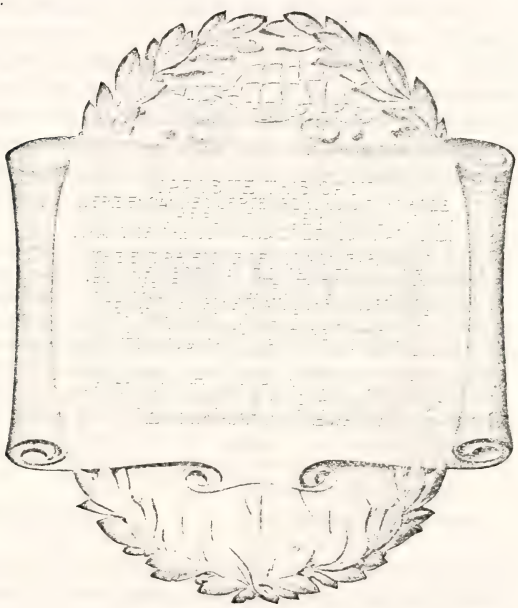
At a meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury held April 23, Mr. Richard Adams, jr., was elected a delegate to the county convention to be held at the house of Mr. Treadwell, innholder, in Ipswich, April 25, 1776, for the discussion of questions relating to the administration of public affairs. At that convention, the system of town representation, established by the charter of the province, was severely criticised, and the election of representatives to the General Court according to population was earnestly advocated. A memorial, signed by members of the convention, was presented to the councillors and representatives assembled at Watertown, asking for a re-

* Province Laws, vol. v., pp. 419, 420.

† A bronze tablet, designed by Mr. George P. Tilton of Newburyport, marks the place where the troops encamped. It bears a suitable inscription reproduced in the half-tone print on the next page.

‡ Town of Newbury Records.

vision of the election laws, and the adoption of a more equitable system of representation. On the second day of May, the petitioners were granted a hearing; and John Lowell, esq., of Newburyport, appeared in their behalf on the floor of the House of Representatives, and earnestly advocated the plan of



representation recommended in the memorial. Two days later, the General Court passed an act providing for the election of three representatives from towns having two hundred and twenty freeholders, four representatives from towns having three hundred and twenty freeholders, and one additional representative for every one hundred additional freeholders, "said act to take effect at the begining of the next session." *

* Province Laws, vol. v., pp. 502 and 542.

On the twenty-third day of May, Mr. Richard Adams, jr., Col. Samuel Gerrish, Samuel Greenleaf, esq., Mr. Stephen Little, and Capt. Daniel Chute were elected by the inhabitants of Newbury "to attend the Great and General Assembly to be held at Watertown May 29, 1776." * They were subsequently chosen to represent the town at the session held in Watertown on the twenty-eighth day of August following.

On the evening of July 4, 1776, the Declaration of Independence was adopted and subsequently signed by the members of the Continental Congress. A copy of this patriotic proclamation was sent to Edmund Sawyer, clerk of the town of Newbury, and was by him recorded with the following order issued by the executive council of the province of Massachusetts Bay: —

In Council July 17, 1776. Ordered, that the Declaration of Independence be Printed. and a copy sent to the Ministers of each Parish of every denomination within this State; and that they severally be required to read the same to their respective congregations as soon as divine service is ended, in the afternoon, on the first Lord's Day after they shall have received it; and after such Publication thereof, to deliver the said Declaration to the Clerks of their several Towns, or Districts, who are hereby required to record the same in their respective Town, or District, Books there to remain as a Perpetual Memorial thereof, In the name and by order of the Council

R. DERBY, Junr *President*

a true copy attest JOHN AVERY, *Dep. Secretary* *

December 9, 1776, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to give a bounty of ten pounds to every person, residing within the limits of the town, enlisting in the Continental army under the call of the last General Court, and also voted to raise by taxation "such an amount of money as may be needed to meet the expenses incurred on account of the war." Doubt having arisen in regard to the legality of this action, a petition, dated December 23, 1776, signed by Edmund Bayley and John Adams, a committee for the town of Newbury, was presented to the General Court; and subsequently an act was passed "enabling towns to raise money for carrying on the

* Town of Newbury Records.

present war," and providing for the collection of taxes tha have been "or may hereafter be assessed for that purpose."

March 11, 1776–7, a bounty of twenty pounds was voted to every private soldier enlisting for three years or more "to help make up the quota called for from the town of Newbury"; and June 30, 1777, Mr. Samuel Noyes was chosen and instructed to collect evidence against any person or persons suspected of disloyalty or unfriendliness to the cause of American independence.†

December 15, 1777, a committee was appointed "to take care of and supply the Familys of non commissioned officers & Private Soldiers Ingaged in the Continental Army for three years, or during the present war with Great Britain, according to a late act of the General Court"; † and February 12, 1777–8, the inhabitants of Newbury voted to instruct their representatives "to acquiesce in and Comply with the articles of confederation as we have received them from the honorable continental congress." †

After the surrender of General Burgoyne at Saratoga, October 17, 1777, the men and officers under his command were transferred to Massachusetts, and held as prisoners of war in the neighborhood of Boston for nearly twelve months. Several militia companies from Newbury assisted in guarding these prisoners at Winter Hill from November, 1777, to April, 1778.†

An article was inserted in the warrant for a town meeting in Newbury February 9, 1778, "To see if the town will vote a consideration for the militia for the town of Newbury that now are or may be guarding the Prisoners taken by Major General Gates." †

After some discussion, the town "voted not to do more for the militia now Guarding the Prisoners taken by Majr General Gates than the General Court has added to their wages." †

On the twenty-fourth day of March following, a meeting was held "To see if the Town will give a Bounty to the militia of this Town that are called to Relieve the Guards that are now doing Duty at Winter Hill." †

* Province Laws, vol. v., p. 719. † Town of Newbury Records.

The selectmen were authorized, with the advice and consent of the committee of correspondence, to pay from the town treasury the amount necessary to secure the services of the men needed to relieve the guards; and it was also "voted that the wages of the militia of this Town that have been Guarding the Prisoners Taken by Major General Gates, as Private soldiers or non-commissioned officers, from November last to the third day of April ensuing, be made up at six shillings a Day with what they Receive other ways." *

The depreciated condition of the currency and the active demand for food, clothing, and household supplies increased the cost of living to such an extent that the General Court passed "An Act to prevent monopoly and oppression," January 25, 1776–7. This act was repealed October 13, 1777; but a similar one, prohibiting the purchase, in large quantities, of grain, live cattle, provisions, or other merchandise, for the purpose of forestalling the market or realizing a profit on the sale of the same, was passed February 8, 1778–9, and continued in force for several years.

During the summer of 1779, a convention was held at Concord to consider the condition of public affairs, and to devise ways and means for preventing the sale or purchase of any commodities necessary for the support of life at unreasonable or exorbitant prices.

August 4, 1779, the town of Newbury voted unanimously to follow the recommendations and approve the resolutions made and adopted at Concord, July fourteenth, relating to the sale of manufactured goods and agricultural products, and the same day elected Deacon Silas Pearson and Capt. Edmund Sawyer delegates to a second convention to be held in the same place in the month of October following.*

August sixteenth, a committee was appointed to meet delegates from Salem, Marblehead, and other towns in Essex county, at Ipswich, for consultation in regard to the prices to be fixed for labor, and for the purpose of securing unanimity of action in restricting the excessive charges of innholders for food and lodging.*

* Town of Newbury Records.

October sixth, the second convention assembled at Concord. It continued in session seven days. The price current established by the convention in July was revised, and a spirited address to the people was adopted and published in the newspapers of the day.

November 11, 1779, the inhabitants of Newbury voted unanimously "that they approve of and accept the proceedings of the late Convention held at Concord in October regulating the prices of Merchandise and Country produce." *

The laws of trade, however, were more potent and effective than legislation or spirited resolutions. With a currency constantly depreciating in value, it was found impossible to regulate prices; and the attempt was ultimately abandoned as impracticable.

October 10, 1780, the town of Newbury voted to raise the sum of forty thousand pounds, in Continental currency, to purchase twenty-nine thousand three hundred pounds of beef for the use of the army, in compliance with a demand or requisition made upon the selectmen by order of the General Court.*

In the month of November following, active efforts were made to increase the army. The requisite number of men, however, could not be obtained by voluntary enlistments; and the selectmen of Newbury were compelled to resort to a draft. On the nineteenth day of December, at a meeting called for that purpose, the inhabitants of the town appointed a committee to hire men to serve as soldiers in the Continental army, and voted to delay the enforcement of the draft for one week in order to give the committee time to secure the men needed.

Six months later, Newbury was again called upon to contribute to the support of the army, and voted July 5, 1781, "that the sum of six hundred pounds, hard money, be raised for the purchase of 23,259 lbs weight of Beef for the use of the army and that a Committee be chosen to purchase said Beef in the best manner it can be obtained." *

Although hostilities practically ceased with the surrender

* Town of Newbury Records.

of Cornwallis at Yorktown, October 19, 1781, the preliminary articles of the treaty of peace between England and the American colonies were not agreed upon, at Paris, until November 30, 1782, and the United States were not "acknowledged to be free, sovereign and independent," until the formal treaty was signed at Versailles, September 3, 1783. Congress, then in session, issued a proclamation, on the thirteenth day of October, disbanding the army.

CHAPTER XVI.

SOLDIERS IN THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

CAPT. MOSES LITTLE, of Newbury, was appointed colonel in the Massachusetts army June 15, 1775, "he having five hundred and nine men in eight companies ready for immediate service." Two additional companies were organized a week or ten days later. The captains in command of the several companies were as follows: —

Capt. Gideon Parker of Ipswich
Capt. Nathaniel Warner of Gloucester
Capt. Abraham Dodge of Ipswich
Capt. Joseph Roby of Cape Ann
Capt. Benjamin Perkins of Newburyport
Capt. Jacob Gerrish of Newbury
Capt. Ezra Lunt of Newburyport
Capt. Nathaniel Wade of Ipswich
Capt. Timothy Barnard of Amesbury
Capt. John Baker of Topsfield

The company commanded by Capt. Parker was composed of men from Ipswich, Gloucester, and other towns in Essex county, including John Hollerday, Chase Rogers, John Silloway, and Jonathan Buswell, who were credited to the town of Newbury.*

The officers and men under the command of Capt. Perkins were credited in the muster roll to Newbury,† and in the pay roll to Newburyport.‡ They were evidently inhabitants of the last-named town, and therefore are not included in this list of Revolutionary soldiers.

A muster Roll of the company under command of Capt Jacob Gerrish in Col° Moses Little's Regiment from April 24, 1775, to August 7, 1775.§

* Massachusetts Archives Rev. Rolls), vol. lvi., p. 81. In the muster roll, vol. xv., p. 91 the four men named above were credited to Newburyport.

† Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xv., p. 85.

‡ Ibid., vol. lvi., p. 83. § Ibid., vol. xv., p. 8.

Jacob Gerrish	Captain
Silas Adgmon	1st Lieut
Amos Aikens	2nd Lieut
Nathaniel Pearson	Sergeant
Stephen Lunt	"
William Searl	"
Nathl Adams	"
Jacob Hale	Corporal
Wm Morgaridge	"
Eliphalet Kilburn	"
Joseph Carr	"

PRIVATES.

Enoch Adams
Josiah Adams
Mark Anthony
Edward []
John Burbank
Benj Beedle
Jacob Chisamore
John Currier
Jedediah Currier
William Currier
Saml Place
Daniel Adams
Benj Poor
Amos Poor
Eliphl Poor
Joseph Pearson
Joseph Rogers
Richd Rolfe
Moses Rollins
Benj Carr
John Choat
Eben Choat
John Cheney
Joseph Choat
Jonathan Cheney
Enoch Flood
William Flood
Jacob How
Daniel Goodridge
Oliver Goodridge
John Lunt
Thomas Lunt
Jacob Low
James Moody
Annis Merrill
Christopher Merrill
Richd Martin
Peter Ordway
Moses Pettingale
Joseph Lunt
Stephen Smith
Michael Stockman
John Stockman
John Sawyer
Abram Thorla
Joshua Toppan
John Toppan
John Woodbury

Capt. Gerrish's company was composed of Newbury men, except William Searl, Jacob Low, and John Sawyer from Rowley, and John Choat, Eben Choat, and Samuel Place from Newburyport.

The pay roll of the company gives the names of the officers and men substantially as printed above; but the residences in some instances are slightly changed, and the following names are added: — *

Nathan Adams	Drummer & Fifer	Newbury
Benjamin Newman	" "	Newburyport
John Spring	" "	"
John Carvanaugh	Soldier	"

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. lvi., part i., p. 86.

The officers and men in Captain Lunt's company were from Newburyport, except John Holoday, John Harbut, Zachariah Sawtel, and Samuel Phipps, who were from Newbury.*

The pay roll of the company commanded by Capt. Timothy Barnard, of Amesbury, gives the names of the following officers and men from Newbury: — †

Thomas Brown	First Lieut	Benjamin Cotton	Private
Nicholas Titcomb	Serjeant	Jacob Cooper	"
John Coock,	Corporal	Makepiece Colby	"
John Brown,	"	Aaron Davis	"
Isaac Howard,	Drumer & Fifer	Jeremiah Farnham	"
John Brazier	Private	Nath'l Godfrey.	"

John Hussey, Solomon Obbins, Daniel Pike, and William Ray, credited to Newburyport in the pay roll, were entered in the muster roll as soldiers, in Captain Barnard's company, from Newbury.‡

Charles Casity was credited to Newbury in the company commanded by Captain Baker.§

Four companies in Colonel Little's regiment were armed and equipped in season to take part in the battle at Bunker Hill. They lost during that engagement forty men, killed and wounded.

In 1776, Colonel Little was in Major General Greene's division of the Continental army, and took part in the battles at Long Island and at Harlem Heights. In June, 1777, he was commissioned brigadier-general, and appointed to the command of the forces to be sent on an expedition to St. Johns, N.S. In a letter addressed to Hon. John Avery, deputy secretary of the State of Massachusetts, he wrote as follows:

. . . the broken state of my Health occasioned by the severe services of the last campaign & the peculiar Situation of my Family at this Time obliges me to decline this honorable appointment.‖

The regiment commanded by Col. Samuel Gerrish, of Newbury, in 1775, was composed of men from Newbury, Rowley,

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xv., p. 52; also, vol. lvi., part i., p. 87.
† Ibid., vol. lvi., p. 89. ‡ Ibid., vol. xiv., p. 15. § Ibid., vol. lvi., p. 81.
‖ Massachusetts Archives, vol. cxcvii., p. 176.

Ipswich, Gloucester, and Wenham in Essex county, and from Malden, Reading, Woburn, and other towns in Middlesex county. The officers and men who served in Capt. William Rogers' company, in Colonel Gerrish's regiment, from May to August, 1775, were as follows: — *

William Rogers	Captain
Samuel Carr	1st Lieut
John Noyes	2nd "
Wadleigh Noyes	Sargent
Joseph Newell	"
Nathaniel Hills	"
Joshua Brown	"
Samuel Pilsbury	Corporal
Stephen Morse	"
Moses Moody	"
Joseph Noyes	"
Daniel Pilsbry	Drummer
Ephraim Emery	Fifer

PRIVATES

Joshua Chase
Joseph Chase
Aquela Chase
Samuel Chase
John Chase
Nathaniel Chase
Pearley Chase
Thomas Doyle
James Dwinells
John Downing
Stephen England
John Eliot
Ezekiel Fellows
Benjamin Flanders
Thomas Follinsbee
Nehemiah Follinsbee
John Flanders
Joseph Goodrige
Obadiah Hills
Samuel Hills
Thomas Hills
William Hale
Samuel Jaquish
Isiah Isley
Parker Knight
Joseph Knight
Jonathan Latherbee
Aaron Molton
Moody Morse
Jacob Merick
Parker Noyes
John Nichols
Josiah Richardson
Benjamin Plumer
Joseph Perry
Benjamin Pettingell
Thomas Sargent
Sollomon Lattle
Moses Smith
Jonathan Thurston
John Woodbury
William White
Samuel Write
Francis Dean
John Bartlett

All the men named in the above list were from Newbury except Thomas Doyle and Jonathan Latherbee from Watertown, James Dwinnels and Joseph Perry from Bradford, John Downing from Newburyport, Ezekiel Fellows from Salisbury, and Thomas Sargent from Amesbury.

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xvi., p. 9.

The colonel of the regiment, Samuel Gerrish, had served as captain in the provincial army in 1759, and was colonel of the second regiment that marched from Essex county to Cambridge April 19, 1775. In the month of May following, he was appointed colonel of the Thirty-eighth Massachusetts regiment, composed of Essex and Middlesex county men; and on the seventeenth day of June he was ordered to join the American forces at Bunker Hill. Owing to the unorganized condition of the men under his command, he was unable to render efficient service on the battlefield, although two or three companies, led by Adjutant Febiger, a Danish soldier of experience, fought valiantly until the conflict was over. Colonel Gerrish was subsequently accused of timidity and conduct unworthy of an officer. He was found guilty, and dismissed from the service. The regiment was placed under the command of Lieut. Col. Loammi Baldwin.*

Col. James Frye's regiment, at the battle of Bunker Hill, consisted of companies under the command of

Capt. John Currier of Amesbury,
Capt. James Sawyer of Haverhill,
Capt. Nathaniel Gage of Bradford
Capt. Benjamin Farnum of Andover
Capt. John Davis of Methuen
Capt. Jones Richardson of []
Capt. William H. Ballard of Amesbury.
Capt. William Perley of Boxford
Capt. Jonathan Evans of Salisbury.

In the pay roll of Captain Evans' company, Peer Hall and Dennis Wise, privates, are credited to the town of Newbury.†

A muster Roll of the Company commanded by Captain Stephen Kent in the Service of the Colony of the Massachusetts Bay Stationed in Newbury from the Time of their Inlistment to the first Day of November 1775.‡

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. lvi., pp. 256–266.
† Ibid., vol. lvi., p. 8.
‡ Ibid., vol. xxxvi., p. 133; also, Essex Institute Historical Collections, vol. xxxv., p. 162.

Stephen Kent	Captain	David Boynton
Dudley Colman	1st Lieut	Samuel Pettingell
Richard Pettingell	2nd "	Isaac Adams
Daniel Knight	Sergeant	Josiah Pettingell
John Pearson	"	Joseph Allen
Josiah Goodrich	"	William Bayley
Hezikiah Goodhue	"	Richard Flanders
Parker Jaques	Corporal	Stephen Mitchell
John Hidden	"	Daniel Knight Jun
Ebenezer Brown	"	John Dole
Edward Swazey	"	William Brown
Samuel Pearson	Drummer	Silas Dole
George Blunt	Fifer	Caleb James
		John Cheever

PRIVATES

Joseph Lunt	David Stickney
Enoch Hale	John Bly
Andrew Stickney	Benjamin Woodwell
James Safford	Elias Cook
Moses Akers	Amos Stickney
Isaac Tilton	Benjamin Jackman jun.
Ebenezer Moody.	Benjamin Maine
Joseph Poor	Cutting Pettingell jun.
John Sweat	Amos Morse (who died October 14, 1775).

The same officers and men were engaged in the same service from the first day of November to the ninth day of December, 1775, with the addition of Daniel Stickney in place of Amos Morse, deceased.*

In the company commanded by Capt. Moses Greenleaf of Newburyport, in Col. Benjamin Tupper's regiment, the following named persons were credited to the town of Newbury, January 25, 1776:—†

Joseph Hidden.	John Stickney.
Josiah Hunt.	Jacob Lunt.
John Smith, Jun.	Newport Rudeisland.
Stephen Stickney	John Smith.

Other men in this company were credited to Newburyport, Haverhill, Chelsea, Medford, and Rowley.

The following named officers and men from Newbury served

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxxvi., p. 136. † Ibid., vol. xi., p. 71.

in 1776 [illegible] of Capt. Robert Dodge's company, in Col. Ebenez[illegible] regiment: — *

Step[illegible] Ilsley,	Lieutenant	Issac Plumer
—— Pillsbury,	Ensign.	Benjamin Chase
		Zariah Hazeltine
	PRIVATES	John Emery
Jonathan Plummer		John Bennett
Joshua Moody		Moses Aeyrs
James Folinsby		James Poole
Richard Martin		Joshua Ilsley
Jonathan Carleton		Barker Chase
Moses Lull		

The rest of this company was composed of men from Ipswich, Rowley, Topsfield, and Wenham.

Muster roll of Capt. Ezra Badlam's company in the Twenty-sixth Regiment under the command of Lieut.-Col. Loammi Baldwin, from January to April, 1776: — †

Ezra Badlam	Captain	Pearly Chase
Samuel Carr	Lieutenant	Thomas Chase
John Noyes	"	Joseph Couch
Wadleigh Noyes	Ensign	Aquilla Chase
Stephen Morse	Seargent	John Chambers
Moses Moody	"	Ebenezer Crow
Joseph Noyes	"	William Davis
Joshua Noyes	"	John Downer
John Pratt	Corporal	William Dodge
Samuel Chase	"	Stephen England
John Smith	"	Thomas Follansbee
Charles Davis	"	Benjamin Flood
Ephraim Emery	"	Levi Flanders
Naptt Newall	"	Saml Hills
		Thomas Hills
	PRIVATES	William Hale
Jonathan Bayton		Jonathan Hale
Joseph Ames		Nathaniel Donnels
Enoch Chase		Isiah Ilsley
Moses Chase		Stephen Michael
John Chase		Aaron Molton

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xviii., p. 156.

† Massachusetts Archives, vol. lviii., p. 1, file 5. The residences of the officers and men composing Capt. Badlam's company are not given in the muster roll, but many of them were inhabitants of the town of Newbury.

John Malcom
John Murry
Obadiah Morse
Benja Morse
Jacob Merrick
Aaron Noyes
Eleazer Newell
Parker Noyes
Humphree Nichols
Ezra Newell
Parker Knight
John Nichols
Benjamin Pettingel
Samuel Pratt
Benjamin Pressey
Samuel Pettingal
Joseph Perry
Cutting Pettingell
Nathl Ridgway
Stephen Ragler
Thomas Rollins
Thomas Ridgway
John Stokes
James Stanley
John Smith
William White
Samuel Write
Jacob Wyatt
Thomas Snelling
Lot Killam
John Downing
Joseph Buck
Francis Dean
Joseph Percy
Stephen Corporal
Samuel Hill
Henry Williams
Simeon Finch

The pay roll of Capt. Thomas Brown's company in Col. Aaron Willard's regiment gives the officers and men of that company mileage from Newbury "to Charlestown No. 4" [N.H.] in 1776, and also credits them with mileage on their return "from Fort Edward to Newbury," but does not give the names of the men or the towns where they resided.* It is not unlikely, however, that they came mainly from Newbury and Newburyport. Wages were computed and paid Captain Brown, two lieutenants, one ensign, four sergeants, six corporals, and fifty-four soldiers.

July 11, 1776, the General Court elected Edward Wigglesworth, of Newburyport, "Colonel of the Battalion to be raised in the counties of Essex, York, and Cumberland for the Continental service." †

William Rogers, of Newbury, was appointed major. The other officers were from Berwick, Beverly, Danvers, and Haverhill.‡ July 5, 1777, Dudley Colman, born in Newbury August 13, 1745, was appointed lieutenant colonel of this regiment.

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xvii., p. 159.

† Ibid., vol. xi., p. 49. Col. Edward Wigglesworth was born in Ipswich January 3, 1742, and died in Newburyport, December 8, 1826. ‡ Ibid., p. 36.

In the muster roll of Capt. Daniel Pillsbury's company in Col. Edward Wigglesworth regiment, ten men were credited to Newbury, as follows: — *

Ephrm Emery	Willm Murry
Stephen England	Charles Canaday
Aaron Milton	William Gudridge
Stephen Mitchell	Jonathan Taymouth
Jonathan Martin	Roger Lord.

Eighteen men in Captain Pillsbury's company whose names are not included in the above list were credited to Newburyport.

In the company commanded January 30, 1777, by Capt. Joshua French of Salisbury, in Colonel Wigglesworth's regiment, the following named officers and men were from Newbury: — †

Nathaniel Adams,	Lieutenant	Jonathan Thirstain
Silas Rogers,	Sergeant	Timothy Sanders
John Flanders,	"	Moody Morse
Eliphalet Kimbal,	"	Abner Kimball
John Brown,	Corporal	Samuel Jaquish
Nathaniel Chase	Drummer	James Barker
		David Hale
PRIVATES		John Copp
Nehemiah Follinsbee		Stephen Thirstain
Benjamin Woodbury		Thomas Bolles
Jacob Pettengill		John Akiss
Daniel Bradley		Silas Rogers
Samuel Lankester		Joseph Rogers
Abel Greenleif		

Dudley Colman, town clerk of Newbury from September 23, 1773, to April 9, 1776, served as lieutenant from July eleventh to December 9, 1775, in Capt. Stephen Kent's company, raised for the defence of the sea-coast of Massachusetts. He was appointed major in General Nixon's brigade October 8, 1776; lieutenant colonel in Col. Samuel McCobb's regiment, June 10, 1777; and lieutenant colonel in Col. Edward Wigglesworth's regiment, July 5, 1777. He sold his house in

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xi., p. 41. † Ibid., vol. xix., p. 55.

...bury April 29, 1780, and removed to Boston. He died ... Brookfield, N.H., November 16, 1797.*

Capt. Paul Moody, of Newbury, and Capt. Elias Davis, of Newburyport, commanded companies in Col. Timothy Pickering's regiment, and were ordered to march to Danbury, Conn., in December, 1776.† The officers and men of the Newbury company were as follows: —‡

Paul Moody Captain	Thomas Davis
Caleb Kimbal First Lieut	Amos Dwinell
John Atkinson Second "	Joseph Rawlings
Joseph Danforth	David Rawlings
Stephen Adams	Henry Dwinell
Oliver Goodridge	John Sawyer
Amos Poor 3d	Ezekiel Flanders
Eliphalet Poor	William Plumer
Nathl Dummer	Isaac Plumer
Samuel Adams	Joseph Russel
Enoch Flood	John Acors
Israel Flood	Seth Plumer
Richd Dummer, Jr.	Enoch Merrill
Stephen Lunt	Isaac Currier
John Emery, Jr.	Peter Ordway
Enoch Huse	John Grayham
John Burbank	Daniel Chandler
Thomas Thurla	Abel Greenleaf
Richd Martin	Richd Smith
Joseph Adams	Elias Greenleaf
Jonathan Thurston	Amos Little
Francis Follansbee	David Hidden
Willm Greenleaf	Benja Jackman
John Bartlet, Jun	Moses Hoyt
Moses Sargent Moody	Josiah Teel
Benja Fellows	Enoch Adams, Jun
Joseph Atwood Jun	Josiah Hunt
Charles Walker	Samuel Brown
Moody Hardy	Frederick Lewis
Nathl Mitchel	James Mansfield
Joseph Jennings	Pero Hall
William Merden	Henry Greenleaf
Stephen Plumer	Obed Hute
David Cheney	John Hayes

*"Ould Newbury," p. 192; New England Historical and Genealogical Register, April, 1871, pp. 187–199.

†Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxxii., p. 283.

‡Essex Institute Historical Collections, vol. xxxv., p. 230.

A Pay Roll of Capt John Noyes' company in Col. Samuel Johnson's Regiment in the Massachusetts Bay militia from ye time of their entering in the Service to the time of their discharge including Twelve days to go home.* (Aug. 14, 1777, to Nov. 15, 1777)

John Noyes	Captain
Samuel Pillsbury	1st Lieut
Stephen Brown	2nd "
Nathaniel Dummer	Sergent
Bezaleel Woodberry	"
Nathan Emery (died Sept. 19, 1777)	"
Amos Dow,	"
Moses Jaques	"
Joseph Lunt	Corporal
Joshua Toppan	"
Stephen Tappan	"
Thomas Thurlow	"
David Emery	Fifer

PRIVATES

John Akers
Caleb Adams
Enoch Adams
Samuel Adams
Nathaniel Atkinson
Samuel Beverly
John Bayley (Bagley?)
Joshua Bayley (Bagley?)
Daniel Chipman
Aquilla Chase
Benjamin Chase
Pearly Chase
John Currier
Amos Carlton
Jonathan Carlton
William Conley
John Downing
Joseph Dolman
Timothy Dorman
James Follansbee
Enoch Flood
Samuel Gould
Peru Hall
Samuel Jaques
Richard Jackman
Parker Knight
Timothy Lankester
Stephen Morrill
Thomas Noyes
William Nichols
Nathan Pettingel
William Plummer
Stephen Pirkins
Samuel Poore
Eliphalet Poor
Benjamin Pettingell
Seth Plummer
Jonathan Plummer
Silas Pearson
Michael Smith
Thomas Sweet
William Smith
Abraham Thurlow
Moses Thurlow
Robert Thompson
Charles Walker
Joseph Williams
John Woodbury
Amos Whitmore
Nathan Emery
Benjamin Mains
Samuel Fowler

*Massachusetts Archives, vol. xxi., p. 171. John Noyes was born in Newbury March 18, 1740, and died May 14, 1784. He enlisted as a private in Capt. Joseph Newhall's company April 4, 1758, and was with Col. Jonathan Bagley at Lake George. At the Lexington alarm, April 19, 1775, he was enrolled in Capt. Jonathan Poor's company in Col. Samuel Gerrish's regiment. He was second lieutenant in Col. Samuel Gerrish's regiment at Bunker Hill, and subsequently first lieutenant in Lieut. Col. Loammi Baldwin's regiment. He was commissioned early in the month of August, 1777, captain of a company in Col. Samuel Johnson's regiment.

In the detachment of soldiers sent to Rhode Island in 1777, under the command of Col. Jonathan Titcomb, of Newburyport, the following named officers and men were from Newbury: —*

Silas Adams,	Captain	Samuel Jaques
Jedediah Currier,	Serjeant	Jonathan Charltons
David Adams,	"	Robert Chase
Enoch Dole,	Corporal	James Folonsbee
John Chase,	Drummer	Amos Hale
Enoch Rolfe,	Fifer	Isaac Plumer
		Stephen Adams
PRIVATES		Chase Colby
Joshua Toppan		Aquilla Chase
Richard Jackman		Daniel Chaney
Amos Whitmore		Amos Emery
Moses Short		Joshua Boynton
Daniel Adams		James Martain
John Woodbury		Richard Martain
Parker Knight		Richard Rolfe
William Plumer		Amos Dwinell
David Emery		Benjamin Fellows

Other men in Capt. Silas Adams' company were from Rowley, Danvers, and Middleton.

In the company commanded by Capt. Moses Nowell, of Newburyport, in Col. Jonathan Titcomb's brigade, in Rhode Island in 1777, Nathaniel Dummer, Jonathan Emerson, Joseph Wright, and Joseph Wright, jr., were from Newbury. The rest of the company were from Newburyport, Amesbury, and Salisbury.†

Men enlisted in Newbury in 1777, to serve three years in the Continental army: —‡

Prince Brown	Joseph Dowry
William Butman	Amos Dwinnils
Charles Cassady	Edward Deacon
Benjamin Chase	William Duggins.
Eliphalet Chase	Benjamin Flanders
Joshua Chase	Benjamin Fellows
Joshua Chase, Junior.	William Goodridge

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. i., p. 23. † Ibid., vol. iii., p. 21.
‡ Ibid., vol. xxvii., pp. 111–134.

Daniel Goodridge
John Graham
Richard Goodwin
Joseph Hidden, Jun.
Isaiah Hunt
Samuel Hills
Thomas Hardy
Jacob How
John Haze
John Hutchins.
Zebulon Ingorsoll
Michael Kingsbury
Abner Kimball
Jacob Lunt
Thomas Lunt
Moses Long
John Lunt
Roger Lord
Samuel Lancaster
John Lindsey
Samuel Lowell
Richard Lowell
Aaron Moulton
Stephen Mitchell
Jacob Merrick
William Murray
James Martin
James Mansfield
William Mc'Condry
Jonathan Martin
John Nichols
Eliphalet Noyce
Joseph Noyce
Obadiah Nut
Cutting Petingal Junior
Chase Pilsbury
James Page
Newport Ridisland
Josiah Richardson
Richard Rolfe
Samuel Rameck
Stephen Stickney
John Smith, Junior
John Smith
Sam[ll] Stockes
John Smith
John Smith
Samuel Wright
William White
William Williams
Jonathan Wamouth

Soldiers enlisted in 1778 for six months' service in Capt. Richard Rogers' company in Col. Jacob Gerrish's regiment: —*

Stephen Whitney
William Gould
Aaron Rollins
Jonathan Stickney
Joseph Welch
John Huff
Samuel Bragdon
Thomas Rogers
Benjamin Burbank
Jonathan Stone
George Moody
John Nason
Samuel Smith
Thomas Brown
James Bartlett
Ezekiel Eastman
Joseph Hodgdon
Jeremiah Lord
Jonathan Horsam
Ephraim Tibbetts
Samuel Fitts
Nathaniel Ramsdell
Theodore Barker
Daniel Briant
Moses Row
Landras Grant

*Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxii., p. 186. (Company stationed at Cambridge)

Newbury men drafted for nine months' service in 1778: — *

Caleb Parsons	Simon Lull
William Reed	Samuel Beaverly
David Marston	Jacob Friese
Eliphalet Canley	Jonathan Goodwin
Jacob Smith	William Parker
Jeremiah Smith	William Chambers
Daniel Gale	Josiah Maloone
Nathaniel Wadleigh	William Alld
Enoch Adams	Philip Barker
Isaac Plummer	James Sulivan

In addition to the men who were mustered into the service in 1778, the following persons were rejected for physical disabilities by the muster-master-general of the American army: — †

Sambo Carlton	Daniel Minehan
Theodore Atkinson	Nathaniel Davis
Levi Hale	Cato Seward
Joseph Leroach	Cesar Hodgdon
Thomas Churchill	Elijah Kelley
Oliver Martin	Robert Runnells

Supplementary list of men sent as part of the quota of the town of Newbury in 1778, but rejected for physical disability: — ‡

Samuel Currier	Joseph Holins
Joshua Bodwell	Patrick Rowland
Samuel Chase	Joseph Winter
Jonathan Cadwell	James Cavenaugh
John Lewis	Wm Connolly
William Conlea	James Vernon
Daniel Cochrane	John May
Joseph Conner	Elisha Lake
Joseph Hancock	William Jordan
Stephen England	John Richards
Jacob Annis	Richard Little
John Stone	Joseph Noyes
Joseph Lambert	Silas Noyes
Boston Pickering	Wm Perry
Juba Merrill	Pero Hall
John Dimond	John Remmack

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxviii., p. 150; also, vol. xxxii., p. 329.
† Ibid., vol. xxviii., p. 179. ‡ Ibid., vol. xxviii., p. 181.

Ralph Cross, one of the selectmen of Newburyport, reported, February 16, 1778, the names of all the persons enlisted to serve as a part of the quota of that town in the Continental army for the term of three years. In that list were the following-named Newbury men: — *

William Pay	Daniel Collins
John Stickney	John Knight
William Poor	Paul Coffin
John Feilding	Jonathan Buswell
Makepeace Colby	James Delaney
Thomas Holliday	James Summers
Jonathan Morrill	William Williamson
John Stonman	Daniel Price
John Arskins	Samuel Lowell
Charles Jarvis	Richard Lowell
John Lindsey	Leonard Cotton
Morrill Whicher	John Harris.

Most, if not all, of these men were in the company commanded by Capt. Moses Greenleaf in Col. Ebenezer Francis' regiment in 1777.

Newbury men mustered into the Continental army for nine months by John Cushing, muster-master (Boxford, December 8, 1779): — †

Jonathan Carlton	Parker Knight
Nathan Jaquish	Oliver Clark Lunt
David Emery	Samuel Barker
David Duston	William Nichols
George Thompson	James Scott
Pero Hall	James Follansbee
Enoch Boynton	Benjamin Chase
Oliver Martyn	John Bagley
Amos Carlton	Charles Walker
William Murray	Eliph^t Rollins

Capt. Richard Titcomb's company, in Col. Nathaniel Wade's regiment, made up of Newbury, Newburyport, and Amesbury men, enlisted July 3, discharged October 10, 1780. Essex county regiment raised to re-enforce the Continental army under Washington, for three months, agreeable to Resolve of General Court, June 22, 1780.‡

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. liii., p. 197. † Ibid., vol. xxxii., p. 282
‡ Ibid., vol. xxiii., p. 142.

Richard Titcomb,	Captain
Moody Montgomery,	Lieut
John Goodhue,	"
Theophilus Osgood	Serjent
Joshua Davis	"
Joseph Adams	"
Simeon Noyes	"
William Morrill	"
William Biscomb	Corporal
Jonathan Merrill	"
Robert Hoyt	"
Paul Bradbury	"
Samuel Elliott	Drummer
Ab[m] Dodge	Fifer.

PRIVATES

Simeon Brasier
William Norton
Bille Price
Jonathan Sweatt
Samuel Knapp
Joseph Wood
Matthew Pettengell
Timothy Curtis
Israel Colley
Benjamin Noyes
Stephen Howard
Samuel French
[]
John Titcomb
John Butler
Thomas Stanwood
John Coffin
Samuel Pilsbury
Joshua Pettengell
Jacob Hodgkins
William Follansbee
Stephen Norton
Thomas Newman
Moses Harriman
Nicholas Currier
David Bartlet
Eliphalet Pilsbury
Nathan Hatch
William Ceser
Joseph Lake
Jacob Wyat
Caleb Knight
Nathaniel Ober
Samuel Nowell
Joseph Stanwood
William Appleton
Elijah Mayhew
John Brown
Cesar Hendricks
George Sweatt
Joseph Woodman
Joseph Colley
James Carr
William Bartlet
Jacob Davis
William Davis
Jonathan Pearson
Benjamin Davis
Elias Cook
Benjamin Racklift
Joseph Currier
William Currier
Nicholas Moody
Simeon Bartlet
John Currier
Jonathan Colby
John Weed
Benjamin Wadly
Obadiah Badger
Thomas Bagley
William Tucker
Joshua Toppan
Philip Osgood
Samuel Sweatt
Joseph Morrill
Ephriam Hoyt
Reuben Eastman
Enoch Collins
Benjamin Morrill
John True
Simeon French
[]
William Pike
Abel Jackman

Jabez Merrill	Samuel Hoyt
Robert Mansfield	David Blaisdell
Stephen Merrill	Benjamin Sweatt
Zebulon Sargent	William Morrill
Isaac Colby	Obadiah Colby
John Huse	Ezekiel Barnard
Willis Currier	William Davis
Joseph Morss	Benjamin Collins
Gideon Colby	John Stevens
Sergeant Harvey	Jacob Currier
John Waters	Samuel Merrill

Captain Richard Titcomb was from Newburyport; but many of the officers and men named in the above list were from Newbury, and a few probably were from Newburyport and Amesbury. Their places of residence are not given in the muster roll, and it is impossible therefore to say how many should be credited to each town. The company was stationed at West Point on the Hudson river in September, 1780. From the diary of Joshua Davis, who was a sergeant in the company, it appears that when Benedict Arnold, in order to avoid capture and death, escaped in a barge to an English ship lying at anchor several miles away, he took with him several boatmen to aid him in his flight. Two of these boatmen were Newbury men, John Brown and Samuel Pilsbury, who enlisted for three months' service in Captain Titcomb's company.*

A list of the six months' men raised to re-enforce the Continental army in the year 1780: —†

Benoni Eaton Knap.	Benj Willet
Richard Shay	Wm Plummer
John Harris	Seth Plummer
James Cordy	John Thomson.
Elipt Poor	Aaron Rogers
Enoch Dole.	Moses Rogers.
Wm Currier.	Richard Martin
John Burbank	Wm Read
John Dow.	Micajah Lunt
Isaac Plummer	Jonan Martin

*Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 258; also, "Revolutionary Heroes," by Miss Emily A. Getchell, in Putnam's Historical Magazine, June, 1899.

†Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxvii., p. 7.

James Martin
Jacob Burrel
John Currier
Moses Somerby
John Lull
Moses Read
John Thurston
Prince Brown
Jona^{n}. Bartlit
Stephen Davis
Caff Downey
Simeon Chace
John Harvey
Jon^{n}. Lyfford
John Bean
London Roger
Paul M^{c}Pherson
John Archer
Josiah Conner
Lancaster Rich
James Scott
James Huntries
John Randall
Sam'l Randall
Joseph Pillsbury

A pay roll for the soldiers detached from the militia of the town of Newbury in the year 1780 to serve in the army of the United States for the term of six months: — *

James Martin	Sergt.	John Lull.
Jonathan Martin	Private	John Thompson
Richard Martin	"	Seth Plummer
William Beed		Benj^{n}. Willet.
Moses Reed		John Burbank.
Moses Somerby.		Enoch Dole.
John Currier		Jonathan Morse
William Currier		Joseph Conners
William Plummer.		Micajah Lunt.
Isaac Plummer.		James Swett.
Moses Rogers.		Eliphalet Poor
Aaron Rogers.		John Been
Jacob Burrel.		Jonathan Lyford
John Thurston.		London Rogers
Simeon Chase Jun.		Isaac Taylor
Jonathan Bartlet		James Hantrys
[Prince?] Brown.		John Randall
Cuff Downey.		Samuel Randell
John Dole.		Joseph Pilsbury

A duplicate copy of the above list was filed by Ezra Hale, clerk of the town of Newbury, in the month of September, 1838, and acknowledged before William Woart, justice of the peace, to be the original list "taken from papers on file in the clerk's office." †

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. iv., p. 199. † Ibid., vol. xlix., pp. 38, 39.

A descriptive list of the new levies raised for six months, . . . including all that are apportioned to the several infantry regiments from Newbury in 1780: — *

John Thompson	Saml Dudley
Richard Martin.	Jonathn Steward
Jona Martin	John Woodbery
Moses Reed	Saml Webber
Willm Reed	James Woodbury
Micajah Lunt	Nathaniel Hant
John Burbank	Ebenr Haynes
Saml Randel	James Smith
John Archer	Oliver Richards
Josiah Maloon	Benjn Woodbury
David Maloon	Enoch Foot
Paul Mc'Pheirson	Moses George
Ezekiel Stearns	Benjn Cotton
Jonathan Calley	John Harris
Eliphalet Calley	David Dorman
Jeremiah Smith	Benoney Knap
Stephen Smith	Richard Shay
Benjamin Smith	Moses Titcomb
Caleb Tobb	Saml Colby
George Sanders	Moses George, Jun
Daniel Gale	James Thomas.

Return of Newbury men raised agreeable to resolve of December 2, 1780: — †

Samuel Currier	Joseph Holmes
Joshua Bodwell	Patrick Rowland
Samuel Chase	Joseph Winter
Jonn Cadwell	James Cavinaugh
John Lewis	William Connolly
William Contee	James Vernon
Daniel Cochrain	John May
Joseph Conner	Elisha Lake
Joseph Hancock	William Youlan
Stephen England	John Richards
Jacob Annis	Richard Little
John Stone	Joseph Noyes
Joseph Lambert	Silas Noyes
Boston Pickering	Wm Perry
Juba Merrill	Pero Hall
John Dimond	John Rimmack

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxv., p. 219. † Ibid., vol. xxviii., p. 181.

Soldiers re-enlisted in 1781 who had previously served in the Continental army for several years: — *

Aaron Mellen	Eliph^{t} Noyes,	Serg^{t}
Stephen Mitchell	Samuel Stocker,	Drummer
James Pendon	Roger Lord,	Serg^{t}
Daniel Goodrich	Thomas Emerson	
John Stockman	William Poor	Corp.
Oliver Lunt	Pomp Jackson	
Benjamin Murray	Robert Creaton	
William White	John Tucker,	Serg^{t}

A full and complete list of the men credited to the town of Newbury for military service from 1775 to 1785, arranged in alphabetical order, will be found in "The Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War," a work compiled and published by order of the General Court of Massachusetts.

* Massachusetts Archives (Rev. Rolls), vol. xxix., folio 99.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE EMBARGO AND THE WAR OF 1812.

On the twenty-second day of December, 1807, the Senate and House of Representatives, in Congress assembled, passed an act laying an embargo on all vessels belonging to citizens of the United States, and forbidding, under heavy penalties, their clearance or departure for any foreign port. Friends of the embargo asserted that it was enacted for the purpose of protecting American merchant ships and sailors from seizure or capture on the high seas, and compelling France and England, who were then at war with each other, to repeal certain restrictions that had been imposed upon American commerce.

Although the inhabitants of Newbury were at that date largely engaged in agricultural pursuits, yet ship-building was a flourishing industry within the limits of the town; and many prominent citizens were associated with the merchants of Newburyport in the development of trade with the West Indies and the continent of Europe. All business of a commercial character was necessarily suspended. The rope-walks were deserted, sail-makers were idle; while shipwrights and sailors could find but little employment.

At a town meeting held August 22, 1808, resolutions were adopted condemning the embargo act and demanding its repeal. The selectmen were instructed to prepare a petition, to be sent to the president of the United States, remonstrating against the further continuance of a policy that threatened to absolutely destroy all foreign trade, and asking that ship merchants and captains might, at least, have free and uninterrupted commerce with the inhabitants of Spain, Portugal, and their dependencies.*

The subject was again brought to the attention of the

*Town of Newbury Records.

legal voters of the town January 23, 1809; and a memorial was prepared, requesting the General Court to exert its influence to secure a change in the policy of the national government.*

March 1, 1809, the embargo act was repealed by Congress; but all trade and intercourse with France and England was strictly prohibited. The law, however, could not be enforced, and led to many perplexing and irritating complications, that finally resulted in a declaration of war against Great Britain on the nineteenth day of June, 1812.

Spirited resolutions, opposing the war, were unanimously adopted by the inhabitants of Newbury on the twenty-ninth day of June. These resolutions were subsequently printed, and sent to every town in the county of Essex.* On the fourteenth day of July, "Mr. Richard Pike, Cap^{t} Thomas Carter, Cap^{t} Abraham Wheelwright, Silas Little, Esq., Eben^{r} March Esq. and M^{r} Daniel Emery" were chosen delegates to a convention to be held at Ipswich on the twenty-first day of July "to consult upon the present alarming condition of the country."*

Privateers were fitted out in Boston, Salem, Newburyport, and other towns along the seacoast, to prey upon English commerce. In the summer of 1813, English cruisers pursued and captured several small American vessels in the vicinity of Cape Ann and the Isles of Shoals.

An observatory was erected on March's hill, in Newbury, near the head of South, now Bromfield, street, Newburyport, from the top of which the movements of vessels approaching the mouth of the Merrimack river could be distinctly seen. Alarm posts were established on Plum island, and two gunboats were stationed in the harbor of Newburyport from the middle of October until the following spring.†

An English frigate, or "razee," called the "Majestic," carrying fifty-four guns, captured a schooner at the Isles of Shoals on the twenty-fifth day of November, 1813. A report that she had landed a company of soldiers at Plum island for the purpose of seizing and destroying the sloop-of-war

*Town of Newbury Records. †*Ante*, p. 484, note.

"Wasp," then lying at anchor in the Merrimack river, was widely circulated, but proved to have no foundation in fact.*

January 31, 1814, a committee, consisting of Hon. Ebenezer March, Capt. Ebenezer Wheelwright, Mr. Robert Dodge, Mr. Richard Pike, and Mr. Paul Thurlo, was appointed to prepare a petition, or memorial, requesting the General Court to use its influence and to co-operate in procuring relief from the restrictive laws enacted by Congress. This memorial, or petition, was published in the Newburyport Herald February 4, 1814, signed by the selectmen, the moderator of the meeting at which it was adopted, and the town clerk. It began with an eloquent appeal to the friends of liberty and free trade.

THE VOICE OF FREEMEN!!!

Citizens of Massachusetts, Inhabitants of Maine.

The guardians of your liberty are now at their posts. Let them know what aid they may expect from you in making a firm stand against the encroachments on your constitution by the late infamous Embargo Law.

Arouse! and in the respectful and decided language of freemen, call upon your Legislators to vindicate your rights, or be contented disgracefully to shrink from your duty and starve; follow the examples set before you by Deerfield, Amherst and New Bedford,—and this day by Newbury, the largest Agricultural Town in the County of Essex—Let Town Meetings be called without delay throughout the State and show your Legislators that they will receive a firm support in every energetic measure which they in their wisdom think proper to adopt at this momentous crisis, when life, liberty and property are all at stake.

Be not deluded by the prospect of peace. The friends of War are not yet glutted, thousands of lives, millions of property, and the sovereignty of every State (unless the Arm of Tyranny be arrested) yet remain to be sacrificed to their fury and ambition.

It condemned the war with Great Britain as "wicked, wanton and unjust, commenced in consequence of wrongs, which, whether real or pretended, bear no comparison to those which we were at the same time suffering from

*Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette.

France." It criticised the policy and denounced the methods by which "the resources of the nation have been dissipated and wasted in expeditions planned without wisdom and conducted without courage or skill, and the energies of the government prostituted in burning and ravaging villages and oppressing and destroying unoffending men." In conclusion, the General Court was urged "to adopt measures to protect and defend the rights and liberties of the people and secure the repeal of the iniquitous laws restricting the freedom of trade and commerce."

We call on our State Legislature to protect us in the enjoyment of those priviledges to assert which our fathers died; and to defend which we profess ourselves READY TO RESIST UNTO BLOOD. We pray your honourable body to adopt measures, immediately, to secure to us especially our undoubted right of trade within our State.

We are ourselves ready to aid you in securing it to us, to the utmost of our power "*peaceably* if we can, *forcibly* if we must" and we pledge to you the sacrifice of our LIVES and PROPERTY in support of whatever measures the dignity and liberties of this free, sovereign and independent State may seem to your wisdom to demand.

SILAS LITTLE, *Moderator.* EZRA HALE, *Town Clerk.*

JOSEPH NEWELL
DANIEL EMERY
MOSES S. MOODY } *Selectmen.*
JACOB PERLEY

NEWBURY, January 31, 1814.

At that date, the sloop-of-war "Wasp," built in Newbury, was being fitted for sea in Newburyport. Almost every writer of prominence describing the naval battles of that period, assumes that she was built by the ship-carpenters of Portsmouth, and that her crew was composed of able-bodied seamen from that port; but the following advertisement, printed in the Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette, September 24, 1813, and republished at frequent intervals during the next two or three months, proves that a large proportion of the officers and men sailed in the ship from Newburyport: —

To Men of Patriotism and Promoters of a Navy.



SLOOP OF WAR WASP.



All able bodied Seamen who are desirous of entering into the Navy of the United States may now have an opportunity by repairing to the Rendezvous which is now open at Mr Samuel Wheeler's, Union Hall, for the U. S. Ship of War, called the Wasp, now laying in Newburyport, Johnston Blakely, Esq., Commander. All able bodied seamen will receive two months pay in advance.

SEPTEMBER 24, 1813.

On the sixteenth day of November following, the Newburyport Herald announced that the "Wasp" was being rapidly fitted for sea, and that a considerable part of her crew had been secured. She sailed for Portsmouth February 22, 1814, and arrived there the same day. After taking on board heavy guns, ammunition, and other supplies, she left that port, in the month of May following, to cruise on the English coast.*

During her brief but brilliant career, the "Wasp" captured thirteen vessels, destroying twelve of them and sending one into port. On the ninth day of October, 1814, in latitude 18° 35′ N., longitude 30° 10′ W., she spoke the Swedish brig "Adonis," and took from that vessel "Lieut. McKnight and Mr. Lyman, a master mate, both late of the Essex, on their way to England from Brazil." She was never heard from after that date, and is supposed to have sunk at night with all her crew, during a severe engagement with an English frigate, in the month of November following.

She was as good a ship, as well manned, and as ably commanded as any vessel in our little navy; and it may be doubted if there was at that time any foreign sloop of war of her size and strength that could have stood against her in fair fight.†

The defenceless condition of the seacoast, exposed to assaults and attacks from heavily armed ships flying the

* *Ante*, p. 488. † "Naval War of 1812," by Theodore Roosevelt, p. 332.

English flag, alarmed the inhabitants of Newbury, and led to the appointment of a committee, September 12, 1814, to make suitable provision for the defence of the town, and to apply to the governor of the commonwealth for the money, arms, and ammunition needed for that purpose.*

On the sixteenth day of September following, the governor ordered "that the several companies and regiments in the towns of Salem, Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Newbury, Newburyport, Amesbury and Salisbury be assembled for the purpose of Instruction, in military tactics, two days in each week, until further orders." Detachments from these companies were stationed in Newbury, for the protection of the inhabitants, until the middle of October and perhaps longer. The names of the officers and men, on file in the archives of the adjutant-general's office, are as follows: —

LT COL EBENEZER HALE'S REGIMENT
SECOND BRIGADE SECOND DIVISION

Service at Newbury between Sept 30 & Oct 4 1814

CAPTAIN LANCASTER'S COMPANY

Thomas Lancaster	Captain	Michael Cressey
John Remick	Lieut	Joseph Coffin
John Morrill	Ensign	John Coffin 2d
Jacob Morrill	Sergt	Jonas Dick
Oliver Hall	"	Paul Emery
Saul Woodman	"	Abner Kinston
Eliphalet Hall	"	Tappen Kinston
Timothy Gordon	Corpl	John Kent
Ja's Whittimore [Miltmore ?]	"	Saul Sand [Land ?]
John Miltimore	"	Thos Merrill 3d
Enoch Merrill	Musician	Edmond Nichols
Chas Flanders	"	Henry Page
		John Pellion
PRIVATES		David Reed
Richard Adams		Joseph Stiles
John O W Brown		Edward Tappen
Solomon Babb		Amos Wood
Daniel F Coleman		Nicholas B Webb

* Newbury Town Records.

Captain Ordways Company

Peter Ordway	Captain	Amos Chase
Geo Little	Lieut	Josiah Chase
Nath[l] Ordway	Ensign	Noah Jackman
Stephen R Fox	Sergt	Sam'l Jackman
John Ordward [Ordway?]	"	Mathias Jackman 3rd
Eliphalet Rendol	"	Enoch Morrill
Jacob Chase	"	Wm Moulton
John Brewster	Corpl	Wm Merrill 3rd
John England	"	James Ordway
Henry Chase	"	Benj Ordway 2d
Moses Low	"	Richard Ordway
Eben Poor	Musician	David Parsons
John Poor	"	Sam'l Parsons
		Sam'l Poor

PRIVATES

Israel Bartlet	Thos Poor
Charles Bartlet	Wm Rogers
Isaac Bartlet	Thos S Pendergast
Wm Bartlet	Rufus Severance
James Burrill	Wm Stevens
Anthony Burrill	David Wickes
David Bartlet	Henry Chapman

Captain Allens Company

Samuel Allen	Captain	Amos Pillsbury
James Carry	Lieut	Dan'l Pillsbury
Asa Chamberlin	Ensign	John Pillsbury
Benj Lunt	Sergt	Nath'l Pearson
Enoch Jaques	"	Ezekiel Rogers
Elias Hunt	"	Oliver Rogers
Henry C Jaques	"	Joseph Rogers
		Gideon Rogers

PRIVATES

Nath'l Babb	Theodore Rogers
David Clifford	James Rogers
John Carlton	Stephen Sargent
John D Farley	Sam'l Safford
Silas Floyd	Wm Sargent
Joseph Hoyt	John Titcomb
Wade Ilsey	Dan'l Rand
Charles Jaques	John Gould
Dan'l A Lunt	Geo Berry 2d
John Noyes	John Robertson
	Joseph Battice

Danl C Haysen
Richard Page
Moses Bartlett
John Thompson
Benj T Tenney 3rd
Geo Campbell 1st

CAPTAIN MERRILLS COMPANY

Sam'l Merrill	Captain	John Hills
Josiah Titcomb	Lieut	Chas Hills
John Northend	Ensign	Joseph N Jackman
Stephen Adams	Sergt	David Jewet
Greenlief [?] Tilton	"	Isaiah Jewet
Chas Dennett	"	Robert Jewet
Gorham P Tenny	"	David Lord
Obadiah Hill	Corpl	Wm Moody
Sam'l Scribner	"	Adams McMaster
Dan'l Noyes	"	Dan'l Nelson
		Joshua Noyes

PRIVATES

Giles Adams
Patrick Burrill
Abner M. Cheany
Jonathan Cheany
James Dow
Joshua Dummer
Sam'l Dummer
Oliver Davis
Richard Davis
John Davis 2d
Jedediah Dole
Enoch Dole
Jacob Dole
Enoch Floyd
Frederic Gray
Abel Pearson
Henry Pearson
Moses Pike
Eliphalet Poor
Enoch Poor
David Poor
Benj Poor
Chas Ramsey
John A Roberts
Danl Rogers
Aaron Shute
John Thurlow
Saml Thurlow
Parker G Thurlow
Stephen Woodman

CAPTAIN EMERYS COMPANY

Eliphalet Emery	Captain	Wm Bartlet
Benj Stanwood	Lieut	Abner Baily
Nicholas Emery	Ensign	James Baily
Cornelius C Felton	Sergt	John Chase
Nicholas Durgen	"	James Davis
Henry Mowatt	"	Saul Davis
Stephen M Emery	"	Ebenezer Farrington
		Moses Morss

PRIVATES

James Bartlet
Moses Burnham
Joseph Morss
Saul Morss
Charles Merrill

Thos Rogers
Ja's Ridgway
Saul Sawyer
Abner Greenleaf
Thos Noyes
Robert Howell
Chas Moody
Isaac Tewksberry
Aaron Tibbits
Saul Atwood
Sam'l Gould
Nath'l Plummer

Captain Woodwells Company

John Woodwell	Captain	Danl Goodwin
Enoch Hall	Ensign	Josiah Goodwin
David Pearson	Sergt	Nathl Goodwin
Michel Stevens	"	Thos Goodwin
		Major Goodwin
PRIVATES		Saul Goodwin
Benj Atkinson		Benj W Hall
David Ayers		Wm Hall
Thomas Bayley		Jas Janvrin
Saul Coffin		Richard Jackman
John P Clark		Joseph Morse
Wm Coker		Nathl Pettengill
Moses Chase 3d		Moses Stevens
Wm Collins		Jas Thurlow
Enos Floyd		Gideon Woodwell
Mark Griffin		Dan'l Willis
Jacob Greenleaf		Cuttin Pettengill 3d
Amos Goodwin		Enoch Pierce 2d
James Thurlow		

Captain Heaths Company

Richard Heath	Captain	Saml Bailey 3d
John Osgood	Lieut	Elias Bootman
Saml Tenney	Ensign	Tappan Bailey
Benj Brown	Sergt	Moody Brickett
Geo Gordon	"	Geo Burrows
Danl Moulton	"	Danl C Baily
Wm Noyes	"	Thomas Chase
Moses Brown	Musician	Danl Chase
Benj Caldwell	"	Henry Clark
Thos H Chase	"	Enoch Dole
		Greenleaf Dole
PRIVATES		Danl Downer
Gideon Baker		Jacob Emery
Danl Bailey		Jonathan Eaton

John Follansbee
Parker Greenough
Enoch Follansbee
David Goodrich
Dudley Heath
Eliphalet Hills
Edmun Hills
Ephraim B Horne
Wm Ilsey
Moses Jaques
Moody Jaques
Wm McKinstey
Stephen M Little
John Little
Abiel Lovejoy
John Ladd
John Marshall
Laban Merrill
Amos Morss
Enoch Noyes
Wm Ordway
Abner Rogers
David Richardson
John Richardson Jr
David Rogers
John Sawyer
Edward Sealy
Sewell Short
Dan'l Silloway
James Smith
Saml W Smith
Caleb Smith
Jedediah Sanders
Benaiah Titcomb
Edmund North
Benj Wadleigh

Captain Smiths Company

Daniel Smith	Captain	Joseph Kent
Stephen Plummer	Lieut	Benj Leigh
Stephen Little	Ensign	Joshua Mace
Aaron Rogers	Sergt	Peter Noyes
Michael Little	"	John Noyes
Wm Brown	"	Moses Pettengill
		David Pettengill

PRIVATES

John Adams
Joseph Magowan
Enoch Dole
Joseph Adams 3d
Eli Adams
Hanson H Adams
Richard Bartlet
John Buswell
Jesper Blake
James Bray
Moses Floyd
Joseph Knight
Silas Knight
Wm Knight
John Knight
James Knight
Wm Plummer
Joseph Plummer
Wm Plummer Jr
David Plummer
Insley Page
John Robbins
Moses Rolf
Richard Smith
Henry Short
Charles Stickney
Lemuel Smith 3d
Moses Knight
Benj Hewiston
Paul Isley
Nathan Taylor
Wm Sweet
Sam'l Russell

Sam'l Lunt	Joseph Goodwin
Richard Leighton	Richard Lunt
Benj Halmer [Holmes?]	Eben Adams
Jas McThos	Isaiah Plummer

On the twenty-fourth day of December, 1814, a treaty of peace was concluded at Ghent, by duly accredited agents and representatives of England and the United States. A messenger, with a copy of this treaty, sailed a few days later for New York. He arrived early in the month of February, 1815; and on the eighteenth day of that month President Madison issued a proclamation announcing the termination of hostilities and the return of peace.

CHAPTER XVIII.

WAR OF THE REBELLION.

At the beginning of the War of the Rebellion the inhabitants of the town of Newbury were earnest and active in their efforts to sustain the government, and with great unanimity voted to uphold and defend to the best of their ability the constitution and laws of the United States.

At a town meeting held April 30, 1861, resolutions were adopted denouncing the men "who have succeeded in plunging a portion of our country into open rebellion and civil war," and pledging financial aid and support to those who voluntarily enlisted in the military service from Newbury. Three hundred dollars was appropriated for the equipment of a company of riflemen, already organized, but not fully equipped for active service; and the treasurer of the town was authorized to hire the sum of three thousand dollars "for contingent war expenses." The families of soldiers were supplied with the comforts and necessaries of life by a committee appointed for that purpose; and "a committee of vigilance, correspondence, and safety" was chosen to take such action as might be deemed expedient in regard to persons residing within the limits of the town "who are inimical to the government of the United States." *

July 30, 1862, the town voted to pay one hundred and fifty dollars to volunteers enlisting within one week from that date; one hundred and twenty-five dollars to those enlisting within two weeks; and one hundred dollars to those enlisting after the middle of August. It soon became necessary, however, to offer a more liberal bounty, in order to fill the quota of Newbury under the President's call for three hundred thousand men; and August sixteenth the selectmen were authorized to pay "to every person hereafter mustered into the

* Town of Newbury Records, April 30, 1861.

service of the United States from Newbury" the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars.

Subsequently the amount was reduced or increased according to circumstances, and private subscriptions were relied upon to make good the deficit in case the appropriations of the town were unavailable or inadequate. March 5, 1866, the town voted "to reimburse those who advanced money for the purpose of filling the town's quotas and furnishing men for the late war."

SOLDIERS IN THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.*

NAME.	*Enlisted or mustered.*	*Term.*	*Rank.*	*End of Service.*
Henry H. Foster	Apr. 24, 1861.	3 yrs.	Sergeant.	Promoted to Captain Feb. 6, 1862.
Nathan Longfellow	May 25, 1861.	3 "	"	Disch. May 28, 1864.
Nathan N. Withington	Dec. 12, 1861.	3 "	Private.	Disch. Dec. 4, 1865.
George H. Northend	July 5, 1861.	3 "	"	Killed in action, June 16, 1864, at Petersburg, Va.
Richard Withington	May 10, 1861.	3 "	"	Corporal, and disch. Aug. 3, 1864.
Paul A. Perkins	May 10, 1861.	3 "	Sergeant.	Disch. Sept. 18, 1863.
Joseph Perkins	Aug. 11, 1862.	3 "	Private.	" June 19, 1865.
Benjamin P. Rogers	July 21, 1861.	3 "	"	" July 11, 1865.
John H. Willis	July 21, 1861.	3 "	"	" Nov. 1, 1861.
William C. Haynes	July 28, 1861.	3 "	"	" Aug. 3, 1864.
George E. Carleton	July 28, 1861.	3 "	"	" Jan. 14, 1863.
Leander S. Falls	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	Sergeant.	" Oct. 23, 1862.
James Fee	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	" Mar. 23, 1863.
Micajah Rogers, Jr.	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	"	Died Oct. 15, 1862, at Alexandria, Va.
Varnum Rogers	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	"	
Daniel E. Rogers	Dec. 16, 1861.	3 "	—	Disch. Sept. 2, 1862.
Joseph H. Pearson	July 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	Died Sept. 18, 1862, at Antietam, Md., of wounds.
Elijah P. Rogers	Aug. 21, 1861.	—	Captain.	Disch. June 15, 1865.
Joseph Floyd	July 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	" Dec. 4, 1861.
Ezekiel Osborn	July 28, 1861.	3 "	Corporal.	" Oct. 20, 1861, and died.
William H. G. Rogers	July 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	" Jan. 17, 1862.
Mighill A. Rogers	Sept. 10, 1861.	3 "	"	" July 30, 1865.
George M. Kimball	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	"	
John Carr	—	3 "	—	No State record of muster or discharge.
Samuel S. Jellison	July 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	Killed at Glendale, Va., June 30, 1862.
Benjamin W. Jellison	July 28, 1861.	3 "	"	Promoted to 2d Lieut. June 1, 1865. Disch. June 30, 1865.
William E. Northend	July 28, 1861.	3 "	"	Transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps, Sept. 26, 1863.
Albert Rogers	July 28, 1861.	3 "	"	Transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps.
Benjamin F. Stephens	July 28, 1861.	3 "	—	Killed at Glendale, Va., June 30, 1862.

* From records of the town of Newbury relating to the service of soldiers in the Rebellion.

NAME.	Enlisted or mustered.	Term.	Rank.	End of Service.
Joseph C. Willard	Aug. 28, 1862.	3 "	Unassigned recruit.	—
Timothy Conway	July 26, 1862.	3 yrs.	"	—
John Morgan	Dec. 4, 1862.	3 "	"	—
Thomas Williams	Dec. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	—
Joseph Young	Dec. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	—
William H. Barry	Dec. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	—
John Brennan	Dec. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	—
Barney Robbins	Dec. 6, 1862.	3 "	"	—
William Edwards	Dec. 6, 1862.	3 "	"	—
Thomas Brady	Dec. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	—
George H. Shaw	Dec. 9, 1862.	3 "	"	—
John C. Foss	Sept. 22, 1861.	3 "	Private.	Corporal, and disch. Oct. 13, 1864.
Simeon P. Rogers	Aug. 5, 1862.	3 "	"	Transferred Aug. 6, 1863, V.R.C.
Thomas P. Lunt	Aug. 4, 1862.	3 "	"	Killed May 2, 1863, at Chancellorsville, Va.
James H. Pickering	Aug. 4, 1862.	3 "	"	Disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist.
Joseph Gould	Aug. 7, 1862.	3 "	"	" Mar. 3, 1863.
Isaiah Rogers	Aug. 7, 1862.	3 "	"	" Dec. 15, 1864.
Woodbridge A. Rogers	Aug. 7, 1862.	3 "	Corporal.	Made Sergeant and disch. June 11, 1865.
Eben Rogers	Aug. 7, 1862.	3 "	Sergeant.	Disch. June 11, 1865.
George P. Goodwin	Aug. 9, 1862.	3 "	Private.	" July 7, 1865.
Nathaniel M. Ilsley	Aug. 16, 1862.	3 "	"	" June 9, 1865.
Walter G. Peckham	Aug. 17, 1862.	3 "	Sergeant.	" June 9, 1865.
Charles C. Day	Aug. 17, 1862.	3 "	Private.	Transferred to Invalid Corps.
Charles C. Cole	1862.	3 "	—	—
Ira H Allen	Aug. 9, 1862.	3 "	Private.	Disch. Mar. 10, 1863.
Richard W. Swan	1862.	3 "	—	Disch. No date.
Henry P. Griffith	1862.	3 "	—	Died Nov. 3, 1862.
Joseph W. Lunt	Aug. 9, 1862.	3 "	—	Died Mar. 30, 1865, at Newburyport.
Jacob G. Clarkson	Aug. 9, 1862.	3 "	Private.	Died Jan. 19, 1863 at Falmouth, Va.
Amos M. Little	Aug. 22, 1862.	3 "	"	Disch. June 8, 1865.
George Russell	June 27, 1861.	3 "	"	Disch. and re-enlisted in unattached Co. H.A., Oct, 1863.
Charles H. Pray	Aug. 11, 1862.	3 "	"	Disch. June 29, 1865. Served as private orderly to Gen. Ransom.
Seth Young	Aug. 11, 1862.	3 "	"	Disch. June 29, 1865. Served as private orderly to Gen. Meade.
Charles Caldwell	Feb. 15, 1865.	3 mos.	Unassigned recruit.	Disch. Aug. 29, 1865.
Ezra Hale	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	Promoted to Corporal and disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Lewis H. Hale	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
George E. Young	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Musician.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Moses Young	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Sergeant.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Harrison W. Dearborn	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	Died in service at Baton Rouge, La., June 8, 1863.
Eben H. Dearborn	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. Sept 3, 1863.
Eben Bray, Jr.	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. June 17, 1865.
Francis M. Pillsbury	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Corporal.	Promoted to Sergeant July 2, 1863, and disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Charles Little	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. May 5, 1863.
James N. Frost	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	Promoted to Corporal, and disch. Sept. 3, 1863.

NAME.	*Enlisted or mustered.*	*Term.*	*Rank.*	*End of Service.*
Whitfield Frost	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 mos.	Private.	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Edward L. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Gorham P. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Musician.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Lewis B. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Sergeant.	" Dec. 20, 1862.
Philip Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" Dec. 9, 1862.
Melvin B. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Enoch S. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862,	9 "	Sergeant.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Christopher Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Philip L. Rogers	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Musician.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
William T. Sanborn	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Wagoner.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Andrew F. Smith	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" Dec., 1862.
Charles H. Prince	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Re-enlisted June 12, 1863.
Hiram R. Pillsbury	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Musician.	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Leonard Pillsbury	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Lorenzo B. Blaisdell	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Benjamin S. Bailey	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	" June 17, 1865.
Henry Bailey	Sept. 24, 1862,	9 "	"	" Sept. 3, 1863.
Phineas B. Gould	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Walter Noyes	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Died Jan. 24, 1863, on passage to New Orleans.
Nathaniel Noyes	Sept. 24, 1862.	9 "	"	Died in service at Baton Rouge, May 10. 1863.
Benjamin F. Noyes	1862.	9 "	Captain.	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Isaac F. Penton	1862.	9 "	—	—
Mighill A. Rogers	Nov. 6, 1862.	9 "	Private.	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
John W. Kelley	Nov. 11, 1862.	9 "	"	Deserted Nov. 14, 1862, at Wenham.
Isaac F. Porter	Sept. 16, 1862.	9 "	Corporal.	Disch. Sept. 3, 1863.
Hiram Kelley Poore	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" June 30, 1865.
Francis A. Wiley	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	"	" Aug. 24, 1863.
Charles W. Rundlett	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	Corporal.	" Aug. 24, 1863.
John Parsons	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	Private.	Died in service May 12, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.
John H. Parsons	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. Aug. 24, 1863.
Lyman Floyd	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	"	Disch. from service and died at Baton Rouge May 29, 1863.
Charles E. Tenney	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	Wagoner.	Disch. Aug. 24, 1863.
John G. Tenney	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	Private.	" Aug. 24, 1863.
William T. Bailey	Sept. 19, 1862.	9 "	"	" June 30. 1865.
James V. Greeley	July 23, 1864.	100 days.	Sergeant.	" Nov. 30, 1864.
Justin N. Adams	July 23, 1864.	100 "	Private.	" Nov. 30, 1864.
John A. Bean	July 23, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 30, 1864.
Thomas Noyes	July 23, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 30, 1864.
Charles E. Rogers	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	Corporal.	" Nov. 12, 1864.
George W. Pearson	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	Private.	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Elijah Pearson	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Orin T. Pearson	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Leonard Pillsbury	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Asa Rogers, Jr.	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Charles H. Woodman	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
William Woodman	Aug. 5, 1864.	100 "	"	" Nov. 12, 1864.
Daniel D. Bailey	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 yr.	—	" June 30, 1865.
Albert M. Currier	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	Private.	" June 30, 1865.
John B. Edmonds	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
William H. Gould	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Thomas R. Larkin	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
William F. Larkin	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Charles A. Newton	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Moses T. Pearson	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
James Howe	Nov. 13, 1864.	1 "	—	" June 30, 1865.
James H. Johnson	May 3, 1864.	90 days.	Private.	" Aug. 5, 1864.

NAME.	*Enlisted or mustered.*	*Term.*	*Rank.*	*End of Service.*
Joseph Knight	May 3, 1864.	90 days.	Private.	Disch. Aug. 5, 1864.
John Douglass	Apr. 5, 1864.	3 yrs.	"	Deserted Apr., 1864.
George E. Noyes	Feb. 27, 1864.	3 "	Corporal.	Disch. June 15, 1865.
Stephen W. Goodrich	Mar. 28, 1864.	3 "	—	" Aug. 16, 1865.
Jewett Rogers, Jr.	Jan. 2, 1864.	3 "	—	" Sept. 3, 1865.
Charles W. Sargent	Oct. 20, 1863.	3 "	—	" Sept. 18, 1865.
Eben P. Davis	Aug. 20, 1864.	1 yr.	Sergeant.	" June 16, 1865.
Greene Adams	Aug. 23, 1864.	1 "	Private.	" June 17, 1865.
Samuel R. Bailey	Aug. 19, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 17, 1865.
Joseph P. Bassett	Aug. 22, 1864.	1 "	"	Died Jan. 17, 1865, at Fort Williams Hospital, Va.
Silas F. Bean	Aug. 20, 1864.	1 "	"	Disch. June 17, 1865.
John N. Bray	Aug. 18, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 17, 1865.
John D. Floyd	Aug. 20, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 17, 1865.
John M. Horsch	Aug. 20, 1864.	1 "	"	" June 17, 1865.
Charles B. Rogers	Aug. 20, 1864.	1 "	—	" June 17, 1865.
George Cammett	Feb. 22, 1862.	3 yrs.	Artificer.	" Feb. 24, 1865.
Daniel E. Rogers	Apr. 22, 1863.	3 "	Corporal.	" Oct. 20, 1865.
Ira Rogers	Apr. 22, 1863.	3 "	"	" Oct. 20, 1865.
David Kent	Apr. 22, 1863.	3 "	Private.	" Oct. 20, 1865.
Jacob Kent	Oct. 10, 1863.	3 "	"	" Oct. 20, 1865.
William H. Kent	Oct. 10, 1863.	3 "	"	" Oct. 20, 1865.
Charles Roberts	Feb. 14, 1865.	3 "	"	" July 20, 1865.
Dudley Ward	Mar. 31, 1864.	3 "	"	Deserted May 24, 1864.
William A. Dudley	Feb. 14, 1865.	3 "	"	Disch. Aug. 1, 1865.
Gilbert Tye	Feb. 14, 1865.	3 "	"	" July 20, 1865.
Robert R. Minchin	Mar. 14, 1865.	3 "	Unassigned recruit.	Died Apr. 12, 1865.
Alvin S. Warren	Apr. 9, 1864.	3 "	Unassigned recruit.	Transferred May 17, 1864, to Navy.
George H. Minchin	Jan. 18, 1864.	3 "	Private.	Disch. June 29, 1865.
Jonathan Linfield	May 25, 1861.	3 "	"	Deserted July 25, 1863.
Joseph Steele	May 25, 1861.	3 "	"	Disch. May 28, 1864.
Patrick Kelly	Aug. 21, 1863.	3 "	"	Deserted July 3, 1865.
Reuben Beard	Aug. 18, 1863.	3 "	"	Died May 22, 1865.
Richard Rowe	Aug. 25, 1863.	3 "	"	Died Oct. 15, 1864, at Salisbury, N.C.
Edward W. Bartlett	Aug. 13, 1862.	3 "	"	Disch. Dec. 21, 1863, to re-enlist.
John H. Brown	Apr. 1, 1864.	3 "	"	Killed May 24, 1864, at Dodsville Farm, Va.
Lawrence M. Masury	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	Musician.	Disch. June 12, 1862.
Thomas B. Robbins	Aug. 28, 1861.	3 "	Private.	Never left the State.
George W. Gibson	Feb. 13, 1865.	3 "	"	Disch. June 30, 1865.
John Davis	Apr. 8, 1864.	3 "	"	" June 30, 1865.
Abram A. Dow	Dec. 10, 1861.	3 "	"	Made Corporal and transferred May 9, 1865, to Veteran Reserve Corps.
Sidney M. Smith	Apr. 14, 1864.	3 "	"	Died Aug. 26, 1864.
August Koss	Feb. 17, 1865.	3 "	"	End of service May 6, 1865.
Adam Simpson	Aug. 28, 1862.	3 "	Unassigned recruit.	—
George W. Carleton	Sept. 20, 1861.	3 "	—	Disch. July 21, 1862.
Isaac Walker	Apr. 2, 1864.	3 "	—	Deserted July 16, 1864.
Thomas Lane	Mar. 31, 1864.	3 "	Private.	Transferred Apr. 1, 1865, to Veteran Reserve Corps.
James Dunlap	June 21, 1864.	3 "	Lieutenant.	Killed July 30, 1864.
John D. Butler	Mar. 4, 1864.	3 "	Private.	Disch. July 30, 1865.
Horace S. Woodman	Mar. 4, 1864.	3 "	"	" July 30, 1865.
Timothy W. Rogers	Apr. 2, 1864.	3 "	"	" July 30, 1865.
Hugh M. Osborn	July 28, 1864.	—	—	" Nov. 21, 1865.

Name.	*Enlisted or mustered.*	*Term.*	*Rank.*	*End of Service.*
Elisha Bean, Jr.	Feb. 25, 1864.	3 yrs.	Private.	Disch. Aug. 16, 1865.
Stephen Ilsley	1862.	1 yr.	—	—
George D. Knight	1862.	1 "	—	—

In addition to the above list the following-named persons resided in, or were credited to, Newbury in the record of the Massachusetts volunteers, published by the State in 1870:—

Name.	*Enlisted or mustered.*	*End of Service.*
Benjamin S. Bailey	Aug. 19, 1864.	Disch. June 17, 1865.
Charles L. Cole	Sept. 3, 1862.	Died March 7, 1864 at New York.
Maurice Cronin	Aug. 11, 1864.	Disch. July 29, 1865.
John Devine	April 4, 1864.	Deserted April 23, 1864.
William P. Pearsons	Nov. 13, 1864.	Disch. June 30, 1865.
John Richards	Feb. 20, 1864.	Died July 30, 1865.
Richard Rowe	Aug. 25, 1863.	Died Oct. 15, 1864, at Salisbury, N.C.
Frank Smith	April 2, 1864.	Transferred to navy May 17, 1864.
William Tyler	Feb. 17, 1865.	Disch. May 15, 1865.
William L. Veltmar	Oct. 15, 1861.	Disch. Aug. 7, 1862.
Aaron Warhurst	July 22, 1861.	Disch. Dec. 22, 1863.

Other men from Newbury probably enlisted and were credited in other towns in the State, but their names have not been ascertained.

APPENDIX.

APPENDIX.

I.

TOWN CLERKS.

John Woodbridge, appointed previous to November 30, 1636, served probably until November 19, 1638.*

Edward Rawson, appointed November 19, 1638, served until May 18, 1647.†

Anthony Somerby, appointed May 18, 1647, served until March, 1686; died July 31, 1686.

Henry Short, elected March 20, 1685–6, was re-elected annually until his death, October 23, 1706. Joseph Woodbridge was chosen, October 21, 1706, "to enter ye acts and transfer them to the town clark to be recorded."

Richard Brown, jr., elected October 30, 1706, resigned early in the month of October, 1711, and removed to Reading, Mass.

* *Ante*, p. 47. John Woodbridge married, in 1639, Mercy, daughter of Thomas Dudley, governor of the colony of Massachusetts Bay. It is uncertain when he resigned his office as clerk of the town of Newbury; but the report of a meeting in the town records, dated September 21, 1638, is in his handwriting.

† Edward Rawson represented Newbury in the General Court at nearly every session from 1638 to 1650. He was elected secretary of the colony of Massachusetts Bay May 22, 1650. The last record in the handwriting of Edward Rawson as clerk of the town of Newbury is dated May 17, 1647. His successor was evidently Anthony Somerby, who signed as clerk, May 18, 1647, on the 114th page of the records; and John Lowell, who is said to have served for a few months about that date, was probably only a recorder of births, deaths, and marriages.

December 10, 1641, the General Court "ordered that in every town one shalbee appointed to grant sumons & attachments in all civill actions . . . for Neweberry Mr Lowle . . . to bee called clarks of the writtes. These are chosen for a yeare & till new be chosen in their roames." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., pp. 344, 345.)

June 14, 1642, "the clarks of the writts" were ordered "to take especially care to record all births & deaths of persons in their townes; . . . & for time past it is ordered they shall do their utmost indeavr to find out in their severall townes who hath bene borne & who hath died, since the first founding of their townes & to record the same as aforesaid." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 15.)

Mr. John Lowell died June 29, 1647. The General Court appointed, October 27, 1647, "Anthony Sumersby to be clarke of the writs at Newbury & to record births, deaths & marriages in the place of John Lowle deceased." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 198.)

Mr. Somerby held the office of clerk in Newbury until his successor was chosen in March, 1685–6. He died July 31, 1686. It was not until February 17, 1692–3, that town clerks were ordered by the General Court to register births, deaths, and marriages. (Province Laws, vol. i., p. 104.)

Nathaniel Coffin, elected October 9, 1711, retained the office until his death, February 20, 1748–9.

Joseph Coffin, elected March 14, 1748–9, retained the office until his death, September 12, 1773.

Dudley Colman, elected September 23, 1773, resigned in 1776, and enlisted in the Revolutionary army.

Edmund Sawyer, elected April 9, 1776, served until 1786, when he was elected treasurer of the town of Newbury.

John Atkinson, elected March 14, 1786, was re-elected annually until 1807.

Ezra Hale, elected April 6, 1807, resigned in March, 1844.

Stuart Chase, elected March 12, 1844, retained the office until his death, January 17, 1850, when the selectmen appointed Luther Dame clerk *pro tempore*.

Joshua Coffin, elected March 12, 1850, served until February 13, 1857, when, owing to the impairment of his intellectual faculties, he was unable to attend to the duties of the office, and the selectmen appointed William Little clerk *pro tempore*.*

William Little, elected March 2, 1857, was re-elected annually until 1884.

Frank L. Ferguson, elected March 4, 1884, was re-elected annually until 1891.

John C. Rolfe, elected March 3, 1891, has been re-elected annually since that date.

* Joshua Coffin was born October 12, 1792, and died June 24, 1864. He published in 1845 his interesting and valuable work, entitled "A Sketch of the History of Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury," that is still read and appreciated by students and writers who desire to know the more important facts connected with the early settlement of these towns. A photograph of Joshua Coffin, taken a few years before his death, is reproduced in the half-tone print on the opposite page.



JOSHUA COFFIN.

II.

OATH OF ALLEGIANCE TO THE KING.

The early settlers of Newbury, who were detained in the river Thames, by order of the king's privy council, February 14, 1633–4, were compelled to take the following oath, or one substantially like it:—*

I Doe sweare before the Almighty and ever living God, that I will beare all faithfull allegiance to my true and undoubted Soveraigne Lord King Charles, who is Lawfull King of this Island and all other his dominions both by sea and land by the Law of God and man and by lawfull succession, and that I will most constantly and cheerefully even to the utmost hazard of my life and fortune oppose all seditions, rebellions, conspiracies, covenants, and treasons whatsoever against his maties Crowne and dignity or person, raysed or sett up under what pretence of religion or colour soever, and if it shall come veyled under pretence of religion I hould it most abominable before God & man. And this oath I take voluntary, under the faith of a good Christian and loyall subject, wthout any equivocation or mentall reservation whatsoever, from wch I hould no power on earth can absolve me in any parte.†

*_Ante_, p. 28.

†Thomas Lechford's Note-book, p. 105. "The oath proposed in England whereon the Lords Say & Seale & Brooke were imprisioned at Yorke when the King went against the Scotts wth an army. Anno 1639."

III.

KENT'S ISLAND.

Richard[1] Kent, sr., malster, and his son, or cousin, Richard[2] Kent, jr., came to New England in the ship "Mary and John," Robert Sayres, master. They arrived in Boston in May, 1634, and went with Rev. Thomas Parker and others to Ipswich, where they remained until the spring of 1635, when they removed to Newbury.* Stephen, brother, and James, (possibly) brother of Richard Kent, sr., came to Newbury about the same time.

"A ffarme lott of one hundred acres of upland and meadow on an Island" was granted Richard[2] Kent, jr., February 7, 1646–7.†

October 10, 1674, he conveyed to his nephew John[2] Kent, of Newbury, and after him to Richard,[3] son of the said John Kent, eightscore acres of upland and meadow lying west of Little river, which had been in the possession of John Kent for some years.‡

Richard[2] Kent, jr., died, without issue, November 25, 1689. John[2] Kent died January 30, 1717–8.

The following paragraph relating to Kent's island is taken from his will, dated March 11, 1712–3, and proved February 11, 1717–8:—

To my son Richard Kent I Doe confirm y^e^ Gift of my uncle Richard Kent Late of Newbury aforesaid Dec^d^ of eight score acres of land upon said Island Given by my said Uncle To my said Son, so as y^t^ he my said son & his heirs & assigns may enjoy y^e^ same without y^e^ Lawful Let of any Person from, by or under me that may Lay Claim thereunto or to any Part thereof, and together with the said half of s^d^ Island given Him as aforesaid I do give unto him, my said Son, the other halfe of said Island Both Meadow & upland and the appurtenances thereunto Belonging with all my Housing & buildings thereon & orchards, And all my Common Priviledges and Rights in all the Common Lands or General

* *Ante*, p. 28. † *Ante*, p. 65. ‡ Ipswich Deeds, book iv., p. 58.

Pasture wherein I have any right or Interest within ye Township of Newbury aforesaid, &c.*

Richard,[3] son of John,[2] son of James[1] Kent, was born in 1673 probably. He married Sarah Greenleaf in 1709. He was subsequently appointed colonel of the second regiment in the county of Essex.

Col. Richard[3] Kent was engaged in commercial enterprises, and at the time of his death owned and occupied a dwelling-house "near or adjacent to the lower ferry place on Merrimack river." † He died May 8, 1740, and was buried in the Old Hill burying-ground. In his will, dated May sixth and proved May 26, 1740, he gave his farm in Newbury, "known by the name of Kent's island," to his son Richard[4] during his lifetime, and then to the eldest son of the said Richard,[4] "and so to descend from one Generation to another, to the eldest surviving male Heir, a continuall Entail forever as long as the world endures." ‡

Richard,[4] son of Col. Richard[3] Kent, was born in 1715. He married Anne Hale, of Byfield parish, in 1740, by whom he had three sons: Joseph[5] and Stephen,[5] twins, born May 20, 1741; and Moses,[5] born in 1752 (?) § He died May 8, 1760, and was buried in the graveyard "near the trayneing green."

After his death, both Joseph[5] and Stephen[5] claimed possession of Kent's island under the will of their grandfather, Col. Richard[3] Kent. In 1770, Stephen[5] Kent brought a suit in the Supreme Court for the purpose of restraining his brother Joseph[5] from the use or occupancy of the house and land; but the jury, after hearing the testimony of several witnesses, returned a verdict for the defendant. ‖

The island remained in the joint occupation and ownership of the two brothers for ten or fifteen years after the termination of the lawsuit. An attempt was then made to secure an equitable division of the property.

March 1, 1784, the General Court passed "An act for

* Essex (Probate) Records, book cccxii., p. 188.

† "Ould Newbury," p. 155. ‡ Essex (Probate) Records, book cccxxi., leaf 354.

§ After the death of Richard[4] Kent, his widow married Joshua Greenleaf. She died July 15, 1794.

‖ Suffolk County Court Files (Essex), vol. dcccxiii., No. 31861.

apportioning and establishing the Possessions of the Heirs at Law of Richard Kent, son of Richard Kent, late of Newbury, deceased, to a certain Island called Kent's Island in Newbury aforesaid." *

The facts relating to the entailing of the property by Col. Richard[3] Kent, and the birth of his grandsons, Stephen[5] and Joseph[5] Kent, are stated in the preamble, which closes as follows: "And by reason of some singular and extraordinary circumstances attending the birth of the said Stephen and Joseph, it remains wholly uncertain which is the eldest son, although a suit at law, and the verdict of two juries, have been had to determine the question."

The first section of the act provides that the justices of the Supreme Judicial Court may, "upon application of the said Joseph Stephen and Moses," set off and assign one-third part of the island to Stephen[5] Kent, one-third part to Joseph[5] Kent, and one-third part to Moses[5] Kent, a younger brother; but they were not called upon at that time to exert the power and authority conferred upon them by the General Court, and the island remained undivided for more than twenty years.

Joseph[5] Kent died July 19, 1802, and his brother Stephen[5] died in 1827. Paul,[6] son of Joseph[5] Kent, by deed † and inheritance, became owner of one-half the island.

The question of title was again brought to the attention of the courts. In 1803 and 1804, the depositions of Hannah Peabody, midwife, Mary Reed, Mercy Danforth, and Joseph Jaques were received, and subsequently recorded in the registry of deeds.‡

April 22, 1809, one-half of Kent's island was set off and assigned to Paul[6] and one-half to Stephen[5] Kent, "by order of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts." §

Joshua[7] Noyes Kent, son of Jacob and Mary Kent, and grandson of Capt. Stephen[5] Kent, was born in Amesbury September 9, 1816. He married, November 24, 1845, Sarah

* Special Statutes of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, vol. i., p. 64.
† Essex Deeds, book clxvi., leaf 104.
‡ Ibid., book clxxii., leaves 220 and 271; book clxxv., leaves 41 and 144.
§ Ibid., book clxxxvi., leaf 206.

N. Dummer of Rowley. He acquired by purchase and inheritance the whole of Kent's island.* Joshua N. Kent died November 19, 1880. Administration was granted on the estate of Joshua N. Kent, January 3, 1881. The island is now owned by his sons, Otis L., Leonard N., Albert Sydney, and Edward Kent.

* Essex Deeds, book dccclv., leaf 237.

IV.

RICHARD DUMMER.

The General Court of the colony of Massachusetts Bay appointed a committee, May 6, 1635, "to sett out a fferme for Mr Dumer aboute the falls of Neweberry, not exceeding the quantity of 500 acres."* At or before that date, Richard Dummer was chosen a member of the Court of Assistants, but he did not take his seat until June 2, 1635.

He was born in the parish of Bishopstoke, England, in 1598, and came to Boston in the ship "Whale," Capt. Graves, master, arriving there May 24, 1632.† He was made a freeman November 6, 1632. At that date he was probably living in Roxbury. He built a water-mill in that town as early as 1633.‡

The tax on his real estate in Roxbury and Saugus was reduced by order of the General Court, March 4, 1633–4.§ The same day, the raising of a fund to be used in the construction of a movable fort, for the defence of the colony, was authorized, and Mr. Dummer contributed thirty pounds.‖

September 4, 1634, Richard Dummer, Nicholas Easton, and several other freemen, residing in different towns in the colony, "were chosen ouerseers of the powder & shott & all other amunicon in the seuall plantacons where they lyve."¶

[March 4, 1634–5] Ordered that Mr Rich: Dumer & John Johnson shall builde a sufficient Cart bridge over Muddy Rivr before the nexte Gen'all Court & that Boston, Rocksbury, Dorchestr, Newe Towne & Waterton shall equally contribute to it.**

The same day that Newbury was allowed to be a plantation, May 6, 1635, a farm of five hundred acres was granted Mr. Dummer at the falls in Newbury; and, on the eighth

* *Ante*, p. 31.
† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. xliv., pp. 249, 250.
‡ Winthrop's History (edition, 1853), vol. i., p. 138.
§ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 113. ‖ Ibid., p. 114.
¶ Ibid., p. 125. ** Ibid., p. 141.

day of July following, Mr. Dummer and Mr. Bartholemewe were authorized "to sett out a convenient quantity of land within the bounds of Newbury, for the keeping of the sheepe and cattell that came over in the Dutch shipps this year." Liberty was also given "Mr Dumer & Mr Spencer to build a myll & a weire att the falls of Newberry." *

Richard Dummer was a member of the governor's council, or Court of Assistants, and attended the meetings that were held in June, July, August, September, and November of that year, and in March, April, June, September, and December, 1636.

[May 25, 1636] Mr Dumer is chosen Treasurer for this yeare next ensueing & till a newe be chosen.†

He served as treasurer of the colony until May 17, 1637, when Richard Bellingham was elected to that office by the General Court, and "The late Treasurer, Mr Dumer, was ordered to receive all the last rates, of wch hee hath received part." ‡

[June 6, 1637] The account of the late Treasurer, Mr Richrd Dumer was accepted & apprved, there resting dew to Mr Dumer 23£ 2shs, hee not haveing alowed the 50£ wch hee pmised.§

November 20, 1637, more than sixty followers of Mrs. Anne Hutchinson and Rev. John Wheelwright were condemned for holding erroneous religious opinions, and were ordered to deliver up to officers appointed by the General Court "All such guns, pistols, swords, powder, shot & match as they shalbee owners of, or have in their custody."

The names of the Neweberry men to bee disarmed are Mr Dumer, Mr Eason, and Mr Spencer: [their guns, pistols &c] to bee delivered to the cunstable of the towne.‖

It was, ordered, that if any that are to be disarmed acknowledge their sinn in subscribing the seditious libell or do not justify it, but acknowledge it evill to two magistrates, they shalbee thereby freed from delivering in their arms according to the former order.‖

Soon after the adoption of these orders by the General Court, Richard Dummer and John Spencer went to England,

* *Ante*, pp. 33 and 38.
† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 175. ‡ Ibid., p. 196. § Ibid., p. 204.
‖ Ibid., p. 212.

and Nicholas Easton found it advisable to remove to Rhode Island, where he settled, and was afterwards elected governor of that colony.

Richard Dummer returned to New England in the ship "Bevis," Robert Batten, master, sailing from Southampton in the month of May, 1638. His brother Stephen and his brother's wife, Alice, with six children, were passengers in the same vessel.*

On the sixth day of August following, the selectmen of Newbury agreed "that in case Mr [Richard] Dummer doe make his mill fitt to grynd corne, . . . there shall not another mill be erected wthin the said Toune"; † and it was also agreed that the bounds and limits of the land previously granted him should be fixed and determined by a board of arbitrators.

[August 16, 1638] Itt was agreed that Mr Woodman shall goe into the bay the second day of the week to enforme the arbitrators chosen by the Towne & Mr Dumer to putt an end to the differences concerning the necke betweene Mr Dumer & the towne.‡

October 6, 1638, Mr. Dummer purchased a dwelling-house of Thomas Hale, with land on both sides of Merrimack ridge, where he lived for several years.§

May 22, 1639, the General Court passed the following vote: —

The 50£ wch Mr Rich'd Dumer was to pay is remitted to Mr Ezechi: Rogers & his company [at Rowley].‖

September 7, 1640, Thomas Mayhewe, of Watertown, sold Richard Dummer, of Newbury, a farm in Watertown, containing five hundred acres, formerly owned by Simon Bradstreet.¶ Several years later, the title to this property was contested and brought to the attention of the General Court.**

* *Ante*, p. 38. The statement that Richard Dummer returned "bringing his wife and family" is incorrect. He brought Stephen Dummer, wife, and family with him. In the note at the bottom of p. 38, the age of Stephen Dummer should be thirty-nine, probably, instead of twenty-nine, and the age of Thomas Dummer, the last name in the list, should be two years instead of twenty-seven.

† *Ante*, pp. 38, 39. ‡ Town of Newbury Records. § "Ould Newbury," p. 315.

‖ Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 256. ¶ Suffolk Deeds, vol. i., p. 13.

** The questions in dispute were evidently settled before the day appointed for the hearing arrived. October 24, 1659, the inhabitants of Watertown "voted, at a publike toune meeting, that the five hundred acres of land once the land of Mr Oldam, but now lajd to Mr Dumer, in

Mr. Dummer contributed one hundred pounds to the fund raised, in 1640, to make up the loss that Gov. Winthrop had sustained by the appointment and subsequent mismanagement of an unfaithful bailiff. In 1644, Richard Dummer was appointed "one of the associate judges of the Ipswich Court"; * and March 20, 1645–6, as agent for Mr. John Spencer, he sold to John Bond "the howse & howse lott of Mr John Spencer sittuate in Newbury with a planting lott of three acres & a half on great neck over the great River for & in consideration of fourteen pounds." † Thirty years later, he became involved in a lawsuit with the town of Newbury in regard to the bounds and limits of a portion of the land that he claimed to own in the vicinity of Newbury Falls. The details of the controversy are unknown; but Mr. Dummer was evidently annoyed by threats of prosecution, and sent the following communication to the selectmen: —

Sept. 15, 1675 To the prudentiall men of Newbury.

I do by this writing signify to you that you shall not need to sue for any of that Land I have fenced at Rowley Mill that is in question or difference. I shall for peace sake rather yeild it to the Towne and use some other means to recover my right which is about twenty acres more than is fenced in RICHARD DUMER Senr †

Two years later, John Knight, sr., and Tristram Coffin were appointed a committee to attend the court at Ipswich, and defend the town of Newbury against the suit brought by Mr. Dummer.†

[March 12, 1677–8] Nicholas Noyes, Richard Knight & Tristram Coffin were chosen to go to Mr Dumer to treat with him about the Difference between the Towne and hee, and to make him a tender of the land and of the court charges.†

The committee reported April 10, 1678, that the claim had been settled, "he [Mr. Dummer] having recovered judgment at the Ipswich Court in September last for twenty five acres of land." †

the bounds of Watertoune, do remajne his, the sajd Mr Dumers, wthout any of the tounes opposition. Witnessed by me in ye name of the toune. EPHRAIM CHILD."

"The Court accepts of this returne of the toune of Watertoune as that wch putts an end to ye controursy mentioned in this petition, and confirmes the land accordingly to Mr Richard Dumer." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 408.)

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 65. † Town of Newbury Records.

Richard Dummer had one son, Shubael, born February 17, 1635–6, by his first wife Mary. Mrs. Dummer died soon after that date,* and by his second wife, Frances, widow of Rev. Jonathan Burr, of Dorchester, whom he married in 1644, he had three sons, Jeremiah, Richard, and William, and one daughter, Hannah. He died December 14, 1679, and was buried in the graveyard near the "trayneing green" in Newbury. A low moss-covered stone, bearing the following inscription, marks his last resting-place: —

RICHARD DUMER, ESQ.
DIED DECEMBER YE 14TH
1679, IN HIS 88 YEAR

Near it, another stone is inscribed as follows: —

MRS FRANCES DUMER DIED
IN THE 70TH YEAR OF HER
AGE BEING THE 19TH DAY OF
NOVEMBER 1682.

Stephen Dummer was made a freeman May 22, 1639, and returned to England previous to 1648. In a letter dated May 10, 1648, he wrote to Henry Short, of Newbury, "If you can sell my farme at the Birchen Meadows do for what it is worth." † March 5, 1650, Henry Short sold the farm of three hundred acres, more or less, for twenty-one pounds to Thomas Browne and George Little.

Laid out to Thomas Brown & George Little in the behalfe of Mr Stephen Dumer two hundred and forty acres of upland at Turkey Hill joyning to Mr Stephen Dumers meadow called by the name of Birchen Meadow &c †

[May 30, 1650] In answr to the peticon of Henry Short, of Newbury, the Court doth order that the peticoner shall have liberty, and is

* Rev. John Eliot's record of church members in Roxbury has the following notice of Mary Dummer, wife of Richard Dummer: "she was a Godly woman but by the seduction of some of her acquaintances she was led away into the new opinions in Mrs. Hutchinsons time & her husband removing to Newbury she there openly declaired herselfe & did also (together with others endeavours) seduce her husband & p'swaded him to return to Boston; when she being young with child & ill; Mr. Clark (one of the same opinions) unskillfully gave her a vomit, wch did in such maner torture & torment her wth the rising of the mothr & other vyolences of nature yt she dyed in a most uncomfortable maner. But we believe God tooke her away in mercy frō worse evil wch she was falling into & we doubt not but she is gone to heaven." (Lives of Isaac Heath, John Bowles, and Rev. John Eliot, by J. Wingate Thornton, p. 172.)

† Town of Newbury (Proprietors) Records, vol. i, p. 18.

hereby impowered, to sue any person for any rents or arrears dew to Mr Stephen Dommer, now in England, and vpon receipt thereof to acquitt and discharge the same.*

Jeremiah, son of Richard and Frances Dummer, was born September 14, 1645. He was apprenticed, when quite young, to John Hull, silversmith, in Boston. He died there, May 24, 1718, leaving two sons: Jeremiah, who graduated at Harvard college in 1699, and was afterwards agent of the province of Massachusetts Bay, in England; and William, born in Boston in 1677, and appointed deputy governor of the province in 1716.

William Dummer died October 10, 1761, and was buried in the Granary burying-ground on Tremont street, Boston.† The following obituary notice was published in a Boston newspaper, October 26, 1761:—

Departed this life the Hon. William Dummer, Esq. in the 84th year of his age; and on the 16th his funeral was attended with every mark of respect due to so eminent a person. Scarce any one ever passed through this life with a more unspotted character, or performed its various duties with more universal esteem. In the gayest scenes of youth he was preserved from destructive paths of vice: and, in maturer age, was a shining example of the most amiable virtues. In the begining of the reign of George I. he was appointed our Lieut. Governor. Upon the return of Col. Shute to Great Britain the chief command of the Province devolved upon him. In this station he appeared with distinguished taste.

The wise, incorrupt and successful administration of Mr Dummer will always be remembered with honor and considered as a pattern worthy of the imitation of all future Governors. Uninfluenced by party prejudices, superior to all mercenary attachments, he discovered no passion in his public character, but love to his country and fidelity to his Royal Master. Having filled the Chair with dignity and usefulness for several years; when a successor was appointed he retired to enjoy the unenvied satisfactions of a private life; with the approbation of a good conscience, and the applause of his country.‡

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 10.

† For additional facts relating to the Dummer family see "Ould Newbury," pp. 313–325.

‡ New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. ix., pp. 174, 175.

V.

CART CREEK.

The farm of four hundred acres granted Dr. John Clarke by the town of Newbury, previous to 1647, was bounded in part by Cart creek, a small tributary of the river Parker.*

In 1651, the farm was sold to Richard Thorlay, who built, three years later, the first bridge over "the great river." †

Edmund Goodridge and John Noyes, jr., were granted liberty, June 22, 1708, to set up a saw-mill on Cart creek.‡

February 28, 1807, John Noyes, Caleb Titcomb, Isaiah Rogers, Josiah Adams, Stephen Adams, John Longfellow, Simon Thurla, Enoch Little, and Simeon Titcomb, "proprietors of the greater part of a tract of salt marsh, situate on Cart-Creek, in Newbury," were incorporated by the General Court, and granted liberty "to erect and make a Dike, and Dam, of sufficient heighth and width, across said Cart-Creek, in or near the same place where a Dike or Dam, was formerly made, so far as a Dike, or Dam, may be found necessary; and to erect and keep in repair, such a Fence, as the said proprietors may, at a legal meeting, agree to have, where a Fence may be found necessary." §

The persons named in the act of incorporation evidently hoped to convert the salt marsh in the neighborhood of Cart creek into pasture or tillage land by the erection of a dyke or dam to keep out the salt water. For some reason unknown the work was delayed for several years; but, after mature deliberation, a dam with a tide-water gate was constructed, and is still maintained.

* *Ante*, p. 67. † "Ould Newbury," p. 204. ‡ *Ante*, p. 261.
§ Special Statutes of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, Acts of 1806, chap. c.

VI.

FIRST PARISH MEETING-HOUSE.

The following notice was published in the Salem *Gazette*, May 29, 1806: —

NEWBURYPORT, MAY 6.

"*There is a time to build up, and a time to pull down.*"— SOLOMON.

On the last Sabbath a valedictory Sermon was delivered by the Rev. Mr. POPKIN, to a crowded assembly at the old-town Meeting House (Newbury) that society being about to pull down the house and erect a new one in the same place. This ancient fabric has stood *One Hundred and Seven Years*, probably the oldest meeting house in New England. This was the original society from which emanated all the others in Newbury and Newburyport, now ten in number. There have been six ministers settled over this society, previously to their present one, viz: —* Mr Noyes, Mr Woodbridge, Mr. Richardson, Mr. Toppan, Dr. Tucker and Mr Moore. Mr. Toppan and Dr. Tucker administered more than half a century.— The occasion excited the liveliest sensations in the breasts of those aged and venerable parishioners who have assembled here from their earliest childhood, for religious worship; and whose fathers before them enjoyed the same happy privilege in the same place from the first settlement of the country.†

* In the newspaper paragraph quoted above, the number of ministers is not correctly stated. The following-named persons were ordained pastors or assistant pastors of the First parish in Newbury from 1635 to 1806:

Rev. Thomas Parker was pastor from 1635 to the day of his death, April 24, 1677. Rev. James Noyes was assistant pastor from 1635 to the day of his death, October 22, 1656. Rev. John Woodbridge was assistant pastor from 1663 to 1672. Rev. John Richardson was assistant pastor from 1673 until 1677, and afterwards pastor until his death, April 27, 1696. Rev. Christopher Toppan was pastor from 1696 to 1747. Rev. John Tucker was assistant pastor from 1745 to 1747, and pastor from that date until his death, March 22, 1792. Rev. Abraham Moor was pastor from 1796 until his death, June 24, 1801. Rev. John S. Popkin was installed pastor September 19, 1804.

† The first meeting-house in Newbury was probably erected in 1635, at or near "that parcell of land called the greene," in the vicinity of Parker river. The second was built in 1647 "upon a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppan's barne," two or three miles in a northerly direction from the first house of worship. Subsequently, meeting-houses were erected in 1661, in 1700, and in 1806, at or near the same site. The new house, to which reference is made in the newspaper paragraph quoted above, was destroyed by fire in 1868; and the land upon which it stood now forms a part of the First parish burying-ground. The present house of worship, erected on the opposite side of the street, was dedicated March 4, 1869.

VII.

SECOND PARISH CHURCH.

In the Salem *Gazette*, the following advertisement was published, June 3, 1803: —

Mr Gardner's Address before the Massachusetts Charitable Fire Society; for sale

by CUSHING & APPLETON — also

Rev. Mr. Tomb's Fast Sermon, delivered in the second Church in Newbury — Text, "Thou shalt not revile the gods nor curse the ruler of thy people." —— ☞ The preacher in this sermon endeavours to show that this country is in danger of destruction from the spirit of reviling and invective against our rulers, which prevails.*

* Rev. Samuel Tomb was pastor of the Second church in Newbury from 1798 until 1805 (see *ante*, p. 361).

VIII.

SCHOOLS AND SCHOOLMASTERS.

The following items, taken from the records of the selectmen of Newbury, relating to the care and management of schools, give some details not printed in chapter vii., pp. 395–412, of this book: —

Nov.	30, 1723	paid Mr John Woodbridge for gramar skool	£45.0.0
Dec.	1729	paid Mr James Chandler for the school .	30.0.0
		paid Mr John Rogers for the school . . .	15.6.0
	1730	paid Mr. John Woodbridge	33.7.10
		Ambrose Berry is credited with the payment of	28.4.7
		"to Mr John Greenleaf ye 3d for school"	
		John Carr is credited with the payment of	34.5.4
		"to Mr Ezekiel Hale for ye school"	
	1731	Ambrose Berry is credited with the payment of	28.8.9
		"to Mr Stephen Sewall for the school which is the 3d parishs part of the money paid."	
	1732	paid Benjamin Davis for the use of his house for a schoole	1.10.0
	1733	"paid Mr Joshua Bayley for ye use of ye schools in ye second parish"	21.0.0
	1734	"paid Mr Nathaniel Morrill for keeping school"	20.0.0
	1735	paid Mr Moses Hale for keeping schoole .	20.0.0
	1736	paid Mr. John Noyes ditto	10.0.0
		Charles Chase, constable, is credited with the payment of	10.0.0
		and Isaac Knight, constable, is credited with the payment of the same amount "to Mr. John Noyes for keeping ye grammer schoole"	
	1737	William Brown, constable, is credited with the payment of	20.0.0
		"to Mr Benj Greenleaf for ye use of ye schoole"	

March 2, 1742–3 bills for repairing the school house were paid

Jan. 12, 1743–4 paid Mr Benja Toppan in full for keeping ye Town School £20.0.0

Feb. 15, 1743–4 paid Mr. Nathan Hale for keeping ye Town School in part 20.0.0

Feb. 1744–5 paid Mr. Enoch Bailey for keeping school 20.0.0

ditto ditto . . . 10.0.0

March 10, 1745–6 paid Mr. Joshua Moody for keeping ye Town School 40.0.0

paid Mr. Enoch Baley in full for keeping Town Skool for the year 1744 . . . 20.0.0

March 1746–7 paid Mr. Joshua Moody for keeping school 20.0.0

Feb. 1, 1749–50 paid Mr. Joshua Moody for keeping school 40.0.0

1751 paid Mr Moses Hale for keeping the town school 20.0.0

1753 paid Mr. Joseph Parsons for ye Towne School 11.13.4

paid Mr John Noyes ditto. 20.0.0

1754 paid Mr Joseph Parsons for keeping ye Town School

paid Abel Merrill ditto. 13.6.8

1756 paid Micajah Sawyers order for a quarters schooling 12.10.0

1757 ditto ditto . . . 12.10.0

Feb. 24, 1757–8 By cash paid for Mr. Cushing ye school master 5.15.2

IX.

WOODWELL'S SHIP-YARD.

1762–1853.

The ship-yard at the foot of Muzzey's lane, now Marlboro street, Newburyport, was probably first used for ship-building purposes in 1762. Early in the spring of that year Capt. Gideon Woodwell, who had served with credit in the expedition to Crown Point in 1756, bought a small lot of land in Newbury from the estate of Robert Mitchell, with a dwelling-house and barn thereon, between the road or way, now Water street, Newburyport, and the Merrimack river.* He built there, previous to the close of the year 1773, a large number of fishing and coasting vessels.†

During the Revolutionary war, the yard was unoccupied. From 1783 to 1790, Capt. Woodwell, in company with his son John Woodwell and Mr. Enoch Hale, under the firm name of Woodwell & Hale,‡ built ten vessels there. After the death of Capt. Woodwell, August 24, 1790, the yard was again unoccupied for several years.

John Woodwell, with his sons John, David, and Gideon,§ grandsons of Capt. Gideon Woodwell, re-established the business at the beginning of the nineteenth century. It was continued by the sons for thirty years after the death of their father in 1822. From the year 1800 to 1853, John Woodwell and sons built nearly one hundred vessels, varying in size from fifty to three hundred tons register.

* Essex Deeds, book cxiii., leaf 160.

† The statement printed on page 263 of the History of Newburyport by Mrs. E. Vale Smith, that Capt. Woodwell built fifty-two vessels, or more than five every year, from 1763 to 1773, is probably incorrect.

‡ John Woodwell, son of Capt. Gideon Woodwell, was born in 1752. He died February 12, 1822. Enoch Hale, son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Pettingell) Hale, was born December 10, 1757. He married Mary, daughter of Capt. Gideon Woodwell. He died November 10, 1825.

§ Gideon, son of John Woodwell, was born in Newbury December 15, 1790. He was a skilful and industrious mechanic. He drew the plans and made the models for most of the vessels built by the Woodwell brothers.

X.

MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS DURING THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS.

The names printed in the following lists were copied from manuscript papers formerly in the possession of Robert Adams, of Newbury, who died August 2, 1855. They were published in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, July, 1896.

The names [] Soldiers under y^e^ command of Capt Tho. Noyes.

Left Tristram Cofen
Ins Jacob taping
Sargt Browne
Sargt Jno Emery
Sargt Jno Webster
Sargt Joseph Littel

Joshuah Morce [Drummer]
Jno Stickney "
Benj Morce (?) "

Corprall Woodman
Benj Lowle
Daniell Merell
Jno Ba()t

Abraham Merell, Ju
* Abil Merell Sn
Abil Merell
Abial Long
Abill plisbury
Augustan Stedman
Andrew Godfrey
* Abraham Merell Jur
Abil Huse
Abiall Somarby
Andrew Stickny
Abraham Annis

Aquilah Ches
* Aquilah Annis
*() Miller
*()()opping
Benj poure
Benj Morce Snr
Benj Morce Jur
Benj Sanboune
Charls Annis
Cornelious Davis
Calv() richardson
Cyprian Whiple
* Ephrim davis
Elisha tredwell
Edmond Grenleaf
Daniell Ma[]way
Daniell Chase
Daniell Merell
Edward Woodman
Ephrim Davis
Edward poure
* Elisha tredwell
Edmong Grenlef
Edward Woodman Jur
Gedeon Lowle
* Mr Hugh March
Hannaniah Ordway

* These names were probably intended to be erased.

* Henry Bradley	Jn° Davis
Ha() Adams	* Hercules Adams
Hugh March Jur	* Jn° Sawyer
Harcules Woodman	Jn° Worth
Hucker Osgood	James Ordway Snr
Mr Jn° Sewall	James [] Jur
Jn° Mitchell	Jn° ord[]

Upon the back of the original is the following indorsement: —

[] training Day ye 26 day of F [] 1688
Abraham []
Corpl Lowle, Sen.
Corpl Woodman, Sen.
Se [] men att Jno Brownes hous †

[] men that went to Amsbry

Sar. Aquila Chase	John devis	daniel osilow
peter Cofen	James ordway	Benjamin Chese
timothy Mirrick	thomas wales	Nathan Merril
Nathaniel Noyes	John Aiers	Benjamin long
Aberham tappen	John Worth	Zacharia devis
Samuel bartlit	bat Molten †	

A list of the names of the men put under the comand of Ser. James Jackman ye 15th of July 1707 Thomas Noyes L. Coll.

Ser James Jackman	Nathaniell Rolfe	John Haskins
William Salmon	Hilkiah Boynton	John Smith
Richard Pettingale	Moses Cocker	Joseph Ilesley Jun
Jonathon Moores	Anthony Somerby	Sanuel Hasletine
Cutting Pettingale	John Noyes 3d	John Sewall
Jonathan Ilesley	John Kingsbury	Abraham Toppan
Tho Pettingale	Amos Pilsbury	James Wit []‡

* These names were probably intended to be erased.
† New England Historical and Genealogical Register, vol. I., pp. 338, 339.
‡ Ibid., p. 341.

XI.

REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

John Brown and Samuel Pilsbury were boatmen in the barge that conveyed Benedict Arnold to the sloop-of-war "Vulture" after the discovery of the plot to deliver West Point to the English forces.*

Mrs. Mercy Warren, in her History of the American Revolution, published in 1805, describes the incident as follows: —

> Arnold took a barge and under a flag he passed Verplank's Point and soon found himself safe beneath the guns of the Vulture, sloop of war. Before he took leave of the bargemen he made them very generous offers if they would act as dishonorably as he had done; he promised them higher and better wages if they would desert their country and enlist in the service of Britain, but they spurned the offer and were permitted to return.†

* *Ante*, pp. 614–616.

† History of the American Revolution (Warren), vol. ii., p. 269.

XII.

PHYSICIANS IN NEWBURY FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT OF THE TOWN IN 1635 TO THE INCORPORATION OF NEWBURYPORT IN 1764.

Dr. John Clarke probably came to Newbury in 1637. He was granted a farm of four hundred acres at the mouth of Cart creek January 23, 1637–8.* At a town meeting held September 28, 1638, "It was granted that Mr Clarke in respect of his calling should be freed and exempted from all public rates either for the country or the towne so long as he shall remayne with us and exercise his calling among us." *

He was appointed June 6, 1639, associate magistrate of the county court at Ipswich,† and elected deputy from Newbury to the General Court held September 4, 1639. He served in the place of Edward Rawson at the session held September 27, 1642, and was again chosen to represent Newbury in the General Court beginning May 10, 1643.

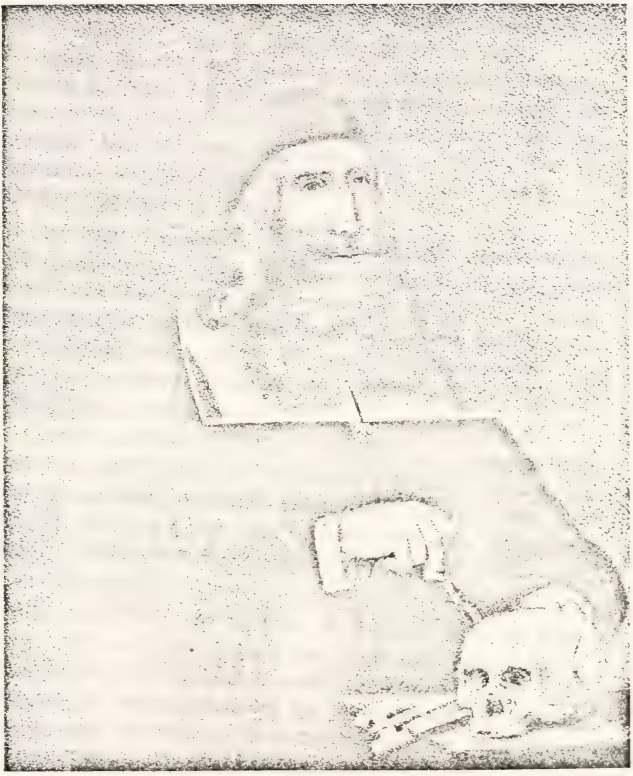
Dr. Clarke probably removed to Ipswich in 1647, and soon after bought a dwelling-house and land in Boston. He sold his farm in Newbury to Matthew Chaffey, of Boston, who conveyed it the same day to Richard Thorlay, of Newbury.‡ Dr. Clarke died in Boston in the month of November, 1664.

* *Ante*, p. 67.

† Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 261.

‡ *Ante*, p. 67. Dr. Clarke, soon after his removal to Boston, invented a stove "for the saving of firewood & warming of howses" His right to the control of the new invention was provided for by the following orders of the General Court: "[October 19, 1652] Itt is orderd by this Courte, that no person shall for the space of three years next ensuing, make vse of Mr John Clarks invention for saving of fire wood and warming of roomes with little cost and charges, by which meanes great benefitt is like to be to the countrie, especially to theise populous places; and if any family or other person doe, by the consent and direction of the sajd Mr John Clarke, or wthout, improove or vse the sajd experiment, they shall pay tenn shillings to the sajd Mr Clarke, for which the sajd Mr. Clarke may sue or jmplead any person before any commissioner for the same, as the cawse shall require." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 104.)

"[May 14, 1656] This Court having made an order in the eighth month, 1652, wherein Mr John Clarke was to haue tenn shillings of euery family that should make vse of his invention for saving of firewood & warming of howses, which sajd order was only for the terme of three yeares, wch is now expired vppon a moc̃on made to this Court in his behalfe, this Court judgeth it meete to confirme the sajd order for the terme of his life." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 260.)



DR. JOHN CLARKE.

Dr. William Snelling was the youngest son of Thomas Snelling of Chaddlewood, Devonshire, England. He married, July 5, 1648, Margaret (or, Margery), daughter of Giles Stagge, of Southwark.* His son William was born in Newbury, June 24, 1649. His daughter Anne was born in Newbury, March 5, 1651–2. She probably died young.

Doctor Snelling was fined by the county court at Salem, March 30, 1652, for indiscreet words spoken in jest.† He removed to Boston two years later, and there, probably, another daughter, Ann, was born, May 7, 1654. He purchased a dwelling-house, with a garden and orchard, in Boston, October 13, 1654.

Dr. Peter Toppan was a son of Abraham and Susanna (Goodale) Toppan. He was born in England in 1634, and came with his parents to Newbury in 1637. He married Jane, daughter of Mr. Christopher Batt, April 3, 1661, and died November 10, 1707. His son, Rev. Christopher Toppan, was ordained pastor of the first church in Newbury, September 9, 1696.‡

Dr. Henry Greenland was a physician in Newbury from 1662 to 1666. He sold his house and land, January 12, 1665–6, on the southwest corner of Ordway's lane, now Market street, and the way by the river, now Merrimack street, Newburyport, and probably removed to Portsmouth, N.H., soon after.§

Dr. John Dole was the son of Richard Dole, of Newbury. He was born August 10, 1648, and married Mary, daughter of Capt. William Gerrish, October 23, 1676. He occupied a dwelling-house on the westerly side of Market square, near the corner of Greenleaf's lane, now State street, Newburyport.‖ He died in 1694.¶

*The record is much worn and nearly ineligible. So far as it can be deciphered, it reads as follows: —

"July 5 Anno 1648 was maryed at D . . . William ye fourth son of Thom . . . Snelling esquire & Johan his wife dwell . . . at Chaddlewood in Plympton Mary (?) in . . . and Margerety the eldest daughter of Gyles Stagge, gent & Anne his wife dwelling . . . Southwark in Barnaby street at . . . sign of St . . . Christopher."

† *Ante*, p. 122. ‡ *Ante*, p. 333. § *Ante*, pp. 140–144. ‖ Ould Newbury," pp. 121, 144.

¶ "January 10, 1694–5 Dr Doel of Newbury died a little while ago, one of my schoolfellows, as was also Brother Gerrish: heard not certainly of said Doel's death till Mr. Emery told it me Jan. 15 in the street." (Samuel Sewall's Diary, vol. i., p. 397.)

Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet was born in Ipswich, January 6, 1669–70. He married Sarah, daughter of Joshua Pierce, of Newbury.* Dorothy, daughter of Humphrey and Sarah Bradstreet, was born December 19, 1692. Doctor Bradstreet died in Newbury May 11, 1717. His widow married Capt. Edward Sargent June 9, 1719.

Dr. Joshua Bailey was born in 1685, probably in Killingworth, Conn. He came to Newbury in 1707, but remained only a few years, removing to Haverhill, where he practised medicine and surgery during the rest of his life. He died February 7, 1752.†

Dr. Matthew Adams, son of Abraham and Mary (Pettingell) Adams, was born in Newbury, May 25, 1686. He married Sarah Knight, April 4, 1707. He practised medicine from 1726 until his death, Nov. 24, 1755.‡

Dr. Joseph Hills, son of Joseph and Priscilla (Chase) Hills, was born in Newbury, October 15, 1707. He married Hannah Brett, September 10, 1730. He was a physician in Newbury until his death, September 22, 1745.

Dr. Nathan Hale, son of Thomas Hale, was born in Newbury, June 2, 1691. He married Elizabeth Kent, August 27, 1713. He lived in that part of Newbury which was incorporated as a separate town, by the name of Newburyport, in 1764. He died May 9, 1767.

Dr. Enoch Sawyer, son of Stephen Sawyer, was born in Newbury, June 22, 1694. He married Sarah, daughter of Rev. Jonathan Pierpont, of Reading, previous to 1722. He was a physician in Newbury for more than fifty years. He died November 15, 1771.

Dr. Eleazer Peirce, son of Benjamin and Lydia Peirce, was born May 19, 1711. He married Eunice, daughter of Rev. Christopher Toppan. He owned and occupied a dwelling-house on what is now Water street, near the foot of Marlborough street, Newburyport. He died August 31, 1764.

* "Ould Newbury," p. 124.
† The Essex Antiquarian, vol. v., p. 124. ‡ Ibid., vol. ii., p. 20.

Dr. John Sprague graduated at Harvard college in 1730, and came to Newbury a few years later. "Mary daughter of John Sprague & Ruth, his wife, was born March 30, 1738."* He married, for his second wife, Prudence Titcomb, May 19, 1754.* He lived in that part of Newbury which was set off and incorporated as a separate town in 1764.† His will, dated March 17, 1781, was proved April 26, 1784.

Dr. John Newman was admitted to the church in Hampton, N.H., December 7, 1740. He married May 21, 1741, Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Joshua Wingate. Three children were born to Dr. John and Elizabeth Newman in Hampton, namely: Elizabeth, born November 19, 1741; John, born July 23, 1743; Jane, born January 20, 1744–5. Doctor Newman probably removed to Newbury with his family in 1746. Two children were born after that date, in Newbury, namely: Wingate, February 10, 1746–7; and Payne (?), September 5, 1749.* He died in Newburyport, February 18, 1806.

Dr. Parker Clark, son of Thomas Clark, was born in Newbury, July 22, 1718. He was a physician in Andover, Mass., from 1741 to 1750, when he returned to Newbury. He subsequently removed to Ipswich, where he died September 19, 1798.

Dr. Jacob March, son of Samuel and Ann (Toppan) (Rolfe ?) March, was born January 20, 1722. He was a surgeon in the expedition to Cape Breton in 1745.‡ His intention of marriage to Ruth Bradshaw, of Charlestown, was published

* Town of Newbury Records.

† "Newburyport April y^e 1^st 1766. This Agreement made by & between Doctor John Sprague of Newburyport Physitian & Stephen Emerey of Newbury, Witnesseth that the said Doctor John Sprague Teach & Instruct Eliphalet Emery son of said Stephen By the best way & means he may or can, in the art, trad & Calling of Physic & Surgery The said Eliphalet to have the benefits of his Instruction so long as he see cause not exceeding four years for sed Doctor to be obliged and the said Stephen Emery in consideration of said Doctor Sprague's Instructing his son Eliphalet as aforesaid Do Engage & Bind himself to pay said Doctor John Sprague Thirty Three pounds, six shillings & eight pence. Thirteen pounds six shillings & eight pence to be paid in hand at the time of said Eliphalet first going to be instructed, & six pounds Thirteen shillings & four pence yearly afterwards untill the whole sum of 33-6-8 is fully paid.

"In witness whereof the Parties have Interchangeably set their hands the year and day above written. STEPHEN EMERY."

‡ *Ante*, p. 553.

April 25, 1747. "Samuel, son of Dr. Jacob and Ruth March was born Dec. 10, 1753." *

Doctor March subsequently enlisted as surgeon in one of the regiments under the command of Gen. John Winslow for the expulsion of the Acadians from Nova Scotia, and was killed in a skirmish with the Indians, September 2, 1755.†

Dr. Enoch Sawyer, son of Dr. Enoch and Sarah (Pierpont) Sawyer, was born in Newbury, April 19, 1723. He married Hannah Moody March 30, 1758. He died September 7, 1805.

Dr. Micajah Sawyer, son of Dr. Enoch Sawyer, was born in Newbury, July 15, 1737. He graduated at Harvard college in 1756, and commenced the practice of medicine in that part of Newbury which was set off and made a separate town in 1764. He died in Newburyport, September 29, 1815.

Dr. Charles Coffin, son of Col. Joseph Coffin, born August 17, 1741. He married July 1, 1773, Hephzibah, daughter of John Carnes, of Boston. He was a physician in Newbury and Newburyport. He died April 30, 1821.

Dr. Eliphalet Emery, son of Stephen Emery, was born in Newbury, July 16 (?), 1748. He was educated for a physician, and probably practised his profession for a year or two in Newbury. He died October 18, 1773, in the twenty-sixth year of his age.

Dr. Moses Sawyer, son of Moses and Hannah Sawyer, was born in Newbury, November 23, 1756. He married July 25, 1781, Hannah, daughter of Col. Moses Little. He died in Newbury, August 5, 1799. His son, Matthias Plant Sawyer, of Boston, gave $5,000 in 1857 to the public library of the city of Newburyport.

In addition to the physicians named above, the following persons, born in Newbury, removed to other towns, and commenced the practice of medicine there: —

Dr. Edmund Toppan, son of Rev. Christopher Toppan,

* Town of Newbury Records.

† New England Historical and Genealogical Register (1879), p. 392.

born December 7, 1701. He was a physician in Hampton, N.H., and died there, November 28, 1739.

Dr. Bezaleel Toppan, son of Rev. Christopher Toppan, born March 7, 1705. For more than thirty years a physician in Salem, where he died in 1762.

Dr. Nathaniel Coffin, son of John and Judith (Greenleaf) Coffin, born September 7, 1716. He married March 1, 1739, Patience, daughter of John Hale, and removed to Falmouth, now Portland, Me., where he died, January 12, 1766.

Dr. Anthony Emery, son of John and Hannah (Morse) Emery, was born in Newbury, September 5, 1713. He graduated at Harvard college in 1736, and was for nearly two years physician at Chelmsford, Mass. He married Abigail Leavitt, May 10, 1738, and removed to Hampton, N.H. He was surgeon in the Massachusetts train of artillery at Louisbourg in 1744, and also in the Crown Point expedition of 1755. He died at Hampton, August 19, 1781.

Dr. Eliphalet Hale, son of Dr. Nathan Hale, was born in Newbury, July 29, 1714. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Dr. George and Joanna (Pepperell) Jackson, of Kittery, Me. He was a physician in Falmouth, now Portland, Me., and afterwards in Exeter, N.H. He died in Exeter previous to July 23, 1766.

Dr. William Hale, son of Rev. Moses Hale, pastor of the church in Byfield parish, was born in Newbury in 1727. He married Martha Johnson, November 6, 1753, and removed to Rowley, Mass., soon after that date. He died in Rowley, February 26, 1784.

Dr. Ebenezer Noyes, son of Daniel and Abigail (Toppan) Noyes, was born January 6, 1738–9. His intention of marriage to Hannah Chase, of Newbury, was published November 3, 1764. He subsequently removed to Dover, N.H., where he died, August 11, 1767.

Dr. Barnard Tucker, "son of Rev. John Tucker, D.D. & Sarah his wife," was born April 2, 1760. He graduated at Harvard College in 1779. He was for many years a physi-

cian in Wenham, Mass, He died in Newburyport, January 24, 1832.

Dr. Charles Coffin, son of Joshua Coffin, born in Newbury, September 4, 1765, married Dorcas Parker, September 29, 1801. He was a teacher and physician in Portsmouth, N. H., and afterwards at Beaufort, S.C., where he died in September, 1820.

XIII.

"PIERCE HOUSE AT THE ŪPER END OF CHANDLER'S LANE."

Daniel Pierce, sr., came to Newbury in 1638. He owned the Spencer farm of three hundred acres when he died, November 27, 1677, and also a malt-house near the Merrimack river, at the northerly end of Chandler's lane, now Federal street, Newburyport. The inventory of his estate, filed March 26, 1678, mentions the following items of interest: —

Wearing apparrell, books and Armes £40. . . . About forty head of neat cattle, oxen and cowes £94 . . . one hundred and sixty sheep young and old £40. . . eighteen small swine £5 10s . . . An Anvil, vice, shop tools, with iron potts kettles brass and pewter, two old furnaces, fire shovel, tongs &c £20. . . . Negroes £60. . . . A malt house with about twenty acres of upland & three and thirty acres of meadow & furniture to the malt house £255.*

Two or three years after the death of Daniel Pierce, sr., his son Daniel Pierce, jr., to whom he gave "all his houseing, lands, goods & chattells," erected a dwelling-house on land near the malt-house. Among the miscellaneous items recorded by Samuel Sewall in his Commonplace Book is the following statement: —

Satterday May 7, 1681 there was a Hurrican at Newbury which blew down Richard Bartletts Barn, uncover'd Capt Pierce's new house at the ūper end of Chandler's Lane, blew down the Chimneys.†

Capt. Daniel Pierce, jr., was appointed colonel of the second Essex county regiment soon after the organization of the provincial government under the new charter in 1692.

[March 14, 1698–9] Granted Col. Daniel Pierce land between Merrimack River & the highway by said River against his malt house to

* Essex Deeds (Ipswich Series), book iv, p. 158.

† Massachusetts Historical Society's Collections, Fifth Series, vol. vi., p. 17* (preceding the diary).

sett a dwelling house on: of sixty foote in breadth & the fflats against it to low water mark.*

[March 21, 1703–4] Granted Coll Daniel Pearce Esq. liberty to sett up a smiths shop uppon the Bank between his house & the house of Dr. Humphrey Bradstreet.†

Col. Daniel Pierce died April 22, 1704. In his will, dated August 12, 1701, and proved May 8, 1704, he gave to his son Joshua Pierce "my now dwelling house with the malt house and outhousings"; to his son Thomas Pierce, "that dwelling house which I built for him Situate and being upon that my land that the malt house do stand upon"; and to his grandson John Wainwright, "my dwelling house standing on the north corner of that land my malt house stands on." ‡

* Town of Newbury Records.

† Town of Newbury Records. Doctor Bradstreet married Sarah, daughter of Joshua Pierce. The location of his house is shown on the map, p. 119, "Ould Newbury."

‡ "Ould Newbury," pp. 35 and 124.

XIV.

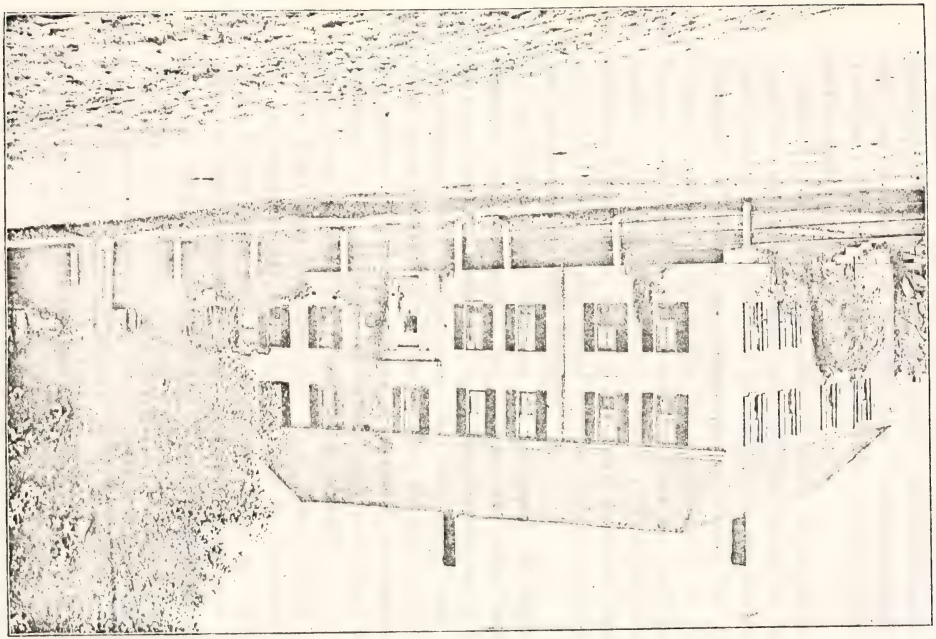
THE SEWALL HOUSE, NEAR "TRAYNEING GREEN."

Mr. Henry Sewall, jr., after his return to Newbury from England, purchased, November 7, 1660, a dwelling-house with about four acres of land, on the northerly corner of Noyes' lane, now Parker street, and the country road, now High street.* He subsequently built, on a part of the land, a new house, which he gave by his will, dated August 17, 1678, to his wife, Jane (Dummer) Sewall, and, after her decease, to his son, Samuel Sewall.†

Coffin, in his history of Newbury, page 398, says that Henry Sewall, jr., "resided in Parker street (formerly South street) on the North side, a few rods N. W. from Mr. Silas Noyes's house." The house owned and occupied by Silas Noyes was built by Rev. James Noyes in 1646, probably, and is still standing. There is some doubt, however, in regard to the location of the house built previous to 1678 by Henry Sewall, jr. Recent investigation indicates that it was erected at or near the corner of Parker and High streets, about twenty rods in a southeasterly direction from the Noyes house. Although the fact has not been established beyond a reasonable doubt, it is probable that the words "northwesterly end" used in describing the Sewall house on page 249 of "Ould Newbury" are incorrect, and should read "southeasterly end." A photographic view of the house now standing near the corner of the above-named streets is reproduced in the half-tone print on the next page.

March 7, 1683–4, Henry Sewall conveyed to his son Stephen a lot of land "bounded on y^e^ north with y^e^ land of Tristram Coffin, on y^e^ west with y^e^ land of Richard Brown,

* Ipswich Deeds, book ii., p. 16 (28); "Ould Newbury," p. 249.
† "Ould Newbury," p. 252.



on y^e^ south with y^e^ land of Henry Sewall, on y^e^ east with y^e^ highwaye." * The next day Stephen Sewall, of Salem, conveyed to Richard Brown, of Newbury, the above-described land "on the way to the meeting house," between the land of Tristram Coffin on the north and the land of Henry Sewall on the south.†

Samuel Sewall, of Boston, after the death of his mother, Jane (Dummer) Sewall, sold, June 22, 1704, about one and one-quarter acres of upland to Richard Brown, of Newbury, "bounded & abutted as follows viz: eastwardly By the highway Leading to y^e^ meeting house, southwardly by Mr. Noyes Land, westerly and northerly by Land now In y^e^ possession and Right of Richard Browne together with the Dwelling house, Barn, orchard and fence or fences Being upon or Belonging to said upland together with all priviledges and appurtenances y^r^ unto Belonging."‡

This land and the adjoining lot, purchased of Stephen Sewall in 1684, remained in the possession of Richard Brown for many years. November 2, 1770, John Brown, one of his descendants, sold the property to John Stickney.§ June 1, 1784, Stephen Atwood, of Provincetown, by levy on execution against John Stickney, became owner of the land and buildings.‖ He conveyed the house, barn, and about ten acres of land to Paul Lunt, November 26, 1788.¶

Paul Lunt died November 26, 1824, having devised all his real estate to his wife Hannah. She died previous to 1851; and May 30, 1853, her daughters, Dorcas and Edna, conveyed their interest in about an acre of land, with the buildings thereon, on the corner of Parker and High streets, to Daniel A. Lunt.**

* Essex Deeds, book vi., leaf 111 (689). This lot of land was probably devised by the will of Henry Sewall to his son Stephen (see "Ould Newbury," p. 252), but the above-described deed was signed six years before the will was probated.

† Essex Deeds, book viii., leaf 48 (116). ‡ Ibid., book xv., leaf 266.

§ Ibid., book cxxvii., leaf 245. ‖ Ibid., book cxlii., leaf 228.

¶ Ibid., book cxlix., leaf 143. ** Ibid., book dxxiii., leaf 23.

XIV.

DEPUTIES TO THE GENERAL COURT.

March 4, 1634–5, the General Court, having assembled at Newe Towne (Cambridge), passed the following vote: —

Vpon a certificatt of 5 commissioners chosen by the Court to consider of the elēction of the deputyes of Ipswich, it did appeare to the Court that two of them viz: Mr Easton & Henry Shorte, were vnduly chosen, whoe were forthwith dismissed: soe Mr John Spencer onely stands legally elected in the opinion of the Court." *

Mr. Spencer also served as deputy from Ipswich for the session beginning May 6, 1635. During the following summer he removed to Newbury, and was granted a house lot of four acres on the northerly side of Quascacunquen river, "alsoe a farme lotte of four hundred acres of upland & meadow" near the Merrimack river. He represented the inhabitants of Newbury in the General Court that met at Newe Towne (Cambridge) September 2, 1635, and March 3, 1635–6, and also served at the session held in Boston May 25, 1636.

No town having less than ten freemen could send a deputy to the General Court. A town with more than ten and less than twenty freemen was entitled to one deputy; with twenty to forty freemen, two deputies; over forty freemen, "to three deputies, if they will, but not above." †

The names of the deputies or representatives to the General Court from Newbury, from the first settlement of the town in 1635 to the beginning of the twentieth century, are as follows: —

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
Sept. 2, 1635	Mr. John Spencer
March 3, 1635–6	Mr. John Spencer
May 25, 1636	Mr. John Spencer
Sept. 8, 1636 . . .	Mr. John Spencer and Mr. [Edward] Woodman

* Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 135. † Ibid., p. 178.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
Dec. 7, 1636	Mr. John Spencer
April 18, 1637	Mr Edwd Woodman and Mr John Woodbridge
May 17, 1637	Edward Woodman and John Woodbridge
Sept. 26, 1637	Edwd Woodman and John Woodbridge
Nov. 2, 1637	Leift Woodman and Mr John Woodbridge
March 12, 1637–8	Mr. John Woodbridge
May 2, 1638	Mr. John Woodbridge and Mr Edwd Rawson
Sept. 6, 1638	Edwd Rawson
March 13, 1638–9 *	Edward Rawson and Edward Woodman
May 22, 1639	Edward Rawson and Edward Woodman
Sept. 4, 1639	Mr Edwd Rawson and Mr John Clarke
May 13, 1640	Mr John Woodbridge
Oct. 7, 1640	Mr Richrd Dumer and Mr John Woodbridge
June 2, 1641	Mr John Woodbridge
Oct. 7, 1641	Mr. John Woodbridge
May 18, 1642 †	John Saunders and Edward Rawson
Sept. 8, 1642	Edward Rawson
May 10, 1643	John Clarke and Edward Woodman
March 7, 1643–4	John Lowell and Hen: Short
May 29, 1644	Edward Rawson
May 14, 1645 ‡	Mr [Richard?] Dumer and Mr Edward Rawson
May 6, 1646 §	Mr. Edwd Rawson
May 26, 1647	Mr Dumer and Mrs Rawson
May 10, 1648 ‖	Edwd Rawson
May 2, 1649	Edward Rawson
May 22, 1650	Left Wm Gerrish
May 7, 1651	Capt William Gerrish
May 27, 1652	Capt Wm Gerrish
May 18, 1653 ¶	Capt Wm Gerrish

* "March 13, 1638–9 It was ordered that no towns should send more than two deputies to the Generall Court." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. i., p. 250.)

† "May 20, 1642 The Court left it to the liberty of the townes to send but a deputy a peace, if they please, to the next session of this court." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 3.)

‡ "Mr Rich: Dumer" was deputy from Salisbury, May 29, 1644, and May 6, 1646.

§ "April 8, 1646 Edward Rawson was chosen & appointed to serve at ye next generall Courte as Deputy for ye Towne of Newbery & there to stay & consumat ye affairs of ye country." (Town of Newbury Records.)

‖ In 1647, the General Court passed an act reducing the number of deputies to one from each town; but, in order to ascertain the will of the people, this act was suspended until the next session of the court. (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., pp. 209, 217.) March, 1647–8, the court ordered "That most of the freemen desiring their formr librty of sending one or two deputies to ye Genrall Corts from time to time, the former wonted liberty is continued & ye former act in suspence is repealed." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. ii., p. 231.)

"April 12, 1648, Mr Edward Rawson was chosen & appointed to serve Deputy at the nexte courte of election for the towne & to stay & consumate the affayres of the Country according to order." (Town of Newbury Records.)

¶ August 30, 1653, the General Court ordered that deputies should be paid £15, £20, or £30 per annum, according to the length of the session. Towns having less than thirty freemen were

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 3, 1654	Mr. John Saunders
May 23, 1655	William Titcombe
May 14, 1656	Wm Titcombe
May 6, 1657	Lieut John Pike
May 19, 1658	Lieut John Pike
May 11, 1659	Mr Edward Woodman
May 30, 1660	Mr Edw Woodman
Dec. 19, 1660	Mr Nicho: Noyes
May 22, 1661	Mr Henry Seawall
May 7, 1662	Mr Henry Seawall
May 27, 1663	Mr Henry Seawall
May 18, 1664	Mr Edw Woodman
Aug. 3, 1664	(No deputy reported)
May 3, 1665 *	(No deputy reported)

not compelled to send deputies to the General Court, but any town sending a deputy was required to raise by taxation the sum necessary to pay his expenses. (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i.)

"October 17, 1654. No man, although a ffreeman shalbe accepted as a deputie of the Genll Court, that is unsound in judgment concerninge the mayne poynts of the Xstian religion as they have bin held forth & acknowledged by the generalitie of the P'testant orthodox writers, or that is scandalous in his conversation or that is unfaythfull to this government." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 357.)

October 18, 1654, the General Court ordered the constables of every town in the colony to report the name or hames of the deputies chosen, and their term of service, whether for one session or for the whole year. All persons so chosen, who were absent from the General Court, when it was in session, without just cause, were subject to a fine of twenty shillings a day for every such default. (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part i., p. 203.)

In order to promote and facilitate the consideration of important public questions, the General Court declared, November 2, 1654,

"Whereas it is judged most comly, convenient, & conduceable to the dispatch of publicke service, that the Deputyes of ye Genll Court should cyett together, especially at dynner, it is therefore ordered, that the Deputyes of the Genll Court, the next ensuing yeare, viz 1655 shall all be pvided for at the Shipp Taverne, at Boston, in respect of dynner, & yt they shall all accordingly dyne together & that Lieut Phillips, the keeper of the sd taverne, shalbe payd for ye same by the Treasurer for the tyme being, by discounting the same in the custome of wyne payable by the sd Lieut Phillips & that the Treasurer shalbe repayd by the seūall townes &c &c." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 352.)

November 12, 1654, an agreement was made with Lieut. Phillips to furnish the members of the next General Court with breakfast, dinner, and supper, with wine and beer between meals, with fire and beds, for three shillings per day,—"A cup of wine to each man at dinner, and at supper, and no more,"—with the further proviso that beer should be furnished between meals to those members only who "partake of breakfast, dinner and supper at the taverne and pay for the same." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iii., p. 353.)

* March 6, 1664–5, Mr. Edward Woodman was chosen deputy to the General Court for the first session. (Town of Newbury Records.)

"May 3, 1665 There appearing no deputy at this Court from the toune of Newbury, wch this Court cannot but take notice of & declare against & therefore doe here by impose the fine of tenn pounds vpon the freemen of the said toune, to be payd to the Treasurer of the Country, for such there neglect." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 149.)

At this session of the General Court, Col. Richard Nicolls, Sir Robert Carr, George Cartwright, esq., and Samuel Maverick, esq., commissioners appointed by the king, urged the removal of certain restrictions imposed upon Churchmen and Quakers; and questions of importance relating to the territorial limits of the colony of Massachusetts Bay were discussed.

"July 28, 1665 Mr. Joseph Hill was chosen to serve the towne as Deputy for this next session of ye general Court." (Town of Newbury Records.)

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 23, 1666	Mr Henry Seawall
Sept. 11, 1666	Mr Henry Seawall
May 15, 1667 *	Mr Joseph Hills
April 29, 1668	Mr Henry Seawall
May 19, 1669	Mr Joseph Hills
May 11, 1670 †	Mr Edw Woodman and Mr Henry Sewall
May 31, 1671 ‡	Mr Jno Richards and Mr Tho. Clark
May 15, 1672	Mr Jno Richards and Lieut Tho. Clarke
May 7, 1673	Mr. Jno Richards
Sept. 16, 1673	Mr Jno Richards and Mr. Rich: Dole
Dec. 10, 1673 §	Capt William Gerrish
May 27, 1674 ‖	Left Archelaus Woodman
Oct. 7, 1674	Left Archelaus Woodman
May 12, 1675	Left Archelaus Woodman
July 9, 1675 ¶	Left Archelaus Woodman

"October 11, 1665 The toune of Newbery being fined for not sending a deputy ye last Court of Election, the summe of ten pounds, this Court doeth order that the Secretary give warrant to the marshall speedily to levy the same, & to make returne thereof to the country Treasurer." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 284.)

"October 20, 1665 Mr Joseph Hill chosen to serve the rest of this Court & until the next Court of Elections." (Town of Newbury Records.) At the same meeting "Capt Gerrish, Mr Woodman, Mr Hills, Mr Sewall & Lieft Pike were chosen to consult & draw up a petition to excuse the town about the neglect of a Deputy at Courte, and three of the selectmen to signe it, they or the major part of them by the desire & appointm't in behalfe of the town." (Town of Newbury Records.)

"May 18, 1666 Capt Gerrish & Mr Hills was chosen to go to the Generall Court to get of the ten pound fine." (Town of Newbury Records.)

October 16, 1666, the fine was remitted by the General Court. (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 323.)

*"[May 15, 1667] It being of great concernment to the publick weale of this jurisdiction that all such as are members of the Generall Court doe constantly attend their respective trusts in the said Court it is ordered by this Court and the authority thereof, that henceforth it shall not be lawfull for any member of the Generall Court to absent himself from the Court without licence of both houses first had & obteyned, on penalty of twenty shillings a day, and for the first fower dayes of the Court of Election, the penalty to be as in the printed law: and that there may be a due observance hereof, the secretary & clarke of the deputies shall, in their respective places, enter in their day books all defaults made by any of the members of either house & before the rising of the Court present the same to the whole Court." (Massachusetts Colony Records, vol. iv., part ii., p. 333.)

† Mr. [Joseph] Hills was chosen deputy, March 7, 1669–70. He was probably unable to serve. September 19, 1670, Mr. Henry Sewall was chosen deputy for the rest of the year. (Town of Newbury Records.)

‡ Mr. [Edward] Woodman and William Titcomb were elected deputies, March 6, 1670–1. They probably declined to serve: and June 6, 1671, Mr. John Richards and Lieut. Thomas Clark, of Boston, were chosen deputies for the remainder of the year. (Town of Newbury Records.)

§ At a meeting of the freemen held in Newbury, December 2, 1673, Capt. William Gerrish was chosen deputy. "It was also voted that if the Honrd Generll Courte do judge that Mr John Richards according to his former choice shall legally sit in this session of the Generll court, the Towne desires he might." (Town of Newbury Records.)

‖ March 2, 1673–4, at a general meeting of the inhabitants of Newbury it was voted to elect only one deputy this year, and Lieut. [Archelaus] Woodman was chosen.

¶ At a general meeting of the freemen of Newbury held July 7, 1675, Capt. [William?] Gerrish was chosen to serve as deputy with Archelaus Woodman.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 3, 1676	Mr. Saml Plumer
Aug. 9, 1676	Mr Samuel Plumer and Ensi: Stephen Greenleafe
May 24, 1677	Mr Caleb Moody
May 9, 1678	Mr Caleb Moody
Oct. 2, 1678 *	(No deputy reported)
May 28, 1678	Mr Nicholas Noyse
Oct. 15, 1679 †	(No deputy reported)
Feb. 4, 1679–80	Mr Richd Bartlet
May 19, 1680	Mr Nicholas Noyse
Jan. 4, 1680–81	Mr Nicholas Noyse and Mr Richard Bartlet
May 11, 1681	Mr Richard Bartlett
May 24, 1682	Capt Dani: Pearse
May 16, 1683	Capt Daniel Pearce
Nov. 7, 1683	Capt Dani: Pearse
May 7, 1684 ‡	Mr Richard Bartlet

* Special session of the General Court, at which the oath of allegiance to King Charles II. was submitted and signed by the deputies. The names of these deputies are not given in the Massachusetts Colony Records; but Nicholas Noyes was chosen by the town of Newbury, September 19, 1678, "to serve at the next session of the Court until it be ended."

† The names of the deputies at this session of the General Court are not given in the Massachusetts Colony Records; but Richard Bartlet, sr., was chosen by the freemen of Newbury, September 19, 1679, to attend the court "until it be ended."

‡ A decree was entered, June 21, 1684, in the High Court of Chancery in England, annulling the charter of the colony. This decree was confirmed October 23, 1684. (Palfrey's History of New England, vol. iii., p. 394.) In the short time that elapsed between the abrogation of the charter and the death of King Charles II., no change was made in the government of the colony. When James II. became king of England, he issued a proclamation, February 6, 1684–5, directing all persons in authority in the colonies to continue in the discharge of their duties until further orders.

The General Court of Massachusetts assembled May 27, 1685, and prepared an address to the king, asking for justice and leniency. Disheartened and despondent, the inhabitants of many towns in the colony declined to elect deputies; but Newbury sent Richard Bartlett, with instructions to remain until the session was ended.

Official notice of the abrogation of the charter and the organization of a provisional government, consisting of a president, deputy president, and sixteen councillors, to manage and direct public affairs in Maine, New Hampshire, and Massachusetts, was communicated to the General Court, May 14, 1686.

Joseph Dudley was appointed president, Edward Randolph, Robert Mason, and others were members of the council; but no mention was made of a representative assembly or House of Deputies.

Protesting against these arbitrary proceedings, the General Court considered it advisable to surrender its political rights and privileges without a contest, and quietly submit to the organization of a new government. May 20, 1686, a committee was appointed by the deputies and magistrates to receive from Edward Rawson, secretary, the records and papers relating to the charter and to the negotiations with the king and Parliament that preceded and followed its repeal, and retain possession of them until otherwise ordered. This done, "the whole Court met at the Governor's house," and voted to adjourn "until the second Wednesday in the month of October next, at eight o'clock in ye morning." It did not reassemble.

December 20, 1686, Sir Edmund Andros, having been appointed "Governor in chief in and over the territory and dominion of New England," arrived in Boston and assumed control of public affairs. His administration lasted two years and four months. During that time the laws enacted by the governor, with the consent of his council, were sent to England to be approved by the king.

No sessions of the General Court were held until after the revolution which resulted in the

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 27, 1685	Richd Bartlett
May 13, 1686	Mr Richd Bartlett and Leftt Stephen Greenleafe
June 8, 1692	Captt Daniel Pierce and Captt Thomas Noyes
May 31, 1693	Captt Thomas Noyes
Nov. 8, 1693	Captt Thomas Noyes
May 30, 1694	Captt Thomas Noyes * and Captt Stephen Greenlef †
May 29, 1695	Lieutt Tristram Coffin
May 27, 1696	Captt Thomas Noyes
May 26, 1697	Major Daniel Davison
May 25, 1698	Major Daniel Davison and Major Thomas Noyes
May 31, 1699	Major Thomas Noyes
May 29, 1700	Lieutt Tristram Coffin
May 28, 1701	Major Daniel Davison and Lieutt Tristram Coffin
May 27, 1702 ‡	Lieutt Tristram Coffin
March 10, 1702–3	Captt Stephen Greenlef
May 26, 1703 §	Captt Stephen Greenleaf
May 31, 1704	Deacon Cutting Noyes
May 30, 1705	Captt Henry Somerby
May 29, 1706	Captt Henry Somerby
May 28, 1707	Col. Thomas Noyes
May 26, 1708	Captt Stephen Greenleaf
May 25, 1709 ‖	Deacon Cutting Noyes
May 31, 1710	Deacon Cutting Noyes
May 30, 1711	Deacon Cutting Noyes
May 28, 1712	Deacon Cutting Noyes
May 27, 1713 ¶	Captt Thomas Hale
May 26, 1714	Captt Thomas Hale (First Session)
Oct. 20, 1714	Col Henry Somerby (Second Session)
May 25, 1715	Deacon William Moody

overthrow of Governor Andros, April 20, 1689. A provisional government was then organized, and Simon Bradstreet was elected governor, May 24, 1689.

On the twenty-seventh day of September following, the town of Newbury elected "Lieut Greenleaf" representative "to the next session of the convention of ye Governor, Council & Representatives." May 19, 1690, "Lieut Stephen Greenleaf" was chosen deputy, to serve at the first session of the General Court; and March 10, 1690–1, Mr. Joseph Pike was chosen deputy "for ye year ensuing."

A new charter was granted by the king, October 7, 1691; and Sir William Phips was appointed, May 14, 1692, "Governor in chief of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England." The first session of the General Court under the new charter was held June 8, 1692.

* For the whole year. † For the first session.

‡ Major Thomas Noyes was chosen representative, but declined to serve; and Lieut. Tristram Coffin was chosen in his place.

§ Capt. Greenleaf was chosen representative, May 5, 1703. On that day the town of Newbury "voted yt Captt Greenleaf shall have twelve pence pr day more than ye three shillings p'r day that ye Law allows him for so many days as he shall be in sd service."

‖ May 9, 1709, the town of Newbury "voted that he should have 4s per diem for his services."

¶ May 13, 1713, the town voted to pay Capt. Hale four shillings a day for his services, "one shilling more than ye Law alloweth."

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 30, 1716	Col Henry Somerby and Deacon William Moody
May 29, 1717	Col Henry Somerby and Major James Noyes
May 28, 1718	Col Henry Somerby and Capt Richard Kent
May 27, 1719	Capt Richard Kent and Nathaniel Coffin
May 25, 1720 *	Col Henry Somerby and Nathaniel Coffin
July 13, 1720	Col Henry Somerby and Capt Thomas Hale
May 31, 1721	Nathaniel Coffin
Aug. 23, 1721	Deacon William Moody
May 30, 1722	Deacon William Moody
May 29, 1723	Capt Henry Rolfe and Mr Joseph Gerrish
May 27, 1724	Richard Kent, Esq.
May 26, 1725	Capt Henry Rolfe
May 25, 1726	Lieut Col Richard Kent and Major Joseph Gerrish
May 31, 1727	Capt Henry Rolfe
Nov. 22, 1727	Capt Henry Rolfe
May 29, 1728	Major Joseph Gerrish
May 28, 1729	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 27, 1730	Joseph Gerrish, Esq. and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
Feb. 10, 1730–1	Joseph Gerrish, Esq. and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 26, 1731 †	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 31, 1732	Lieut Col Joseph Gerrish
May 30, 1733	Mr Cutting Moody
May 29, 1734	Henry Rolfe Esq. and Col. Richard Kent
May 28, 1735	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 26, 1736	Charles Pierce, Esq. and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 25, 1737	Henry Rolfe, Esq. and Mr Cutting Moody
May 31, 1738	Charles Pierce, Esq. and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 30, 1739	Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 28, 1740	Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 26, 1741 ‡	Col Joseph Gerrish
July 8, 1741	Col Joseph Gerrish and Mr Benjamin Greenleaf
May 26, 1742	Col Joseph Gerrish
May 25, 1743	Col Joseph Gerrish and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 30, 1744	Col Joseph Gerrish and Henry Rolfe, Esq.
May 29, 1745	Col Joseph Gerrish
May 28, 1746	Col Joseph Gerrish
May 27, 1747	Col Joseph Gerrish
May 25, 1748	Col Moses Titcomb and Col Joseph Gerrish

* The General Court was dissolved after a session of five days. June 23, 1720, Nathaniel Coffin resigned his office as representative, and Capt. Thomas Hale was elected to fill the vacancy. The second session was held July 13, 1720.

† May 10, 1731, the town of Newbury voted to allow Joseph Gerrish, esq., twenty pounds, in addition to the sum received from the treasurer of the province, for his extraordinary expenses incurred as representatives to the General Court during Gov. Burnet's administration.

‡ The General Court met May twenty-sixth; but it was prorogued the next day by Gov. Belcher, who was dissatisfied with the election of councillors favorable to the Land Bank scheme.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 31, 1749	Mr Benjamin Greenleaf
May 30, 1750	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 29, 1751	Mr Richard Kent, junior
May 27, 1752 *	Capt Richard Kent
May 30, 1753	Major Joseph Gerrish and Mr Benjamin Greenleaf
May 29, 1754	Major Joseph Gerrish and Mr Benjamin Greenleaf
May 28, 1755	Mr Thomas Barnard
Oct. 22, 1755	Capt Stephen Emery
May 26, 1756	Major Joseph Gerrish
May 25, 1757	Major Joseph Gerrish and Mychael Dalton, Esq.
May 31, 1758	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq.
May 30, 1759	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq.
May 28, 1760	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq.
May 27, 1761	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq. and John Brown, Esq.
May 26, 1762	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq. and John Brown, Esq.
May 25, 1763	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq. and Capt Moses Little
Dec. 21, 1763 †	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq. and Capt Moses Little
May 30, 1764 *	Joseph Gerrish, Jun. Esq. and Capt Moses Little
May 29, 1765	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 28, 1766	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 27, 1767	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 25, 1768	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 31, 1769	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 30, 1770 ‡	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 29, 1771	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 27, 1772	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 26, 1773	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
May 25, 1774 §	Joseph Gerrish, Esq.
Oct. 5, 1774 ‖	Col Joseph Gerrish

* Held at Concord on account of the prevalence of small-pox in Boston.

† Second session of the General Court. February 4, 1764, Governor Bernard signed an act incorporating the town of Newburyport, passed January 24, 1764.

‡ For political reasons the members of the General Court were notified by Lieut. Gov. Hutchinson to meet in Harvard college at Cambridge. At the first session, the question of the legality of assembling the legislature at any other place than in the town house in Boston was discussed; and the representatives resolved that, so long as the assembly was constrained to remain at Cambridge, it was "by no means expedient to proceed to business." This resolution they reaffirmed at the second session, held two months later. At the third session, which assembled September twenty-sixth, the General Court proceeded, under protest, to enact a few important laws, and adjourned November 20, 1770.

§ The General Court met in Boston May twenty-fifth. Three days later General Gage, then governor of the province, adjourned the court to meet in Salem, June seventh. When the members reassembled in Salem, they passed some resolutions that were considered revolutionary, and June seventeenth the governor issued a proclamation dissolving the General Court. This proclamation was read by the secretary upon the stairs leading to the representatives' chamber, which was locked against him.

‖ A week before the time fixed for the meeting of the General Court at Salem, Gov. Gage, deeming it impracticable, owing to the tumult and excitement prevailing in Boston and elsewhere,

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
July 19, 1775 *	Col Joseph Gerrish
Sept. 20, 1775	Major Samuel Moody
May 29, 1776†	Mr Richard Adams Junior, Col Samuel Gerrish, Samuel Greenleaf, Esq., Mr Stephen Little, Capt Daniel Chute
May 28, 1777 ‡	Col Moses Little and Mr Richard Adams junior
May 27, 1778 §	Col Moses Little
May 26, 1779 §	Col Moses Little and Col Jacob Gerrish
May 31, 1780 ‖	Col Moses Little and Col Jacob Gerrish
Oct. 25, 1780	Enoch Sawyer, Esq. and Moses Little, Esq.
May 30, 1781	Moses Little, Esq. and Col Jacob Gerrish
May 29, 1782	Col Samuel Moody
May 28, 1783	Col Samuel Moody
May 26, 1784	Ebenezer March, Esq. and Mr. Joshua Ordway
May 25, 1785	Col Samuel Moody
May 31, 1786	Samuel Moody Esq
May 30, 1787	Lieut Nathaniel Emery
May 28, 1788	Ebenezer March, Esq. and Enoch Sawyer, Esq.
May 27, 1789	Ebenezer March, Esq.
May 26, 1790	Lieut Nathaniel Emery
May 25, 1791	Lieut Nathaniel Emery
May 30, 1792	Lieut Nathaniel Emery and Mr Silas Little
May 29, 1793	Mr. Josiah Little
May 28, 1794	Col Josiah Little
May 27, 1795	Lieut Nathaniel Emery
May 25, 1796	Col. Josiah Little
May 31, 1797	Col. Josiah Little
May 30, 1798	Josiah Little, Esq
May 29, 1799	Josiah Little, Esq
May 28, 1800	Josiah Little, Esq
May 27, 1801	Josiah Little, Esq. and Mr Joseph Newell

to allow the representatives to assemble for legislatives business, issued a proclamation excusing them from attending at the time and place named in the summons. Ninety representatives, however, met in Salem, and organized by the choice of John Hancock, chairman. October seventh they resolved themselves into a Provincial Congress, and adjourned to meet at Concord the following Tuesday.

* July 4, 1775, the town of Newbury elected Col. Joseph Gerrish representative to the General Court to be held in the meeting-house at Watertown, July nineteenth. This and subsequent sessions of the General Court were held at Watertown until October 9, 1776.

† At the preceding session of the General Court, an act providing for a more equal representation of the inhabitants of the colony was passed at the urgent solicitation of John Lowell, esq., of Newburyport, and others, members of a committee appointed at a county convention held at Ipswich, April 25, 1776.

‡ This session of the court was held at Boston; but the sixth and last session for the legislative year was held at the meeting-house in Roxbury, April 1, 1778.

§ This session was held at the old State House in Boston.

‖ The second session of this court was dissolved by proclamation, October 23, 1780, two days before the assembling of the "General Court of Massachusetts" under the constitution.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 26, 1802	 Josiah Little, Esq. and Mr Joseph Newell
May 25, 1803	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 30, 1804	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 29, 1805	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 28, 1806	Josiah Little, Esq. Joseph Newell, Enoch Sawyer, Esq. Capt. Ebenezer Stocker
May 27, 1807	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 25, 1808	Josiah Little, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood Richard Pike
May 31, 1809	Josiah Little, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Capt David Little
May 30, 1810	Josiah Little, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Capt David Little Stephen Hooper, Esq.
May 29, 1811	Josiah Little, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Capt David Little Stephen Hooper, Esq Daniel Hale, Esq.
May 27 1812	Josiah Little, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Capt David Little Stephen Hooper, Esq Daniel Hale, Esq.
May 26 1813	Josiah Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. Capt Oliver Pilsbury Mr. Daniel Emery Majr Ebenezer Hale
May 25 1814.	Josiah Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Silas Little, Esq. Majr Oliver Pilsbury Mr. Daniel Emery Col. Ebenezer Hale
May 31 1815	Silas Little, Esq. John Osgood, Esq. Lieut Moses Dole, Jun. Mr. Daniel Emery Col Ebenezer Hale Mr Thomas Hills
May 29 1816	Silas Little, Esq. Capt Thomas Carter Mr Thomas Hills Josiah Little, Esq. Mr. Daniel Emery John Osgood, Esq.
May 28, 1817	 Josiah Little, Esq. and Daniel Emery, Esq.
May 27, 1818	 Silas Little, Esq. and Daniel Emery, Esq.
May 26, 1819	 Silas Little, Esq. and Moses Little, Esq.
May 31, 1820	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 30, 1821	 Silas Little, Esq.
May 29, 1822	 Josiah Little, Esq.
May 28, 1823	 Moses Little, Esq.
May 26, 1824	 Moses Little, Esq.
May 25, 1825	 Moses Little, Esq. and Col Daniel Adams
May 31, 1826	 Moses Little, Esq. and Col Daniel Adams
May 30, 1827	Moses Little, Esq., Col. Daniel Adams, and Col. Ebenezer Hale
May 28, 1828	 Moses Little, Esq., and Silas Little, Esq.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
May 27, 1829	Moses Little, Esq., Silas Little, Esq., and Silas Moody, Esq.
May 26, 1830 *	Moses Little, Esq.
May 25, 1831	Moses Little, Esq., Capt Joseph Gerrish, and Silas Moody, Esq.
Jan. 4, 1832	Moses Pettingell, Esq., and Capt Joseph Gerrish
Jan. 2, 1833	Moses Pettingell, Esq., Capt Joseph Gerrish, Silas Moody, Esq., Mr. John Northend.
Jan. 1, 1834	Moses Little, Esq.
Jan. 7, 1835	John Merrill, Daniel Adams, 3d, William Currier, Jun., Putnam Perley.
Jan. 6, 1836	Moses Little, Esq., Silas Moody, Esq., Daniel Adams, 3d, William Currier, Jun.
Jan. 4, 1837	Daniel Noyes and Moses Little
Jan. 3, 1838	Jacob Atkinson and Benjamin W. Hale
Jan. 2, 1839	Jacob Atkinson, Daniel Noyes, and Benjamin W. Hale
Jan. 1, 1840	Daniel Noyes
Jan. 6, 1841	Silas Moody and Oliver Hale
Jan. 5, 1842	Stephen Ilsley and Joshua L. Newhall
Jan. 4, 1843	(No representative chosen)
Jan. 3, 1844	Jacob Atkinson and Thomas Huse
Jan. 1, 1845	Josiah Little and Enoch Hale
Jan. 7, 1846	(No representative chosen)
Jan. 6, 1847	(No representative chosen)
Jan. 5, 1848	Enoch Hale and Andrew W. Miltimore
Jan. 3, 1849	Jacob Atkinson and Dennis Condry
Jan. 2, 1850	Jacob Atkinson and Enoch Hale
Jan. 1, 1851	Caleb Cushing
Jan. 7, 1852	Francis V. Noyes
Jan. 5, 1853	Andrew W. Miltimore
Jan. 4, 1854	(No representative chosen)
Jan. 3, 1855	Herman D. Rogers
Jan. 2, 1856	Joseph Lunt
Jan. 7, 1857 †	William W. Perkins
Jan. 6, 1858	Benjamin Edwards, Jr., of West Newbury
Jan. 5, 1859	Gorham P. Sargent, of Newbury
Jan. 4, 1860	Moses T. Whittier, of Rowley
Jan. 2, 1861	Calvin Rogers, of West Newbury

* May 11, 1830, the town of Newbury voted to favor the proposed amendment to the State Constitution, reducing the number of representatives to the General Court and providing for only one regular session each year.

† In 1857, the Constitution of the State was amended, and representatives to the General Court were after that date elected from districts consisting of one or more towns. The seventeenth Essex representative district was composed of the towns of Newbury, West Newbury, and Rowley.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
Jan. 1, 1862	Nathan Adams, of Newbury
Jan. 7, 1863	Amos Bishop, of Rowley
Jan. 6, 1864	Eben P. Stanwood, of West Newbury
Jan. 4, 1865	William M. Rogers, of Newbury
Jan. 3, 1866	Edward H. Potter, of Rowley
Jan. 2, 1867 *	Eben F. Stone, Rufus Adams, and Geo. W. Woodwell, of Newburyport.
Jan. 1, 1868	Geo. W. Jackman, Jr., Geo. W. Woodwell, and Rufus Adams, of Newburyport.
Jan. 6, 1869	David T. Woodwell and Horace Choate, of Newburyport, and Joseph N. Rolfe, of Newbury.
Jan. 5, 1870	David T. Woodwell, Horace Choate, and Geo. J. L. Colby, of Newburyport.
Jan. 4, 1871	Nathaniel Pierce, Moses H. Fowler, and Geo. J. L. Colby, of Newburyport.
Jan. 3, 1872	Robert Couch, Geo. W. Clark, and Benjamin C. Currier, of Newburyport.
Jan. 7, 1874	Benj. C. Currier, Joseph B. Morss, and Elbridge G. Kelley, of Newburyport.
Jan. 6, 1875	Benj. C. Currier and Michael Atkinson, of Newburyport, and Daniel D. Bailey, of Newbury.
Jan. 5, 1876	Caleb B. Huse and Michael Atkinson, of Newburyport, and Daniel D. Bailey, of Newbury.
Jan. 3, 1877 †	Eben F. Stone and Caleb B. Huse, of Newburyport
Jan. 2, 1878	Eben F. Stone and John W. Ricker, of Newburyport
Jan. 1, 1879	Benj. F. Atkinson and Samson Levy, of Newburyport
Jan. 7, 1880	Eben F. Stone and Amos Coffin, of Newburyport
Jan. 5, 1881	Amos Coffin and Edward P. Shaw, of Newburyport
Jan. 4, 1882	John P. Coombs and Edward P. Shaw, of Newburyport
Jan. 3, 1883	John P. Coombs and Thomas C. Simpson, of Newburyport
Jan. 2, 1884	Henry M. Cross and Geo. P. Bishop, of Newburyport
Jan. 7, 1885	Henry M. Cross and Willard J. Hale, of Newburyport
Jan. 6, 1886 ‡	Edward A. Moseley and Daniel M. Felch, of Newburyport
Jan. 5, 1887	Edward A. Moseley and Daniel M. Felch, of Newburyport
Jan. 4, 1888	Edward P. Shaw, of Newburyport, and Luther Dame, of Newbury.
Jan. 2, 1889	Edward P. Shaw, of Newburyport, and Luther Dame, of Newbury.

* In 1866, the representative districts were revised. After that date, Newbury and Newburyport, composing the sixth Essex district, elected three representatives annually until November, 1876, when the districts were again revised.

† According to the revision of 1876, the sixteenth Essex district, consisting of Newbury and Newburyport, was entitled to only two representatives.

‡ For ten years after the revision of 1886, Newbury and Newburyport were in the eighth Essex representative district.

Sessions beginning	*Deputies.*
Jan. 1, 1890	Arthur C. Richardson, of Newburyport, and Luther Dame, of Newbury.
Jan. 7, 1891	Arthur C. Richardson and Nathan N. Withington, of Newburyport.
Jan. 6, 1892	Arthur C. Richardson and Eben S. Dole, of Newburyport
Jan. 4, 1893	. . Oliver B. Merrill and Eben S. Dole, of Newburyport
Jan. 3, 1894	. Edward A. Hale and Oliver B. Merrill, of Newburyport
Jan. 2, 1895	. Edward A. Hale and Caleb B. Huse, of Newburyport
Jan. 1, 1896	Charles O. Bailey, of Newbury, and Caleb B. Huse, of Newburyport.
Jan. 6, 1897 *	Charles O. Bailey, of Newbury, and Charles P. Mills, of Newburyport.
Jan. 5, 1898	Warren Boynton, of Ipswich, and Charles P. Mills, of Newburyport.
Jan. 4, 1899	Francis D. Henderson, of Rowley, and Charles P. Mills, of Newburyport.
Jan. 3, 1900	Francis D. Henderson, of Rowley, and Charles P. Mills, of Newburyport.
Jan. 2, 1901	John A. Brown, of Ipswich, and Moody Kimball, of Newburyport.
Jan. 1, 1902	George A. Schofield, of Ipswich, and Moody Kimball, of Newburyport.
Jan. 7, 1903	Moody Kimball, of Newburyport, and George A. Schofield, of Ipswich.

* After the revision of 1896, Newbury was in the twenty-second Essex district, with Ipswich, Rowley, and wards one, two, three, four, and five, Newburyport.

ERRATA.

Page 159. "MILL AT PINE ISLAND" should read "MILL NEAR THE NEW ROAD TO PINE ISLAND."

Page 366. "Miss Harriet Newell" should read "Miss Harriet Atwood, afterward Mrs. Harriet Newell."

INDEX.

INDEX.

ABBOTT, GYLES, 54, 93.
Corp. Isaac, 559.
Corp. Uriah, 559.
William L., 277.
Abercrombie, General, 571.
Abraham, Plains of, 578, 580.
Battle of, 578.
Absence from Town Meeting, 49, 50.
Academy, Dummer, 365, 368.
Acadia, 531, 543, 547, 548, 553, 556.
Acadians, The, 553, 554, 667.
Acomenticus, Mount, 17, 24, 25.
Acres, Henry, 182.
John, 608-610.
Moses, 605.
Act of Legislature, 386.
Adams, Goodman, 417.
Abraham, 102, 117, 118, 139, 181, 203, 208, 665.
Abram, 588.
Archelaus, 541.
Benjamin, 589.
Caleb, 610.
Charles, 570.
Daniel, 223, 305, 570, 601, 611, 684, 685.
David, 611.
Eben, 630.
Edmund, 570.
Eli, 629.
Enoch, 587, 601, 609, 610, 613.
George, 410.
George W., 295.
Giles, 627.
Greene, 635.
Ha——, 660.
Miss Hannah, 366.
Hanson H., 629.
Henry, 570.
Hercules, 660.
Isaac, 181, 410, 605.
Israel, 543, 559, 570, 571.
Jacob, 181, 503.
John, 387, 388, 570, 595, 629.
Joseph, 381, 563, 570, 609, 615, 629.
Josiah, 601, 653.
Justin N., 634.
Life, 570.
Mrs. Lizzie M., 295.
Adams, *continued.*
Mrs. Mary, 665.
Dr. Matthew, 665.
Moses, 125, 288, 570.
Nathan, 587, 601, 686.
Nathaniel, 566, 587, 601, 608.
Paul, 391, 392.
Philip D., 297.
Richard, 28, 290, 582, 584, 593, 595, 625, 683.
Robert, 94, 101, 110-112, 123, 141, 163, 181, 417, 528, 542, 571, 659.
Rufus, 686.
Samuel, 571, 609, 610.
Mrs. Sarah, 665.
Silas, 587, 601, 611.
Stephen, 284, 609, 611, 627, 653.
Addington, Isaac, 517.
Address, 359.
Historical, 310.
Adelphi Street, 387.
Admiral, The, 548.
Admiral of New England, 16.
Admiral Vernon, Sign of, 473.
"Adonis" (Swedish brig), 624.
Advertisements, 273, 473, 489, 491, 492.
Africans, 257.
Agawam (Ipswich), Mass., 18, 19, 23, 24, 29, 183, 185, 311.
Aix-la-chapelle, 553, 556.
Albany, N. Y., 196.
Alcott, Rev. William P., 381.
Ale, 72.
Alent, John, 569.
Alexander, Giles, 473.
Alexandria, Va., 632.
Alewives, 283, 284.
Allds, William, 613.
Allegiance, Oath of, 26, 28, 172, 177, 179, 182, 642, 679.
Allen, Ira H., 633.
John, 101, 192, 478.
Joseph, 588, 605.
Samuel, 106, 197, 467, 626.
Thomas, 81.
Walter, 55, 84, 89, 93.
Capt. William, 569.
Allen Street, 333.

Allerton Point, 24.
Alley, Rev. Henry G., 388.
Almshouse, 244, 298, 299.
Alphabet, 407.
Alter, Mrs. John, 410.
Ambrose, Alice, 148, 149.
America, 13, 18, 22, 35, 77, 80, 154, 196, 298, 311, 370, 408, 467, 472, 497, 543, 554, 556, 582.
American Army, 613.
American Colonies, 599.
American Forces, 604.
American Liberty, 583.
American Merchant Ship, 620.
"American Preceptor," 408.
American Vessels, 485, 621.
Ames, Joseph, 589, 606.
Amesbury, Mass., 200, 239, 244, 251, 255, 279, 298, 339, 389, 421, 439, 441, 442, 460, 462, 463, 497, 508, 512, 518, 536-538, 540, 559, 562, 563, 573, 591, 592, 600, 602-604, 611, 614, 616, 625, 645, 660.
 Settlement of, 439.
Amesbury Ferry, 241, 276, 298, 373, 422, 439-441, 462, 464.
 Landing, 428, 440.
Amesbury Highway, 424.
Amesbury Mill, 421.
Amherst, Mass., 622.
Amherst, Jeffrey, 554, 574, 575.
Amherst College 368.
Ammunition, 62, 77, 78, 225, 226, 357, 485, 488, 500, 514, 517, 531, 535, 540, 593, 624, 625, 647.
Amoskeag, 24.
Amoskeag Indians, 182.
Amsterdam, Holland, 143.
Anabaptists, 383.
Anderton, James, 516.
Andover, Mass., 70, 73-75, 121, 124, 152, 153, 162, 163, 167, 168, 316, 416, 417, 432, 480, 481, 497, 502, 515, 518, 527, 604, 666.
Andover Theological Seminary, 379.
Andrews, Rev. John, 344, 345.
 Joseph, 515.
 Samuel, 161.
Andros, Sir Edmund, 195, 196, 200, 202, 203, 207, 420, 443, 444, 447, 453, 466, 467, 478, 498, 514, 679, 680.
Angier, Rev. Luther H., 362.
"Angoan," 17.
Ann, Cape, 14, 17, 18, 20-22, 24, 25, 31-33.
Ann Street, 303.
"Ann" (sloop), 481.
Annapolis, N. S., 14, 514, 531, 532.
Anne's War, Queen, 521.
Annis, Abraham, 283, 536, 539, 659.
 Aquilah, 659.
 Charles, 103, 206, 659.
 Curmac, 180.
 Isaac, 536, 539, 542.
 Jacob, 613, 618.
 Joseph, 370, 372.
Anniversary Celebrations, 309.
Anthony, John, 28.
 Mark, 601.
Anticosti, Island of, 515.
Antietam, Md., 632.
Antigua, 481, 482.
Anvil, 670.
"Apocalyptica," 192, 264.
Apothecary, 486.
Appleton, John, 177, 243, 445, 502.
 Samuel, 246, 502, 504-507, 518, 531.
 William, 615.
Apprentices, 283, 549.
Archelaus Hill, 83, 228, 308.
Archer, John, 617, 618.
Ardway, James, 178.
Arithmetic, 408, 409.
 Taught, 396, 400, 403.
Arms, 514, 517, 531, 535, 540, 625, 670.
Armstrong, John Warren, 298.
Army, Colonial, 506.
Army of the Revolution Disbanded, 599.
Arnold, Col. Benedict, 593, 594, 616, 661.
 Richard, 202.
Arnold's March, 593, 594.
Arskins, John, 614.
Artichoke River, 82, 83, 114, 115, 131, 134, 136, 159, 209, 213, 226, 237, 238, 240, 241, 300, 301, 307, 308, 347, 351, 354, 403, 405, 422, 423, 425, 428, 492, 590.
 Bridge, 241, 423.
 Commons, 137.
Artillery, 668.
"Ascutney" (United States steamship), 492.
Ash Street, 228.
"Ashburton" (ship), 491.
Ashland Street, 373, 390, 409, 429, 430, 486, 491.
Ashley, Edward, 480.
Aslebe, Lt. John, 481.

Aslett, John, 75.
Asp, or Aspen, Swamp, 90, 139.
Assessors, 227, 403.
Assistants, Court of, 23, 33-36, 40, 68.
Asten, John, 559.
Atkins, Captain, 373.
Dudley, 569.
John, 204.
Joseph, 244, 272, 376, 482, 569.
William, 266, 376, 568.
Atkinson, Mr., 424.
Amos, 586, 601.
Benjamin, 628.
Benjamin F., 686.
Humphrey, 560.
Jacob, 685.
John, 119, 140, 176, 177, 180, 430, 543, 570, 586, 609, 640.
John M., 391.
Matthias, 586.
Michael, 686.
Moses, 409, 566.
Moses L., 391.
Nathaniel, 542, 610.
Stephen, 549.
Theodore, 613.
Thomas, 543.
Atkinson Fund School, 411.
Atlantic Ocean, 13, 18, 22, 83, 161, 199, 239, 308.
Attorneys, 313.
Atwood, Miss Harriet, 366, 688.
Joseph, 609.
Saul, 628.
Stephen, 674.
Atwood Street, 303.
Aubin, Hezekiah, 562, 565.
Nathaniel, 573, 615 (?).
Philip, 293.
Samuel, 565, 566.
Solomon, 576, 579, 602.
Auburn Street, 309.
Auctions, 270, 294.
Austin, Ann, 144.
Nathan, 560.
Samuel, 515.
Austria, 485, 547.
Avery, Mrs. Elizabeth, 324, 325.
John, 32, 33, 595, 602.
Joseph, 32, 33.
"Avery His Fall," 33.
Avery's Rock, 33.
Ayers, David, 628.
John, 372, 660.
Martin, 549.
Moses, 606.
Nathaniel, 180.
Obadiah, 171.
Peter, 516.
Samuel, 207.
Ayers, *continued.*
Thomas, 515.
Tubal, 560.
Zachariah, 206.

BABB, NATHANIEL, 626.
Solomon, 625.
Bacheler, Rev. Stephen, 44, 45, 67, 99.
Badger, Edw., 216.
Giles, 55, 84, 88, 90, 93
James, 217.
John, 102 112, 116, 118, 159, 176, 180, 186, 200, 202, 203, 206, 208, 515, 516.
Nathaniel, 55, 84, 88, 94, 159, 542.
Obadiah, 615.
Richard, 54, 84, 88, 90, 94.
Corp. William, 564.
Badlam, Capt. Ezra, 606.
Bagley, Ensign, 538.
Abel, 576.
Abner, 563.
Benjamin, 576.
Enoch, 578.
John, 610, 614.
Col. Jonathan, 560, 562-564. 572, 610.
Joshua, 610.
Orlando, 539.
Stephen, 567.
Thomas, 615.
Bags, 217, 225, 586.
Mail, 465, 466, 472.
Bailey (Bayley), Mr., 397, 399.
Abner, 589, 627.
Asa, 5, 88.
Benjamin S., 634, 636.
Charles O., 687.
Daniel, 628.
Daniel C., 628.
Daniel D., 634, 686.
Edmund, 237, 572, 578, 583, 595.
Edward, 515.
Mrs. Elizabeth, 254.
Enoch, 657.
Henry, 634.
Isaac, 179, 205, 355, 541.
Capt. Jacob, 171.
James, 102, 564, 627.
John, 93, 102, 110, 111, 117, 118, 141, 163, 169, 178, 179, 205, 209, 526, 570, 571, 610.
Jonathan, 243.
Joseph, 111, 112, 177, 179, 205, 347, 372, 400, 572.
Joshua, 179, 237, 254, 370, 461, 526, 536, 538, 539, 541, 574, 610, 656, 665.

Bailey, *continued.*
Kiah, 563, 572, 575.
Nathan, 568.
Samuel, 575, 579, 628.
Samuel R., 635.
Simon, 572.
Stephen, 572, 575, 579.
Tappan, 628.
Thomas, 628.
William, 603.
William T., 634.
Baker, Gideon, 628.
John, 48, 62, 63, 132, 413, 600, 602.
Bakerstown, N. H., 516.
Balch, Rev. William, 379.
Baldwin, Col. Loammi, 604, 606, 610.
Ballard, William, 28, 75.
Capt. William H., 604.
William Hudson, 563.
Balls, 488, 535.
Band of Music, 309.
Band of Newbury, 494.
Banishment, 43, 144-147.
Banners, 309.
Baptism, 148, 314, 331, 340, 373.
Barachois, The, 550, 551.
Barbadoes, 254, 265, 481.
Barberry Swamp, 416.
Barbour, Rev. Isaac R., 366, 368.
Barefoot, Capt. Walter, 140, 142, 143, 149.
Baren, Captain, 569.
Barge, 661.
Barker, Daniel, 570.
Rev. Davis, 388.
James, 608.
John, 526.
Philip, 613.
Richard, 416.
Samuel, 614.
Theodore, 612.
Thomas, 230.
Barks, 424, 486, 491, 492.
Barley, 113.
Barnard, Lieutenant, 538.
Ezekiel, 616.
Thomas, 146, 339, 357, 358, 515, 576, 682.
Capt. Timothy, 600, 602.
Barns, 128 298, 314, 355, 356, 395, 425, 430, 505, 654, 658, 670, 674.
Barnstable, Mass., 81, 530.
Barr, William, 55.
Barrel Staves, 126.
Barrett, Robert, 483.
Samuel, 289.
Barry, William H., 633.
Bartholomew, Mr., 33, 648.
Bartlett, Charles, 393.
Christopher, 60, 84, 92, 93, 100, 117, 163, 180, 421, 422, 441, 506, 626.
David, 516, 615, 626.
Edward W., 635.
Enos, 218, 237.
Isaac, 626.
Israel, 626.
Jacob, 567.
James, 612, 627.
John, 28, 41, 54, 84, 88, 93, 94, 99, 101-103, 107, 109-111, 115, 118, 121, 155, 163, 178-180, 183, 203, 225, 331, 347, 370, 372, 424, 425, 541, 603, 609, 659.
Jonathan, 617.
Joseph, 491, 539.
Joseph W., 129.
Miss Lydia, 373.
Moses, 627.
Nathaniel, 372.
Richard, 54, 61, 84, 88, 92-95, 100, 103, 108, 110, 117, 118, 141, 163, 178-180, 205, 209, 210, 293, 320, 331, 347, 352, 353, 358, 372, 390, 400, 425, 477, 536, 539, 541, 542, 629, 670, 679, 680.
Samuel, 102, 117, 118, 155, 178, 181, 205, 347, 350, 352, 370, 372, 373, 424, 425, 516, 536, 538, 539, 541, 660.
Rev. Samuel Colcord, 310.
Seth, 125, 566, 569.
Simeon, 615.
Thomas, 125, 179, 206, 372, 374, 404, 483, 566.
Miss Tirza, 390.
William, 100, 274, 275, 280, 293, 294, 615, 626, 627.
Bartlett's Cove, 155, 226, 424, 463, 483, 486.
Bartlett Springs, 302.
Barton, Ebenezer, 543.
Bason, 331.
For church, 318.
Bass, Asa, 572.
Rev. Edward, 341, 374-377, 384, 568.
Bass, 23, 25, 281, 283, 284.
Bassett, Joseph P., 635.
Baton Rouge, La., 633, 634.
Batt, Christopher, 68, 99, 435, 664.
Jane, 664.
Nicholas, 32, 53, 54, 56, 84, 88, 102, 132, 163, 176.
Batten, Capt. Robert, 649.
Batter, Edmond, 177.
Battery, 593.

Battice, Joseph, 626.
Battle on Plains of Abraham, 578.
Battoes, 562.
Bay, The, 649.
Bayley's Lane, 237.
Bayonets, 591.
Bayton, 606.
Beal, Lieutenant, 544.
Mrs., 274.
Ebenezer, 550.
Edward, 515.
Zachariah, 516, 575, 578.
Bean, Mrs., 273.
Elisha, 343, 636.
John, 617.
John A., 634.
Silas F., 635.
Beard, Reuben, 635.
Beaubossin, ——, 522.
Beauford, S. C., 669.
Beausejour, 553.
Beaver Brook, 198.
Beck, Jonathan, 569.
Beckman, Rev. Garret, 394.
Bedsteads, 294.
Beed, William, 617.
Beedle, Benjamin, 601.
Robert, 181.
Beef, 598.
Beehives, 80, 81.
Beer, 72, 73, 123, 447, 677.
Bees, 80, 81.
Belcher, Gov. Jonathan, 197, 219, 681.
Rev. Samuel, 351-355, 369, 402.
Belfry, 373.
Belknap, Obadiah, 560.
Bell, Anthony, 563, 567.
Belleville, 287, 288, 306, 392, 484, 491, 492.
Belleville Cemetery, 228.
Belleville Church, 240, 386, 393.
Belleville Parish, 240, 304.
Bellin, Sieur, 548.
Bellingham, Gov. Richard, 73, 175.
William, 60.
Bells, 124, 235, 249, 250, 279, 313, 314, 341, 342, 364, 366, 368, 372, 373, 378.
of Byfield Church, 366, 368.
First Parish, 235.
of Meeting House, 315, 334.
of Queen Anne's Chapel, 372, 373.
for School, 334.
Third Parish, 235.
Ringing the, 331, 333, 342.
Tolling the, 342.
Benches in the Meeting House, 315.
Bennett, John, 606.
Bernard, Gov. Francis, 267, 682
Nathaniel, 516.
Berry, Colonel, 248.
Ambrose, 250, 536, 656.
George, 626.
John, 569.
William, 84, 94, 100, 154.
Berwick, Me., 512, 518, 544, 607.
Beverages, 366.
Beverly, Mass., 153, 185, 476, 502, 503, 607, 625.
Beverly, James, 549, 550.
Samuel, 610, 613.
"Bevis" (ship), 38, 68, 649.
Bewell, Mr., 338.
Bible, 341, 366, 373, 393, 407.
Reading of the, 341.
Bideauboch, 548.
Billerica, Mass., 526.
Bills of Credit, 218, 219.
Bingham, Caleb, 408.
Binney, Amos, 488.
Birchen Meadow, 64, 65, 227, 307, 651.
Births, 58, 59, 193, 639, 645.
First, in Newbury, 193.
Biscomb, Corp. William, 615.
Biscuit, 209.
Bishop, Amos, 686.
George P., 686.
John, 94, 158, 163, 164, 258.
Bishop of London, 370, 376.
Bishopstoke Parish, Hampshire, England, 191, 647.
Black Ash Swamp, 139.
Blackbirds, 124-126.
Blackpoint, 511.
Blackpoint Garrison, 510.
Black Rocks, 199.
Blackenburg, Samuel, 565.
Blacksmiths, 390.
Shop, 671.
Blagdon, Ralph, 515.
Blaisdell, David, 616.
Jonathan, 516.
Lorenzo B., 634.
Blake, Jesper, 629.
Jonathan, 565.
Blakeley, Capt. Johnston, 488, 624.
Blanchard, Corp. Daniel, 559.
Blankets, 293.
Bleachery, 302.
Blindness, 324.
Blockhouses, 525, 526, 555, 574.
Blodget, Samuel, 557, 558.
Bloomfield, John, 171.
Thomas, 55, 84, 88, 90, 101, 114, 141, 171.
Blue Anchor Tavern, 142, 442.
Blunt, Edmund M., 486, 487.

Blunt, *continued.*
George, 605.
Bly, John, 588, 605.
Boar's Head, 24, 25.
Boardman, Captain, 279.
Jonathan, 564.
Nathaniel, 411.
Offin, 286, 293, 429, 430.
Thomas, 549.
Boardman's Lane, 430.
Boardman Street, 390, 429.
Boards, 127, 167, 315, 355.
Boatmen, 661.
Boats, 91, 127, 224, 260, 261, 272, 418, 432, 433, 435-437, 445, 446, 449, 450, 454-458, 460, 462, 464, 478, 591.
Hay, 482.
Packet, 470, 472.
Bodwell, Henry, 181, 503, 504, 507.
Joshua, 613, 618.
Bodwell's Creek, 198.
Bodwell's Falls, 198.
Boggy Meadow Creek, 199.
Boilers, Salt, 297.
Bolles, Thomas, 608.
Bolton, Hannah, 516.
William, 131, 137, 179, 206.
Bombardment, 550.
Bombs, 535.
Bond, John, 55, 84, 88, 92, 93, 163, 164, 169, 254, 650.
Bond, 445.
Books, 144, 148, 165, 356, 407, 408, 670.
on Church Music, 356.
Common Prayer, 148.
School, 407, 408.
Booksellers, 472, 473, 486.
Booth, Robert, 171.
Bootman, Elias, 628.
Borman's Brook, 199.
Boscawen, Admiral, 555.
Boston, Mass., 23, 24, 28, 29, 32, 34, 35, 40, 41, 44, 46, 67, 77-79, 96, 107, 108, 140, 144, 147, 148, 151, 152, 154, 160, 169, 172-177, 187, 189, 191, 192, 195, 197, 201, 202, 208, 209, 224, 235, 240, 241, 248, 252, 264, 265, 271-276, 280, 282, 290, 294-298, 311, 313, 314, 316, 319, 321, 333, 334, 344, 348, 358, 364, 371, 377, 383, 398, 407, 408, 413, 419, 431, 435, 444, 447, 453, 465, 467-470, 472-474, 476-481, 483-486, 488, 489, 491, 493, 496, 498, 502, 514, 515, 517, 518, 520, 521, 523, 528, 529, 531, 534, 553, 557, 563, 572, 574, 581-585, 593, 596, 609, 621, 643, 647,
Boston, Mass., *continued.*
651, 652, 662, 664, 667, 674, 675, 677-679, 682, 683.
Donations to Poor of, 584.
Boston Port Bill, 583.
Boston Harbor, 207.
Boston & Maine Railroad Company, 274, 275.
Boston & Maine Railroad Station, Byfield, 394.
Boston Public Library, 313, 324, 471.
"Boston Weekly Post Boy," 471.
"Bound House," 42, 43, 45.
Boundary Line of English Colonies, 556.
Boundary Lines of Massachusetts, 161, 170, 197-200.
Established, 170, 197-200.
Boundary Lines of Newbury, 39, 167, 168.
Bounties, 124, 596-598, 631.
for Killing Wild Animals, 124.
to Soldiers, 596-598, 631.
Bourlamaque, General, 574.
Bourn, Captain, 544.
Boutwell, Gov. George S., 307.
Bowdoin, Hon. James, 289.
Bowdoin College, 392.
Bowers, Rev. William W., 394.
Bowles, John, 651.
Boxford, Mass., 185, 198, 368, 573, 604, 614.
Boynton, Caleb, 103.
David, 605.
Eben Moody, 359.
Enoch, 587, 614.
Ephraim, 568.
Rev. F. H., 381.
Hilkiah, 660.
Joseph, 218, 449.
Joshua, 181, 203, 542, 611.
Nathaniel, 571.
Warren, 687.
Boys, Disorderly, etc., 338, 339, 369.
on Sabbath Days, 356.
Boyse, Matthew, 70.
Nathaniel, 416.
Brabrooke, Samuel, 505.
Brackenbury, Daniel, 572.
Bradbury, Captain, 574.
Mr., 163.
John, 218.
Jonathan, 566.
Paul, 615.
Theophilus, 569.
William, 446, 456.
Corp. Wyman, 563.
Bradford, Mass., 125, 134, 153, 185, 198, 209, 212, 213, 230, 239,

Bradford, Mass., *continued.*
274, 300, 301, 352, 373, 379, 404, 422, 424, 428, 497, 518, 526, 573, 574, 592, 603, 604.
Bounds of, 240.
Bradford, Moses, 568.
Peter, 572.
Gov. William, 19.
Bradford Road, 156, 213, 236, 261, 270, 308, 354, 362, 364, 369, 373, 421-425, 428, 441, 460.
Brading, James, 180.
Bradley, Daniel, 516, 608.
Henry, 660.
Brads, 298.
Manufacture of, 298.
Bradshaw, Ruth, 666.
Bradstreet, Dorothy, 665.
Dudley, 417, 502.
Dr. Humphrey, 334, 448, 527, 665, 671.
Moses, 184.
Mrs. Sarah, 448, 665, 671.
Gov. Simon, 41, 44, 68, 151, 163, 189, 319, 493, 494, 498, 649.
Brady, Doctor, 340.
Thomas, 633.
Bragdon, Samuel, 612.
Brass, 407, 670.
Brattle, Thomas, 177, 377.
Bray, Eben, 633.
James, 629.
John N., 635.
Richard S., 119.
Brazier, John, 602.
Simon, 615.
Brazil, 624.
Bread, 340.
"Brenda" (ship), 491.
Brennan, John, 633.
Brett, Hannah, 665.
John, 285, 570.
Richard, 563.
Brewster, John, 626.
Briant, Daniel, 612.
Brick Yards, 139.
Brickett, James, 543.
Lt. John, 588.
Moody, 628.
Moses, 589.
Nathaniel, 180.
Bricks, 226.
Bridger, John, 228, 370, 372.
Bridges, 138, 139, 240, 241, 258, 261, 276-281, 298-300, 304, 420, 422, 423, 440, 446, 456, 555, 647, 653.
over Artichoke River, 422, 456.
Deer Island, 299.
Essex-Merrimack, 298, 430, 442, 464, 486, 488.
over Falls River, 121, 416.
Bridges, *continued.*
Ferry, 436, 437.
Four Rock, 415.
John Hull's, 417.
Merrimack, 462.
over Merrimack River, 458.
Mill, 421, 424.
Old-Town, 590.
Parker River, 419.
over Parker River, 431, 434.
Plum Island, 304.
Stone, 428.
Swing, 444.
Mr. Woodman's, 417.
Bridgewater, Mass., 572.
Bridles, 503.
Brigantine, 478, 480, 481, 529, 530.
Briggs, Elisha, 486, 488, 491, 492.
Briggs' Shipyard, 492.
Brighton, Mass., 294.
Brigs, 485, 487-491, 624.
Brine, 297.
Bristol, Eng., 14.
Me., 518.
Mass., 470.
Britain, 661.
British Ships, 556.
British Soldiers, 591.
Broad Arrow Mark, 129.
Brock, John, 576.
Brocklebank, Samuel, 230, 502.
Brockway, Charles J., 302.
Bromfield Street, 245, 266, 307, 310, 387, 426, 492, 621.
Bronson, Rev. Philo, 393.
Brooke, Lord, 642.
Brookfield, N. H., 609.
Brookline, Mass., 295.
Brooks, Rev. Charles, 368.
Brown, Captain, 484, 544.
Sergeant, 659.
Widow, 89.
Abraham, 571.
Benjamin, 388, 563, 586, 628.
Ebenezer, 560, 605.
Edmund, 506, 508.
Francis, 108, 111, 112, 118, 168, 176, 179, 205, 209, 213, 227, 238, 417, 576.
George, 28, 53, 54, 84, 93.
Isaac, 178, 248.
Jacob, 277.
Jacob F., 295.
James, 41, 48, 53, 55, 62-64, 79, 84, 89, 93, 94, 99, 103, 104, 129, 176, 204, 237, 516, 528, 536, 538, 539, 542, 554.
John, 206, 228, 229, 233, 236, 300, 336, 341, 343, 379, 427, 515, 519, 541, 554, 568, 569, 572, 602, 608, 615, 616, 660, 661, 674, 682.

Brown, *continued.*
John A., 687.
John H., 635.
John O. W., 625.
Joseph, 102, 311, 393, 538, 539, 542, 583, 589.
Joshua, 116, 118, 176, 181, 206, 207, 347, 350, 352, 353, 370, 372, 374, 541, 588, 603.
Mary, 193.
Moses, 270, 293, 489, 628.
Nathan, 569.
Nathaniel, 578.
Prince, 611, 617.
Widow Rebecca, 206.
Richard, 28, 38, 47, 48, 51, 53, 54, 56-58, 66, 67, 84, 93, 99, 115, 116, 118, 131, 181, 206, 208, 241, 330, 335, 402, 508, 528, 541, 639, 672, 674.
Robert, 391, 392.
Robert L., 392.
Samuel, 360, 609.
Miss Sarah, 311.
Stephen, 300, 610.
Thomas, 32, 54, 65, 84, 88, 89, 100, 141, 163, 180, 228, 372, 426, 540, 586, 602, 607, 612, 651.
Rev. Thomas G., 388.
Tristram, 372.
William, 444, 562, 566, 605, 629, 656.
Brown's Gardens, 424, 426.
Brown High School, 270.
Brown's Springs, 428.
Brunswick, Me., 392, 544.
Bryer, Richard, 503, 507.
Buccaneers, 478.
Buck, Rev. Amasa, 387.
Joseph, 607.
Buckets, 285-287, 297.
Building Yards, 475, 479-481, 489.
Bulkley, Peter, 444.
Bull, Sign of the, 478.
Bull's Garrison, 506.
Bullets, 62, 171, 225, 538.
Bulls, 33, 297.
Bunker Hill, 604, 610.
Battle of, 592, 602, 604.
Burbank, Benjamin, 612.
Caleb, 570.
Ebenezer, 543.
Eleazer, 571, 578.
Gershom, 564, 576.
John, 601, 609, 616-618.
Micajah, 570.
Burgoyne, General, 596.
Burlington, N. J., 470.
Burnet, Gov. William, 233, 681.
Burnham, Col. Jonathan, 591.
Moses, 627.
Burning the Woods, 131.
Burr, Rev. Jonathan, 651.
Burrill, Anthony, 626.
Jacob, 572, 578, 617.
James, 180, 626.
Patrick, 627.
Samuel, 564, 566.
William, 572.
Burroughs, George, 430, 628.
Burying Grounds, 39, 59, 128, 227, 231, 313, 314, 346, 347, 356, 379, 391, 392, 644.
Byfield, 231.
First, 39, 59.
at First Parish, 410.
Old, 456.
Old Hill, 644.
Quaker, 390.
Sawyer's Hill, 227, 347, 356, 369.
Busbee, Nicholas, 49.
Buswell, Hon. Barker, 145.
Benjamin, 568.
Isaac, 419.
James, 566, 572, 575.
John, 629.
Jonathan, 600, 614.
Lt. William, 446.
Butler, John, 562, 615.
John D., 635.
Rev. O. S., 394.
Butman, William, 611.
Butter, 331.
Button, Daniel, 503, 504.
Buttons, 123.
Buxton, Me., 512.
Buzzard's Bay, 13.
Byfield, Mass., 274, 275, 293, 295, 298, 299, 308, 364, 365, 381, 405, 406.
Byfield, Nathaniel, 230, 364, 366, 520.
Byfield Parish, 64, 229-231, 233, 240, 257, 274, 275, 294, 299, 362, 394, 406, 415, 644, 668.
Burying Ground, 231.
Church, 365, 584.
"History of," 369.
Records of, 364.
Meeting House, 240, 367, 368.
Parsonage, 428.
Byfield, Factory at, 295.
Byfield Methodist Episcopal Church, 393.
Byfield Woollen Company, 295.

CALASH, 271, 272.
Caldwell, Benjamin, 628.
Charles, 633.
Davis S., 410.
Jonathan, 613, 618.
Calef, John, 427, 542, 543.

"Calisto" (brig), 489.
Calley, Eliphalet, 613, 618.
Jonathan, 618.
Calves, 523.
Cambridge, Mass., 23, 29, 34, 40, 41, 151, 192, 289, 313, 413, 493, 585, 587-589, 591, 604, 612, 675, 682.
Cambridge (servant), 256.
Cammett, George, 635.
Serg. Paul, 563.
Campbell, Duncan, 468.
George, 627.
John, 468, 469, 567.
Canada, 17, 447, 514-516, 439, 543, 554, 556, 574, 580.
Invasion of, 575.
Reduction of, 572.
Canadians, 557.
Canady, Charles, 608.
Canal, 297.
Canary Islands, 13.
"Canceau" (British sloop), 574.
Candrick, Samuel, 562.
Cannon, 279, 550, 555, 557.
Canoes, 127, 217, 261, 520, 522.
Canseau, 550.
Strait of, 547.
Canso, Cape, 548.
Canso, Great Island of, 548.
Canso, Gulf of, 548.
Canso, Port of, 548.
Cape Ann, 91, 591, 600, 621.
Cape Breton, 515, 543, 547-549, 552, 578.
Expedition to, 666.
Map of, 548.
Cape Cod, 13, 17, 18, 281.
Capital Punishment, 146.
Captivity by Indians, 229, 518, 519, 521, 539.
Carding Machines, 294.
Carlisle, Earl of, 26.
Carlton, Amos, 610, 614.
George E., 632.
George W., 635.
John, 626.
Jonathan, 606, 610, 614.
Sambo, 613.
Stephen, 560.
Carnes, Hepzibah, 667.
John, 667.
Carpenters, 32, 338, 476.
Carr, Benjamin, 587, 601.
George, 23, 71, 254, 418-420, 435-437, 440-442, 446-448, 475.
James, 139, 179, 204, 246, 420, 443-448, 455, 536, 538, 539, 562, 566, 615.
John, 236, 576, 632, 656.
Joseph, 587, 601.
Carr, *continued*.
Nathaniel, 568.
Richard, 246, 331, 441, 447, 448, 452, 455, 475, 530, 549, 553.
Robert, 42, 97, 142, 173, 677.
Samuel, 566, 576, 588, 603, 606.
William, 446.
Carr's Ferry, 414, 419, 434, 438, 484.
Carr's Island, 83, 308, 419, 434, 435, 437-439, 475, 483.
Carriages, 271, 273-275, 458, 463.
Carry, Lt. James, 626.
Cart Creek, 67, 261, 653, 662.
Cart Place, 259.
Cart River, 67.
Cart Way, 416.
Carter, Benjamin, 572.
Joseph, 54, 84.
Nathaniel, 154.
Capt. Thomas, 621, 684.
Carteret, Gov. Philip, 171.
Carts, 146, 271, 275, 330, 421.
Cartwright, George, 42, 97, 142, 173, 677.
Carver, Seth, 572.
Cary, Rev. Thomas, 344, 378, 590.
Casco, 522, 524, 529.
Casco Bay, 145, 161, 172, 182, 450, 520-523, 529, 531, 533-535.
Casks, 119, 225.
Cassiday, Charles, 567, 571, 602, 611.
John, 563.
Philemon, 563.
Castle Island, 35, 36, 207.
Fort on, 35.
Castle Tavern, 312, 325, 326.
Castro, John, 565.
Caswell, John, 578.
Cat, Wild, 125.
Cate, Hon. George W., 200.
Cate (servant), 256.
Catechism, 337, 407.
Cattle, 32, 33, 52-56, 113, 129, 131-137, 166, 167, 217, 222, 223, 272, 418, 419, 423, 435-437, 439, 451, 452, 458, 460, 523, 591, 597, 648, 670.
Raising, 262.
Cavalry, 497.
Cavenaugh, James, 613, 618.
John, 601.
Ceaser (Indian), 254.
Cedar Timber, 13.
Celebration of Surrender of Quebec, 235.
Celebrations, Anniversary, 309.
Cemeteries, 227, 235, 265, 302, 310, 644, 651, 654. See *Burying Grounds*.

Cemeteries, *continued.*
Oak Hill, 302, 310.
Centre Street, 427.
Ceser, William, 615.
Chaddlewood, Devonshire, England, 664.
Chaffey, Matthew, 67, 419, 662.
Chain Bridge, 277.
Chains, 331.
Chair, Passenger, 271, 272, 472.
Chaise, 271, 272.
Challis, Thomas, 516.
Cham, Robert, 510.
Chamberlin, Asa, 626.
Chambers, John, 606.
William, 613.
Champlain, Samuel de, 14.
Champlain, Lake, 560, 561.
Chancellorsville, Va., 633.
Chandler, Benjamin, 564.
Daniel, 609.
Serg. Isaac, 559.
James, 656.
Philip, 576.
William, 94, 101, 107, 110, 123, 163, 176, 180, 203, 225.
Chandler's Lane, 91, 234, 242, 262, 336, 384, 405, 480, 482, 670.
Chapels, 373-375, 377, 385, 393, 394.
Queen Anne's, 371-373.
Chaplains, 170, 371, 519, 594.
Chaplin, Henry P., 205.
Chapman, Henry, 626.
Capt. Jonathan, 485.
"Charity" (ship), 20.
Charles, Prince of Wales, 17.
Charles, King, 642.
Charles I, King, 26, 172, 328.
Charles II. King, 42, 97, 142, 146, 171-175, 177, 195, 328, 329, 497, 679.
Charles VI, 547.
Charles River, 19, 22, 24.
Charles Street, 303.
Charleston, S. C., 380.
Charlestown, Mass., 23, 24, 40, 96, 272, 321, 366, 378, 476, 493, 666.
No. 4, N. H., 607.
Charltons, Jonathan, 611.
Charters, 26, 42, 61, 95, 96, 119, 195, 196, 209, 246, 252, 498, 499, 518, 670, 679, 680.
Annulled, 498.
Chase, Corporal, 528.
Abel, 589.
Amos, 626.
Anthony, 567.
Aquilla, 91, 93, 116, 120, 121, 163, 181, 206, 214, 216, 541, 603, 606, 610, 611, 659, 660.
Chase, *continued.*
Barker, 606.
Benjamin, 606, 610, 611, 614, 660.
Charles, 656.
Daniel, 181, 542, 628, 659.
David, 462.
Edmund, 587.
Eliphalet, 611.
Enoch, 578, 606.
Hannah, 668.
Henry, 626.
Isaac, 579.
Jacob, 272, 626.
John, 117, 181, 206, 228, 347, 507, 511, 536, 568, 579, 588, 589, 603, 606, 611, 627.
Johnson, 568.
Jonathan, 587.
Joseph, 539, 589, 603.
Joshua, 588, 603, 611.
Josiah, 566, 626.
Moses, 206, 283, 352, 536, 538, 539, 542, 588, 606, 628.
Nathan, 589.
Nathaniel, 569, 603, 608.
Parker, 589.
Perley, 603, 606, 610.
Priscilla, 665.
Robert, 611.
Samuel, 603, 606, 613, 618.
Simeon, 582, 617.
Stephen, 516.
Stuart, 306, 640.
Thomas, 117, 181, 206, 228, 236, 237, 503, 511, 536, 539, 541, 543, 568, 589, 606, 628.
Thomas H., 628.
Wells, 568.
Chase Street, 364.
Chater, John, 93, 100.
Cheese, 483.
Cheesemore, Daniel, 559, 567, 572.
Jacob, 601.
Cheever, Aaron, 575, 579.
John, 605.
Chelmsford, Mass., 668.
Chelsea, Mass., 272, 605.
Chelsea Bridge, 275.
Cheney, Abner M., 627.
Benjamin, 570.
Daniel, 102, 117, 163, 164, 181, 204, 207, 526, 536, 539, 542, 567, 589, 611.
David, 609.
Edmund, 567.
Elias, 575, 579.
John, 41, 50, 55, 84, 88, 99, 110, 114, 141, 7163, 169, 229, 230, 418, 420, 542, 587, 601.
Jonathan, 601, 627.

Cheney, *continued.*
Joseph, 88, 542, 549, 565.
Moses, 570.
Nathaniel, 178, 182.
Peter, 110, 111, 158, 178, 182, 204, 213, 258, 317, 526.
William, 572, 578.
Chickering, John, 305.
Child, Ephraim, 650.
Rev. James H., 369.
Chily, David, 181.
Chimneys, 670.
Chipman, Daniel, 610.
Henry, 559, 565.
Chipman Silver Mining Company, 307.
Chirurgeon, 67, 419, 553.
Choate, Benjamin, 601.
Horace, 686.
John, 243, 601.
Joseph, 587, 601.
True, 238.
Choate's Regiment, 552.
Chorus, 310.
Christ Church, Boston, 265.
Christmas, 251.
Chubb, Capt. Pascha, 519.
Percival, 515.
Church, Col. Benjamin, 508.
Thomas, 508.
Church and Slavery, 257.
Church Conditions, 343.
Church Conference at Cambridge, 313.
Church of England, 15, 26, 228, 371, 376, 384.
Church Government, 165, 316, 361.
Church Membership, 314.
Church Music, Book on, 356.
Church Street, 381, 428.
Church Troubles, 316, 318-322, 357, 358.
Church Wardens, 372-376, 385.
Churches, 92, 97, 98, 101, 102, 117, 161, 177, 313, 316, 655.
First in Newbury, 36, 61, 313.
Fellowship and Discipline of, 313.
at Andover, Mass., 316.
in Newbury, 165, 166.
First in New England, 15.
in Salisbury, 165.
Churchill, Thomas, 613.
Churchmen, 677.
Chute, Daniel, 582, 595, 683.
David, 587.
James, 587.
Cider, 218.
Citizens' Electric Street Railway, 276.
City Hall, 310.
Civil Engineers, 161, 379.
Clapboard Island, 161.
Clapboards, 373.
Clark, Rev. C. F., 381.
Ebenezer, 570.
George W., 686.
Henry, 426, 628.
John, 54, 67, 68, 79, 84, 85, 88, 93, 99, 100, 160, 332, 348-350, 401, 419, 651, 653, 662, 663, 676.
John P., 628.
Jonas, 161.
Jonathan, 204, 506.
Nathaniel, 101, 110, 112, 117, 118, 176, 195, 196, 203, 205, 207, 210, 212, 213, 216, 225, 258, 317, 318, 330, 333, 400, 417, 422, 427, 444, 478, 482, 498, 499, 516.
Dr. Parker, 569.
Percival, 516.
Dr. Peter, 666.
Samuel, 198.
Stephen, 563, 576, 579.
Thomas, 160, 322, 542, 563, 666, 678.
William, 28, 578.
Clarkson, Jacob G., 633.
Cleveland, Dr. Nehemiah, 274.
William N., 294.
William N. & Co., 294.
Clement, Fawn, 217, 481.
Francis, 541.
Job, 154.
John, 143.
Joseph, 243.
Clement's Inn, 313.
Clergy, 149.
Clergymen, 311, 316, 329, 330.
Clerks, Church, 393.
Clerks of Courts, 202.
Clerks of the Market, 111, 119, 120.
Clerks, Town, 46, 47, 64, 95, 183, 316, 395, 402, 425, 608, 639.
Clerks of the Writs, 58, 104, 639.
Clifford, David, 626.
Clipper Ships, 491, 492.
Clock, 378.
Cloth, 258.
Clothier, 258.
Clothing for Poor School Children, 406.
Clough, Ezra, 570, 572, 578.
Joseph, 565.
Josiah, 576.
Nathaniel, 567, 572.
Coaches, 271, 272, 275.
Stage, 273.

Coal Road, 548.
Coast Trade, 478, 480, 491.
Coat, David, 565.
Coccrey, Thomas, 435.
Cocheco (Dover), N. H., 24.
Cochickewick (Andover), Mass., 70, 73-75.
Cochrane, Daniel, 613, 618.
Miss Mary, 344.
Cockraft, Colonel, 559.
Cod, Cape, 13, 17, 18, 24, 25, 45, 281.
Coddington, Milton, 73.
Codfish, 17.
Codman, John, 275.
Coffin, Lieutenant, 402.
Mr., 437, 439.
Abel, 576.
Amos, 686.
Baker, 566.
Benjamin, 484, 564, 565.
Dr. Charles, 667, 669.
Daniel, 560, 570.
David, 293.
Mrs. Dorcas, 669.
Rev. Enoch, 170.
Mrs. Hephzibah, 667.
Jacob, 484, 485, 587.
James, 181, 207, 528, 541, 543.
John, 228, 424, 615, 625, 668.
John B., 489.
Joseph, 217, 309, 489, 513, 564, 568, 582, 625, 610, 667.
Joshua, 343, 582, 640, 641, 669, 672.
Mrs. Judith, 668.
Lemuel, 586.
Moses, 484, 586.
Nathaniel, 158, 170, 205, 218, 219, 236, 248, 334, 401, 424, 528, 541, 543, 640, 668, 681.
Mrs. Patience, 668.
Paul, 513, 576, 614.
Peter, 146, 169, 217, 541, 660.
Richard, 569.
Saul, 628.
Stephen, 484, 566, 589.
Tristram, 71, 72, 94, 101, 102, 106, 108, 110-112, 114, 115, 117, 118, 121, 123, 146, 156, 163, 176, 180, 194, 209, 210, 212, 237, 240, 334, 351, 398, 400, 402, 418, 419, 422, 425, 436, 479, 497, 540, 543, 564, 650, 659, 672, 674, 680.
William, 277, 562, 565, 569.
Coffin's Lane, 484, 489.
Coffin's Shipyard, 489.
Coggin, Rev. William S., 368.
Coggshall, Rev. Samuel W., 393.
Cohasset, 24.
Coker, Sergeant, 203.
Benjamin, 180, 203.
Hathorn, 390, 391.
Joseph, 116, 177, 180, 563, 565, 572, 575, 579.
Moses, 542, 660.
Robert, 28, 54, 84, 88, 109-111, 115, 141, 169, 180, 220, 422.
Samuel, 286, 390.
Mrs. Tirzah, 390.
William, 628.
Coker Field, 390.
Colby, Chase, 611.
George J. L., 686.
Gideon, 616.
Hezekiah, 286, 562, 565.
Ichabod, 575, 579.
Isaac, 616.
John, 549.
Jonathan, 615.
Joseph Lunt, 287.
Joshua, 562, 576.
Makepeace, 575, 579, 602, 614.
Obadiah, 616.
Samuel, 508, 538, 539, 575, 579, 618.
Stephen, 578.
Thomas, 537, 539.
Ens. Timothy, 560, 562,
Winthrop, 589.
Colchester (Salisbury), Mass., 68, 434, 439.
Cold Brook, 198.
Cole, Benjamin, 285.
Charles C., 633.
Charles L., 636.
Christopher, 506.
Robert, 28, 569.
Coleman, Anna, 148.
Benjamin, 257, 365, 366, 582.
Daniel F., 625.
Dudley, 582, 583, 593, 605, 607, 608, 640.
Thomas, 32, 33, 41, 49, 54, 64, 84, 89, 99, 170, 213.
Tobi, 207, 526.
Colewell, William, 563.
Collectors of Taxes, 113.
Colleges, 151-154, 310, 324, 344, 368, 379, 382, 392, 400, 402.
Amherst, 368.
Bowdoin, 392.
Dartmouth, 310.
Harvard, 151, 161, 191, 192, 333, 344, 379, 382, 652, 666-668, 682.
Colley, Israel, 615.
Joseph, 615.
Collins, Benjamin, 616.
Daniel, 614.
Enoch, 615.
Hezekiah, 390.

Collins, *continued.*
Joseph, 286.
Richard, 390.
William, 628.
Colony of Massachusetts Bay, 19.
Colors, 531.
King's, 35.
"Columbian Orator," 408.
Columbus, Christopher, 13.
Combs, 266.
Commandments, The, 340.
Commerce, 90, 264, 462, 467, 485, 620, 621.
Commercial Affairs, 475.
Commercial Wharf, 309.
Commissioners to End Small Causes, 44, 60, 79, 93, 103-106.
Committee of Safety, 207, 208.
Committee of Vigilance, etc., 631.
Common Land, 53, 54, 56, 64, 84, 85, 92-95, 113, 126-129, 132-139, 210, 213-215, 223, 347, 354, 401, 415, 418, 420, 449, 472.
Common Pasture, 293, 300, 304, 305.
Communion, 340, 342.
Cup, 375.
Service, 373, 375.
Table, 340, 342, 359.
Companies, Military, 62.
Conant, Roger, 21, 22.
Concord, Mass., 40, 493, 585, 586, 591, 597, 598, 682, 683.
N. H., 168, 170, 573, 591.
Settlement of, 170.
"Concord" (ship), 13.
Concord River, 198.
Condry, Dennis, 685.
Congress, 499, 599, 620-622.
Conley, William, 610, 613, 618.
Connecticut, 465, 466, 500, 503, 506, 520, 560.
Connecticut, Colony of, 215.
Connecticut River, 171, 172, 182, 500, 505-508.
Conner, Joseph, 613, 617, 618.
Josiah, 617.
Connolly, William, 613, 618.
Connor, William, 563, 566.
Constables, 40, 47, 48, 52, 62, 106, 109-113, 120, 121, 131, 146, 153, 201, 202, 208, 217, 250-252, 399, 526.
Constitution of Massachusetts, 288-290.
Contee, William, 618.
Continental Army, 172, 274, 595, 596, 598, 602, 614, 616, 619.
Continental Congress, 474, 583, 595.
Contoocook, 516.
Contoocook River, 170.
Contributions, Church, 314.
Controversy in Church, 316-320.
Conventions, 289, 290, 296, 581, 593, 597, 598, 621.
County, 593.
Relative to Importations from England, 296.
State, for forming Constitution, 289, 290.
Conveyances, 271.
Conway, Timothy, 633.
Cook, Charles, 286.
Elias, 489, 605, 615.
Elisha, 283.
John, 602.
Samuel, 238.
Thomas, 489.
Coolidge, Rev. Charles H., 364.
Coombs, John, 293.
John P., 686.
Philip, 287, 288, 564.
William, 275, 293.
Cooper, Jacob, 602.
John, 100, 567, 568.
Joseph, 567.
Parker, 575, 579.
Robert, 163.
William, 568.
Coös, N. H., 590.
Coös Country, 171.
Copp, John, 608.
Copyright, Infringement of, 366.
Corazo, 478.
Cordage, 264.
Cordy, James, 616.
Cormorant Rocks, 551.
Corn, 18, 39, 56, 95, 113, 132-134, 137, 138, 156, 159, 166, 167, 201, 259, 260, 262, 398, 483, 649.
Indian, 201.
Mills, 156, 158, 258, 298.
Cornbury, Lord, 470.
Corney, John, 373.
Cornwallis, General, 599.
Corporal, Stephen, 607.
Correspondence, Committee of, 583.
Corwin, Capt. George, 502.
Capt. John, 502.
Hon. Jonathan, 246.
Cottle, Edmund, 376.
Ezra, 426, 479, 480.
Joseph, 376.
Mrs. Mary, 479.
William, 100, 163, 479.
Cottle's Lane, 245, 266, 267, 426, 492.
Cotton, Benjamin, 602, 618.
Leonard, 614.
Thomas, 515.

Cotton, *continued.*
William, 169.
Cotton Cloth, 294.
Cotton Goods, 302.
Cotton Wool, 217, 483.
Cotton Yarn, 295.
Couch, John, 549.
Joseph, 606.
Rev. Paul, 381.
Robert, 686.
William, 569.
Council for New England, 18, 20, 22, 26, 31.
Counties, Division of Colony into, 74.
Country Road, 90, 238, 333, 373, 375, 390, 414, 418, 419, 427-430, 437, 438, 672.
County Convention, 593.
"Courier" (ship), 491.
Court House, 241-243, 335.
Courts, 23, 27, 40, 41, 79, 80, 95, 173, 242, 245-248, 252, 253, 262, 282, 292, 315, 318, 319, 331, 341, 342, 364, 370, 373, 389, 390, 396, 413, 416-418, 423, 431, 433, 435-437, 439-443, 448-451, 453-455, 457-460, 462, 463, 476, 495, 498.
Cow Commons, 132, 134-137.
Cow House, 57.
Cows, 56, 127, 132, 134, 135, 203-207, 214, 523, 670.
Cradock, Matthew, 26, 27.
Crane, Dorothy, 75.
Richard, 75, 76.
Crane Neck Hill, 83, 228, 308.
Crane Pond, 83, 308.
Craw, John, 207.
Creaton, Robert, 619.
Creesy, Daniel, 559.
Francis, 576.
Joseph, 564, 576.
Michael, 625.
Samuel, 562.
Crier, Town, 217.
Crimes, 34, 38, 43, 45, 46, 79, 80, 106, 120-124, 140, 142, 144, 147, 186, 201, 246, 247, 252, 253, 284, 320, 331, 389, 416.
Criminals, 173, 247, 284, 416.
Crocker, Elizabeth, 265.
John, 264, 265, 376.
Mrs. Mary, 265.
Crocket, Thomas, 526.
Cromlom, Gyles, 90, 163, 339.
Crompton, ——, 253.
Cromwell, John, 171.
Oliver, 172.
Richard, 172.
Thomas, 44, 49, 55, 57, 84, 89.
Cronin, Maurice, 636.
Crosby, Anthony, 526.
Nathaniel, 515.
Cross, Henry M., 686.
John, 44, 70, 435, 436.
Moses, 565.
Ralph, 434, 482, 569, 614.
Stephen, 292.
Thomas, 286.
William, 488.
Cross, Defacing, in Ensign, 34, 35.
Cross on the Flag, 497, 498.
Cross Street, 89, 90.
Crow, Ebenezer, 606.
Crow Bars, 248.
Crown Point, 235, 547, 556, 557, 559-563, 574.
Battle of, 235.
Expedition to, 658, 668.
Crows, 124-126.
Cruisers, 530, 621.
English, 621.
Cullers of Fish, 119.
Cullers of Staves, 110, 119.
Cumberland County, 607.
Cummings, Witter, 376, 383.
Cummings & Harris, 483.
Cup, Silver, 375.
Curate, 375.
Curfew, The, 249, 250, 334.
Currency, 597, 598.
Curricles, 271.
Currier, Albert M., 634.
Benjamin C., 686.
Humphrey, 442.
Isaac, 609.
Jacob, 579, 616.
Jedediah, 587, 601, 611.
John, 306, 410, 491, 569, 579, 587, 601, 604, 610, 615, 617.
Joseph, 615.
Joshua, 571, 572.
Nicholas, 562, 615.
Paul, 564.
Serg. Richard, 538, 539.
Samuel, 559, 567, 575, 579, 613, 618.
William, 491, 492, 575, 601, 615-617, 685.
Willis, 616.
Currier's Shipyard, 491.
Curtis, Daniel, 563.
Timothy, 615.
Curzon Mill Road, 423.
Cushing, Mr., 657.
Caleb, 264, 310, 339, 410, 411, 561, 567, 685.
John, 614.
Capt. John N., 491.

Cushing & Appleton, 655.
Cushman, Captain, 484.
Robert, 20, 21.
Custom House, 491.
Customs, 182.
Cutler, William, 277.
Cutshamoche, Sagamore, 74.
Cutting, John, 54, 64, 84-86, 89-91, 94, 142, 143, 438.
Cutts, John, 153, 194.
Richard, 153.
Cuttyhunk, 13.

DALTON, N. H., 172.
Dalton, Jeremiah, 564, 572.
Michael, 243, 266, 286, 376, 436, 464, 570, 682.
Samuel, 106.
Tristram, 154, 172.
Daly, John, 570.
Moses, 570.
Dam, 653.
Damariscotta River, 520.
Damask, 359.
Dame, Rev. Charles, 362.
Luther, 409, 640, 686, 687.
Dame, School, 401.
Damford, William, 181.
Damrell & Upham, 384.
Dana, Rev. Daniel, 345.
Dana's, Mr., Meeting House, 274.
Danbury, Conn., 609.
Dancing, 521.
Dane, Corp. Daniel, 559.
Philemon, 572.
Danford, William, 203.
Danforth, John, 570-572.
Joseph, 570, 587, 609.
Joshua, 572.
Mercy, 645.
Oliver, 570.
Samuel, 570, 572, 575, 579.
Thomas, 141, 169, 189, 283, 322.
Daniel, 323.
Danish Soldiers, 604.
Danvers, Mass., 607, 611.
Dartmouth, England, 15.
Dartmouth College, 310.
Daspe Harbour, 548.
Dauphin, Port, 548.
Davenport, Anthony, 223, 299.
Samuel, 570.
Capt. William, 570, 576, 578.
David, 216.
Davis, Aaron, 572, 575, 579, 602.
Abel, 565, 568, 576.
Ambrose, 376.
Benjamin, 615, 656.
Charles, 606.
Davis, *continued*.
Cornelius, 179, 209, 506, 659.
Eben P., 635.
Edmund, 566.
Capt. Elias, 609.
Enoch, 589.
Ephraim, 180, 206, 659.
George, 559.
Jacob, 615.
James, 71, 181, 627.
Jeremiah, 179, 206, 510.
John, 16, 81, 101, 179, 206, 207, 481, 515, 604, 627, 635, 660.
Joseph, 516.
Joshua, 615.
Diary of, 616.
Moses, 572.
Nathaniel, 613.
Oliver, 627.
Richard, 627.
Robert, 589.
Saul, 627.
Stephen, 617.
Thomas, 54, 84, 94, 100, 589, 609.
William, 606, 615, 616.
Zachariah, 180, 206, 503, 540, 660.
Davison, Daniel, 189, 196, 207, 215, 217, 282, 445, 449-452, 477, 482, 680.
Nicholas, 372.
Day, Charles C., 633.
Deacon, Edward, 611.
Deacons, 314, 332, 335, 365, 368.
Seats, 359.
Dean, Francis, 588, 603, 607.
Samuel, 575.
Thomas, 177.
Dearborn, Eben H., 633.
Harrison W., 633.
Deaths, 58, 60, 122, 225, 235, 260, 632, 633, 635, 639.
in War, 632, 633, 635.
Debeck, Moses, 576.
"Decatur" (steamboat), 491.
Declaration of Independence, 595.
Dedham, Mass., 148, 321, 493, 506, 511.
Deeds, 182-185, 201.
Indian, 182-185.
Deeker, John, 181.
Deer, 119, 120.
Informers of, 119, 120.
Deer Island, 25, 83, 227, 277, 302, 463, 464.
Bridge, 299, 463.
Deer Jump, Methuen, 198.
Deerfield, Mass., 503, 504, 622.
Deerskin, 218.

Defences, 625.
Delane, Philip, 229.
Delaney, James, 614.
Demond, Rev. Elijah, 381.
Dennett, Charles, 627.
Dennison, Daniel, 68, 184, 189, 319, 493, 494, 496, 497, 502.
Deptford, England, 167.
"Deptford" (vessel of the royal navy), 530.
Deputies, 61, 163, 173, 675.
House of, 68.
Derby, R., 595.
Dernier Resort Fire Society, 286.
Derry, N. H., 344.
Devine, John, 636.
Devonshire, England, 81.
Devyes, England, 32.
Diary of Joshua Davis, 616.
Diary of Judge Samuel Sewall, 191.
Dick, Jonas, 625.
Dickinson, Abijah, 572.
Micajah, 570.
Dieskau, General, 557, 558.
Dieskau's Path, 561.
Dikes, 534, 653.
Dimond, John, 613, 618.
Dinner, Anniversary, 310.
Diocese, The, 371.
Dip Net, 284.
Disarmament, 648.
Disarmed, 493.
Diseases, Contagious, 224, 225.
Disfranchisement, 43.
Dismal Ditch, 139.
Disorderly Proceedings, 355.
Distilleries, 262.
Distilling Liquors, 264.
District Schools, 410-412.
Ditson, Hugh, 248.
Docking Entail, 390.
Docks, 475, 482.
Doctor's Commons, 312, 325, 326.
Dodge, Abraham, 600, 615.
Robert, 287, 606, 622.
William, 606.
Dodsville Farm, Va., 635.
Dole, Abner, 543, 565, 569.
Amos, 568.
Daniel, 297.
David, 284, 586.
Eben S., 687.
Edward, 410.
Enoch, 611, 616, 617, 627-629.
Rev. George, 362.
Greenleaf, 628.
Henry, 207, 586.
Jacob, 627.
Dole, *continued.*
Miss Jane, 298.
Jedediah, 627.
John, 103, 205, 341, 343, 454, 455, 542, 550, 559, 564, 565, 587, 605, 617, 664.
Jonathan, 427, 566, 570.
Joseph, 180, 477, 576.
Mary, 454, 664.
Lt. Moses, 684.
Oliver, 572.
Richard, 59, 91, 94, 100-102, 110, 114, 116, 118, 128, 142, 154, 163, 185, 203, 204, 210, 212, 222, 258, 330, 422, 434, 482, 563, 664, 678.
Samuel, 589.
Silas, 605.
Stephen, 543, 571, 586.
William, 59, 433, 434, 541.
Dolman, Joseph, 610.
Donations, 406, 584, 650.
to Poor of Boston, 584.
to School Fund, 406.
Donnels, Nathaniel, 606.
Dorchester, Eng., 20.
Mass., 23, 24, 40, 77, 81, 493, 647, 651.
Dorchester Company, 21, 22.
Dorman, David, 618.
Timothy, 587, 610.
Dorsett, Amicable, 554.
Peter, 554.
Doty, John, 572.
Dougherty, Rev. M. A., 381.
Douglass, John, 635.
"Dove" (sloop), 481, 482, 530.
Dover, N. H., 42, 106, 142, 143, 148, 149, 161, 169, 274, 282, 431, 437, 518, 544, 668.
Dow, Abram A., 635.
Amos, 610.
Ebenezer, 568.
Henry, 515, 516.
James, 627.
John, 616.
Thomas, 55, 84, 88, 90.
Downame, John, 325.
Downer, Andrew, 228, 238, 567.
Daniel, 628.
Gideon, 575, 579.
John, 94, 606.
Joseph, 181, 203, 238, 542.
Downer's Lane, 236.
Downey, Cuff, 617.
Downing, Mr., 34.
David, 563, 575.
Davis, 572.
John, 238, 562, 603, 607, 610.
Moses, 575, 579.
Dowry, Joseph, 611.

Doyle, Thomas, 603.
Dracut, Mass., 198, 483.
Draft, 598.
Drag Net, 283.
Dragoons, Mounted, 497.
Drake, Abraham, 143.
Draper, Richard, 557.
Draw Bridge, 279.
"Dreadnaught" (ship), 492.
Dresser, Henry, 543.
Drowned, 33, 380, 515.
Drums, 313, 531.
Drunkards, 114.
Drunkenness, 517.
Dudley, Joseph, 189, 202, 444, 521, 523, 524, 528-530, 533, 534, 679.
Mercy, 316, 639.
Samuel, 618.
Gov. Thomas, 33, 41, 316, 639.
William A., 635.
Duggins, William, 611.
Dummer, Alice, 649.
Mrs. Elizabeth, 229.
Mrs. Frances, 651, 652.
Hannah, 651.
Jane, 191, 672, 674.
Jeremiah, 334, 651, 652.
John, 229, 230, 542, 571.
Joseph N., 233, 369.
Joshua, 627.
Mrs. Mary, 651.
Nathaniel, 294, 609-611.
Richard, 31-33, 36, 38, 39, 41-43, 45, 54, 59, 64, 69, 77, 79, 80, 84, 103, 105, 108, 110-112, 117, 118, 156, 157, 166, 180, 194, 195, 203, 208-210, 229, 233, 294, 317, 320, 445, 497, 518, 541, 570, 609, 647-652, 676.
Samuel, 579, 627.
Sarah N., 645, 646.
Shubael, 58, 59, 101, 518, 570, 651.
Stephen, 32, 54, 64, 65, 84, 92, 99, 649, 651, 652.
Thomas, 649.
William, 170, 232, 233, 248, 365, 428, 545, 570, 651, 652.
Dummer Academy, 233, 240, 365, 368, 584.
Dummer Farm, 233, 365.
Dunlap, James, 635.
"Dunquerque of America," 547.
Dunster, Henry, 152.
Durant, Alfred, 294.
Rev. Henry, 294, 368.
Durgen, Nicholas, 627.
Dustin, Mrs. Hannah, 519.
Duston, David, 549, 614.
Dutch Ships, 32, 33, 648.
Dutey, Samuel, 566.
Dutton, Rev. Horace, 362.
Stephen, 489.
Dwinnell, Amos, 609, 611.
Henry, 609.
James, 603.

EALES, JOHN, 80, 81, 98.
Samuel, 81.
Ears cut off, 145.
Earthquakes, 250.
East Bay, 561.
East Boston, Mass., 167, 474, 491.
East Creek, 561.
East Haverhill, Mass., 279, 462.
East India Company, 582.
East India Trade, 486.
East Salisbury, Mass., 281.
Easter Sunday, 15.
Easterbrook, Rev. R. D., 388.
Eastern Continent, 366.
Eastern Indians, 522.
Eastern Port, 469, 473.
Eastern Railroad, 274, 275, 474.
Eastern Stage Company, 274, 474.
Eastman, Ezekiel, 612.
James, 576.
Reuben, 615.
Easton, John, 118.
Nicholas, 28, 29, 43, 44, 69, 77, 99, 154, 647-649, 675.
William, 44, 49.
Easton's River, 70.
Eaton, David, 568.
James, 560.
Jonathan, 628.
Joseph, 543, 549.
Obadiah, 566.
Thomas, 565.
William, 568.
Edgell, Rev. John Q. A., 381.
Edgeremet (Indian), 519.
Edmonds, John B., 634.
Edward, Fort, 561, 607.
Edwards, Benjamin, 685.
Malichi, 540.
William, 633.
Elbow Lane, 427.
Elders, 383.
Seats, 359.
Elder's Plain, 230.
Elections, 40, 41, 96.
Electric Railroads, 275.
Elizabeth (servant), 256.
Elizabeth, Cape, Maine, 13.
"Elizabeth" (sloop), 482.
Elizabeth's Isle, 24.
Elliot, Ephraim, 277.
John, 588, 603, 651.

Elliot, *continued.*
Samuel, 615.
Skipper, 572.
Elnesley, William, 84, 88.
Elsee, Captain, 481.
Embargo, 620, 621.
Emerson, Bulkley, 286, 472-474.
Edward, 516.
John, 397-399.
Jonathan, 611.
Joseph, 474.
Samuel, 472, 569.
Thomas, 619.
Emery, Mr., 664.
Mrs. Abigail, 668.
Amos, 611.
Anthony, 32, 668.
Benjamin, 575, 579.
Daniel, 569, 621, 623, 684.
David, 610, 611, 614.
Edmund, 563.
Eliphalet, 627, 666, 667.
Ephraim, 588, 603, 606, 608.
Mrs. Hannah, 668.
Jacob, 628.
John, 32, 39, 55, 59, 84, 85, 88, 90, 94, 100, 110-112, 114-118, 123, 131, 140, 149-151, 158, 159, 163, 164, 168, 179, 205, 206, 208-210, 212, 213, 223, 272, 313, 347, 349, 352, 354, 389, 417, 422-425, 462, 495, 496, 536, 542, 588, 606, 609, 659, 668.
Jonathan, 59, 116, 179, 204, 207, 506-508, 511, 539, 542.
Nathan, 588, 610.
Nathaniel, 291, 589, 683.
Nicholas, 627.
Paul, 625.
Rev. Rufus, 359, 539.
Samuel, 567.
Stephen, 156, 205, 347, 352, 354, 424, 425, 539, 542, 564, 567, 666, 667, 682.
Stephen M., 627.
Thomas, 238, 560.
Emery's, Sergeant, Mill, 423.
Emigrants, 68, 75.
Emigration, 38, 42-44, 146, 168.
Emperor of Austria, 547.
"End of the Town," 115.
"Endeavor" (brigantine), 480.
"Endeavor" (sloop), 530.
Endicott, John, 22, 30, 31, 33-36, 49, 146, 147, 493, 497.
Engine Companies, 285, 287, 288.
Engine House, 285, 287.
England, 13-15, 18, 20, 21, 23, 26, 27, 33, 34, 38, 65, 77, 95, 96, 98, 140, 143, 144, 147, 148, 172, 173, 175, 176, 178, 179, 191, 194, 207, 233, 235, 246, 281, 296, 311, 316, 371, 376, 407, 435, 436, 470, 472, 475, 484, 498, 511, 518, 519, 521, 543, 545, 547, 553-556, 580-582, 599, 620, 621, 624, 630, 642, 648, 651, 652, 664, 672, 679.
England, Francis, 568.
John, 626.
Stephen, 603, 606, 608, 613, 618.
England, Church of, 384.
English, Joseph, 562, 565.
Samuel, 185.
English, 182, 517, 521, 522, 544, 553, 558.
English Army, 235.
English Coast, 488, 624.
English Colonies, 543, 554, 556.
English Commerce, 621.
English Cruiser, 621.
English Flag, 625.
English Forces, 661.
English Frigates, 488, 621, 624.
English Government, 521.
English Grammar, 408, 409.
English Language, 408.
English Nation, 497.
English Plantation, 497.
English Troops, 578-580.
English Wars, 512.
Englishmen, 293, 294.
Enon (Wenham), Mass., 74.
Ensign, The, 34, 35.
Entertaining Quakers, 389.
Epes, Major, 252.
Episcopal Church, 371, 375.
First, in Newbury, 428.
Episcopalians, 383.
Epps, Daniel, 518.
"Erie" (steamship), 492.
"Essex" (vessel), 624.
Essex County, 19, 74, 107, 152, 184, 202, 233, 242, 243, 245-249, 266, 275, 277, 292, 322, 373, 444, 445, 453, 475, 486, 494, 495, 497, 502, 503, 515, 540, 592, 597, 600, 603, 604, 607, 614, 621, 622, 644.
Essex County Regiment, 556, 670.
Essex Institute, 473, 474, 486, 508.
Essex Journal and Merrimack Packet, 273.
Essex-Merrimack Bridge, 241, 277, 298, 430, 442, 464, 486, 488.
Essex Street, 243.
Etymology, 408.
Europe, 467, 485, 543, 547, 620.
Evangelists, 381, 387.

Evans, Benjamin G., 119.
Capt. Jonathan, 604.
Rev. Samuel, 362.
Evening School, 409.
Everenden, Walter, 77.
Everett, Hon. Edward, 310, 504.
Everson, George, 515.
Ewing, C. A. E., 295.
Hugh, 295.
Hugh U., 295.
Hugh U. & Co., 295.
Execution of King Charles I., 172.
Execution for Piracy, 468.
Exeter, N. H., 42, 161, 518, 590, 591, 668.
"Exiles," "The," 146.
Expeditions, 172, 371, 432, 447, 514-516, 520, 527-530, 535, 549, 552, 554, 556, 560, 562, 563, 574.
to Canada, 447, 515, 516.
against Cape Breton, 549, 552, 554, 666.
to Crown Point, 556, 560, 562, 563, 658.
to Lake George, 172, 556.
to Coast of Maine, 520.
to Norridgewock, 527-529.
to Nova Scotia, 530, 535.
to Penobscot River, 574.
against Port Royal, 371.
against Quebec, 514.
Explorers of New England, Early, 13.
Exports, 13, 119.

FACTORIES, 293-295.
at Byfield, 293-295.
Woollen, 293, 294.
Failures, 295.
Fairbanks, Richard, 78, 465.
Fairfield, Conn., 467.
Falls, Leander S., 632.
Falls, The, of Newbury, 64, 83, 115, 182, 227, 229, 230, 308, 647, 648.
"Falls Fight," 507.
Falls Parish, 403.
Falls River, 64, 121, 230, 258, 294, 416, 417, 428.
Bridge over, 416.
Falls of Saco River, 521.
Falls Village, 428.
Falmouth, Eng., 13.
(Portland), Me., 472, 522, 525, 552, 668.
Va., 633.
"Falmouth" (ship), 482.
Faneuil Hall, 581.
Faning, William, 206.
Farley, John D., 626.
Farm, Town, 299.
Farmers, 266, 267, 303, 364.
Farming, 262.
Farms, 64-68, 81, 82, 88, 92-94, 116, 123, 132, 139, 212, 215, 230, 233, 234, 299, 316, 417, 419, 426, 427, 439, 651, 653, 662, 670, 675.
The, 227, 404, 415.
District, 271.
Farnham, Capt. Benjamin, 604.
Daniel, 238, 243, 266, 342, 569.
Jeremiah, 602.
Farrington, Ebenezer, 627.
Fast Day, 502.
Fatherland Farm, 233, 364, 366, 368.
Fay, Henry, 91, 94.
Fear, Cape, 15.
Febiger, Adjutant, 604.
Federal Constitution, 499.
Federal Street, 91, 234, 242, 245, 249, 262, 274, 302, 303, 381, 427, 429, 480, 482, 670.
Fee, James, 632.
Felch, Daniel M., 686.
Fellows, Benjamin, 609, 611.
Ezekiel, 603.
Felton, Cornelius C., 627.
Female Seminary, 392.
Fence Rails, 127.
Fence Viewers, 114, 115, 135.
Fences, 53, 133, 134.
Ferguson, Frank L., 640.
Ferrick, William, 563.
Ferries, 71, 72, 82, 83, 89, 121, 166, 198, 199, 246, 272, 279, 280, 298, 299, 373, 418, 420, 424, 431-437, 439-464, 468, 644.
Amesbury, 298, 299, 422, 428, 439-441.
at Bartlett's Cove, 463.
at Carr's Island, 414, 419, 434, 439.
Goodwin's, 421.
Hook's, 442.
Lower, 454, 456-458.
Landing Place, 427.
March's, 442.
over Merrimack River, 438, 441.
Old-Town, 401, 404.
over Parker River, 431-434.
at Savage's Rock, 462.
Ferry Boats, 272.
Ferry Landings, 419, 421, 427, 428, 437.
Ferry Lot, 54.
Ferry Rates, 435, 459.

Ferry Road, 393, 424.
Ferry, Way to, 418.
Ferrymen, 253, 272, 431, 432, 435, 437, 442, 448, 453, 455, 459, 463, 468, 510.
Fidelity, Oath of, 178.
Field, John, 325.
Fielding, John, 614.
Fifield, William, 120.
Fifth Church, 375.
Fifth Parish, 237-240, 266, 267, 304, 360, 384, 385.
 Boundaries of, 240, 266, 267.
 Church, 384, 385, 584.
 Map of, 239.
Filbrook, Jonathan, 569.
Finch, Simeon, 607.
Fines, 41, 53, 79, 80, 95, 120-124, 127, 141, 142, 144, 146, 162, 216, 217, 253, 283, 331, 396, 414, 664, 678.
Fire Arms, 78.
Fire Department, 288.
Fire Engines, 266, 285-288.
Fire-Locks, 591.
Firemen, 285-288.
Fire Plugs, 302.
Fires, 17, 129, 131, 145, 259, 262, 285, 287, 294, 345, 346, 367, 386, 393.
Firewards, 287.
Firman, John, 181.
First Church, 283, 335, 339, 345, 347, 352, 664.
First Church in Newburyport, 339, 344.
First Church in West Newbury, 339, 361.
First Methodist Episcopal Church, 387.
First Meeting House in Newbury, 654.
First Parish, 129, 227-229, 233-235, 239, 241-243, 246, 249, 269-271, 291, 314, 334, 336, 337, 339, 341, 343, 369, 383, 403-406, 408, 410, 428.
 Boundaries of, 227.
 Burying Ground, 410.
 Church, 382, 410, 584.
 Map of, 239.
 Meeting House, 241, 249, 269, 271, 345, 346, 404, 654.
 Town House in, 270.
First Parish of the Methodist Episcopal Church for Newbury and West Newbury, 393.
First Parish, Newburyport, 345.
First Presbyterian Church in Newbury, 378, 381.
 in Newburyport, 345, 384.
First Religious Society in Newbury, 309.
 in Newburyport, 378.
Fish, Benjamin, 559.
Fish, 17, 20, 21, 23, 25, 30, 167, 183, 193, 281-284, 462, 492.
 Cullers of, 119.
 Curing, 167.
Fish Street, 89, 90, 243, 265-267, 404, 406, 429.
Fish Wardens, 284.
Fish Ways, 284.
Fisher, Mary, 144.
Fisheries, 547.
Fishermen, 281, 521.
Fishing, 182, 262, 281, 284, 492, 547.
Fiske, Rev. Daniel T., 386.
Fitts, Jo:, 89.
 Richard, 54, 84, 88, 90, 141, 163.
 Samuel, 612.
Fitz, Mark, 292.
Flag, English, 625.
Flagon, 153.
Flags, 279, 309, 313, 333, 479, 497.
 of Truce, 519, 522, 578.
Flanders, Benjamin, 603, 611.
 Charles, 625.
 Ezekiel, 609.
 Hezekiah, 576.
 Jarvis, 576.
 John, 588, 603, 608.
 Levi, 606.
 Philip, 199.
 Richard, 575, 579, 605.
Flanders', Philip, Barn, 199.
Flat Island, 548.
Fleet, Mr., 471, 472.
Flints, 225.
Floating Bridge, 436-438.
Flood, Andrew, 565.
 Benjamin, 606.
 Ebenezer, 559, 567, 572, 575, 579.
 Enoch, 570, 572, 601, 609, 610.
 Israel, 609.
 John, 550, 575, 579.
 Philip, 204.
 Richard, 565.
 William, 587, 601.
Flour, 478.
Flowers, 80.
Floyd, Enoch, 627.
 Enos, 628.
 John D., 635.
 Joseph, 632.
 Lyman, 634.
 Michael, 119.
 Moses, 629.
 Silas, 626.
Floyd's Lane, 139, 333.
Follansbee, Enoch, 629.

Follansbee, *continued.*
Francis, 609.
James, 606, 610, 611, 614.
John, 286, 567, 629.
Nehemiah, 588, 603, 608.
Thomas, 180, 372, 542, 567, 573; 588, 603, 606.
William, 615.
Folsom, Rev. Omar W., 346.
Foot, Lieutenant, 537.
Enoch, 618.
John, 539.
Forbes, Mrs. A. B., 368.
Ford, Thomas, 563, 566, 576.
Foreign Ports, 480.
Foreign Trade, 485, 489.
Forest, 126, 131.
Forked Harbor, 548.
Fort Williams Hospital, Va., 635.
Forth, River, 25.
Fortifications, 207, 209, 547, 550, 573, 574.
Fortress on Cape Breton, 547.
Fortress at Louisbourg, Cape Breton, 550.
Forts, 15, 35, 36, 57, 207, 432, 465, 500, 506, 507, 511, 514, 518, 519, 521-525, 527, 530-532, 534, 535, 553-557, 560, 561, 574, 607, 635, 647.
at Casco Bay, 521-525.
Plan of, 524, 525.
on Castle Island, 207.
Edward, 607.
James, 465.
Indian, at Narragansett, 506, 511.
Movable, 647.
at Oswego, 560.
Palisaded, 527.
at Pemaquid, 518, 519.
at Port Royal, 514, 530-532, 534, 535.
Stone, near Falls of Saco River, 521.
Foss, John C., 633.
Foster, Andrew, 560.
Rev. Davis, 381.
Henry H., 632.
Rev. John, 388.
Joseph, 185, 575, 579.
Nathaniel, 564, 566, 570.
William, 237, 589.
Fountain, George, 142.
Four Rock Bridge, 139, 157, 258, 415.
Fourth Church, 339, 357.
Fourth Parish, 228, 236, 237, 239, 241, 270, 301, 379, 386, 400, 492.
Boundaries of, 228, 236, 237.
Fourth Parish, *continued.*
Church, 379, 393.
Map of, 239.
Meeting House, 241, 380.
Town House in, 270.
Fowler, Mr., 242.
Hill, 539.
Lemuel, 587.
Moses H., 686.
Philip, 28, 99.
Samuel, 390, 610.
Fox, Stephen R., 626.
Fox Island, 548.
Fox Point, Dorchester, Mass., 81.
France, 172, 173, 235, 329, 521, 547, 553, 555, 556, 580, 620, 621, 623.
Francis, Col. Ebenezer, 606, 614.
Franklin, Benjamin, 378, 472.
William, 28, 55, 80, 84, 93.
Frazier, Collin, 205, 229, 541.
John, 570.
Moses, 292.
Free School, 405.
Freeholders, 64, 84, 92-94, 97, 127, 128, 133, 135-138, 422.
Freeman, Robert, 254.
Freemen, 40, 41, 46, 47, 49, 53, 55-57, 64, 81, 84, 95-98, 101-103, 109, 137, 154, 171, 173, 175-178, 210, 497, 647, 651, 675, 676, 678, 679.
List of, 98.
Freeze, ——, 570.
Elizabeth, 484.
George, 567.
Isaac, 484.
Jacob, 526, 613.
James, 181, 541.
French, Calvin, 543.
Elias, 388.
James, 568, 576.
John, 526.
Joseph, 456.
Capt. Joshua, 608.
Moses, 576.
Samuel, 615.
Simeon, 615.
Rev. William, 393.
French, 450, 478, 514, 517, 520-523, 530, 534, 535, 547, 549, 554, 555, 557, 558, 560.
French and Indian War, 545.
French Colonies' Forts, 554.
French Forces, 580.
French Government, 514, 521.
French Language, 392.
French Navy, 573.
French Neutrals, 553, 554.
French Privateers, 485.

French Troops, 531, 572, 574, 579.
French Vessels, 19.
French War, 171, 512, 514.
Frenchmen, 297, 522.
Freshet, 279.
Freshwater Cove, 551, 555.
Friend, Henry, 285, 569.
John, 569.
"Friend's Adventure" (sloop), 482.
Friends Meeting House, 241, 391, 392.
Friends Monthly Meeting, 389.
Friends Quarterly Meeting, 389.
Friends, Society of, 389, 391.
Frigates, 555, 621, 624.
English, 621, 624.
Fright, The Ipswich, 589, 591.
Frog Pond, 82, 83, 90, 115, 139, 140, 235, 260, 308, 403, 409.
Fronsac, Passage of, 548.
Frost, Major, 517.
James N., 633.
Winfield, 634.
Frothingham, Andrew, 293.
Stephen, 281.
Fruit Dish, 153.
Frye, Colonel, 578.
Col. James, 604.
John, 54, 75, 84, 90, 93.
Fuddocks, 217.
Fuller, Ens. John, 502.
Fulling Mills, 157, 258.
Fundy, Bay of, 14.
Furbush, William, 169.
Furnaces, 670.
Furniture, 294.
Furs, 13, 17, 20.

GABAROUS BAY, 548, 550, 551, 555.
Gage, General, 682.
Governor, 585, 592.
Capt. Nathaniel, 604.
Gen. Thomas, 583.
Gaines, John, 512.
Gale, Daniel, 539, 613, 618.
Gallashan, Abraham, 286.
Galleries, 352, 360, 374, 375.
in Meeting Houses, 314, 317, 318, 331, 335, 339.
Gaol, 245, 247, 248.
Gardner, Mr., 655.
Israel, 567.
Capt. Joseph, 502.
Robert, 142, 143.
Samuel, 575, 579.
Garland, Joseph, 562, 566.
Garrison at Cape Breton, 547.
Gary, Alice, 149.
Gateman, 225.
Gates, Major-General, 596, 597.
Gates, 225, 261, 275, 418, 423, 424.
Turnpike, 275.
Gay, Rev. Joshua S., 368.
Gazetteer, 366.
Gedney, Colonel, 520.
Bartholomew, 246.
General Court, 23, 27, 29, 30, 33-36, 38-46, 51, 52, 56-58, 60-62, 66, 68-81, 86, 87, 91, 96-98, 101, 103, 106-108, 116, 121, 124, 127, 140, 143-148, 150-154, 157, 160-165, 167, 169, 170, 172-178, 182, 183, 185, 188, 189, 209, 216-218, 220, 222, 223, 227, 231, 233, 234, 236-238, 240, 245, 246, 251, 257, 259, 266, 267, 270-272, 274-277, 279, 280, 282-285, 287-289, 291-293, 300-307, 318, 320-322, 336, 348-350, 353, 357, 360, 364, 366, 368-370, 377, 379, 380, 383, 384, 396-398, 410, 411, 413, 416, 418, 419, 427, 431-434, 440, 441, 447, 448, 452, 453, 460, 465, 466, 468, 475-477, 479, 493-497, 499-502, 510-512, 523, 524, 526, 527, 530, 539, 540, 549, 552, 553, 560, 573, 583-585, 592-598, 607, 614, 619, 621-623, 639, 644, 645, 647-649, 653, 662, 675-683, 685.
at Salem, 583-585.
Geography, 366.
George, Amos, 277.
James, 255.
Moses, 566, 576, 618.
Nicholas, 566.
Samuel, 515, 516.
George, Lake, 172, 556, 557, 559-561, 571, 573, 574, 610.
Battle of, 557, 558.
Plan of, 558.
George I., King, 652.
George II., King, 553.
Georgetown, Mass., 231, 274, 295, 307, 308, 412, 519.
Georgetown, Rowley & Ipswich Railroad Company, 275.
Georgia, 554.
Gerrish, Captain, 319, 330.
Mr., 471, 472.
Benjamin, 286.
Edmund, 571.
Enoch, 570, 572.
Jacob, 301, 305, 570, 582, 587, 592, 600, 601, 612, 683.
Mrs. Jane, 229.
John, 212.
Joseph, 102, 218, 236, 243, 244, 248, 429, 512, 541, 564, 566, 570, 575, 581, 583-585, 591, 592, 681-683, 685.
Mary, 664.

Gerrish, *continued.*
Mayo, 288.
Moses, 108, 111, 118, 180, 196, 203, 208, 217, 254, 399, 401, 571.
Serg. Paul, 587.
Richard, 252, 253.
Samuel, 300, 481, 559, 568, 570, 578, 579, 582, 584, 586, 588, 595, 602-604, 610, 683.
Stephen, 587.
William, 60, 69, 93, 94, 100, 104-106, 110, 111, 137, 158, 163, 164, 176, 177, 183, 220, 494, 495, 502, 593, 664, 676, 678.
Gerrish's Farm, 230.
Gerrish Pasture, 129, 130, 139, 307.
Getchell, Miss Emily A., 589, 616.
Nathaniel, 566, 567.
Ghent, 630.
Gibson, George W., 635.
Samuel, 572.
Gideon, Jacob, 286.
Gifts, 667.
Gigs, 271.
Gilbert, John, 103.
Capt. Rawleigh, 15.
Gile, Rev. Thomas W., 393.
Giles, Asa, 560.
Gillet, Matthew, 28.
Gilshenon, ——, 297.
Gittings, George, 70.
Gladding, John, 182.
Gladding's Spring, 156.
Glass, 224, 330, 355, 581.
Duty on, 581.
of Meeting House, 315.
Tax on, 296.
Window, 337.
Glazier, Beamsley, 549.
Gleason, Rev. George L., 369.
Glebe Lands, 255.
Glen Mills, 157, 258.
Glendale, Va., 632.
Globe Steam Mills, 303.
Gloucester, Mass., 20, 74, 152-154, 185, 194, 476, 573, 592, 600, 603, 625.
Glover, Beamsley, 549.
Habbackuk, 177.
Goats, 56, 435.
Godfrey, Andrew, 180, 659.
John, 28.
Jonathan, 576, 579.
Joseph, 562.
Mrs. Mary, 193.
Nathaniel, 602.
Peter, 59, 115, 141, 180, 206, 429, 541.
Goff, Widow, 88, 90.
John, 54, 84, 93, 99.
Goffe, Col. William, 172, 173.
Goldsmith, 191, 265.
Goldwire, George, 142.
Gondolas, 482.
Goodale, Susanna, 664.
Goodhue, Hezekiah, 605.
Lt. John, 615.
Goodin, Daniel, 566.
Gooding, Enoch, 563.
Goodridge, Colonel, 559.
Benjamin, 116, 181, 205, 515, 519.
Daniel, 587, 601, 612, 619.
David, 629.
Edmund, 261, 653.
Enoch, 570.
Jeremiah, 141, 181, 516.
John, 526, 562, 572.
Joseph, 112, 116-118, 181, 203, 542, 588, 589, 603.
Josiah, 570, 572, 605.
Oliver, 549, 587, 601, 609.
Philip, 229.
Richard, 570.
Stephen W., 635.
William, 608, 611.
Goods, Lost, 217.
Goodwin, Major, 628.
Amos, 628.
Daniel, 628.
George P., 633.
Edward, 439, 515.
Jonathan, 613.
Joseph, 630.
Josiah, 628.
Lazarus, 516.
Nathaniel, 628.
Richard, 442, 575, 579, 612.
Samuel, 287, 288.
Saul, 628.
Thomas, 628.
William, 306.
Goodwin's Ferry, 421.
Gookin, Daniel, 189.
Gordon, George, 628.
Timothy, 625.
Rev. William, 388.
Gorges, Sir Ferdinando, 15, 18, 19, 178.
Capt. Robert, 27.
Gosnold, Capt. Bartholomew, 13.
Goss, James, 568.
Gould, John, 565, 575, 579, 626.
Joseph, 515, 516, 633.
Phineas B., 634.
Samuel, 610, 628.
William, 612.
William H., 634.
Gove, Edward, 392.

Government of New England, 95-97.
Government, Provisional, 498.
Governors, 23, 26, 40, 41, 68, 70, 74, 75, 77, 80, 85, 95, 96, 146, 147, 160, 171, 173, 174, 176, 188, 194, 195, 197, 200, 201, 208, 209, 233, 234, 247, 267, 307, 316, 369, 371, 385, 420, 443, 445-447, 453, 465, 466, 468, 469, 475, 478, 479, 498, 499, 502, 511, 512, 516, 518, 519, 521, 524, 530, 531, 534, 535, 538, 543-545, 549, 552, 556, 560, 583, 585, 592, 625, 639, 648, 649, 652, 679-682.
Governor-General, 26.
Gowing, Henry A., 295.
Graham, John, 364, 609, 612.
Grain, 53, 201, 265, 597.
 Price of, 201.
Grammar, English, 409.
Grammar School, 332, 365, 396, 401-403, 405, 406.
Granary Burying Ground, Boston, 652.
Grand Jury, 150.
Granger, John, 180.
 Lanslet, 141.
Grant, Landras, 612.
 William, 571.
Grantham, William, 323.
Grants, 15, 18, 19, 22, 30, 31, 36, 48, 64-70, 74-76, 83, 85, 88, 89, 91-93, 114, 158, 159, 167-172, 194, 196, 212, 213, 354, 395, 401, 415, 416, 418-420, 439, 456, 482, 512, 643, 647, 651, 653, 662, 670, 671, 675.
Grapes, 503.
Grave Digging, 331.
Gravel Hill, 415.
Graves, Captain, 647.
Gravestone Inscription, 391.
Gravestones, 60, 231, 360, 651.
Gray, Frederic, 627.
Great Bay, 24.
Great Britain, 172, 173, 219, 296, 329, 583, 596, 621, 622, 652.
Great Creek, 69.
Great Hill, 57, 83, 308.
Great Island, 195.
Great Pasture, 225, 267.
Great Pine Island River, 240, 241.
Great River, 65, 69, 91, 92, 145, 222, 650, 653.
"Great Rock," 393.
Great Street, 66.
Great Tom, 183.
Greek, 324.
Greeley, James V., 634.
 Samuel, 568.
Greeley, *continued.*
 Shubael, 568.
Green, Bartholomew, 192.
 Henry, 143.
 Thomas, 205.
Green, The, 59, 654.
Green Island, 548, 551.
Green River, 507.
Greene, Major-General, 602.
Greene's Harbor, 24.
Greenfield, Samuel, 44.
Greenland, N. H., 385, 512.
Greenland, Dr. Henry, 140, 142-144, 151, 664.
 Mary, 144.
Greenleaf, Ensign, 111, 117, 118, 330.
 Mr., 79, 88, 94.
 Abel, 293, 608, 609.
 Abner, 628.
 Alett, 569.
 Mrs. Anne, 644.
 Benjamin, 293, 296, 570, 656, 681, 682.
 Daniel, 540.
 Elias, 609.
 Edmund, 55, 62, 63, 71, 76, 84, 87, 99, 254, 262, 672, 359, 493, 494, 541, 659.
 Ens. Edward, 493.
 Henry, 575, 579, 609.
 Jacob, 628.
 John, 206, 245, 293, 564, 656.
 Joseph, 457, 458, 541.
 Joshua, 563, 568, 644.
 Judith, 668.
 Mahew, 569.
 Capt. Moses, 605, 614.
 Capt. Richard, 569.
 Samuel, 205, 286, 563, 569, 595, 683.
 Sarah, 644.
 Stephen, 93, 103, 106, 110, 112, 128, 146, 155, 163, 179, 182, 196, 205, 208, 210, 212, 214, 215, 247, 248, 422, 424, 429, 482, 496, 498, 499, 501, 503, 507, 514-516, 518, 536, 540, 679, 680.
 Thomas, 567.
 Tristram, 354, 516, 542.
 William, 589, 609.
Greenleaf's Lane, 241, 242, 270, 336, 403, 427, 442, 664.
Greenough, Parker, 629.
 Richard, 570.
 Samuel, 549.
Grey-Hound, The, 323.
Gridiron, 578.
Griffin, Eben, 391.
 Eliphalet, 565.
 Jonathan, 563.

Griffin, *continued.*
Mark, 628.
William, 578.
Griffith, Henry P., 633.
Grist Mills, 38, 39, 156, 157, 258-262, 294, 415.
at Little River, 415.
Grove, Mathew, 503.
Guard, 62, 225, 252, 493.
Guides, 501.
Guile, John, 182.
Samuel, 55, 71, 84, 93, 100.
Gunboats, 484, 492, 621.
Gunners' Creek, 199.
Gunpowder, 75-78.
Guns, 43, 485, 486, 488, 530, 534, 535, 593, 624, 648.
Guppy, Samuel, 298.
Guppy & Armstrong, 294, 298.
Gutterson, Josiah, 559.
Guyon, Island a, 548.
Gwynn, Anthony, 376.

HABITS OF INDIANS, 182.
Hackett, James, 566.
Hackney Coach, 271.
Hadley, Mass., 503-505, 507.
Hadley, Rev. Willis A., 387.
Hadley's Garrison, 537.
Haggott, Moses, 559.
Hague, The, 172, 521.
Hale, Amos, 611.
Anne, 644.
Benjamin, 274.
Benjamin W., 685.
Daniel, 586, 587, 684.
David, 608.
Ebenezer, 625, 684.
Edward A., 687.
Eliphalet, 590, 668.
Mrs. Elizabeth, 658, 665, 668.
Enoch, 306, 605, 658, 685.
Ezekiel, 356, 461, 656.
Ezra, 575, 617, 623, 633, 640.
Henry, 528, 541.
Jacob, 274, 491, 587, 601.
John, 116, 118, 180, 182, 194, 203, 205, 214, 318, 541, 586, 668.
Jonathan, 606.
Joseph, 170, 274, 512, 542, 582, 584.
Levi, 613.
Lewis H., 633.
Mrs. Martha, 668.
Mrs. Mary J., 491.
Moses, 229, 230, 269, 358, 360, 364, 570, 575, 656, 657, 668.
Moses Emery, 294.
Nathan, 243, 244, 285, 568, 657, 665, 668.
Oliver, 685.
Hale, *continued.*
Miss Patience, 668.
Richard, 543, 549, 575, 579.
Col. Robert, 549.
Samuel, 171, 658.
Sarah, 186.
Lt. Simeon, 586.
Thomas, 52, 53, 55, 84, 89, 98, 99, 101, 110, 111, 115-118, 128, 132, 141, 176, 179-181, 204, 209, 213, 214, 299, 354, 356, 421, 428, 433, 516, 541, 543, 649, 665, 680, 681.
Willard J., 686.
William, 588, 603, 606, 668.
Halifax, Mass., 572, 573.
N. S., 555.
Halifax, Fort, 556.
Halifax, Earl of, Tavern, 273.
Hall, Benjamin W., 628.
Eliphalet, 625.
Ens. Enoch, 628.
John, 94.
Oliver, 625.
Pero, 604, 609, 610, 613, 614, 618.
William, 628.
Halmer, Benjamin, 630.
Hamilton, Andrew, 467, 468.
Hampshire County, 505.
Hampstead, N. H., 172.
Hampton, N. H., 42, 78, 91, 106, 120, 121, 124, 143, 145, 148, 149, 152, 161-163, 167, 168, 282, 315, 333, 389, 419, 431, 434-437, 439, 441, 493, 511, 512, 534, 559, 590, 666, 668.
Hampton Falls, N. H., 42, 197, 385, 591.
Hancock, John, 585, 683.
Joseph, 613, 618.
Hanging, Execution by, 46.
Hanover Street, 333, 359, 362.
Hant, Nathaniel, 618.
Harbard, John, 549, 602.
Harbor of Cape Breton, 547.
Hardy, Ezekiel, 575, 579.
George, 181, 205.
Jacob, 543.
Moody, 609.
Thomas, 612.
William, 543.
Harlem Heights, Battle at, 602.
Harmon, Colonel, 545.
Capt. Johnson, 544, 545.
Harper, William, 436.
Harpswell, Me., 546.
Harriman, Asa, 575, 579.
Moses, 615.
Harris, Colonel, 559.
Benjamin, 256, 376, 483.
Giles, 550.

Harris, *continued.*
Rev. Henry, 371.
John, 265, 549, 614, 616, 618.
Samuel, 569.
Thomas, 503.
William, 568.
Hart, Benjamin, 473.
Mr. L., 205.
Lawrence, 515, 543.
Hartford, Conn., 467.
Hartshorn, John, 563.
Jonathan, 569.
Harvard, Rev. John, 151.
Harvard College, 151, 161, 191, 192, 333, 344, 379, 382, 652, 666-668, 682.
Harvard Hall, 153, 154.
Harvey, Sergeant, 616.
John, 506, 507, 617.
Capt. Thomas, 537-539.
William, 566.
Haskell, George W., 343.
Rev. S. B., 387.
Dea. Solomon, 291.
Stephen, 563, 565.
Haskins, John, 536, 660.
Hatch, Nathan, 615.
Hatchets, 522.
Hatfield, Mass., 503, 505-507.
Hathorne, John, 246, 444.
William, 175, 319.
Haverhill, Eng., 71.
Mass., 70, 71, 106, 152-154, 162, 163, 167, 168, 198, 277, 279, 280, 373, 379, 461, 462, 497, 500, 512, 518, 519, 528, 536, 537, 539, 540, 550, 559, 563, 573, 592, 604, 605, 607, 665.
Haverhill, Mass., Indian Attacks on, 518, 519.
Haverhill, Mass., Indian Massacre at, 518, 519.
Havre de Grace, 14.
Hawkins, Thomas, 478.
Hay, 53, 419, 424.
Hay Boats, 482.
Hay Scales, 265.
Hayes, James, 563, 566.
John, 609, 612.
Hayne, Hon. Robert T., 366.
Haynes, Ebenezer, 618.
Jonathan, 171.
William C., 632.
Hayward, John, 466.
Haywards, 109, 132.
Hazeltine, Lt. David, 559.
Samuel, 660.
Zachariah, 606.
Hazen, Daniel C., 627.
William, 575.
Heard, George W., 297.
John, 169.
Heath, Dudley, 629.
Isaac, 651.
Nathaniel, 566.
Capt. Richard, 628.
Hebrew, 324.
"Hector" (ship), 35.
Hedges, 131, 137, 283.
Heifer Common, 132.
Heifers, 32, 134.
Heirs, Thomas, 515.
Hemp, 370.
Henderson, Francis D., 687.
Hendricks, Abigail, 189.
Cesar, 615.
John, 189, 204.
Herbert, Rev. Charles D., 362.
Herds, 112, 131, 132, 135-137.
Herdsmen, 131, 134-137.
Heresy, 38, 43, 165, 389, 493, 648, 651.
Hermon, Leonard, 572.
Hern, Mr., 253.
Heron Islands, 548.
Herrick, Capt. Israel, 574.
John, 180.
Hewiston, Benjamin, 629.
Hidden, David, 609.
John, 605.
Joseph, 605, 612.
Hides, 154.
High School, 271, 410.
Building, 271.
High Street, 90, 134, 238, 240, 243, 267, 302, 303, 306, 308, 310, 333, 373, 375, 381, 386, 390-392, 404, 405, 414, 418-420, 424, 426, 428, 429, 437, 593, 672, 674.
Highfield, 233.
"Highflyer" (ship), 492.
Highway Commission, State, 415.
Highway Districts, 427.
Highway Taxes, 286.
Highways, 40, 112, 121, 123, 124, 128, 129, 139, 212, 213, 279, 413-430, 438, 439, 449, 450, 454, 456, 460, 465, 480.
Surveyors of, 47, 48, 109-112, 413, 414, 427.
Hill (Hills), Benjamin, 236, 526, 536, 539, 589.
Charles, 627.
Ebenezer, 181.
Edmund, 629.
Eliphalet, 589, 629.
Mrs. Hannah, 665.
James, 565.
John, 627.
Jonathan, 539.
Joseph, 102, 105, 403, 516, 536, 539, 665, 677, 678.
Joshua, 589.

Hill, *continued.*
Nathaniel, 542, 588, 603.
Obadiah, 588, 603, 627.
Philip K., 410.
Mrs. Priscilla, 665.
Samuel, 204, 507, 511, 588, 603, 606, 607, 612.
Thomas, 588, 603, 606, 684.
Vallentine, 169.
William, 589.
Hill Street, 89, 90.
Hills, 228, 260, 262.
Hilton, Andrew, 578.
John, 565.
William, 88, 93, 100, 254.
Col. Winthrop, 528-530.
Hincks, John, 202, 444.
Hingham, Mass., 39-41, 78, 81, 493.
Historical Society of "Ould Newbury," 310.
Hitchcock, Rev. Albert W., 387.
Hoag, Benjamin, 516.
John, 181, 389.
Jonathan, 536, 539.
Hoar, Dr. Leonard, 322.
Hobbs, John, 503, 504.
Hobson, John, 512.
Joseph, 549.
Hodgdon, Cesar, 613.
Joseph, 612.
Hodge, Charles, 238, 570.
Michael, 293, 481, 482.
Stephen, esq., 300.
Hodgkins, Aquilla, 573, 576.
Francis, 286, 565.
Jacob, 615.
Hogg, Samuel, 559, 567.
Hogreeves, 119.
Hogs, 119, 203-207, 435.
Hogsheads, 119.
Holbrook, Rev. Daniel, 336, 337.
Holinsbee, Thomas, 206.
Holladay, Serg. Francis, 563.
John, 566, 600, 602.
Thomas, 614.
Holland, 75, 77, 521, 553.
Holland, Edward, 565.
Joseph, 516.
"Hollander" (bark), 492.
Hollingsworth, Richard, 475.
Hollis Professor of Divinity, 379.
Holman, Solomon, 536, 539, 568.
Holmes, Alice, 184.
Benjamin, 630.
Joseph, 613, 618.
Holt, Ebenezer, 572.
Miss Elizabeth, 59.
Nicholas, 32, 41, 48-50, 53, 54, 59, 62, 63, 75, 84, 99, 158, 413.
Holt, *continued.*
Samuel, 559, 565.
Holt's Point, Nicholas, 158.
Holt's Rocks, 127, 199, 277, 279, 283, 459-462.
Bridge at, 463.
Holton, Rev. Charles S., 346.
Hoods, 122, 123.
Hook, Sergeant, 522.
Humphrey, 442, 462, 463.
Josiah, 568.
Hook's Ferry, 279, 442.
Hook's Point, 222.
Hooper, Stephen, 406, 425, 684.
Hooper's Mill, 240.
"Hope" (brigantine), 529, 530, 535.
Hopkins, Mrs. Louisa P., 310.
Hopkinsianism, 365.
Horn, 471.
Horn Books, 407.
Horne, Ephraim B., 629.
Perley L., 233.
Horne Ponds, 24.
Horsam, Jonathan, 612.
Horsch, John M., 635.
Horse, Troop of, 196, 197.
Horseback, 271, 340.
Horsemen, 279, 502.
Horses, 32, 33, 52, 53, 113, 127, 131, 133-137, 203-207, 217, 222, 223, 246, 248, 271-274, 277, 340, 421, 423, 431, 432, 434, 435, 447-449, 451-453, 458-461, 463, 466, 469, 471, 481, 482, 495, 505, 518, 589.
Horton, James, 566.
Rev. Jotham, 388.
Obadiah, 286.
Horton's Wharf, 484.
Hospital, Inoculating, 291-293.
Newburyport, 590.
House of Correction, 248.
House Lots, 170.
Household Furniture, 294.
Houses, 39, 42, 56, 91, 127, 134, 142, 154, 166, 167, 203-207, 214, 224, 226-228, 237, 238, 243-245, 248, 256, 259, 262, 270, 273, 274, 288, 292, 293, 298, 299, 307, 309, 330, 331, 333, 350-353, 393, 403, 419, 425-429, 438, 442, 451, 457, 459, 460, 463, 465, 472, 479, 483, 485, 486, 489, 505, 510, 512, 519, 534, 536, 540, 544, 550, 556, 649, 658, 660, 662, 664, 665, 670-674.
Ministers', 330, 331.
Hovey, Thomas, 559.
How, Farnum, 287.
Jacob, 601, 612.
James, 634.

Howard, Horatio M., 295.
Isaac, 602.
Nathaniel, 566, 575, 579.
Roger S., 305.
Stephen, 615.
Howell, Robert, 628.
Howlett, Ensign, 416.
Thomas, 160.
Howsley, Samuel, 571.
Hoyt, Ephraim, 515, 573, 615.
Joseph, 626.
Moses, 549, 552, 569, 586, 609.
Robert, 615.
Samuel, 616.
Hoyt's Lane, 354.
Hubbard, Rev. Ebenezer, 361.
Richard, 478.
Rev. William, 21, 182, 504.
Hudson, Eleazer, 516, 566, 569.
Capt. James, 296.
Hudson Bay, 547.
Hudson River, 15, 196, 500, 561, 616.
Huff, John, 612.
Huggins, John, 181.
Hull, Mass., 530.
Hull, Hannah, 191.
John, 163, 164, 189, 191, 417, 508, 652.
Hull's Bridge, John, 417.
Hull's Plain, John, 417.
Humphrey, Mr., 372.
John, 30, 31, 39.
Hunsley's Hill, 83, 308.
Hunt, Elias, 626.
Isaiah, 612.
Josiah, 605, 609.
Nathaniel, 286, 562, 565.
Stephen, 565.
Zebediah, 563, 578.
Hunter, William, 372.
Hunting, 182.
"Huntress" (ship), 491.
Huntries, James, 617.
Hurricane, 670.
Husbandman, 32.
Husbandry, 167.
Huse, Abel, 59, 84, 89, 100, 141, 176, 180, 205, 206, 354, 542, 659.
Caleb B., 686, 687.
Carr, 572.
Enoch, 589, 609.
John, 424, 515, 576, 616.
Samuel, 578.
Thomas, 516, 542, 589, 685.
William, 205, 372, 516.
Hussey, Christopher, 44, 45, 47, 53, 67, 71, 99, 146, 436.
John, 602.
Mary, 44.
Hutchins, Hezekiah, 568, 579.
John, 55, 84, 88, 123, 163, 575, 579, 612.
Hutchinson, Colonel, 283.
Governor, 583, 682.
Mrs. Anne, 38, 493, 648, 651.
Serg. Edward, 501.
Col. Elisha, 533.
Thomas, 534, 545, 583.
Hute, Obed, 609.
Huts, 521.
Hymns, Dr. Watts', 340.

ICE, 279, 446.
Ilsley, Anthony, 586.
Elisha, 102, 118, 171, 181, 204.
Isaac, 179, 204, 505-507.
Isaiah, 288, 603, 606.
John, 178.
Jonathan, 660.
Joseph, 59, 60, 112, 116, 118, 178, 181, 202, 207, 213, 214, 516, 567, 572, 660.
Joshua, 606.
Lt. Moses, 586.
Nathaniel M., 633.
Paul, 60, 563, 572, 629.
Stephen, 261, 262, 287, 288, 563, 606, 636, 685.
Thomas, 567.
Wade, 626.
William, 54, 93, 103, 109, 110, 115-117, 163, 178, 179, 182, 217, 337, 338, 629.
Ilsley Hill, 83, 228, 308.
Immigrants, 144.
Importations, 296, 407, 581.
Duties on, 581.
Tax on, 296.
Impressed Soldiers, 536, 540.
Ince, Jonathan, 161.
Incendiary Fires, 386.
Independence, Declaration of, 595.
Indian Attacks, 57, 229, 519, 521, 539.
on Brown Family, 519.
on Goodridge Family, 519.
on Haverhill, 539.
at Turkey Hill, 229.
on Wells, Me., 521.
Indian Captives, 539.
Indian Church at Norridgewock, 544.
Indian Corn, 331.
Indian Deeds, 182-185.
Indian Field, 184.
Indian Hill, 83, 183, 184, 228, 308.
Indian Massacres, 521, 539.
Indian Fort at Narragansett, 432, 506.

Indian River, 240, 241, 260, 261, 404, 462.
Bridge, 240.
Indian Settlement at Norridgewock, 544.
Indian Wars, 493, 511, 514.
Indians, 13-17, 20, 24, 25, 43, 46, 57, 78, 124, 146, 160, 178, 182-185, 202, 209, 229, 253, 254, 432, 450, 493, 499-501, 503-508, 511, 514, 516-524, 527-530, 533-535, 539, 543-545, 553, 557, 578, 667.
Attacks by, 57, 229, 519, 521, 539.
on Brown Family, 519.
on Goodridge Family, 519.
on Haverhill, 539.
at Turkey Hill, 229.
on Wells, Me., 521.
Eastern, 522.
Job, 184.
John, 183.
Kate, 184.
Mary, 184.
Narragansett, 502.
Pennacook, 500, 522.
Penobscot, 202.
Pequot, 499, 500.
Settlements of, 182, 183.
Slaves, 253, 254.
Old William, 184.
Informers of Deer, 119, 120.
Ingersoll, Zebulon, 588, 612.
Inhabitants, Admission of, 49.
Innholders, 72, 273, 373, 466, 593, 597.
Innkeepers, 442.
Inoculation for Smallpox, 291-293.
Inoculation Hospital, 291-293.
Inscriptions, 124, 504, 651.
on Monument at Muddy Brook, 504.
Installations, 361, 362, 366, 368, 369, 382, 384-387.
Interpreters, 501.
Invention of Stove, 662.
Inventor, 298.
Inventory of Estate of Daniel Pierce, 670.
Ipswich, Mass., 18, 21, 23, 25, 29-31, 33, 34, 39-41, 44, 61, 67, 68, 70, 74, 77, 78, 80, 81, 83, 104, 120, 121, 124, 140, 148, 151-153, 157, 160, 165, 173, 176, 177, 182-184, 191, 220, 222, 246, 247, 273-276, 296, 297, 308, 311, 318, 320, 331, 341, 352, 355, 393, 396, 413, 416-418, 420, 423, 433, 435, 436, 443, 449, 453, 468, 470, 472, 476, 479, 493-495, 500, 502, 504, 512,
Ipswich, Mass., *continued.* 518, 564, 573, 584, 590-593, 597, 600, 603, 606, 607, 621, 643, 650, 662, 665, 666, 675, 683, 687.
Ipswich Fright, The, 589, 591.
Ipswich Latin School, 396.
Ipswich River, 220, 252, 253, 308.
"Ipswich Society," 512.
Ireland, 30, 172, 173, 329.
Irish, 30.
Iron Head, 548.
Iron Pipe, 303.
Islands, 166.
Isles of Shoals, 142.
Italian Language, 392.
Italy, 485.
Ivees, Jacob, 526.
Ivie, John, 515.

JACK, KING'S, 479.
Jackman, Abel, 615.
Benjamin, 605, 609.
David, 299.
Elias, 299, 488.
George W., 411, 492, 686.
James, 93, 103, 116-118, 141, 176, 181, 182, 203, 542, 543, 660.
John, 570.
Joseph, 299.
Joseph N., 627.
Mathias, 626.
Noah, 626.
Reuben, 343.
Richard, 181, 203, 433, 541, 610, 611, 628.
Samuel, 626.
Stephen, 217, 491, 492, 573, 575, 579.
Timothy, 571.
Jackson, Dr. George, 668.
Mrs. Joanna, 668.
Jonathan, 154.
Pomp, 619.
Thomas, 447.
Jacob, Sergeant, 160.
"Jacob Jones" (ship), 489.
Jail, 245, 247-249.
Jail Keeper, 248.
Jailer's House, 248.
Jamaco (in Amesbury), 536, 537.
James, Caleb, 605.
Gen. Charles T., 302.
James (Indian), 24, 254.
James, Sagamore, 24.
James, Fort, 465.
"James" (ship), 32, 56.
James Steam Mill, 302, 303.
James Steam Mill Company, 302.
James, Duke of York, 171.
James I., King, 15, 161.

James II., King, 200, 207, 679.
Jansen, Jochen, 143.
Janvrin, James, 628.
Jaques, Ensign, 335.
Benjamin, 546, 568.
Charles, 626.
Daniel, 226, 350, 559.
David, 573, 575, 579.
Enoch, 626.
Henry, 93, 101, 102, 110-112, 117, 118, 138, 139, 150, 155, 171, 180, 209, 222, 223, 260, 330, 422, 477, 542.
Henry C., 626.
Joseph, 343, 645.
Moody, 629.
Moses, 610, 629.
Nathan, 614.
Parker, 588, 605.
Richard, 181, 307, 545.
Samuel, 588, 603, 608, 610, 611.
Stephen, 139, 181, 204, 214, 260, 333, 334, 424.
Jarvis, Charles, 614.
Jays, 125, 126.
Jefferson Street, 419, 437, 438, 484, 489.
Jeffries, Mr., 43, 533.
Jellison, Benjamin W., 632.
Samuel S., 632.
Jenkins, Thomas, 575, 579.
William, 376, 569.
Jennings, Joseph, 609.
Jesuits, Society of, 544, 545.
Jewett, David, 627.
Dummer, 571.
Ezekiel, 573.
Isaiah, 627.
Robert, 627.
Thomas, 230.
Jillings, Isaac, 565.
Job Indian, 184.
Jo: (Indian), 89.
Joel (negro), 256.
John, Sagamore, 24.
John (servant), 256.
John, Augustus, 503.
"John R. Skiddy" (ship), 491.
Johnson, Andrews, 559.
Edward, 161, 165, 169.
Eleazer, 516, 569.
Enoch, 560.
Lt. Francis, 502.
Isaac, 286, 569.
James H., 634.
John, 647.
Martha, 668.
Nehemiah, 562, 575, 579.
Nicholas, 293.
Col. Samuel, 610.
Stephen, 515.
Johnson, *continued.*
Thomas, 479, 482.
William, 237, 286, 339, 379, 480, 482, 516, 556-559.
Johnson's Corner, 300.
Johnston, Thomas, 557.
"Jonathan" (ship), 395.
Jones, Ezekiel, 392.
Morgan, 506.
Robert, 566.
Joppa, 288, 492.
Jordan, William, 613.
"Joshua Bates" (ship), 491.
Judges, 172, 246, 364, 437, 650.
Jurden, Stephen, 28.
Justices of the Peace, 61, 338, 444, 445, 499, 617.

KATE, INDIAN, 184.
Keeler, Rev. Seneca M., 381.
Kegs, 282.
Kelly, Abial, 542.
Abiel, 460.
Abihail, 108.
Elbridge G., 686.
Elijah, 613.
John, 54, 84, 93, 102, 116, 180, 204, 317, 459, 460, 462, 526, 541, 542.
John W., 634.
Jonathan, 460.
Joseph, 536, 539.
Patrick, 635.
Richard, 214, 254, 255, 335, 542.
Kelly's Ferry, 460.
Keniston, Abner, 306.
Kennebec River, 15, 19, 25, 161, 182, 508, 519, 529, 544, 556, 593, 594.
Kent, ——, 522.
Albert Sydney, 646.
Mrs. Anne, 644.
Daniel, 562, 565.
David, 635.
Edward, 646.
Elizabeth, 665.
Jacob, 635, 645.
James, 101, 176, 643, 644.
John, 60, 100, 101, 112, 118, 119, 176, 177, 181, 198, 203, 206, 214, 317, 419, 426, 477, 478, 516, 541, 570, 625, 643, 644.
John N., 119, 271.
Joseph, 629, 644, 645.
Joshua, 576.
Joshua Noyes, 645, 646.
Leonard N., 646.
Mrs. Mary, 645.
Moses, 644, 645.
Otis L., 646.

Kent, *continued.*
Paul, 645.
Richard, 28, 47, 48, 51, 52, 54, 55, 62, 65-67, 84, 89, 99, 101, 104, 109, 110, 155, 158, 163, 176, 203, 218, 220, 244, 248, 395, 420, 426, 438, 457, 495, 505, 515, 530, 543, 562, 504, 567, 643-645, 681, 682.
Mrs. Sarah N., 645, 646.
Stephen, 54, 57, 84, 87, 90, 99, 109, 120, 171, 284, 593, 604, 605, 608, 643-645.
William H., 635.
Kent's Island, 65, 83, 292, 293, 308, 420, 643-646.
Kent's Lane, 426.
Kent Street, 214, 215, 281, 426, 475.
Kentucky, 81.
Ketches, 480, 486, 487.
Keteltas, Abraham, 486.
Kettles, 670.
Key, 355.
Keyes, Widow, 94.
Solomon, 101, 163, 496.
Kilburn, Eliphalet, 601.
Killam, John, 559.
Lot, 607.
Killed by Falling, 384.
Killingworth, Conn., 665.
Kily, David, 207.
Kimball, Abner, 608, 612.
Benjamin, 515.
Caleb, 589, 609.
Eliphalet, 608.
George M., 632.
Moody, 687.
Richard, 560.
Rev. True, 360.
William, 560.
Kimball's Garrison, 537.
Kine, 132.
King, Capt. Daniel, 515-517.
William, 482.
King's Chapel, 371, 377.
King Street, 245, 249, 273, 274, 381, 427, 429, 473.
King, The, 98, 177, 178.
Kingsbury, Lt. Benjamin, 560.
John, 206, 560, 565, 569, 660.
Michael, 612.
Kingston, N. Y., 196.
Kingstown, N. H., 537.
Kinsman, Rev. A. B., 388.
Kinston, Abner, 625.
Toppen, 625.
Kirby, Rev. John, 379, 380.
Kittel, Joseph, 349.
Kittery, Me., 143, 668.
Kittery Point, 143.
Knapp, Benoni, 618.
Benoni Eaton, 616.
Ebenezer, 562, 569.
Nathaniel, 286, 293, 555.
Samuel, 615.
Knapsack, 286.
Knees, 217.
Knight, ——, 549.
Mr., 424.
Widow, 139, 204.
Benjamin, 286.
Caleb, 615.
Daniel, 563, 578, 588, 605.
David, 567.
George D., 636.
Isaac, 656.
Jacob, 343.
James, 265, 542, 629.
James B., 260.
John, 32, 38, 48, 52, 53, 55-57, 63, 67, 71, 84, 88, 89, 94, 100-102, 110, 111, 115, 116, 118, 132, 137, 141, 168, 176, 181, 204, 223, 415, 418, 421, 422, 570, 614, 629, 650.
Joseph, 103, 112, 116, 118, 179, 185, 204, 208, 261, 339, 429, 499, 542, 549, 589, 603, 629, 635.
Moses, 629.
Parker, 588, 603, 607, 610, 611, 614.
Richard, 32, 47-49, 51, 53, 55, 62, 66, 67, 79, 84-86, 88, 92, 93, 99, 100, 114, 117, 122, 126, 132, 155, 158, 176, 181, 220, 223, 415, 416, 418, 422, 495, 541, 650.
Miss Sarah, 665.
Silas, 629.
Thomas, 567.
William, 620.
Knights, 420, 443, 444.
Knowlton, Ebenezer, 156.
John, 564, 566.
Koss, August, 635.

LA BLOND, PETER, 252, 253.
Laborers, 32.
La Boulaye Road, 548.
Labrador, 548.
Entrance of, 548.
Lace, 123.
Laconia Company, 19.
Ladd, John, 629.
Ladders, 285.
La Greve, Matthew, 510.
Lake, Elisha, 613, 618.
Joseph, 615.
Lakeman, John, 575, 579.
Lambert, Joseph, 613, 618.

Lambert, *continued.*
Lt. Thomas, 497.
Lambton, Rev. John, 371, 372.
Lamprele River, 24.
Lancaster, Samuel, 608, 612.
Capt. Thomas, 623.
Timothy, 610.
Land, Saul, 625.
Land Bank, 681.
Landing Places, 214, 215, 262, 263, 308, 427-429, 440, 441, 454, 458.
Ferry, 441.
Amesbury Ferry, 428, 440.
Lower Ferry, 427.
March's Ferry, 454.
at Pine Island Creek, 262, 263.
Public, 214, 215.
Lane, Nathaniel, 566.
Thomas, 635.
Langford, Eng., 32.
Larkin, Abraham, 260.
Thomas R., 634.
William F., 634.
Larnard, John, 539.
Laselle, Rev. Nathaniel, 362.
Latherbee, Jonathan, 603.
Lathrop, Capt. Thomas, 502-504.
Latin, 324, 403.
Latin Grammar, 408.
Latin Scholars, 401, 405.
Latin Schools, 124, 396, 400.
Lattle, Solomon, 603.
Launchings, 475, 485, 488, 491, 492.
Law Suits, 143, 341, 342, 390, 645, 650.
Lawrence, Mass., 283.
Lawrence, General, 555.
Laws, 56, 95, 96, 98, 144, 149, 162, 175, 176, 182, 195, 207, 216, 217, 223, 225, 281-284, 291, 292, 411, 413, 432, 468.
Lawyers, 364, 435.
Leach, Joseph, 566.
Micah, 573.
Lt. Richard, 502.
Lead, 309.
Leather, 154-156, 264.
Dressers, 154-156.
Sealers of, 111.
Searchers, 109.
Tanning of, 264, 424.
Leavitt, Abigail, 668.
Le Blong, Francis, 554.
Le Breton, Peter, 293.
Lechford, Thomas, 81, 313, 435, 642.
Lecture Days, 124, 315, 331, 333, 342, 364, 402, 433.
Lectures, 226, 364, 402, 433.
Lectures, *continued.*
Preached, 337.
Lees, John, 294.
Leeward Islands, 481.
Legacy, 365.
Leghorn Roads, 490.
Leigh, Benjamin, 629.
Hall J., 139.
Leighton, Richard, 630.
Leroach, Joseph, 613.
Lesley, Joseph, 570.
Lesser Antilles, 481.
Letters, 145, 195, 324, 325, 430, 465-469, 472, 473, 520, 521, 533, 537, 602.
Leverett, John, 496, 501, 533.
Levinston, Mr., 30.
Levy, Solomon, 686.
Lewis, Frederick, 609.
John, 613, 618.
Rev. Moses B., 387.
Robert, 88.
Lewis & Mattox, 55.
Lexington, Mass., 586.
Lexington Alarm, 610.
Lexington, Battle of, 586, 589, 591.
Leyden, Holland, 18.
Liberty of Petition, 162.
Liberty Street, 427.
Libra, Benjamin, 565.
Libraries, 151, 154.
Light Keeper's House, 307.
Lighthouses, 224, 240.
on Plum Island Point, 240.
Lightning, 378, 386.
Limbach, 548.
Lime, 264.
Kilns, 264, 424.
Lime Street, 405.
Lincoln, Benjamin, 585.
Lindsey, John, 612, 614.
Linfield, Jonathan, 635.
Liquor, 366.
Little, Sergeant, 205.
Amos, 609.
Amos M., 633.
Charles, 633.
Capt. David, 287, 288, 684.
Ebenezer, 569.
Enoch, 528, 541, 589, 653.
George, 65, 93, 111, 155, 163, 169, 171, 203, 626, 651.
Mrs. George, 410.
Hannah, 667.
Jacob, 287.
John, 629.
Joseph, 112, 118, 140, 179, 200, 202, 350, 451, 510, 559, 565, 659.
Joshua, 430, 586.

continued.
h, 223, 293, 301, 306, 392, , 587, 683-685.
Micnael, 629.
Moses, 137, 172, 182, 203, 208, 237, 256, 292, 301, 305, 360, 507, 508, 582, 584, 586, 591, 592, 600, 602, 667, 682-685.
Nathaniel, 549.
Richard, 567, 613, 618.
Silas, 301, 621, 623, 683-685.
Stephen, 595, 629, 683.
Stephen M., 629.
Tristram, 542.
William, 129, 640.
Little Boar's Head, 14.
Little Field, 90, 426.
Little Harbor, 19.
Little Hill, 83, 159, 308, 415.
Little's Meadow, 300.
Little Pine Island River, 240, 241.
Little Pond, 227.
Little River, 65, 83, 92, 139, 157, 240, 241, 258-260, 264, 308, 415, 420, 643.
Littlehale, John, 516.
Richard, 28, 54, 71, 84, 88, 90, 94.
Littleton, N. H., 172.
Loans, 218, 296.
Lob's Pound, 139.
Locke, Reuben, 579.
Lombard, Rev. B. F., 388.
London, Eng., 17, 23, 26, 36, 38, 45, 96, 147, 165, 172, 196, 207, 265, 281, 282, 286, 312, 313, 323, 325, 326, 370, 373, 376, 378, 385, 467, 484, 545.
Londonderry, N. H., 344.
Long, Abel, 180.
Abial, 659.
Abiel, 206, 372.
Benjamin, 660.
Lt. Enoch, 589.
Moses, 612.
Robert, 94, 111, 112, 116-118, 182, 205, 209, 210.
Samuel, 565.
Shubael, 180.
Long Hill, 83, 129, 230, 308.
Long Island, 561.
Battle at, 602.
Long Island Sound, 500.
Long Wharf, 574.
Longfellow, Mr., 203.
Edward, 570.
Henry Wadsworth, 233.
John, 653.
Joseph, 119.
Nathan, 632.
Samuel, 570.
Stephen, 231, 516.
Longfellow, *continued.*
William, 118, 179, 233, 515, 571.
Longfellow's Farm, 230.
Lord, David, 627.
Jeremiah, 612.
John, 565.
Robert, 150.
Roger, 608, 612, 619.
William, 565.
Lord's Day, 251-253, 314, 382.
Observance of, 251-253.
Lord's Prayer, 407.
Lord's Supper, The, 148, 314.
Lords of Trade, 545.
Lost Property, 217.
Lot Layers, 48, 49, 114, 156, 210, 212, 214, 215, 417, 421.
Lots of Land, 88.
Lottery, 277.
Louis XIV., 547.
Louis XV., 554.
Louisbourg, Cape Breton, 235, 547, 548, 550-556, 574, 576, 668.
Capture of, 235.
Map of Siege of, 551.
Lovejoy, Abiel, 629.
Lovelace, Gov. Francis, 465.
Low, Jacob, 587, 601.
John, 576.
Joseph, 563.
Moses, 626.
Nathaniel, 568.
Low Street, 82, 418, 429.
Lowell, Mass., 283, 294.
Lowell, Corporal, 660.
Mr., 533.
Benjamin, 102, 118, 156, 177, 178, 180, 206, 317, 318, 347, 526, 659.
Ebenezer, 569.
Gideon, 516, 530, 659.
Hardy, 566.
John, 55, 58, 60, 79, 81, 85, 86, 88-90, 92, 93, 100, 104, 127, 154, 158, 235, 338, 339, 341, 377, 378, 557, 570, 594, 639, 676, 683.
Jonathan, 562.
Joseph, 526, 536, 538, 539, 567.
Percival, 55, 84, 89, 90, 176, 180, 203, 220, 318.
Richard, 45, 141, 176, 180, 612, 614.
Samuel, 176, 506, 508, 549, 575, 579, 612, 614.
Stephen, 567.
Thomas, 180.
Lowell's Brook, 422, 428.
Lower Commons, 133-135, 213, 423.
Lower Ferry, 449, 454, 456-458.
Landing Place, 427, 644.

Lower Green, 32, 36, 37, 39, 57, 418.
Loyalists, 596.
Lucas, Henry, 181, 372, 373, 510.
Lucy (negro), 255, 256.
Lull, Jeremiah, 566.
John, 617.
Moses, 570, 606.
Simon, 613.
Thomas, 570.
Lumber, 224, 270, 330, 480, 483.
Lunt, Mr., 203.
Abraham, 528, 541.
Benjamin, 626.
Cutting, 159.
Daniel, 103, 153, 180, 294, 299, 317, 410, 411, 499, 549.
Daniel A., 626, 674.
Dorcas, 674.
Edna, 674.
Elkanah, 570, 571, 573.
Ezra, 273, 274, 592, 600, 602.
Hon. George, 310.
Mrs. Hannah, 674.
Henry, 28, 53, 55, 84, 88, 89, 99, 118, 120, 163, 206, 250, 342, 515.
Jacob, 612.
Capt. Jeremiah, 491.
John, 102, 317, 339, 457, 516, 587, 601, 605, 612.
Johnson, 549.
Joseph, 159, 218, 264, 470, 601, 605, 610, 685.
Joseph W., 633.
Joshua, 570.
Lois, 159.
Micajah, 306, 489, 490, 616-618.
Nathan, 159.
Nathaniel, 159, 261, 262.
Nicholas, 160.
Oliver, 619.
Oliver Clark, 614.
Paul, 292, 674.
Richard, 630.
Samuel, 573.
Skipper, 370, 372, 565, 566, 630.
Stephen, 573, 587, 601, 609.
Thomas P., 633.
Lusher, Eleazer, 169.
Lyford, Jonathan, 617.
Lyman, ———, 624.
Colonel, 559.
Lyme, Conn., 340, 382.
Lynn, Mass., 23, 45, 74, 78, 148, 152, 153, 493, 502, 592.
Lyon, Miss Mary, 366.

MACE, BARNARD, 563.
George, 562, 565.
Joshua, 629.
Mace, *continued*.
Reuben, 573, 576.
Macheard, William, 569.
Machinery, 293-295, 298, 309.
Mackay, Donald, 491.
Macy, Thomas, 68, 100, 145, 146.
Madison, President, 630.
Magistrates, 60, 106, 662.
Magowan, Joseph, 629.
Mail Bags, 465, 466, 472.
Mails, 470, 472-474.
Main River, 67.
Main Street, 473.
Maine, 13-15, 17, 42, 389, 474, 520, 622, 679.
Maine, Benjamin, 605, 610.
Maior, George, 180.
"Majestic" (English frigate or "raze"), 621.
Malabouach River, 548.
Malcom, John, 607.
Malden, Mass., 603.
Malford, Eng., 32.
Maloon, David, 618.
Josiah, 613, 618.
Malt, 123, 137, 398.
Houses, 262, 264, 670, 671.
Mill, 159, 258.
Maltsters, 95, 643.
Manatopchick River, 548.
Manning, John, 160.
Mansfield, James, 609, 612.
Robert, 616.
Mantle, 522.
Manufacturers, 294-298.
Manufacturing, 302.
Maps, 14, 17, 24, 25, 236, 239, 240, 308, 379, 470, 548, 561.
of Champlain, 14.
of Island of Cape Breton, 548.
of English Provinces in North America, 470.
of Lake George, Ticonderoga and Crown Point, 561.
of Newbury, 1795, showing Parish Lines, 239, 240.
of "Ould Newbury," etc., 308.
of Capt. John Smith, 17, 25.
of West Parish, 236, 379.
of William Wood, 1634, 24, 25
Maple Street, West Newbury, 380.
Marbell, Joseph, 560.
Marble, 264.
Marble Harbor, 24.
Marblehead, Mass., 33, 153, 271, 373, 470, 476, 502, 547, 584, 592, 597, 625.
"Marblehead" (United States gunboat), 492.
March, Cornet, 204.

March, *continued.*
Ann, 666.
E., 240.
Ebenezer, 289, 290, 292, 406, 621, 622, 683.
Edmund, 568.
George, 103, 108, 111, 118, 139 181, 196, 210, 214, 350, 399, 417, 420, 459, 479.
Henry, 536, 538, 539.
Hugh, 64, 93, 110, 111, 122, 171, 176, 180, 181, 205, 206, 223, 353, 354, 369, 403, 442, 526, 542, 659, 660.
Jacob, 553, 556, 568, 666, 667.
James, 205, 530.
John, 100, 129, 196, 205, 242, 243, 246, 336, 441-448, 450-454, 456, 459, 480, 481, 515-517, 519-524, 528-531, 533-535, 541, 549, 552, 589.
Rev. John C., 386.
Joseph, 217.
Moses, 589.
Nathaniel, 549.
Philip, 549.
Mrs. Ruth, 666, 667.
Samuel, 568, 666, 667.
March's Bridge, George, 139.
March's Farm, Capt. John, 234.
March's Ferry, 442, 453, 456.
Landing Place, 454.
March's Hill, 621.
Mares, 135.
Maria Theresa, 547.
Mariana, 18.
Mariners, 90, 91, 265.
Master, 265.
Mark, Queen's Broad Arrow, for Trees, 370.
Market, 597.
Clerk of the, 111, 119, 120.
Place, 144.
Market Square, 189, 234, 249, 336, 377, 378, 427, 429, 430, 660.
Newburyport, 578.
Market Street, 90, 142, 262, 281, 375, 404, 428, 429, 482, 664.
Marks, 129, 138, 370.
Sheep, 138.
Timber, 129.
Trees, 370.
Marlborough, Eng., 32.
Marlborough Street, 242, 243, 265, 287, 307, 387, 428, 482, 658, 665.
"Marmadin" (ship), 142.
Marquand, Capt. Daniel, 569.
Marriages, 58, 60, 61, 106, 108, 256, 374.
Slaves', 256.
Marsh, Jonathan, 286, 292, 516.
Marshall, Edmund, 41, 99, 180.
John, 629.
Peter, 206.
Marshes, 220-222.
Marshfield, Mass., 350, 556, 560, 591.
Marston, Benjamin, 248.
David, 613.
Martin, Rev. George A., 381.
James, 611, 612, 617.
Jonathan, 559, 566, 567, 570, 573, 575, 608, 612, 616-618.
Joseph, 579.
Josiah, 563, 566.
Nathaniel, 579.
Oliver, 613, 614.
Richard, 587, 601, 606, 609, 616-618.
Robert, 611.
Martinan, ——, 550.
Martyn's Vineyard Sound, 478.
Marvin, Thomas, 124.
Mary Indian, 184.
Mary, Queen, 196, 245, 467, 468, 514.
"Mary and John" (ship), 28, 31, 311, 316, 643.
"Mary L. Cushing" (ship), 491.
Maryland, 560.
Masconomo, Sagamore of Agawam, 185.
Mason, Capt. John, 18, 19, 22, 31, 160, 178, 194, 196, 200, 467, 500.
Robert, 194-197, 202, 444, 679.
Mason, Isle, 19.
Massachusetts, 42, 58, 74, 145, 160, 151, 170, 194, 197, 216, 274, 284, 307, 364, 371, 374, 383, 411, 468, 491, 499, 506, 507, 522, 524, 534, 540, 544, 554, 560, 596, 602, 608, 622, 668, 679.
"Masachusetts" (ship), 485.
Massachusetts Bay, 14, 24, 33, 35, 36, 42, 151, 160, 161, 194, 199, 554.
Massachusetts Bay Colony, 22, 23, 26, 36, 42, 56, 143, 172-179, 184, 207, 215, 251, 313, 316, 436, 447, 465, 466, 493, 497, 500, 508, 510, 511, 516, 517, 604, 639, 647.
Limits of, 677.
Massachusetts Bay Militia, 610.
Massachusetts Bay Province, 61, 119, 191, 196, 209, 218, 219, 233, 245, 246, 252, 253, 256, 271, 282, 296, 383, 466-468, 479, 490, 518, 519, 521, 523, 535, 538, 544, 550, 560, 562, 573, 578, 581, 583, 584, 595, 652, 680.
Charter of, 479, 518.

Massachusetts Charitable Fire Society, 655.
Massachusetts Company, 26, 27.
Masachusetts Gazette, 273.
Massachusetts, State of, 288.
Constitution of, 288-290.
Adoption of, 288, 290.
Massachusetts Volunteers, 632-636.
Massiloway, Daniel, 180, 206, 659.
Mast Fleets, 470.
Master Mariners, 265, 373, 482.
Masts, 218.
Masury, Lawrence M., 635.
Match, 43, 62, 648.
Mathematics, 161.
Mattacomen, Sagamore, 24.
Matthews, Hugh, 205.
William, 576.
Mattox, ——, 55, 93.
Maverick, Samuel, 42, 97, 142, 166, 167, 173, 677.
May, John, 613, 618.
"Mayflower" (ship), 18.
Mayhew, Elijah, 615.
Thomas, 649.
Mayo, Joseph, 204, 542.
McCobb, Col. Samuel, 608.
McCondry, William, 612.
McElroy, Rev. Elbridge P., 381.
McKinstey, William, 629.
McKnight, Lieutenant, 624.
McLeod, Norman, 310.
McMaster, Adams, 627.
McPherson, Paul, 617, 618.
McThomas, James, 630.
Meade, General, 633.
Rev. Samuel, 344.
Mechanics, 266, 267.
Medford, Mass., 23, 24, 40, 475, 486, 605.
Meeting House Fortified, 505.
Meeting House Hill, 379.
Meeting House Lane, 40, 385, 393.
Meeting House Pond, 241.
Meeting Houses, 39, 59, 61-63, 82, 86, 112, 113, 124, 164, 167, 226-229, 231, 234, 235, 237, 240, 241, 247, 249, 269, 274, 309, 315, 317, 318, 331, 333-335, 337, 338, 340-344, 347, 349-355, 357, 359, 362, 366-370, 377-380, 384-389, 392, 394-396, 401, 403-405, 427, 464, 492, 514, 557, 578, 591, 654, 655, 674, 683.
Breaking into, 331.
Burned, 345, 346.
Byfield, 364.
East Salisbury, 281.
First, 39, 61-63, 313, 314.
Meeting Houses, *continued*.
Fourth Parish, 492.
Presbyterian, 486.
Quaker, 391, 392.
Rocky Hill, 464.
Second, 314, 315.
Second Parish, 363.
Meetings, 514.
Religious, 62.
Selectmen's, 50.
Town, 49, 50, 206.
Meghechewanck River, 24.
Mellen, Aaron, 619.
Menanaquid River, 24.
Menut, George A., 393.
Mercer, Mr., 447.
Mercer, 32.
Merchandise, 217, 265, 271.
Lost and Found, 217.
Tax on, 296.
Merchant Ships, 491, 492.
Merchant Vessels, 488.
Merchants, 14, 19, 20, 25, 196, 266, 267, 296, 303, 467, 476, 481, 483, 489.
Merden, William, 609.
Merrill, Abel, 177, 181, 205, 236, 542, 569, 589, 657, 659.
Abraham, 89, 101, 112, 116-118, 179, 205, 213, 347, 349-353, 370, 372, 422, 459, 536, 539, 542, 659.
Annis, 601.
Charles, 627.
Christopher, 601.
Daniel, 103, 116, 177, 181, 205, 208, 528, 541, 659.
Enoch, 587, 609, 625.
Ezekiel, 588.
Henry, 304.
Rev. Horatio, 362.
Jabez, 616.
Jacob, 430, 478, 586.
James, 587.
John, 54, 84, 85, 89, 110, 141, 205, 220, 305, 372, 421, 541, 588, 685.
Rev. John M., 388.
Jonathan, 485, 576, 615.
Joshua, 586.
Josiah, 549.
Juba, 613, 618.
Laban, 629.
Moses, 568.
Nathan, 560, 586, 660.
Nathaniel, 93, 177, 180, 485, 528, 541, 560.
Rev. Nathaniel J., 388.
Oliver B., 687.
Orlando B., 287, 391, 485, 486, 488, 491.
Dr. Peter, 582.

Merrill, *continued*
Samuel, 616, 627.
Stephen, 568, 616.
Thomas, 489, 625.
William, 626.
Merrill's Lane, 236.
Merrimac, Mass., 536.
Merrimack, 23, 45, 68, 69, 500, 517.
Merrimack Bar, 222.
Merrimack Bridge, 270, 462.
Merrimack Court, 418, 430, 437, 438, 483, 491.
Merrimack Ridge, 65-67, 649.
Merrimack River, 14, 18-20, 22-25, 29, 30, 42, 43, 66, 68, 70-72, 75, 82, 83, 90, 91, 114, 125, 126, 129, 157, 159-161, 165-167, 170, 172, 178, 182, 183, 185, 193, 194, 200, 212-215, 220, 224, 227, 234, 237-240, 246, 262, 267, 268, 277-281, 283, 300, 301, 304, 306, 308, 314, 395, 414, 418, 421, 423, 424, 426, 427, 429, 430, 434-439, 441-443, 446-453, 455-464, 477, 479, 480, 482, 484, 489, 500, 516, 518, 519, 522, 526, 535, 539, 592, 594, 621, 622, 644, 658, 670, 675.
Map of, 198, 199.
Merrimack Street, 89, 90, 142, 238, 390, 418, 428-430, 664.
Merrimackport, 462, 463.
Methodist Episcopal Church, 387.
Incorporated, 388.
in Byfield, 393.
Methuen, Mass., 198, 295, 512, 604.
Michaux Island, 548.
Middle Ferry, 464.
Middle Shipyard, 481.
Middle Street, 427.
Middle Town, 116.
Middlebury, Mass., 573.
Middlesex County, Eng., 313.
Mass., 74, 97, 502, 603, 604.
N. J., 171.
Middleton, Mass., 611.
Midwife, 645.
Mighill, Ezekiel, 564, 575, 579.
John, 181.
Milford Haven, Eng., 14, 548.
Military, 549.
Military Company of Newbury, 493-496, 498.
Military Officers, 57.
Military Organizations, 493, 659.
During the French and Indian Wars, 659.
Military Tactics, 625.
Militia, 62, 91, 97, 173, 209, 225, 503, 568, 569, 596, 610.
First, 62.
Militia, *continued*.
Reorganization of, 499.
Mill Bridge, 139, 241, 421, 424.
Mill Dams, 238, 284.
Mill Lot, 94.
Mill Owners, 284.
Mill Privilege, 294, 295.
Mill River, 135, 139, 140, 156.
Mill Stone, 262.
Mill, The, 417, 425.
Miller, ——, 659.
Mr., 55, 84.
Milliken, Capt. Moses J., 333.
Mills, Alexander, 567.
Charles P., 687.
Mills, 38, 139, 155-159, 168, 213, 226, 240, 258-262, 294, 298, 302, 415, 421, 423, 425, 428, 534, 647-650, 653, 688.
Amesbury, 421.
at Artichoke River, 159.
at Cart Creek, 653.
Corn, 298.
Curzon, 423.
Sergeant Emery's, 423.
Grist, at Little River, 415.
of Stephen Hooper, 425.
James Steam, 302.
of Dea. Samuel Moody, 428.
at Pine Island, 688.
Saw, 653.
Wait's, 298.
Water, 647.
Miltimore, Andrew W., 411, 685.
James, 386, 492, 625.
John, 625.
Milton, Mass., 77.
Milton, Aaron, 608.
Milward, Thomas, 35, 90, 91, 100, 122.
Minchin, Daniel, 613.
George H., 635.
Robert R., 635.
Mineral Deposits, 307.
Mines, Silver, 307, 309.
Mingo, Robert, 204, 229.
Mining Company, 309.
Ministers, 61, 171, 226, 227, 272, 314, 338, 349, 370, 373, 374, 376, 406, 499.
Maintenance of, 314.
Ministry House, 351-356.
Ministry Land, 214.
Ministry Rate, 229.
Mint, Master of the, 191.
Minute Men, 585.
Miray, Lake of, 548.
Mirrick, Jacob, 588, 603, 607, 612.
James, 118, 176, 331, 342, 507.
John, 347.

Mirrick, *continued.*
Joseph, 180, 186, 586.
Timothy, 542, 660.
Missionary, 545.
Mississippi River, 81.
Mitchell, Andrew, 170.
George, 198.
John, 181, 206, 508, 660.
Nathaniel, 609.
Robert, 658.
Stephen, 605, 606, 608, 612.
Thomas, 560.
William, 94, 181, 515, 562, 566.
Mitchell's Falls, 198.
Moccasins, 524, 526, 528, 540, 541.
Moderators, 208, 332, 359, 512.
Mogg Megone, 508.
Moggaridge, Mr., 429.
Eleanor, 492.
John, 485, 575, 586.
Mary, 238, 256.
Mary W., 492.
Samuel, 255, 256, 482, 483, 562, 565.
Stephen, 483.
William, 562, 566, 575, 601.
Moggaridge Building Yard, 485.
Moggaridge Point, 437, 484, 485, 488, 489.
Moggaridge Shipyard, 486, 491.
Mohawks, 557, 558.
Moll, Hermon, 470.
Monckton, Lt.-Colonel, 553.
Money, 185, 217, 218.
Lost, 217, 218.
Monhegan, Island of, Me., 15, 17, 19.
Monopoly, 597, 598.
Montcalm, General, 560.
Montgomery, General, 594.
Lt. Moody, 615.
Monts, Sieur de, 14.
Monument at Muddy Brook, 504.
Moody, Goodman, 115.
Sergeant, 118.
Benjamin, 267, 272, 505.
Caleb, 59, 95, 101, 107, 108, 110, 112, 118, 155, 180, 194, 203, 210, 219, 225, 245, 262, 318, 331, 353, 354, 422, 445, 461, 477, 516, 536-539, 542, 679.
Charles, 628.
Cutting, 541, 554, 681.
Daniel, 182, 568.
Ebenezer, 605.
Edward, 582.
Enoch, 299.
Friend, 565.
George, 612.
Henry, 568.
James, 601.
John, 204, 218, 567, 573, 576, 582.
Moody, *continued.*
Joseph, 573.
Joshua, 153, 244, 322, 403, 429, 516, 528, 541, 543, 606, 657.
Mrs. Mehitable, 231.
Moses, 238, 277, 588, 606.
Moses Sargent, 589, 609, 623.
Nicholas, 615.
Paul, 291, 293, 294, 587, 609.
Samuel, 101, 110, 111, 163, 233, 253, 256, 406, 417, 428, 430, 462, 542, 565, 582, 584, 592, 683.
Miss Sarah, 391.
Silas, 513, 685.
Somerby, 285, 569, 572.
Thomas, 264, 450, 453-456, 528, 541, 569, 578.
William, 28, 48, 53, 55, 63, 67, 84, 93, 99, 103, 109, 118, 163, 182, 203, 229, 231, 294, 349, 427, 565, 567, 627, 680, 681.
Moody's Farm, 230.
Moody's Lane, 115, 238, 240, 264, 386, 390, 437, 483.
Moody's Mill, 240.
Moore, Rev. Abraham, 344, 654.
Benjamin, 116, 540.
Dea. John, 344.
Jonathan, 118.
Mrs. Mary, 344.
Matthew, 171.
Samuel, 163, 171.
Moores, Abner, 571, 573.
Edmund, 89, 93, 118, 180, 181, 203, 225, 415, 503.
Edward, 110, 117, 118.
George, 506, 508.
Jonathan, 125, 181, 203, 498, 514, 660.
Joseph, 458.
Mark, 125.
Parker, 570.
Samuel, 123.
Morgan, John, 633.
Moring, Joseph, 180, 204, 505.
Morrice, Sir William, 175.
Morrill, Benjamin, 615.
Daniel, 116, 118.
Enoch, 626.
Isaac, 456.
Jacob, 575, 625.
John, 456, 625.
Jonathan, 566, 614.
Joseph, 615.
Nathaniel, 656.
Stephen, 610.
William, 615, 616.
Morris, Evan, 216.
Morrison, Daniel, 536, 538, 539, 542.
Ebenezer, 573, 575.

Morrison, *continued.*
Miss Ina B., 295.
Leonard, 295.
Leonard A., 295.
William H., 295.
Morss, Abel, 356.
Amos, 605, 629.
Anthony, 32, 53, 55, 84, 89, 99, 111, 115, 120, 122, 141, 163, 180, 186, 205, 315, 331, 543, 559, 567.
Benjamin, 102, 103, 112, 115, 118, 131, 178, 181, 200, 202, 206-208, 227, 242, 243, 249, 342, 401, 541, 543, 607, 659.
Daniel, 356.
Edmund, 107, 565, 569.
Mrs. Elizabeth, 186-189.
Hannah, 668.
Rev. Jedediah, 366.
Jonathan, 102, 617.
Joseph, 103, 182, 337, 429, 536, 539, 616, 627, 628.
Joseph B., 686.
Joshua, 112, 116, 204, 578, 659.
Moody, 589, 603, 608.
Moses, 627.
Obadiah, 607.
Robert, 94, 164.
Saul, 627.
Stephen, 576, 603, 606.
William, 32, 53, 55, 56, 84, 89, 91, 94, 99, 118, 141, 180, 186-189, 283, 356.
Morse's Corner, 139.
Mortars, 534, 535, 555, 557.
Mortgages, 218.
Moseley, Edward A., 686.
Moses, Rev. Vincent, 364.
"Moses and Aaron," etc., 324, 326-329.
Mossom, Rev. David, 373.
Moulton, Aaron, 603, 606, 612.
Bat, 660.
Daniel, 628.
Rev. Horace, 388.
Capt. Jeremiah, 544, 545.
John, 44, 49, 66, 100, 436.
Jonathan, 463, 566.
Joseph, 272, 293, 543.
Thomas, 44, 49, 99, 566.
William, 204, 541.
Mount Desert, 25, 522.
Mount Hope, 509.
Mowatt, Captain, 574.
Henry, 627.
Muddy Brook Bridge, 503.
Battle of, 503, 504.
Monument to commemorate, 504.
Muddy Brook, Village of, 504.
Monument at, 504.
Muddy River, 24, 647.
Mudgett, Thomas, 478.
Muffit, William, 206.
Mugg (Indian), 508.
Mulberry Trees, 18.
Murders, 45, 46, 80.
Murray, Benjamin, 619.
John, 607.
William, 608, 612, 614.
Music, 310, 578.
Church, Book on, 356.
Musicians, 310.
Musgro, Jabez, 515.
Musgrove, Joseph, 505.
Musketaqua River, 24.
Muskets, 62, 77, 78, 171, 499, 504.
Musselwhite, John, 32, 84, 89, 99, 150, 163.
Muster Roll, 536.
Muzzey, Abraham, 28.
John, 28.
Joseph, 101, 176, 182, 428.
Muzzey's Lane, 242, 205, 482, 486, 658.
Mycall, John, 270, 407, 486.
Mystic (Medford), Mass., 23.
Mystic Pond, 24.
Mystic River, 500, 501.

"NADAB" (schooner), 309.
Nahant Point, 24.
Nails, 298, 315.
Cut, 298.
Manufacture of, 298.
Namekeke River, 196.
Nantasket, 24, 514, 531, 535, 550.
Nantucket, Mass., 145, 146.
Nantucket Athenæum, 145.
Napoleon, 485.
Naponsett River, 24.
Narragansett, 506, 511, 512.
Indian Fort at, 432, 511, 512.
Narragansett Bay, 24, 25.
Narragansett Indians, 502.
Narragansett River, 24.
Narragansett Township, No. 1, 483, 512, 513.
Narragansett War, 512.
Nash, John, 504.
Nason, John, 612.
"Nature of Saving Conversion," 486.
Naumkeag (Salem), Mass., 22, 24, 194.
Naumkeag River, 18, 19, 31.
Navigation, 280.
Act, 178.
Naval Officer, 478, 479.
"Navigator," "The Practical," 486.
Navy, 370, 624.
Her Majesty's, 370.

Neale, Thomas, Esq., 467, 468.
Neat Herd, 132.
Neck, The, 69, 91, 92, 111, 115, 116, 135, 145, 158, 222, 395, 418, 434, 649.
Great, 32.
Negro Seats, 360.
Negro Servants, 254, 255.
Negroes, 253-255, 483, 670.
Nelson, Ambrose, 563, 573.
Daniel, 627.
Francis, 230.
James, 573.
Philip, 157, 168, 444, 445, 502, 515, 516.
Thomas, 156, 157.
"Neptune" Fire Engine, 288.
Netherlands, 521.
Nets, 283, 284.
Dip, 284.
Drag, 283.
New Bedford, Mass., 622.
New Bridge, 241.
New England, 15-21, 23-26, 28, 30-32, 36, 38, 56, 81, 95, 96, 98, 144, 146, 148, 165, 173, 174, 176, 179, 182, 185, 191, 193-196, 200, 202, 207, 219, 276, 281, 316, 356, 358, 366, 395, 420, 443, 445, 465-467, 470, 478, 483, 484, 498, 514, 547, 555, 561, 562, 578, 584, 643, 649, 654, 679, 680.
New England Conference, 387, 393.
New England Historic Genealogical Society, 528.
New England, History of, 366.
"New England Judged," 151.
New England Primer, 407, 408.
New England's Prospect, 23, 25.
New Hampshire, 22, 42, 142, 149, 161, 170, 172, 175, 194, 196-200, 389, 467, 468, 474, 524, 535, 679.
New Haven, 500.
"New Heaven upon the New Earth," 191, 192.
New Jersey, 171.
New Lane, 333, 427.
"New Lights," 378.
New London, Conn., 470.
New Orleans, La., 634.
New Plymouth, 20, 24.
New Plymouth Bay, 24.
New Pond, 155.
"New Schemers," 378.
New Street, 89, 90.
New Town (Cambridge), Mass., 23, 24, 29, 34, 40, 41, 151, 493, 647, 675.
New Town (Newburyport), Mass., 85, 86, 89, 91, 95, 115, 116, 121, 126, 135, 154, 214, 314 401, 404, 418, 419, 439.
New York, 465, 468, 470, 472, 478, 560, 561.
New York, N. Y., 171, 196, 298, 309, 407, 630, 636.
New York Historical Society, 485.
New York Province, 146.
Newbury, Berkshire, Eng., 191, 323, 325, 326.
Mass., 17, 23, 24, 27, 28, 30, 31, 33-36, 38-47, 51-53, 57-65, 67-76, 78-83, 85-88, 90-95, 98, 101-109, 113, 114, 119-125, 128, 129, 131, 133, 138, 140, 142, 145, 148-159, 162-173, 175-179, 182-186, 188, 189, 191, 193-197, 199-209, 212, 213, 215-225, 227-231, 234-236, 240, 242-262, 264-277, 279, 280, 282-285, 287-317, 319-326, 328-341, 343, 345, 347-350, 352-354, 357, 359-361, 364, 365, 369-379, 381-399, 401-403, 406-414, 416-463, 468-481, 483-486, 488, 489, 492-508, 510-516, 518-520, 523, 526-530, 535, 536, 539-541, 543, 545, 549, 550, 552-557, 559, 560, 562-570, 572-574, 576, 578, 581, 583-598, 600-611, 613, 614, 616-623, 625, 631, 632, 636, 639, 640, 642-645, 647-651, 653-656, 658, 659, 662, 664-670, 672, 674-681, 683, 685-687.
Vt., 172.
Newbury, Walter, 444.
Newbury, Part of, annexed to Newburyport, 303.
Newbury in 1654, 165.
Newbury in 1660, 166.
Newbury, Boundaries of, 240.
Newbury, Map of "Ould," etc., 308.
Newbury, Map of, showing Parish Lines, 1795, 234, 240.
Newbury Falls, 66, 183, 184, 231, 233, 364, 405, 512, 647, 648, 650.
Newbury Marshes, 221, 223.
Newbury Neck, 277.
Newbury River, 184, 432.
Newbury Spring Bleachery Company, 302.
Newburyport, Mass., 82, 90, 91, 133, 134, 142, 172, 189, 214, 215, 223, 228, 234, 235, 238-

Newburyport, *continued.*
240, 243, 245, 247, 249, 250, 262, 265-270, 273-276, 280-282, 286, 288, 290, 292-294, 296, 298-300, 302-310, 333, 336, 339, 341, 342, 344, 345, 354, 366, 368, 371, 373, 375, 377, 378, 381, 384-388, 390-394, 404, 405, 407-411, 418-420, 423, 424, 426-430, 437, 442, 443, 458, 463, 464, 473-475, 480, 482-484, 486-492, 554, 578, 581, 589-594, 600-603, 605, 607-609, 611, 614, 616, 620, 621, 623-625, 633, 654, 658, 662, 664-667, 669, 670, 682, 683, 686, 687.
Boundaries of, 267, 268.
Incorporation of, 266.
Part of Newbury annexed to, 303.
Newburyport Academy, 269, 270.
Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette, 274.
Newburyport Turnpike, 270, 306, 308.
Newburyport Turnpike Corporation, 275.
Newburyport Woollen Manufactory, 240, 293, 294, 298.
Newcastle, N. H., 385.
Newell, Eleazer, 607.
Ezra, 607.
Mrs. Harriet, 366, 688.
Joseph, 277, 588, 603, 623, 683, 684.
Naptt, 606.
Newfoundland, 13, 15, 547.
Newhall, Capt. Joseph, 572, 610.
Joshua L., 685.
Newman, Benjamin, 601.
Elizabeth, 666.
John, 28, 569, 666.
Payne, 666.
Robert, 28.
Thomas, 28, 615.
Wingate, 666.
Newspapers, 224, 265, 471-473.
Newton, N. H., 255.
Newton, Charles A., 634.
Nichols, Aaron, 567.
Edmund, 625.
Humphrey, 607.
James, 566.
John, 586, 603, 607, 612.
William, 610, 614.
Nicholson, Francis, 371, 444, 535.
Nicolls, Col. Richard, 97, 173, 677.
Niganiche Bay, 548.
Niganiche Island, 548.
Nisbett, William, 206, 216.
Nixon, General, 608.
Noble, John, 473.
Rev. Oliver, 385, 584, 591.
Noble Street, 240, 385, 393.
Noddle's Island, 166.
Norfolk County, 74, 494.
Norfolk Street, 428, 429.
Norridgewock, Me., 522, 527-529, 544-546.
Battle at, 545.
North, Edmund, 629.
North America, 18, 467, 562, 575, 580.
Map of English Possessions in, 470.
North Atkinson Street, 391, 429.
North Cape, 548.
North Carolina, 380.
North Street, 238, 304, 492.
Northampton, Mass., 505.
Northend, Ezekiel, 276.
George H., 632.
John, 564, 627, 685.
William E., 632.
Norton, Daniel, 564.
Jonathan, 562.
Joshua, 286, 427.
Stephen, 615.
William, 615.
"Norumbega," 17.
Notary Public, 47.
Nova Scotia, 14, 371, 530, 531, 535, 553, 578, 667.
Nowell, Increase, 152.
John, 286.
Moses, 286, 611.
Samuel, 285, 286, 570, 615.
Noyes, Captain, 542.
Deacon, 348.
Mr., 389.
Aaron, 588, 607.
Mrs. Abigail, 668.
Mrs. Anne, 311.
Benjamin, 615.
Benjamin F., 634.
Calvin, 299.
Cutting, 102, 112, 116, 118, 179, 185, 200, 202, 203, 210, 254, 499, 542, 543, 680.
Daniel, 306, 542, 571, 627, 668, 685.
Rev. Daniel B., 362.
Dr. Ebenezer, 668.
Eliphalet, 285, 550, 612, 619.
Enoch, 266, 629.
Eugene, 573, 591.
Rev. F. B., 381.
Francis V., 294, 685.

Noyes, *continued.*
George E., 635.
Mrs. Hannah, 668.
Henry, 564, 573.
Isaac, 343.
James, 28, 36, 55, 84-86, 88, 92, 99, 124, 150, 156, 165, 182, 196, 220, 242, 264, 311, 312, 316, 324, 326, 328, 337, 424, 428, 542, 543, 654, 672, 674, 681.
John, 102, 117, 182, 204, 208, 218, 261, 571, 573, 586, 587, 603, 606, 610, 626, 629, 653, 656, 657, 660.
Corp. Jonathan, 562.
Joseph, 101, 150, 542, 564, 571, 588, 603, 606, 612, 613, 618.
Joshua, 571, 582, 606, 627.
Josiah P., 388.
Luther, 271, 410.
Moses, 343, 582.
Na., 53.
Nathan, 339.
Nathaniel, 344, 563, 573, 579, 634, 660.
Nehemiah, 571, 576.
Nicholas, 28, 41, 50, 54, 84, 88, 89, 91, 92, 99, 104-106, 109, 111, 112, 117, 118, 122, 163, 164, 176, 191, 194, 311, 332, 395, 397, 399, 415, 416, 420, 495, 526, 650, 677, 679.
Parker, 569, 588, 603, 607.
Paul, 573.
Peter, 629.
Prudence, 172.
Samuel, 291, 343, 571, 582, 596.
Mrs. Sarah, 311.
Silas, 613, 618, 672.
Simeon, 615.
Stephen, 575.
Thomas, 102, 106, 108, 111, 112, 118, 139, 180, 185, 196, 203, 205, 207-210, 212-215, 236, 258, 333, 334, 348, 350, 354, 401, 422, 424, 451, 452, 459, 497, 514, 518, 528, 536, 537, 540, 541, 543, 567, 575, 579, 589, 610, 628, 634, 659, 660, 680.
Timothy, 103, 204, 510.
Wadleigh, 588, 603, 606.
Walter, 634.
Ward, 560.
William, 180, 203, 214, 311, 402, 477, 541, 565, 575, 579, 628.
Noyes House, 672.
Noyes' Lane, Capt., 401, 672.
Nullification, 366.
Nut, Obadiah, 612.

OAK FRAME, 384.
Oak Hill Cemetery, 270, 302, 310, 491.
Oak Trees, 18, 307, 311.
Oakland Street, 238, 266, 300, 492.
Oat Meal, 159.
Oat Meal Mill, 159, 258.
Oath of Allegiance, 172, 177, 179, 642, 679.
Oath of Fidelity, 178.
Oaths, 60, 124.
Oats, 201, 466, 523.
Obbens, Solomon, 602.
Oben, Nathaniel, 573.
Ober, Nathaniel, 615.
"Oberlin" (bark), 491.
O'Brien, Thomas, 563.
Ocean Avenue, 214, 276, 426, 492, 593.
Ocracoke Bar, 380.
Ode, 310.
Odell, Joseph, 559.
Odiorne, Jothan, 199.
Officers, Town, 46, 109, 110.
Ohio, 81.
"Ohio" (steamboat), 491.
Ohio River, 556.
Old Ferry Landing Place, 280.
Old Hill Burying Ground, 235, 265, 644.
Old South Church, 384.
Old Town, 115, 116, 135, 136, 139, 157, 214, 404, 418.
Bridge, 225, 590.
Ferry, 83, 277, 401, 404.
Landing, 277.
Hill, 193.
Meeting House, 654.
River, 432, 433.
Old Will, 184.
Old Will Indian, 184.
Oldam, Mr., 649.
"Olive" (brig), 489, 490.
Oliver, Mrs., 55, 84, 88.
Francis J., 297.
John, 45, 99, 100.
"Ontario" (steamship), 492.
Orchard House, Blackwall, 484.
Ordinances, 56.
Ordinaries, 40, 71, 72, 137, 442, 443.
First, 40.
Ordinations, 352, 356, 358, 364, 365, 368, 369, 377-379, 381, 385, 386, 402, 513.
Ordway, Benjamin, 626.
Edward, 205, 331, 503, 506, 508.
Francis, 94.
Hananiah, 354, 542, 659.
James, 101, 111, 112, 115-118, 141, 163, 178, 179, 206, 209,

Ordway, James, *continued.*
210, 262, 417, 536, 541, 626, 660.
John, 125, 179, 206, 214, 227, 347, 349, 350, 352, 353, 370, 424, 482, 526, 541, 542, 569, 626, 660.
Joshua, 430, 683.
Nathaniel, 626.
Peter, 587, 601, 609, 626.
Richard, 626.
Capt. Stephen, 238.
William, 629.
Ordway's Lane, 90, 142, 262, 375, 427, 664.
Organ in St. Paul's Church, 377.
Orthography, 408.
Osborn, Ezekiel, 632.
Hugh M., 635.
Osgood, Christopher, 28.
Hucker, 660.
John, 44, 55, 69, 75, 84, 93, 99, 416, 417, 576, 628, 684.
Joseph, 516.
Oliver, 576.
Philip, 615.
Samuel, 238.
Theophilus, 615.
Timothy, 238.
Osilloway, Daniel, 372, 567, 660.
Oswego, 560.
Otherman, Rev. Bartholomew, 387.
Ouiak River, 548.
Overseers of the Poor, 299, 554.
Overseers of Powder and Shot, 647.
Overseers of Society of Friends, 392.
Owens, John, 564, 572.
Ox Common, 95, 132.
Ox Pasture Hill, 83, 308.
Ox Roasted, 235.
Oxen, 132, 134, 135, 203-207, 277, 330, 523, 578, 670.

PACANOKROK, SAGAMORE, 24.
Pacific Ocean, 22.
Packet Boats, 470, 472.
Page, Henry, 625.
Insley, 629.
James, 612.
Nathan, 566.
Richard, 627.
Simon, 573, 575, 579.
Painting, 302.
Paintings, 310, 409.
Oil, 409.
Palisade, 574.
Palmer, Captain, 36.
Palmer, *continued.*
Daniel, 571.
Henry, 54, 71 [illegible] 93.
Richard, 84.
William, 44, [illegible] 9.
Paper, 296, 581.
Duty on, 581.
Tax on, 296.
Paper Money, 218.
Parades, 197, 209, 530.
Army, 530.
of Governor Belcher, 197.
Paris, France, 378, 580, 599.
Parish, Rev. Elijah, 365, 366.
Parishes, 226, 351, 357.
Records of, 336.
Taxes of, 290, 291, 341.
Parker, Miss Anne, 311.
Dorcas, 669.
Lt. David, 559.
Capt. Gideon, 600.
John, 141.
Joseph, 75, 560.
Moses, 185.
Nathan, 75, 180.
Rev. Robert, 311.
Rev. Thomas, 28-30, 36, 41, 55, 66, 84, 85, 87, 88, 91, 99, 101, 112, 149, 150, 165, 176, 191, 193, 220, 311, 316, 317, 319-321, 323-325, 328, 329, 402, 433, 494, 643, 654.
William, 613.
Rev. William W., 362.
Parker River, 27, 28, 30-32, 36, 57, 58, 64, 82, 83, 85, 126, 134, 154, 156, 157, 159, 183, 193, 224, 229, 231, 233, 239-241, 250, 275, 276, 283, 284, 308, 311, 314, 395, 413-415, 418, 419, 428, 432-434, 437, 653, 654.
Bridge, 240, 275, 308, 419, 431, 434.
Ferry over, 431, 434.
Parker Street, 90, 124, 672, 674.
Parliament, 42, 148, 161, 171, 296, 581, 583.
Parsonage, 361, 364, 366.
of Byfield Parish, 428.
House, 356.
Parsons, Mass., 301, 361, 380, 386.
Incorporation of, 301, 380, 386.
Parsons, Caleb, 613.
David, 626.
Eben, 233, 364, 366.
Gorham, 294.
John, 634.
Jonathan, 286, 340, 382, 384, 568.

Parsons, *d.*
Josep
Rev. 257, 364, 365, 571, 584.
Samu
Theop 3, 293, 294, 304.
Parsons Mr., Meeting House, 274.
Pascataquak, 19, 45.
Passaconaway (Indian), 24, 500, 501.
Passamaquoddy, 534.
Passaquo (Indian), 71.
Pastors, 283, 311, 336, 339, 344, 345, 361, 362, 364, 365, 368, 433, 518.
First, 311.
Pasturage, 129, 133, 137.
Pastures, 53, 54, 56, 132, 134, 138, 139, 213, 214, 222, 293, 300, 304, 305, 307, 351, 354.
Common, 293, 300, 304, 305.
Gerrish, 307.
Patents, 298.
Paterson, George, 564, 565, 575, 579.
Patten, Robert, 280.
Patridge, Colonel, 481.
Paul's Chain, 312, 325, 326.
Paul's Churchyard, 323.
Paupers, 215, 216.
Pawtucket Falls, 170, 198.
Paxton, Edmund, 312, 323, 325, 326.
Pay, William, 614.
Peabody, Hannah, 645.
Serg. John, 559.
Nathan, 578.
Corp. Richard, 559.
Peabody Manufacturing Company, 303.
Peace, Treaty of, 630.
Pearson, ——, 272.
Abel, 627.
Benjamin, 116, 204, 542.
Daniel, 88.
David, 571, 628.
Eben, 301.
Elijah, 634.
Enoch, 571.
George W., 634.
Henry, 627.
Isaac Green, 486.
James, 559.
Jeremiah, 259, 406, 569, 571, 578.
John, 156, 157, 168, 204, 238, 242, 258, 292, 498, 564, 569, 605.
Jonathan, 563, 565, 569, 571, 572, 615.
Pearson, *continued.*
Joseph, 601.
Joseph H., 632.
Josh, 571.
Moses, 570.
Moses T., 634.
Nathaniel, 587, 601, 626.
Noyes, 571.
Orin T., 634.
Paul, 571, 578.
Samuel, 605.
Silas, 259, 260, 583, 593, 597, 610.
Solomon, 571.
Thomas, 563.
William P., 636.
Pearson's Mills, 240.
Pearson's Mills Village, 271.
Peas, 523.
Pease, Capt. Samuel, 479.
Pease, 113, 120, 121, 201.
Peasley, Joseph, 55, 84, 89, 93, 251.
Peckham, Walter G., 633.
Pecoit, 75.
Pecoits, 499.
"Peggy" (ship), 481.
Peirce (Pierce), Mr., 21, 479.
Andrews, 550.
Benjamin, 665.
Charles, 243, 264, 429, 681.
Daniel, 61, 88, 94, 99, 101, 106, 108, 110-112, 118, 138, 140, 163, 171, 176, 180, 185, 194, 195, 203, 205, 207, 209, 210, 212, 214, 215, 220, 249, 258, 262, 331, 333, 334, 348, 350, 397, 400, 401, 421, 422, 425, 496-499, 514, 579, 580, 670, 671.
Dr. Eleazer, 665.
Enoch, 628.
Mrs. Eunice, 665.
George, 182.
Henry, 575, 579.
Joshua, 171, 542, 665, 671.
Mrs. Lydia, 665.
Nathan, 343.
Nathaniel, 686.
Richard, 578.
Sarah, 665, 671.
Stephen, 575, 579.
Thomas, 671.
Peirce's Farm, 427.
Pelham, N. H., 483.
Pellion, John, 625.
Pemaquid (Bristol), Me., 518, 519.
Pemberton, John, 49, 55, 84, 88, 90, 93, 94, 109.
Pembroke, Mass., 486.

Pen, 134.
Pendergast, Thomas S., 626.
Pendon, James, 619.
Penmanship, 407.
Pennacook (Concord), N. H., 24, 168-170.
Pennacook Indians, 182, 500, 522.
Pennsylvania, 560.
Penobscot Bay, 15.
Penobscot Indians, 202.
Penobscot River, 14, 17, 500, 508, 514, 535, 573, 574.
Pension, 527.
Penton, Isaac F., 634.
Pentucket (Haverhill), Mass., 24, 25, 70, 74, 500.
Pentucket Indians, 182.
Pentucket Pond, 83.
Pentucket River, 308.
People's Methodist Episcopal Church, 388.
Pepperell, Joanna, 668.
Sir William, 549, 552.
Pequot, 75, 76.
Pequot Indians, 499, 500.
Pequot War, 494.
Percy, Joseph, 607.
Periwigs, 358.
Perkins, Benjamin, 288, 564, 592, 600.
David, 575, 579.
Edward, & Co., 482.
Jacob, 298.
Mrs. Jane, 298.
John, Jr., 30.
Joseph, 632.
Miss Lydia, 315.
Matthew, 298.
Paul A., 632.
Stephen, 610.
William, 549.
William W., 685.
Perley, Jacob, 623.
Putnam, 685.
Capt. William, 604.
Perrin, Thomas, 566, 571, 573.
Perry, ——, 467.
John, 122.
Joseph, 603, 607.
William, 613, 618.
Person, Benjamin, 512.
Perth Amboy (Whitehead), N. J., 171, 470.
Perth Amboy & Woodbridge Railroad, 171.
Pest House, 224, 225.
Pesumpscot River, 512.
Peter (mulatto), 256.
Peter (negro), 256.
Peters, Mr., 75.
Petersburg, Va., 632.
Peterson, Willet, 360.
Petitions, 194, 200, 220, 227, 300, 301, 303-306, 349, 350, 353, 360, 369, 371, 379, 398, 419, 420, 424, 429, 431, 432, 439-441, 443, 444, 446, 447, 450, 452, 458-461, 463, 466, 468, 476, 477, 523, 527, 622, 623.
Liberty of, 162.
Pettingell, Benjamin, 588, 603, 607, 610.
Cutting, 388, 605, 607, 612, 628, 660.
David, 629.
Edward, 562.
Miss Elizabeth, 658.
Jacob, 608.
John, 103, 275, 542, 543.
Joseph, 563, 575.
Joshua, 615.
Josiah, 605.
Miss Mary, 665.
Matthew, 116, 179, 204, 542, 549, 562 565, 570, 615.
Moses, 223, 306, 601, 629, 685.
Nathan, 606.
Nathaniel 628.
Nicholas, 566.
Richard, 93, 112, 117, 118, 180, 240, 415, 416, 605, 660.
Samuel, 180, 204, 384, 605, 607.
Thomas, 660.
Pettisquamscott, 506.
Petty, Seth, 559.
Pews, 314, 317, 318, 331, 334, 335, 341, 358, 359, 360, 368, 373-375, 384.
Pewter, 670.
"Phenix" (ship), 371.
Philadelphia, Pa., 407, 470, 472, 583.
Philip, King, 508, 509.
Philip's War, King, 178, 432, 502.
History of, 508.
Phillips, Colonel, 520.
Lieutenant, 677.
John, 68.
Philosophical Apparatus, 154.
Phippeny, ——, 522.
Phipps, Samuel, 602.
Phips, Sir William, 209, 514, 515, 680.
Phisgard, Patrick, 565.
Physicians, 67, 140, 142, 256, 291-293, 662.
Pickard, John, 276.
Pickering, Boston, 613, 618.
James H., 633.

Pickering, *continued.*
Col. Timothy, 609.
"Pickering" (United States brig), 485.
Pickett, William, 491.
Pidgeon, Benjamin, 286.
Pierpont, Rev. Jonathan, 665.
Sarah, 665, 667.
Pike, Lieutenant, 395.
Benjamin, 286.
Caleb, 388.
Daniel, 565, 576, 602.
Elias, 457.
Rev. Ezra B., 362.
Hugh, 180, 206, 427, 505, 511, 530.
John, 32, 48-50, 53, 54, 62, 63, 66, 84, 88, 89, 104, 105, 109, 110, 141, 158, 169, 171, 214, 418, 495, 502, 529, 541, 565, 566, 575, 579, 677, 678.
Joseph, 108, 111, 112, 115, 118, 128, 129, 149, 153, 181, 185, 194, 204, 208, 210, 212, 227, 228, 261, 272, 283, 349, 398, 399, 422, 496, 509, 516, 526, 536, 538, 539, 542, 680.
Joshua M., 459.
Moses, 569, 627.
Nicholas, 275, 280, 408.
Perley, 572, 579.
Richard, 287, 288, 621, 622, 684.
Robert, 41, 46, 68, 69, 101, 102, 106, 154, 162-165, 178, 446.
Samuel 575, 579.
Thomas, 427, 542, 552, 567, 571, 573, 575, 579.
Timothy, 238.
William, 615.
Pile, William, 146
Pilgrims, 14, 18
Pilsbury, Ensign, 606.
Mr., 424.
Abel, 117, 181, 206, 659.
Amos, 626, 660.
Benjamin, 575.
Caleb, 181, 528, 541.
Chase, 612.
Daniel, 528, 541, 578, 588, 603, 608, 626.
Elijah, 576.
Eliphalet, 615.
Elisha, 563.
Elizabeth, 238.
Enoch, 566.
Francis M., 633.
Hiram R., 634.
Increase, 181, 515.
Job, 102, 128, 177, 181, 206.
John, 566, 626.
Joseph, 430, 486, 536, 539, 617.
Pilsbury, *continued.*
Joshua, 485, 587.
Josiah, 429, 486, 540.
Leonard, 634.
Moses, 102, 111, 116, 128, 139, 140, 178, 202.
Capt. Oliver, 684.
Parker, 579.
Samuel, 588, 603, 610, 615, 616, 661.
Lt. Timothy, 586.
William, 101, 110, 111, 115, 116, 118, 181, 182, 207, 526
Pilsbury's Lane, 373, 390, 409, 430, 486, 491.
Pine Island, 261, 688.
Pine Island Creek, 261, 262.
Pine Island Mills, 240.
Pine Swamp, 67, 138.
Pine Trees, 18.
Pingry, Abigail, 189.
Moses, 189.
Pink, 143.
Pinnace, 33.
Pipestave Hill, 83, 226-228, 308, 350-355, 359, 360, 369, 370.
Pipestaves, 126, 127, 167.
Piracy, 478.
Piscataqua (Portsmouth), N. H., 42, 434, 447, 467, 468, 470, 521, 529, 530.
Piscataqua Harbor, 31.
Piscataqua Post, 469.
Piscataqua River, 19, 24, 25, 43, 45, 142, 143, 160, 182, 190, 519, 522.
Pistols, 43, 648.
Pitch, 370.
Pits, Captain, 481.
Place, Samuel, 601.
"Plain Dealing or News from New England," 313.
Plain, John Hull's, 417.
Plains, 139, 159.
Plains, The, 225, 423, 429.
Plaisted, Col. Ichabod, 563, 564.
Roger, 169.
Plank, 127, 128.
Plant, Mrs. Lydia, 255, 373.
Rev. Matthias, 250, 255, 265, 272, 208, 373-377, 471.
Plant Place, 299.
Planters, 95.
Plat, John, 566.
Platts' Tavern, 253.
Pleasant Street, 309.
Plum Island, 14, 17-19, 25, 83, 125, 133, 134, 193, 199, 218, 220, 222-224, 240, 276, 297, 307, 308, 315, 621.
Division of, 222.

Plum Island Bridge, 304, 305.
Plum Island Point, 240, 593.
Plum Island River, 83, 220, 222, 241, 308.
Plum Island River Bridge, 276.
Plum Island Turnpike, 214, 306.
Plum Island Turnpike and Bridge Corporation, 276.
Plumer, Bemsley, 571.
Benjamin, 181, 434, 603.
Daniel, 305, 306, 549.
David, 629.
Enoch, 285, 391, 569.
Ephraim, 179, 204, 432, 510.
Francis, 40, 50, 53, 54, 71, 84, 88, 89, 98, 114, 115, 163, 164.
Isaac, 606, 609, 611, 613, 616, 617.
Isaiah, 630.
Jeremiah, 573.
John, 503.
Jonathan, 261, 433, 470, 542, 606, 610.
Joseph, 93, 102, 115, 118, 128, 141, 163, 164, 181, 204, 205, 629.
Mark, 586.
Miss Matilda, 410.
Nathaniel, 568, 628.
Paul, 586.
Samuel, 89, 93, 100, 102, 105, 107, 108, 110, 111, 115-118, 128, 163, 181, 204, 225, 258, 399, 432, 433, 510, 573, 679.
Seth, 609, 610, 616, 617.
Stephen, 609, 629.
Sylvanus, 118, 180, 205.
William, 573, 575, 586, 609-611, 616, 617, 629.
Plummer Street, 418.
Plymouth, Eng., 18.
Mass., 14, 18, 20, 21, 216, 506, 530, 572.
Plymouth Colony, 19, 20, 215, 500.
Plymouth, Council of, 42.
Plymouth, Old, 24.
Poems, 146, 147.
Police Station, 281.
Pond, New, 124.
Pond Street, 90, 309.
Ponds, 303.
Poole, James, 606.
Poor, Widow, 204.
Alfred, 119.
Amos, 587, 601, 609.
Benjamin, 515, 587, 601, 627, 659.
Daniel, 108, 576.
David, 627.
Eben, 626.
Edward, 179, 206, 541, 659.
Poor, *continued.*
Eliphalet, 587, 601, 609, 610, 616, 617, 627.
Enoch, 560, 576, 579, 627.
Henry, 181, 204, 506, 570
Hiram Kelley, 634.
Jeremiah, 570.
John, 54, 84, 87, 89, 100, 102, 110, 111, 118, 141, 163, 168, 169, 179, 181, 204, 238, 317, 430, 485, 515, 626.
Jonathan, 244, 255, 433, 542, 559, 586, 610.
Joseph, 180, 204, 206, 484, 503, 510, 541, 605.
Micajah, 393.
Moses, 571, 575, 579.
Nathan, 575, 579.
Samuel, 102, 116, 118, 141, 163, 179, 206, 484, 506, 511, 526, 541, 610, 626.
Stephen, 530, 540, 586.
Thomas, 626.
William, 614, 619.
Poor, The, 113, 214, 244, 245, 299, 318.
Church, Support of, 314.
Establishment, 299.
Overseers of, 299.
Poore's Lane, 386, 418, 430, 437, 483, 491.
Pope, The, 319.
Popham, Sir Francis, 17.
Capt. George, 15, 17.
Popham's Settlement, 15.
Popkin, Rev. John Snelling, 344, 345, 654.
Population, 288.
Porch of House, 330.
Meeting House, 318, 335, 341.
Pork, 331.
Porpoise, Cape, 521.
Port Royal, N. S., 371, 514, 530-532, 534, 535, 578.
Expedition against, 371.
Portenove, 548.
Porter, Isaac F., 634.
John, 306, 491.
Portland, Me., 472, 522, 552, 668.
Portsmouth, N. H., 42, 106, 142, 143, 153, 161, 194, 195, 198, 228, 252, 272-274, 280, 282, 370, 434, 437, 448, 463, 468-470, 472-474, 484, 488, 529, 537, 555, 623, 624, 664, 669.
Portugal, 620.
Posts, 467-470, 472, 473.
Eastern, 469, 473.
Piscataqua, 469.
Western, 470.
Post Bay, 470.

Post Office, 466-469, 472.
Post Riders, 453, 466, 469, 471-473.
Post, Single Horse, 473.
Post Stage, 473.
Postage, 465, 466, 468, 472.
Postal Service, 465, 468, 472.
Postmaster General, 467, 468.
Postmasters, 468-474.
Postmen, 465, 466, 471.
Potomac River, 15.
Pots, 670.
Potter, Edward H., 686.
Pound, Thomas, 478.
Pounds, 112, 113, 121, 131, 132, 136, 214.
Powder, 43, 62, 75-78, 171, 225, 226, 499, 535, 538, 647, 648.
House, 225, 226.
Mill, 77.
Powell, Caleb, 186.
Pownall, Gov. Thomas, 573, 574.
Powow River, 199, 280, 298, 421, 439-442, 463, 464.
Pratt, John, 606.
Samuel, 607.
Pray, Charles H., 633.
Prayers, 407.
Preach Lectures, 402.
Preachers, 393.
Preaching, 226, 251, 332.
Forbidden, Certain, 162.
Prefer, Benjamin, 549.
Presbey, Jn°., 560.
Presbyterian Meeting House, 486.
Presbyterian Society, 366.
Presbyterianism, 29, 313, 361, 366.
Prebytery, 165, 383.
of Boston, 383.
President, 620.
Presly, Nathan, 217.
Pressey, Benjamin, 568, 607.
Preston, Edward, 149.
George, 149.
Price, Bille, 615.
Daniel, 614.
Lt. John, 502.
Cornet Walter, 502.
Prices, 201.
Established, 597, 598.
Priests, 543, 544.
Primus (negro), 256.
Prince, Charles H., 634.
James, 275, 281.
Nathan, 569.
Pring, Martin, 14.
Prisoners, 248, 556, 596, 597.
of War, 556, 596, 597.
Prisons, 142, 144, 146, 245, 247-249, 429.
Privateers, 485, 547.
French, 547.
Privy Council, 26-28, 178, 194, 197, 246, 247.
Processions, 279, 309.
Proclamations, 630, 679, 682, 683.
at End of 1812-'15 War, 630.
Professor of Mental and Moral Philosophy, 392.
Professors, 379.
"Prophecy of Samuel Sewall," 191.
Proprietors of Common Lands, 92.
Records of, 64.
Prospect Hill, 83, 308.
Protector, The, 172.
Proverb, 122.
"Province Galley" (armed vessel), 522, 530, 535.
Provincetown, Mass., 18, 674.
Provincial Army, 604.
Provincial Charter, 196.
Provincial Congress, 585, 591, 592, 682, 683.
at Salem, 682, 683.
Provisional Government, 1689, 207, 208, 498.
Prowse, John, 515.
Psalms, 314.
Tate's & Brady's Version of the, 340.
Tuning the, 337.
Public Houses, 71, 72, 114.
Public Library, Newburyport, 590, 667.
Matthias Plant Sawyer's Gift to, 667.
Public Worship, 290.
Publishment of Intentions of Marriage, 61.
Pulpits, 317, 334, 335, 337, 341, 359, 362, 384.
Pulsifer, Samuel, 573.
Pumping Station, 303.
Punch Bowl, Silver, 483.
Punishments, 35, 38, 43, 46, 79, 80, 95, 120-124, 142, 144-146, 148, 315, 389.
Purchase Street, 303, 387.
Puritans, 20.
Putnam, Lt. Ezra, 579.
Lt. Thomas, 502.
Timothy, 540.
Putnam's Pond, 561.
Pynchon, John, 189, 505.

QUAKER BURYING GROUND, 390, 392.

Quaker Meeting House, 391.
Quaker Meetings, 389, 390.
Quakers, 144-151, 252, 383, 389, 390, 677.
Quamscooke, 24.
Quartermaster-General, 172.
Quascacunquen River, 24, 25, 30, 31, 64, 83, 156, 182, 258, 311, 347, 432, 675.
Quebec, 235, 514, 515, 543, 547, 555, 576, 578, 580, 593, 594.
 Capture of, 512, 576.
 Surrender of, 578.
Queen Anne's Chapel, 228, 250, 255, 265, 272, 355, 369, 371-375, 377, 384, 428.
Queen Street, 404, 428, 429, 482.
Quimbe's Garrison, 537.
Quo Warranto, 178, 194.

RACKLIFT, BENJAMIN, 615.
Radman, Rev. William, 388.
Rafts, 127, 484.
Ragles, Stephen, 607.
Rahway, N. J., 171.
Railroads, 274, 275, 308.
 Street, 275.
Rallé, Sebastien, 544-546.
Ram Island, 308, 434, 437, 438, 591.
Ramsdell, Nathaniel, 612.
Ramsey, Charles, 627.
Rand, Daniel, 626.
Randall, Elphalet, 626.
 John, 617.
 Rev. Phineas, 344.
 Samuel, 617, 618.
 William, 94, 180, 507.
Randolph, Edward, 194, 202, 444, 679.
Ranson, General, 633.
Rapier, 217.
Rattlesnakes, 23.
Rawlins, Davis, 609.
 Ja., 53.
 Joseph, 609.
 Nicholas, 179, 204, 506.
Rawlinson, Thomas, 507.
Rawson, Ebenezer, 573.
 Edward, 38, 44, 46-48, 52-54, 56, 57, 60, 62, 63, 65, 67, 73, 75, 76, 78, 79, 84-86, 88, 92-94, 99, 101, 103, 132, 141, 173, 177, 187, 188, 220, 322, 399, 419, 439, 639, 662, 676, 679.
Ray, William, 602.
"Razee," 621.
Reading, Mass., 152, 402, 447, 603, 639.
Reading, 409.
 Books, 407.
Reading, *continued.*
 School, 406.
 Taught, 396, 400.
Rebellion, War of the, 631, 632.
Records, 46, 58, 64, 202, 336.
 Parish, 336.
 Town, 46-58, 336, 402.
Rectors, 341, 370, 372, 373, 376.
Red Head, 548.
Reed, David, 625.
 Mary, 645.
 Moses, 617, 618.
 William, 613, 616, 618.
"Reformation John," 387.
Register, 47.
Registration of Vessels, 480.
Religion, 493, 677.
Religious Controversy, 494, 496.
Religious Excitement, 338.
Religious Services, 15, 170, 251, 314, 333, 557.
 First, in New England, 15.
 of Regiment before Departure for Lake George, 557.
Religious Worship, 587.
 in Camp, 517.
Remick, Isaac, 562, 566.
 John, 613, 618, 625.
 Joseph, 286, 485, 560.
 Samuel, 612.
Remington, John, 99, 493.
Removal from Parker River to Merrimack River, 82.
Representative Districts, 685-687.
Representatives, 208, 639.
 to General Court, 639.
"Republic" (ship), 491.
Resignations, 368, 369.
Resolutions, 582-584, 620, 621, 631.
Reuben (negro), 255.
Revenue, 201.
Revere, Paul, 508, 509, 590.
Revolution of 1689, 202, 478, 679.
Revolutionary Army, 640.
Revolutionary War, 172, 253, 274, 291, 297, 365, 373, 406, 474, 484, 581, 658, 661.
Reynolds, Jonathan, 565.
Rhode Island, 44, 154, 374, 470, 506, 611, 649.
Rhode-Island, Newport, 605, 612.
Rian, Timothy, 566.
Rich, Lancaster, 617.
"Richard and Sarah" (sloop), 530.
Richards, Humphrey, 338, 342.
 John, 613, 618, 636, 378.
 Oliver, 618.
 William, 285.
Richardson, Sergeant, 116, 118, 203.

Richardson, *continued*.
Amos, 324.
Arthur C., 687.
Benjamin, 181.
Caleb, 205, 331, 503, 511.
Calvin, 659.
David, 629.
Edward, 94, 110, 115, 118, 141, 163, 169, 180, 181, 528, 541.
John, 103, 108, 180, 324, 330-333, 347, 348, 400, 401, 629, 654.
Capt. Jones, 604.
Joseph, 180, 205, 347, 503, 507, 511, 536, 538, 539, 542.
Joshua, 178, 181, 203, 331, 510, 511.
Josiah, 603, 612.
Mrs. Mary, 324.
Moses, 543.
Stephen, 567, 575, 579.
William, 163.
Ricker, John W., 686.
Ricks, 222.
Ridgway, James, 628.
Moses Moody, 539.
Nathaniel, 607.
Thomas, 607.
Riflemen, 631.
Rigaud Harbor, 548.
Ring, Jarvis, 456, 457, 576.
John, 515.
Robert, 281.
Theophilus, 576.
Ring, Gold, 218.
Ring's Island, 83, 281, 308, 443, 446.
Ringed Swine, 133, 134.
Rishworth, Edward, 143, 171.
Risley, Rev. J. E., 388.
River Lots, 214, 215.
Rivers, 166.
Roads, 82, 83, 155, 156, 271, 275, 281, 298-300, 308, 373, 392, 413-415, 418, 419, 423, 424, 427, 441, 446, 450, 454, 459, 531.
Robbins, Barney, 633.
John, 629.
Thomas B., 635.
Roberson, Daniel, 543.
Robert (negro), 254.
Roberts, Charles, 635.
John A., 627.
Joseph, 410.
Robert, 245.
Robertson, John, 626.
Robin (negro), 255.
Robin's Pound, 139.
Robinson, John, 71.
Roby, Capt. Joseph, 600.
Nathaniel, 578.
Rochfort, Point, 551.
Rock's Bridge, 277-279, 462.
Rock's Village, 279, 462.
Rocky Hill Meeting House, 464.
Rodes, Andrew, 566.
Rody, Andrew, 563, 565.
Roger, London, 617.
Rogers, Aaron, 616, 617, 629.
Abiel, 240.
Abner, 629.
Albert, 632.
Asa, 634.
Benjamin, 563, 565, 566.
Benjamin P., 632.
Calvin, 685.
Charles B., 635.
Charles E., 634.
Chase, 600.
Christopher, 634.
Daniel, 338, 627.
Daniel E., 632, 635.
David, 629.
Eben, 633.
Edward L., 634.
Elijah P., 632.
Enoch S., 634.
Ezekiel, 68, 69, 74, 626, 649.
Gideon, 626.
Gorham P., 634.
Hermon D., 685.
Ira, 635.
Isaac, 372.
Isaiah, 633, 653.
James, 626.
Jewett, 635.
John, 238, 656.
Jonathan, 562, 564.
Joseph, 566, 601, 608, 626.
Lewis B., 634.
Melvin B., 634.
Micajah, 632.
Mighill, A., 632, 634.
Moses, 616, 617.
Rev. N., 338.
Oliver, 626.
Peter, 240, 589.
Philip, 634.
Philip L., 634.
Capt. Richard, 612.
Robert, 94, 169, 372, 390, 528, 541, 573.
Samuel, 573.
Silas, 589, 608.
Simon P., 633.
Stephen, 567.
Theodore, 626.
Thomas, 180, 206, 286, 506, 573, 589, 612, 628.
Timothy W., 635.
Varnum, 632.
William, 343, 588, 603, 607, 626.

Rogers, *continued*.
William H. G., 632.
William M., 686.
Woodbridge A., 633.
Rogers' Mill Dam, John, 238.
Rolfe, Ann, 666.
Benjamin, 94, 102, 110, 111, 115, 118, 182, 204, 261, 262, 318, 426.
Daniel, 503, 506, 507.
Enoch, 611.
Ezra, 542.
Henry, 55, 84, 89, 129, 170, 218, 219, 236, 243, 244, 248, 254, 256, 264, 338, 457, 542, 554, 681.
Jacob, 286.
John, 100, 142, 150, 163, 180, 542.
John C., 640.
Joseph, 286.
Joseph N., 686.
Mary, 142.
Moses, 505, 629.
Nathaniel, 527, 542, 660.
Richard, 601, 611, 612.
Rolfe's Lane, 276, 426, 492, 593.
Rolinson, Robert, 181.
Rollins, Aaron, 612.
Eliphalet, 614.
John, 287.
Moses, 587, 601.
Thomas, 607.
Romsey, Eng., 32.
Rope Making, 264.
Rope Walks, 264, 593, 620.
Rose, Captain, 484.
Serg. Joseph, 560.
Rose (negro), 256.
Roswell, Sir Henry, 22.
Round Island, 548.
Rowe, Moses, 612.
Richard, 635, 636.
Rowell, Abraham, 541.
Joseph, 286, 549.
Philip, 539.
Thomas, 248.
Valentine, 537, 539.
Rowland, Patrick, 613, 618.
Rowleson, Joseph, 206.
Rowley, Mass., 32, 60, 68, 69, 74, 75, 78, 82, 83, 95, 148, 152, 153, 156, 157, 167, 168, 185, 196, 218, 220, 222, 223, 229-231, 233, 239, 240, 258, 259, 275, 276, 300, 307, 308, 352, 364, 373, 393, 412, 413, 416, 419, 421, 476, 493, 494, 497, 498, 500, 502, 512, 515, 516, 518, 519, 559, 563, 572, 573, 590, 601, 602, 605, 606, 611, 646, 649, 650, 668, 685-687.
Rowley, *continued*.
Boundaries of, 240.
Rowley River, 83, 230, 231, 240, 308.
Rowley Village, 421.
Rowling, John, 589.
Roxbury, Mass., 23, 24, 36, 40, 77, 148, 152, 321, 493, 647, 651, 683.
Royal Society of London, 378.
Ruggles, Colonel, 559.
Rules and Regulations, 137, 224, 284, 287, 291.
Rum, 478, 483.
Rumford (Concord), N. H., 170.
Rundlett, Charles W., 634.
Runnells, Robert, 613.
Rushworth, Edward, 143, 171.
Russ, John, 75, 84, 85, 431, 432.
Russell, George, 633.
James, 189.
Joseph, 575, 579, 609.
Samuel, 629.
Thomas, 559.
Rye, 113, 201.
Rye Plain, 230.
Bridge, 229, 230.
Ryswick, Holland, 521.

SABBATH, 117, 120, 121, 314, 331, 337-339, 342, 356, 517, 654.
Breaches, 252.
in Camp, 517.
Days, 404, 433.
Observance, 251-253.
Sabbath Day Point, 561.
Sabino, Me., Peninsula of, 15.
Sack, 72.
Saco, Me., 418, 535.
Saco River, 25, 168, 170, 182, 512, 514, 522.
Falls, 521.
Sacrament Day, 402.
Sadler, Anthony, 68, 100.
Sadles, 503, 505.
Safety, Committee of, 207, 208.
Safford, James, 575, 579, 588, 605.
Samuel, 626.
Sagadahoc River, 15, 19.
Sage, Joseph, 516.
Saggattew (Indian), 71.
Sail Makers, 620.
Sailors, 620.
"Salamander" (ship), 476.
Salaries of Ministers, 316, 317, 372.
Salaries of School Teachers, 300-303, 407, 656.
Salem, Mass., 22-24, 34, 39-41, 61, 74, 78, 80, 147, 150-152, 154,

Salem, Mass., *continued.*
176, 177, 186, 194, 241, 246-248, 262, 271-273, 315, 373, 389, 399, 413, 433, 436, 448, 454, 459, 468, 470-477, 479, 486, 493, 495, 502, 508, 516, 563, 583, 585, 592, 597, 621, 625, 664, 668, 674, 682, 683.
N. Y., 361.
Salisbury, Eng., 32, 33, 68.
Mass., 23, 68, 70, 78, 83, 106, 121, 145, 146, 148, 149, 152, 153, 161-163, 165-168, 197, 218, 239, 244, 251, 277, 280, 281, 308, 339, 373, 388, 389, 393, 418, 419, 431, 434-439, 441, 443-450, 452-458, 463, 464, 476-478, 483, 493, 497, 512, 530, 540, 552, 559, 563, 564, 567, 573, 590-592, 603, 604, 608, 611, 625, 676.
N. C., 635, 636.
N. H., 516.
Salisbury Conference, 387.
Salisbury Ferry, 199.
Salisbury New Town, 389, 421, 439.
Salisbury Point, 464.
Salisbury, Settlement of, 439.
Salmon, William, 528, 541, 660.
Salmon, 23, 25, 167, 281-283, 462.
Salmon River, 548.
Salt, 18, 21, 296, 297.
Works, 296, 297.
Salt Hay, 222.
Saltonstall, Nathaniel, 106, 189, 497, 528.
Sir Richard, 33, 41, 80.
Saltpetre, 75-77.
Sampson, Benjamin, 566.
Corp. Daniel, 563.
Jonathan, 569.
Joseph, 562, 566.
William, 562, 573, 575, 579.
"Samuel and Hannah" (ship), 271.
Sanborn, Benjamin, 659.
Rev. Francis W., 346.
Richard, 578.
William, 120.
William T., 634.
"Sancta Maria" (ship), 143.
Sand, Saul, 625.
Sand Hills, 222.
Sanders, George, 618.
Jedediah, 629.
John, 68, 92, 99, 100, 104, 109, 220, 436, 676, 677.
Timothy, 576, 608.
William, 44.
Sandown, N. H., 393.
Sandy Beach, 222, 239, 276.
Sandy Street, 429.
Sarah (Indian), 185.
Saratoga, N. Y., 596.
Sargent, Captain, 481.
Charles W., 635.
Ebenezer, 569.
Edward, 246, 247, 283, 334, 353, 447-457, 528, 540, 541, 665.
Gorham P., 685.
Capt. John, 516.
Capt. Moses, 564.
Widow Rachel, 537.
Capt. Robert, 463.
Samuel, 516.
Mrs. Sarah, 448, 665.
Stephen, 626.
Thomas, 537, 539, 603.
William, 44, 626.
Zebulon, 616.
Sargent's Creek, 463.
Sargent's Ferry, 456-458.
Sargent's Tavern, Edward, 283.
Sarum, Eng., 32.
Sassafras, 13, 14.
Satchell, Jeremiah, 573.
John, 566.
Saugus, Mass., 23, 40, 41, 45, 493, 647.
Savage, Amanda R., 295.
Mrs. Mary, 265.
Mrs. Mehitable, 265.
Thomas, 177, 189, 265.
Savage's Rock, 129, 462, 463.
Savages, 548.
Savory, Benjamin, 526.
Robert, 516.
Thomas, 28.
Saw Mills, 157, 167, 259, 262, 653.
at Cart Creek, 261.
Sawtel, Zachariah, 602.
Sawyer, Abraham, 571.
Benjamin, 372, 424, 571, 573.
Daniel, 390, 391.
David, 392.
Edmund, 486, 570, 595, 597, 640.
Elijah, 391.
Eliphalet, 573.
Enoch, 256, 277, 287, 289, 290, 390, 406, 570, 665, 667, 683, 684.
Mrs. Hannah, 256, 667.
Humphrey, 390.
Jacob, 576.
Capt. James, 604.
John, 116, 206, 540, 587, 601, 609, 629, 660.
Joshua, 589.
Matthias Plant, 587, 667.
Micajah, 275, 386, 570, 657, 667.
Moses, 570, 667.

Sawyer, *continued.*
Nathaniel, 569.
Samuel, 103, 179, 206, 352, 353, 372, 389, 390, 528, 541, 542, 582, 588.
Mrs. Sarah, 391, 665, 667.
Saul, 628.
Stephen, 206, 238, 347, 390, 391, 429, 541, 665.
William, 94, 111, 115, 117, 118, 141, 163, 180, 206, 389, 503, 506.
Sawyer Burying Ground, 355, 356, 391.
Sawyer Family, 391.
Sawyer's Hill, 83, 227, 228, 308, 332, 347, 369.
Burying Ground, 355, 356.
Say, Lord, 642.
Sayres, Robert, 28, 643.
Scales, 80, 265.
Hay, 265.
Scarfs, 122, 123.
Scatari Island, 548.
Schofield, Arthur, 293.
George A., 687.
John, 293.
Schofield Brothers, 294.
School, Atkinson Fund, 411.
School Books, 407, 408.
School Committee, 406.
First, 395.
School Dame, 401.
School Districts, 410-412.
No. 2, 410.
Gift to, 409.
School, Evening, 409.
School, Grammar, 365, 396, 401-403, 405, 406.
School, High, 410.
School, Ipswich Latin, 124, 396.
School, Latin, Newbury Presented for want of, 396.
School, Private, 392.
School Street, 384.
School Tax, 395.
School Teachers, 316, 392, 395-397, 401, 406, 408, 409.
Salary of, 396, 397, 407.
School, Writing, 401, 403, 406.
Schoolhouses, 241, 266, 335, 337, 365, 373, 387, 395, 401, 403, 404, 406, 408-411.
First, 395.
Schoolmasters, 124, 155, 191, 395-400, 403-405, 407, 408, 433, 490, 513, 656.
Schools, 124, 151, 214, 241, 266, 332, 348, 349, 366, 395-399, 401, 411, 412, 513, 656.
Schools, *continued.*
Free, 214, 395, 405.
Gifts to, 406, 409.
Grammar, 332.
Schooler, William, 45.
Schooners, 485-488, 621.
Scipio (negro), 256.
Scituate, Mass., 24.
Scodes, John, 540.
Scotchmen, 19, 30.
Scotland, 29.
Scots, The, 642.
Scott, James, 614, 617.
Joseph, 526.
Scouts, 517, 520, 537.
Scribner, Samuel, 627.
Scrivener, 466.
Scullard, Samuel, 44, 49, 55, 84, 89, 90, 94, 158.
Sea Pike Islands, 548.
Seabrook, N. H., 42.
Seabrook Monthly Meeting of Friends, 392.
Seal, Silver, 218.
Seale, Lord, 642.
Sealy, Edward, 629.
Seamen, 90.
Searl, John, 571, 573.
Joseph, 57.
Rev. Moses E., 368.
Samuel, 571.
William, 587, 601.
Seating the Meeting House, 315, 317, 352.
Seats in the Meeting House, 113, 314, 317, 318, 331, 335, 338, 342, 355, 356, 360.
Negro, 360.
Second Church in Newbury, 283, 336, 339, 347, 357, 359, 361.
in West Newbury, 339, 357, 381.
Second Parish, 226-229, 234-240, 269, 301, 336, 351, 354, 360, 369, 379, 386, 403, 404, 406.
Boundaries of, 227, 228, 234, 237.
Church, 655.
Map of, 239.
Meeting House, 227, 237, 240, 269, 270, 363.
Secretary of the Colony, 173, 177, 179, 322, 517, 639.
Sedition, 43.
Seers, Thomas, 101.
Seine, 283.
Selectmen, 36, 46, 48, 50, 93, 109-112, 115, 117, 119, 128, 129, 131-135, 155, 168, 200-202, 208, 209, 216, 219, 224-226,

Selectmen, *continued.*
244, 245, 247, 249, 252, 253, 264, 266, 271, 286, 287, 315, 317, 318, 330, 331, 334, 339, 342, 349, 396-400, 406, 417, 424, 425, 427, 428, 432, 439, 441, 450, 451, 454, 458-461, 554.
Rules of the, 112, 113.
Seminaries, Female, 392.
Seminary, Young Ladies', 366.
Sentinels, 57, 62, 63.
Sermons, 235, 311, 314, 339, 344, 358, 365, 366, 373, 378, 382, 492, 654, 655.
First, 311.
to Company of Colonel Titcomb, 235.
Servants, 549.
Settlement, First, 308, 311.
Settlement, Legal, 216.
Settlements, 30, 31, 36, 42, 44, 68-70, 75, 82, 86, 114, 168-172, 439.
New, 168-172.
of Amesbury, 439.
at Newbury, Vt., 172.
at New Town, 82.
at Parker River, 36.
at Pennacook (Concord), N. H., 169.
of Salisbury, 439.
at Woodbridge, N. J., 171.
Settlers of New England, Early, 13, 23.
"Seven Men," 47, 51, 64.
Severance, Rufus, 626.
Sewall, Mr., 421.
Henry, 32, 41, 54, 64, 67, 80, 84, 93-95, 99, 101, 120, 180, 183, 184, 191, 194, 205, 672, 674, 677, 678.
Jane, 191, 672, 674.
John, 95, 103, 118, 139, 179, 205, 285, 286, 528, 541, 660.
Joseph, 407, 541.
Samuel, 58, 189-192, 227, 252, 253, 264, 271, 282, 333, 358, 389, 407, 498, 670, 672, 674.
Stephen, 405, 568, 656, 672, 674.
Sewall House, 672, 673.
Sewall, Samuel. Diary of, 389.
Seward, Cate, 613.
Sextons, 331, 342, 343.
Seymour, Rev. Richard, 15.
Shackford, Paul, 570.
Sumner, 563.
Shad, 283, 284.
Shallops, 90, 475.
Shapleigh, Mr., 282.
Shatswell, Jonathan, 550.
Shattuck, Samuel, 147.
Shaw, Edward P., 686.
George H., 633.
Shay, Richard, 616, 618.
Sheep, 32, 33, 51, 56, 113, 127, 134, 137-139, 153, 203-207, 217, 223, 424, 523, 648, 670.
Sheffield, Lord, 20.
Shepherd, John, 506.
Shepherds, 56, 138.
Sherburne, H., 199.
Sheriffs, 129, 248, 370.
Sherman, John, 161.
Shingles, 226.
Ship Builders, 479-482, 485, 486, 488.
Ship Building, 264, 475, 480, 484, 486, 488-492, 620, 658.
Ship Carpenters, 475, 562, 623.
Ship Masters, 90, 173, 468, 478-481, 488, 491, 530.
Ship Tavern, Boston, 677.
Ship Timber, 217.
Ship of War, 486, 550, 580.
Ships, 128, 143, 173, 252, 471, 475-477, 479, 480, 482-489, 491, 492, 498, 522, 530, 555, 556, 620, 623.
Dutch, 32, 33, 648.
English, 616.
Shipwrecks, 32.
Shipwrights, 67, 255, 390, 435, 479, 562, 620.
Shipyards, 482-486, 488, 489, 491, 492.
John B. Coffin's, 489.
Woodwell's, 658.
Shirley, Gov. William, 383, 549, 552, 556, 562, 563.
Shoals, Isles of, 14, 17, 24, 25, 196, 621.
Shoemakers, 32.
Sholy, Mary, 45, 46.
Shone Creek, 561.
Short, Anthony 55, 84, 85, 88, 141, 176, 418.
Barns, 567, 589.
Henry, 28, 29, 47, 48, 50, 52, 53, 55, 62, 64-67, 79, 84, 86, 92, 99, 103, 104, 109, 111, 112, 117, 132, 138, 139, 155, 156, 158, 176, 179, 200, 202, 203, 210, 212, 214, 220, 259, 334, 351, 366, 397, 415, 416, 418, 420, 422, 425, 459, 479, 495, 497, 541, 629, 639, 651, 675, 676.
John, 259.
Joseph, 516.
Michael, 578.
Moses, 343, 611.
Nicholas, 341, 343.
Sewell, 629.
Shot, 43, 77, 499, 647, 648.
Shot and Shell, 550.

Shove, Seth, 400, 404.
Shovels, 670.
Shute, Colonel, 652.
Aaron, 627.
Gov. Samuel, 233, 545.
Sign of the Earl of Halifax, 273.
Sill, Captain, 505.
Silloway, Daniel, 629.
John, 600.
Silver, Samuel, 516.
Thomas, 55, 84, 85, 89, 176, 180, 181, 507, 510.
Silver, 309, 375, 483.
Silver Mines, 307, 309.
Silver Ore, 307.
Silversmith, 652.
"Simple Cobbler of Agawam," "The," 70.
Simpson, Adam, 635.
Benjamin, 565.
Thomas C., 686.
Singers, 340, 341.
Singing, 521.
Singing Book, 356.
Singing Seats, 360.
Singletary, Richard, 49, 68, 99.
Sinkler, James, 526.
Sirvant, Patrick, 567.
Slade, Rev. William, 381.
Slavery, 257, 365.
Slaves, 253-257, 365, 483.
Holders of, 253.
Sleeper, Sherborn, 566.
Sloop Island, 561.
Sloops, 475, 478-482, 486, 487, 529, 530, 560, 574, 621-624, 661.
of War, 621-624, 661.
"Wasp," 621-624.
Smallpox, 224, 225, 291-293, 682.
Smith, Corporal, 205, 528.
Sister, 317.
Andrew F., 634.
Ballard, 562, 565.
Benjamin, 198, 356, 530, 618.
Calvin, 629.
Capt. Daniel, 629.
Frank, 636.
Jacob, 613.
James, 102, 116, 138-140, 179, 417, 515, 541, 564, 567, 568, 575, 579, 618, 629.
Jeremiah, 613, 618.
John, 16-18, 20, 25, 102, 116, 171, 182, 229, 526, 542, 588, 605-607, 612, 660.
Joseph, 571.
Josiah, 543.
Lemuel, 629.
Leonard, 286, 573.
Michael, 610.
Smith, *continued.*
Moody, 588.
Moses, 571, 603.
Parker, 588.
Richard, 286, 609, 629.
Robert A., 129.
Samuel, 515, 516, 569, 612.
Samuel W., 629.
Sidney M., 635.
Stephen, 587, 601, 618.
Thomas, 54, 84, 90, 99, 163, 376, 503, 504, 569, 571, 587.
Rev. Willard, 388.
William, 275, 456, 610.
Rev. William B. T., 364.
Smith's Garrison, Wickford, R. I., 506.
Smith's Isles, 17, 19.
Snelling, Anne, 664.
Mrs. Margaret, 664.
Thomas, 607, 664.
Dr. William, 94, 122, 664.
Snow, 470, 527.
Snow Shoes, 469, 470, 524, 526, 528, 529, 540, 541.
Snow Storms, 469.
Society of Friends, 389, 391, 392.
in West Newbury, 392.
Society of Jesuits, 544.
Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, 371, 372, 385.
Soldiers, 210, 225, 432, 453, 464, 503-505, 553, 555, 558-560, 572, 585, 625, 631, 632.
Agreement by, 585.
in Expedition to Cape Breton, 540.
Families of, Aided, 631.
Impressed, 503-505.
of the Revolution, 600.
Solomon, 654.
Somerby, Abel, 318, 421.
Abial, 541, 569, 659.
Abiel, 101, 176, 219, 226, 264, 482.
Anthony, 53, 54, 58, 84, 88, 90, 92-95, 100, 108, 109, 111, 117, 118, 134, 141, 155, 156, 176, 180, 183, 249, 311, 395, 396, 419, 422, 495, 528, 541, 639, 660.
Daniel, 506, 507.
Henry, 84, 100, 137, 180, 205, 214, 215, 223, 227, 247, 334, 349, 354, 428, 452, 481, 514, 518, 541, 587, 680, 681.
Joseph, 566.
Moses, 617.
Samuel, 569.
Sounding Board, 359, 384.

South Bay, 561.
South Carolina, 366.
South Deerfield, 503.
South Holland, 521.
South Street, 89, 90, 124, 306, 307, 387, 424, 621, 672.
South Way, 238.
Southack, Captain, 522, 533.
Southampton, Eng., 32, 38, 56, 311, 649.
Southwark, Eng., 664.
Spain, 620.
Spanish Bay, 548.
Spanish Indian Boy, 254.
Spanish Succession, War of the, 521, 543.
Sparkes, Henry, 508.
Spaulding, Rev. Newell S., 388.
Spelling, 408.
Spencer, Mr., 415.
 John, 28, 29, 34, 36, 38, 41, 42, 54, 57, 65-67, 82-84, 99, 114, 184, 220, 294, 493, 648, 650, 675, 676.
 William, 28.
Spencer Farm, 670.
Spiller, Joseph, 567.
Spofford, David, 571.
Spofford Street, 298.
Spoons, Tea, Silver, 483.
Spott Pond, 24.
Sprague, Dr. John, 569.
 Miss Mary, 666.
 Mrs. Prudence, 666.
 Mrs. Ruth, 666.
Spring, John, 601.
 Rev. Samuel, 594.
Spring Lane, 424.
Springfield, Mass., 505.
Springs, 154-156, 418.
Square Island, 561.
Stable, 247.
Staff, 119, 285.
Stage Coaches, 273, 473, 474.
Stages, 272-274, 472-474.
Stagge, Giles, 664.
 Miss Margaret, 664.
Stairs, 360.
 in Meeting House, 318.
Stamp Act, 581.
Standish, Capt. Myles, 19, 21.
Standley, James, 607.
 William, 507.
St. Anne, 548.
Stanwood, Lt. Benjamin, 627.
 Eben P., 686.
 John, 549.
 Joseph, 202, 575, 579, 593, 615.
 Peter, 588.
 Thomas, 615.
Starkey, William, 570.
State Constitution, 253, 685.
State House, 290, 683.
State Street, 82, 90, 242, 243, 265, 266, 270, 275, 302, 303, 309, 336, 366, 404, 427, 429, 443, 664.
Stationer, 472.
Stavers, Bartholomew, 273, 472.
 John, 272, 273.
Stavers' Tavern, John, 472.
Staves, 119, 126, 127, 129.
 Cullers of, 110, 119.
St. Croix River, 14.
Stealing, 517.
Steam Drills, 309.
Steamboats, 491, 492.
Steamers, 491, 492.
Stearns, Ezekiel, 618.
Steaston, Eng., 75.
Stedman, Augustan, 659.
Steele, Joseph, 635.
Steeples, 364, 368, 373, 375, 378, 384.
St. Esprit Island, 548.
Stevens (Stephens), Deacon, 463.
 Widow, 54, 84, 88.
 Miss Anne, 311.
 Capt. Benjamin, 527.
 Benjamin F., 632.
 Capt. Jeremiah, 456.
 John, 55, 75, 84, 88, 93, 100, 117, 121, 178, 181, 418, 568, 578, 616.
 Joseph, 549.
 Michel, 628.
 Moses, 628.
 Nicholas, 311.
 Roger, 537, 538.
 Samuel, 503, 504.
 Thomas, 462, 463, 507, 537, 538, 563.
 William, 89, 100, 576, 626.
Stevenstown, N. H., 516.
Stewart, Charles, 203.
 Duncan, 116, 118, 203.
 Ebenezer, 516.
 James, 205.
 Jonathan, 618.
"St. George" (ship), 491.
St. George, Island of, Me., 15.
Stickney, Amos, 94, 138, 178, 587, 605.
 Andrew, 588, 605, 659.
 Anthony, 565, 568.
 Benjamin, 288, 575, 579, 587.
 Caleb, 576.
 Charles, 629.
 Daniel, 605.
 David, 566, 571, 588, 605.
 Enoch, 549.
 James, 567.

Stickney, *continued.*
Jedediah, 587.
John, 205, 286, 480, 540, 542, 570, 605, 614, 659, 674.
Jonathan, 566, 612.
Moses, 542.
Paul, 571.
Samuel, 564, 565.
Stephen, 605, 612.
Thomas, 178.
William, 566, 567, 571.
Stiles, Joseph, 625.
Still House, 262, 264.
St. Johns, N. S., 602.
St. Lawrence, Cape, 548.
St. Lawrence, Gulf of, 547, 556.
St. Lawrence River, 547, 576.
St. Lawrence Road, 548.
St. Mary, Port, 548.
Stock Raising, 33, 131.
Stocker, Ebenezer, 287, 298, 684.
Samuel, 619.
Stockman, John, 601, 619.
Joseph, 562.
Michael, 601.
Rowland, 549, 569, 573.
William, 563, 575.
Stocks, 79, 112, 122.
Stokes, John, 607.
Samuel, 612.
Stone, Eben F., 686.
John, 286, 613, 618.
Jonathan, 612.
Rev. William R., 388.
Stone, 330.
Stone Bridge, 428.
Stonington, Conn., 324, 470.
Stonman, John, 614.
Stony Brook, 138, 139.
Stoolly, Captain, 533.
Storey Avenue, 134, 354, 421, 423, 428.
Storms, 33, 343, 373, 375, 385, 515.
Stoughton, Capt. Israel, 500.
William, 202, 322, 444.
Stoves, 360, 367, 662.
St. Paul, Island, 548.
"St. Patrick" (ship), 492.
St. Paul's Church, 265, 341, 373-377, 483.
Churchyard, 265.
Vestrymen of, 265.
Wardens of, 265.
St. Peter's Island, 548.
Strangers, 112, 113, 140, 215, 216, 373.
Entertaining, 140, 216.
Stratton, Capt. Bartholomew, 476.
John, 160, 506.
Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth), N. H., 24, 431.
Street Railways, 275.
Streets, 126, 428.
Strong Water, 72, 73, 262.
Studman, Augustine, 181.
Sturgeon, 23, 167, 281, 282.
Sturtevant, Isaac, 573.
Subercase, Governor, 531, 534, 535.
Sucatabot, Sagamore, 24.
"Success" (sloop), 530.
Sudbury, Mass., 173.
Suffolk County, 74, 502, 574.
Sugar, 217, 478, 483.
Sugar Ball Plain, 170.
Sugar Loaf Hill, 503.
Sugar Spoon, 153.
Suit at Law, 341, 342, 390.
Sulkies, 271.
Sullivan, James, 613.
Summers, James, 614.
Sunday, 251, 252, 333, 364.
Sunday School, 362.
Sunderland, Rev. La Roy, 388.
Surgeons, 140, 553, 556, 666, 668.
Army, 553, 556.
Surveyor of Arms, 493.
Surveyor-General of Woods in America, 370.
Surveyors of Highways, 47, 48, 109-112, 413, 414, 427.
Sutler, Army, 557.
Swain, John, 146.
Richard, 44, 146.
Swan, Corp. Asa, 559.
Richard W., 633.
Swan's Ferry, 168.
"Swan Song of Parson Avery," 33.
Swasey, Ebenezer, 286.
Edward, 605.
Joseph, 463, 464, 573.
Moses, 573.
Samuel, 427.
Swearing, 517.
Swedish Brig "Adonis," 621.
Sweeping the Meeting House, 315.
Swett (Sweat, Sweet), Abraham, 579.
Benjamin, 100, 143, 163, 164, 169, 285, 316, 495, 510, 511, 549, 565, 616.
Elisha, 516.
Enoch, 549.
George, 615.
Mrs. Hester, 511.
Jacob, 288.
James, 617.

Swett, *continued.*
John, 55, 84, 85, 88, 109, 116, 118, 178, 181, 206, 218, 460, 461, 511, 515, 526, 536, 539, 566, 605.
Jonathan, 570.
Joseph, 123, 163, 524, 573, 615.
Luke, 576.
Moses, 562.
Samuel, 562, 564, 615.
Stephen, 93, 111, 141, 142, 163, 176, 181, 506, 542, 549.
Thomas, 28, 565, 576, 610.
William, 566, 629.
Swett's Ferry, 241, 277, 356, 459-462.
Swine, 29, 131-134, 137, 223, 523, 670.
Swing Bridge, 444.
Swords, 43, 217, 500, 648.
Symonds, Samuel, 319, 437.

TABLET AT TRAINING GREEN, 593, 594.
Taconic Falls, 544.
Tailors, 32, 33.
"Talisman" (bark), 492.
Tanners, 32, 154-156.
Tannett, Thomas, 376.
Tanning, 154, 155, 264, 424.
Tar, 370.
Tarleton, Rev. James, 362.
Tarpaulin Cove, 478.
Tarratine Indians, 182.
Tate, Mr., 340.
Tate's & Brady's Version of the Psalms, 340.
Taverns, 142, 242, 272, 273, 283, 442, 677.
Blue Anchor, 442.
of Capt. Edward Sargent, 283.
of John Stavers, 472.
Tavern Keepers, 72, 445.
Taxes, 36, 40, 51, 61, 62, 69, 97, 112, 113, 158, 171, 201, 207, 227-229, 353, 508, 526, 596.
on Carriages, 372.
Collectors of, 113.
on Liquors, 73.
List of Newbury (1688), 203-207.
Parish, 290, 291, 341.
Parliament, 296.
School, 395.
Taylor, Isaac, 617.
John, 515.
Nathan, 629.
Walter, 180.
Taymouth, Jonathan, 608.
Tea, 296, 581, 582.
Duty on, 296.
Tax on, 581, 582.
Teachers, 311, 669.
First, 311.
Teel, Josiah, 609.
Temperance, 366, 367.
Temple, Capt. Robert, 198.
"Temple Measured," "The," 312, 313.
Teneriffe, Island of, 488.
Tenison, Christopher, 506.
Tenney, Benjamin T., 627.
Charles E., 634.
Rev. Francis V., 368.
Gorham P., 627.
James, 564.
John G., 634.
Nathaniel, 571.
Oliver, 571.
Richard, 571.
Samuel, 628.
William, 571.
Tents, 310.
Tewksberry, Henry, 178.
Isaac, 628.
Text Books, 408.
Texts, 339, 365, 557, 655.
Thacher, Anthony, 32, 33.
Rev. Hezekiah, 393.
Thacher's Island, 33.
"Thacher's Woe," 33.
Thames River, 26, 28, 167, 642.
Thanksgiving Day, 535.
"The Newbury" (raft of timber), 484.
Theology, 365.
Third Church, 339.
Third Parish, 219, 233-235, 237-240, 243, 249, 250, 267, 301, 336, 360, 377, 378, 403-406, 428.
Boundaries of, 234, 267.
Church, 219, 383.
Clerk, 377, 378.
Map of, 239.
Meeting House, 240, 578.
Thomas, Colonel, 252, 253.
Mr., 93, 366.
James, 618.
William, 84, 92, 122, 142, 282.
Thomas & Whipple, 366.
Thomb, Jonathan, 570.
Thompson, David, 19.
Edward, 226, 227, 332, 562.
George, 614.
Jacob, 576.
James, 573.
John, 616-618, 627.
Robert, 610.
"Three Roads," 90.
Three Turk's Heads, 18.
Thurlow, Mr., 216.
Abraham, 587, 601, 610.

Thurlow, *continued.*
Francis, 102, 180, 204, 230.
George, 125, 541, 571.
James, 628.
John, 182, 204, 516, 570, 571, 627.
Jonathan, 182, 207, 571.
Joseph L., 388.
Moses, 571, 610.
Parker G., 627.
Paul, 622.
Richard, 67, 93, 141, 163, 207, 276, 416, 419, 421, 653, 662.
Samuel, 627.
Simon, 653.
Thomas, 182, 204, 230, 420, 511, 589, 609, 610.
Tristram, 571.
Zaccheus P., 410.
Thurlow's Bridge, 225, 240, 277, 432.
Thurlow's Farm, 230, 427.
Thurlow's Mill, 240.
Thurston, Benjamin, 586.
Daniel, 54, 84, 87, 89, 163, 164, 176, 181, 204, 318, 433, 542, 589.
Enoch, 579.
John, 586, 617.
Rev. John R., 345, 346.
Jonathan, 588, 603, 608, 609.
Capt. Richard, 564.
Stephen, 608.
Tibbets, Aaron, 628.
Ephraim, 612.
Ticonderoga, 560, 561, 572, 574.
Tide Gate, 653.
Tide Mill, 260.
Tillotson, John, 93, 94, 163.
Tilton, Albert, 343.
Daniel, 565, 569.
George P., 593.
Greenleaf, 627.
Isaac, 605.
Peter, 189.
Sherborn, 578.
Stephen, 565.
Timber, 38, 112, 126-129, 137, 166, 217, 223.
Exportation of, 484.
Ship, 217.
Titcomb, Lieutenant, 481.
Abraham, 338, 516, 568.
Miss Ann, 390.
Benaiah, 116, 118, 180, 477, 481, 541, 629.
Benjamin, 549, 569.
Caleb, 653.
David, 565.
Elias, 543.
Titcomb, *continued.*
Enoch, 569.
Henry, 565.
Jacob, 549.
Jeffry, 566.
John, 229, 615, 626.
Jonathan, 285, 611.
Joseph, 286, 427, 482, 569.
Joshua, 566, 569.
Josiah, 627.
Moses, 217, 235, 549, 550, 552, 556, 557, 559, 564, 565, 618, 681.
Nicholas, 602.
Pennel, 118, 178, 181, 205, 206, 260, 370, 477, 511, 541.
Prudence, 666.
Richard, 286, 614-616.
Samuel, 265.
Simeon, 653.
Thomas, 180, 204.
William, 54, 84, 88, 91-93, 104, 105, 109-111, 114, 141, 155, 158, 163, 169, 183, 205, 215, 218-220, 223, 244, 319, 320, 390, 429, 451, 477, 536, 541, 543, 571, 677, 678.
Titcomb's Battery, 550-552.
Tithingmen, 114, 116-119, 356.
Titus, Rev. Anson, 265.
Tobb, Caleb, 618.
Todd, Serg. Benjamin, 586.
Ebenezer, 590.
John, 184.
Moses, 427.
Samuel, 549.
William C., 590.
Toll Bridges, 277, 279.
Toll House, 270.
Tolls, Turnpike, 275.
Toltwood, Henry, 207.
Tom, Great, 183.
Tomb, Rev. Samuel, 361, 655.
Tompkins, Mary, 148, 149.
Tompson, Edward, 348-350, 399.
Tongs, 483, 670.
Silver, 483.
Tongues Bored, 145.
Tools, 670.
Toppan (Tappan), Ensign, 205, 215.
Sergeant, 118.
Abigail, 668.
Abraham, 48, 49, 54, 63, 66, 84, 86, 87, 89, 90, 99, 109, 110, 114, 115, 141, 169, 171, 183, 241, 254, 314, 395, 429, 528, 541, 654, 660, 664.
Ann, 666.
Benjamin, 657.

Toppan, *continued.*
Bezaleel, 170, 668.
Rev. Christopher, 170, 283, 332, 333, 336-339, 343, 350, 382, 401, 402, 654, 664, 665, 667, 668.
Rev. David, 379.
Dr. Edmund, 667.
Edward, 238, 333, 625.
Eunice, 665.
Jacob, 103, 116, 118, 139, 178, 179, 207, 214, 227, 286, 497, 514, 536, 539, 541, 659.
James, 516.
John, 179, 503, 504, 601.
Joshua, 601, 610, 611, 615.
Michael, 286.
Peter, 116, 127, 128, 141, 170, 181, 203, 247, 318, 333, 664.
Richard, 569.
Samuel, 170, 542, 567.
Mrs. Susanna, 664.
Toppan's Lane, 237, 238.
Toppan Street, 429.
Topsfield, Mass., 153, 274, 275, 497, 600, 606.
"Torrent" Fire Engine, 288.
Torrey, Rev. David C., 369.
William, 141, 187, 188.
Toulouse, Port, 548.
Tower Hill, Methuen, 198.
Town Clerks, 183, 316, 359, 395, 402, 425, 481, 639.
of Salisbury, 446.
Town Creek, 199.
Town Crier, 217.
Town Farms, 299.
Town Hall, 465.
Town House, 55, 223, 241-243, 265, 266, 269-271, 309, 404, 590, 593.
Town Landing, 485.
Town Meetings, 120, 269, 296.
Where Held, 269.
Town Officers, 100, 110.
Town Records, 336, 402.
Town School, 406.
Town Treasurer, 640.
Towns, Right to Organize, 95.
Townsend, Captain, 407.
James L., 402.
Col. Penn, 533.
William, 568.
Township No. 1, 512.
Tracy, Rev. Fred P., 388.
Capt. Nicholas, 569.
Patrick, 154, 266.
Trade, 620.
Lords of, 545.
Training Days, 433.
Training Field, 260.
Training Green, 124, 154, 156, 314, 316, 346, 409, 414, 415, 426, 428, 511, 593, 594, 644, 651, 672.
Training Place, 129.
Trainings, 625.
Tramblade Island, 548.
Transports, 530, 550, 555, 593, 594.
Traske, Captain, 30, 31.
Travelling, 271.
Travers, Henry, 28, 55, 84, 88, 90.
Treadmill, 297.
Treadwell, Mr., 593.
Elisha, 659.
Treasurer of Colony, 41, 508, 648.
Treasurer, Town, 640.
Treat, Major, 506.
Treaties of Peace, 519, 521, 543, 547, 553, 580, 599, 630.
of Utrecht, 547.
Trees, 126-130, 370.
Marked, 370.
Trefren, Rev. John L., 394.
Tremont Street, Boston, 652.
Troop of Horse, 196, 495.
Troop of Horesmen, 279.
Troops, 450, 453.
Trotter, William, 94.
Trotter's Bridge, 138-140, 241.
Truce, 578.
Truck House, 25.
Trucks, 272.
True, Bradbury, 576.
Israel, 576.
Jacob, 549.
John, 615.
Capt. William, 564.
Trumpets, 531.
Tuck, Robert, 44.
Tucker, Mr., 204.
Dr. Barnard, 668.
Benoni, 537, 539.
John, 181, 339, 340, 343, 344, 382, 584, 619, 654, 668.
Mary, 186.
Richard, 576.
Mrs. Sarah, 668.
William, 615.
Tufts College, 265.
Tufts, Rev. John, 283, 355-357, 379.
Samuel, 292.
Tupper, Col. Benjamin, 605.
Turkey Hill, 64, 65, 83, 193, 228, 229, 308, 392, 424, 519, 590, 651.
Turner, Captain, 30, 31, 39.
John, 536, 537, 571, 587.

Turner, *continued.*
William, 507, 508, 571, 575, 579.
Turnpikes, 270, 275, 276, 280, 303. 306.
Newburyport, 270, 306.
Plum Island, 306.
Turrel, Jesse, 576.
Turrets, 334, 341, 357.
Turvill, Thomas, 154, 155, 318.
Twisse, Dr. William, 191, 193.
Tye, Gilbert, 635.
Tyler, William, 636.
Tyng, Dudley A., 270, 406.
Jonathan, 444.
Capt. William, 527.

UNION HALL, 624.
Union Street, 429.
United States, 224, 294, 484, 488. 492, 599, 617. 620, 624, 630-632.
Senate, 366.
University, 396.
Upham, Miss, 392.
Prof. Thomas C., 392.
Upper Commons, 133-137, 209, 210, 212, 260, 423.
Upper Falls, 258.
in Connecticut River, 507.
Upper Parish, 279, 428.
Upper Woods, 168, 209, 211, 215, 347, 422.
Urier, John, 571.
Usher, John, 201, 202, 207, 444, 467.
Uter, Peter, 510.
Utrecht, 543, 547.
Treaty of, 547.

VACCINATION, 291, 292.
Vane, Sir Henry 41.
Vats, Saltwater, 297.
Vaughn, Colonel, 550.
Major, 517.
Veltmar, William L., 636.
Verderone Island, 548.
Vernon, James, 613, 618.
Verplank's Point, 661.
Versailles, 599.
Vessels, 108, 128, 142, 254, 265, 373. 380, 475-480, 483-486, 488, 489, 498, 514, 515, 522, 533. 550, 621, 658.
Vestries, 271, 362, 388, 392.
of Fourth Parish Church, 392.
in Pearsons' Mills Village, 271.
Vestrymen, 265. 376. 385, 483.
of Queen Anne's Chapel, 265.
Victualler, 72.
Vie, John, 515.
Vintners, 45, 72.
Violet (slave), 365.
Virginia, 13, 467, 472.
North, 15, 17.
South, 15.
Virginia Fleet, 470.
"Visions and Prophecies of Daniel Expounded," 323, 324.
Voyage of a Pirate, 478.
"Vulture" (sloop-of-war), 661.

WADE, NATHANIEL, 600, 614.
Thomas, 518.
Wadleigh, Benjamin, 615, 629.
Moses, 576.
Nathaniel, 613.
Wainwright, Francis, 449, 530, 534.
John, 671.
Wait's Mill, 298.
Wakefield, Mass., 274.
Wakefield, William, 45.
Waldo's Regiment, 553.
Waldron, Richard, 148, 149, 169.
Wales, Thomas, 660.
Wales, Prince of, 17.
Walker, Charles, 609, 610, 614.
Isaac, 635.
Samuel, 559.
Walker's Creek, 199.
Wallet, 217.
Wallingford, John, 515.
Joseph, 566, 567.
Samuel, 562, 565.
Capt. Thomas, 516.
Walnut Hill Cemetery, 379.
Walnut Trees, 18.
Walton, Rev. Amos, 388.
Wamoneset Indians, 182.
Wamouth, Jonathan, 612.
War against England declared by France, 1744, 547.
War, Pequot, 499.
War, King Philip's. 502.
History of, 508.
War, Seven Years', 576.
War of the Rebellion, 631, 632.
War of the Spanish Succession, 521, 543.
War of 1812, 620.
Ward, Mr., 34, 70, 74.
Dudley, 635.
James, 576.
Rev. James W., 362.
Rev. John, 71.
Rev. Nathaniel, 70.
Wardell, Jonathan, 271.
Wardens, Church, 265, 372-376, 385, 483.

Wardens, Church, *continued.*
of Queen Anne's Chapel, 265.
Wardwell, Eliakim, 124, 315.
Lydia, 124, 315, 389.
Wardwell, Lydia, Punishment of, 315.
Warehouse, 475.
Warehouse Point, 443.
Warhurst, Aaron, 636.
Warner, Capt. Nathaniel, 600.
Warning Out of Town, 216.
Warrant for Execution of King Charles I., 172.
Warrant for Town Meeting, 287.
Warren, Commodore, 550.
Alvin S., 635.
Mrs. Mercy, 661.
Wars, Indian, 493.
Washington, George, 463, 464, 614.
Washington's Barge, 463.
Washington Street, 390, 391.
"Wasp" (United States sloop of war), 484, 488, 489, 621-624.
Wassaumkeag Point, 574.
Wastcoat Islands, 548.
Watch, 493, 517.
Watch House, 247, 397.
Watch, Military, 57.
Watching, 468.
Water Line Model, 485.
Water Mill, 158.
Water Power, 293, 295, 298.
Water Side Parish, 235.
Water Street, 91, 215, 262, 427-429, 658, 665.
Water Supply, 302.
Water Wheels, 297.
Water Works, 302.
Waters, John, 616.
Watertown, Mass., 23, 24, 40, 161, 311, 493, 591-593, 595, 603, 647, 649, 650, 683.
Watts, Doctor, 340.
Mr., 471.
Watts' Cellar, 82, 83, 90, 95, 281, 308, 475, 481, 482.
Way to Andover, 417.
Way to the Falls River, 416.
Way to the Ferry, 418.
Way from Meeting House to Mill, 111.
Way to the Mill, 415.
Way Wardens, 109-112, 208, 414, 427.
Wayts, Capt. John, 505.
Wealth, 271.
Weare, Miss Hester, 511.
Nathaniel, 55, 84, 93, 94, 100, 169, 316, 511.
Peter, 511.
Weather Code, 364.
Weathercocks, 341.
Weaver, Josiah, 372.
Weavers, 32.
Webb, Nathaniel, 323.
Nicholas B., 625.
Webber, Samuel, 618.
Webster, Sergeant, 205.
Hon. Daniel, 366.
Elizabeth, 124, 315.
Israel, 115, 142, 177, 179.
John, 93, 99, 101, 110, 111, 115, 116, 118, 127, 128, 137, 180, 204, 318, 463, 464, 495, 496, 659.
Joseph, 560.
Rev. Josiah, 361.
Nathan, 171.
Nicholas, 401, 402.
Stephen, 540.
Webster's Cove, 199.
Weddings, 61, 373.
Wedgwood, Jonathan, 178.
Weed, Elimeleck, 565.
John, 256, 405, 528, 541, 562, 615.
Mrs. Sarah, 256.
Sargeant, 565, 573.
William, 238, 566, 573.
Weights and Measures, 79, 80, 111, 120, 121.
Weirs, 38, 283, 648.
Welch, Joseph, 612.
Wells, Me., 510, 516, 521, 535.
Indian Attack on, 521.
Wells, Arnold, 275.
Enoch, 563, 567.
John, 101, 102, 178.
Thomas, 103, 178.
Wenham, Mass., 74, 148, 152, 153, 344, 603, 606, 634, 669.
Wentworth, Gov. Benning, 198.
Wessacucon, 30, 31.
West, John, 445.
Thomas, 178.
West End, 401.
West's Harbor, 24.
West India Islands, 264, 462, 469.
West Indies, 13, 119, 254, 470, 478, 481, 482, 515, 620.
West Indies, Newbury, 267.
West Meeting House, 347, 351.
West Newbury, Mass., 134, 223, 266, 278, 279, 300-304, 308, 356, 357, 359, 361, 362, 371, 379-381, 391, 392, 412, 424, 425, 428, 462, 539, 685, 686.
Incorporation of, 300, 302.
West Parish, 225, 229, 236, 332, 353, 616, 661.
West Precinct in Newbury, 369, 370.
Westbrook, Col. Thomas, 544.

Western Continent, 366.
Western Post, 470.
Weymouth, Mass., 39-41, 78, 493.
Capt. George, 15.
"Whale" (ship), 647.
Whaleboats, 529, 530, 544, 560.
Whale Fishing, 17.
Whalley, Col. Edward, 172, 173.
Wharton, Edward, 145, 146.
Richard, 202.
Wharves, 223, 456, 458, 462, 475, 482, 486, 488.
Wheat, 113, 201, 209, 260, 331, 503, 523.
Wheat Street, 228.
Wheeler, Benjamin, 203.
Daniel, 93.
David, 91, 95, 120, 121.
Henry, 477, 478.
John, 28, 93, 163, 503, 506, 510.
Jonathan, 180, 571.
Joseph, 179, 205.
Moses, 571.
Nathan, 180, 203, 229, 542.
Samuel, 624.
Wheelwright, Abraham, 288, 298, 621.
Ebenezer, 293, 298, 303, 304, 306, 622.
Rev. John, 38, 43, 493, 648.
Whicher, Morrill, 566, 614.
Whipple, Cyprian, 659.
John, 449, 502.
Whit Street, 236.
White, Lieutenant, 536.
Mrs., 205.
George, 204.
Rev. John, 20.
Capt. Paul, 102, 176, 254, 262, 475, 482.
Philip, 565, 569.
William, 28, 54, 71, 84, 93, 588, 603, 607, 612, 619.
White Point, 551.
Whitefield, Rev. George, 235, 378, 381.
Whitehall, Eng., 26, 147, 194.
Whitehead, N. J., 171.
Whiteher, Francis, 565.
Whiting, Capt. William, 520.
Whitmore, General, 555.
Amos, 610, 611.
David, 286, 373, 587.
Ebenezer, 287.
Jonathan, 286, 562.
Joseph, 570.
Whitney, Stephen, 612.
Whittemore, David, 587.
James, 625.
Whittier, Francis, 565.
Whittier, *continued.*
James A. C., 295.
John, 503, 507.
John G., 33, 146, 191.
Moses T., 685.
Whittier & Ewing, 295
Whittingham, Ens. John, 493.
Wickes, David, 626.
Wickford, R. I., 506.
Wicom, Lt. Daniel, 498.
John, 204.
Wig, 358.
Wiggin, Captain, 163.
Thomas, 142.
Wigglesworth, Mr., 252.
Edward, 293, 607, 608.
Wigwams, 527, 544, 545.
Wilcott, John, 141, 508.
Wildcat, 125.
Wildes, Solomon, 294.
Wiley, Francis A., 634.
Wilkins, Richard, 192.
Wilks, Francis, 219.
Will, Old, 184.
Will of John Kent, 643.
Will of Samuel Morggaridge, 483.
Willard, Col. Aaron, 607.
Joseph C., 633.
Simon, 161.
Willard's Regiment, 553.
Willet, Benjamin, 571, 616, 617.
Daniel, 562, 565.
Francis, 180, 204, 573.
William, King, 196, 245, 467, 468, 514, 518.
William III., King, 207, 480.
William, Prince of Orange, 207.
William Henry, Fort, 560-562.
Williams, Colonel, 559.
Alfred S., 295.
Rev. Gilbert T., 361.
Henry, 447, 607.
John, 71.
Joseph, 610.
Richard, 372.
Samuel, 295.
Simon, 568.
Thomas, 542, 575, 579, 589, 633.
William, 612.
Williamson, William, 614.
Willis, Daniel, 628.
John H., 632.
Wills, John, 305.
Wills, 375, 390, 483, 643, 671.
Wiltshire, Eng., 30, 311.
Windmill Lane, 359.
Windmills, 260, 264, 297.
Wine, 72, 73, 340, 342, 443, 447, 488, 677.
Casks, 119.

Wingate, Mrs. Elizabeth, 666.
Joshua, 277, 666.
Rev. Payne, 339.
"Winicowett House," 46.
Winnacunnett (Hampton), N. H., 42-45, 434.
Winnipiseogee, Lake, 161.
Winnisimet (Chelsea), Mass., 27, 272, 471.
Winsley, Mr., 163.
Winslow, Edward, 19-21.
John, 553, 556, 560, 667.
Winter, Benjamin, 559, 563, 567.
Joseph, 613, 618.
Winter Harbor, 510, 535.
Winter Hill, 596.
Winter Street, 390.
Winthrop, Captain, 524.
John, 23, 25, 29, 31, 39, 41, 42, 44, 70, 73, 74, 76, 166, 465, 493, 500, 650.
Hon. Robert C., 310.
Waite, 202.
Wise, Dennis, 604.
Wit—, James, 660.
Witchcraft, 186, 189.
Witcher, Morrill, 566, 614.
Withington, Mrs. Caroline, 410.
Rev. Leonard, 345, 410.
Mrs. Nathan, 410.
Nathan N., 632, 687.
Richard, 632.
Woart, William, 617.
Woburn, Mass., 603.
Wolcott, John, 163, 164, 169, 180, 276, 318.
Wolfe, Gen. James, 555, 576-578.
Wollaston, Mount, 24.
Wolves, 124, 125.
Wonasquam, 24.
"Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Savior," 165.
Wood, Albert, 491.
Amos, 625.
Ephraim, 539.
John, 281, 491, 569.
Joseph, 615.
Samuel, 543.
William, 23, 281.
Wood, 126, 127, 131, 137, 419, 424.
Lots, 213.
Woodbridge, N. J., 168, 171, 535.
Settlement of, 171.
Woodbridge, Benjamin, 75, 176, 193, 223, 260, 326, 455, 457, 528, 541, 560.
John, 28, 47, 48, 51-56, 61-63, 65-67, 70, 74, 75, 79, 84, 85, 106-108, 132, 171, 176, 182, 186, 194, 195, 203, 209, 210, 316-319, 321, 322, 348, 403, 444, 493, 511, 528, 541, 639, 654, 656, 676.
Joseph, 203, 401, 422, 542, 639.
Josiah, 569.
Miss Mary, 479.
Mrs. Mercy, 316, 639.
Thomas, 180, 243, 245, 266, 318, 376.
Woodbridge's Island, 239, 241.
Woodbury, Benjamin, 608, 618.
Bezaleel, 610.
James, 573, 618.
John, 601, 603, 610, 611, 618.
Woodland Street, 238, 240, 386, 390, 418, 430, 437.
Woodman, ——, 539.
Corporal, 659, 660.
Mr., 649, 315.
Abel, 588.
Abner, 587.
Archelaus, 41, 53, 54, 84, 88, 90, 92, 99, 104-106, 109, 110, 114, 117, 118, 120, 137, 141, 181, 205, 220, 223, 421, 422, 424, 496, 498, 528, 541, 569, 660, 678.
Benjamin, 550, 573, 575.
Charles H., 634.
David, 567, 571.
Edward, 38, 45, 47, 48, 51-54, 56, 57, 60, 62, 63, 66, 67, 69, 73, 79, 81, 84-86, 88, 90, 92-95, 103-105, 107, 115, 117, 120, 132, 163, 167-170, 180, 205, 206, 220, 317-321, 395, 415, 417, 420, 431, 435, 493, 501, 675-678.
Rev. Henry A., 362.
Hercules, 32.
Hilton, 569.
Horace S., 635.
Ichabod, 542, 569.
Jonathan, 178, 180, 235, 318, 475, 476, 541.
Joseph, 576, 615.
Joshua, 58, 59, 180, 229.
Mark, 588.
Moses, 571, 576.
Nathaniel, 160.
Samuel, 301, 559, 567.
Saul, 625.
Stephen, 627.
William, 571, 573, 634.
Woodman's Bridge, 158, 417.
Woodman's Lane, 215, 380, 475.
Woodpeckers, 125, 126.
Woods, Rev. Leonard, 379.
Woods, 139, 140.
Surveyor of the, 370.
Woodward, Seth, 579.
Woodwell, Benjamin, 605.

Woodwell, *continued.*
David, 658.
David T., 686.
George W., 686.
Gideon, 285, 286, 482, 560, 562, 565, 568, 587, 628, 658.
John, 628, 658.
Woodwell & Hale, 658.
Woodwell's Shipyard, 658.
Woollen Factory at Byfield, 293, 294.
Woollen Goods, 258, 293, 294.
Woolworth, Richard, 180.
Worcester, Rev. Mr., 165.
Oliver, 562.
Worham, William, 180, 204.
Workhouse, 245.
Worship, Public, 290.
Worth, John, 185, 206, 356, 542, 660.
Lionel, 115, 141, 419, 439.
Richard, 171.
Worthen, Capt. George, 564.
Samuel, 571.
Wrecks, 19, 33, 380.
Wright, Rev. Henry C., 362.
John, 93.
Joseph, 611.
Rev. Richard, 387.
Samuel, 603, 607, 612.
Writing, 409.
Writing School, 401, 403, 406.
Writing Taught, 396, 400, 403.
Writs, 201.
Clerks of the, 58, 104.
Quo Warranto, 27.
Wyatt, Jacob, 607, 615.
John, 565, 573.
Samuel, 573, 578.

YARN, COTTON, 295.
Yoked Swine, 133.
York, Me., 143, 233, 271, 516, 518, 520, 521, 535.
Burning of, 518.
Indian Attack on, 518.
York County, Me., 31, 607.
York Harbor, 510.
Yorkshire, Eng., 68.
Yorktown, N. Y., 599.
Youlan, William, 618.
Young, Benaiah, 563, 565, 569.
Edmund, 504.
Edward, 507.
George E., 633.
Hiram, 343.
Jeremiah C., 343.
Joseph, 633.
Moses, 343, 633.
Seth, 633.
"Young Lady's Accidence," 408.
Younglove, Samuel, 181.

ZEBULUN, 477.
Zidon, 477.

1537